



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

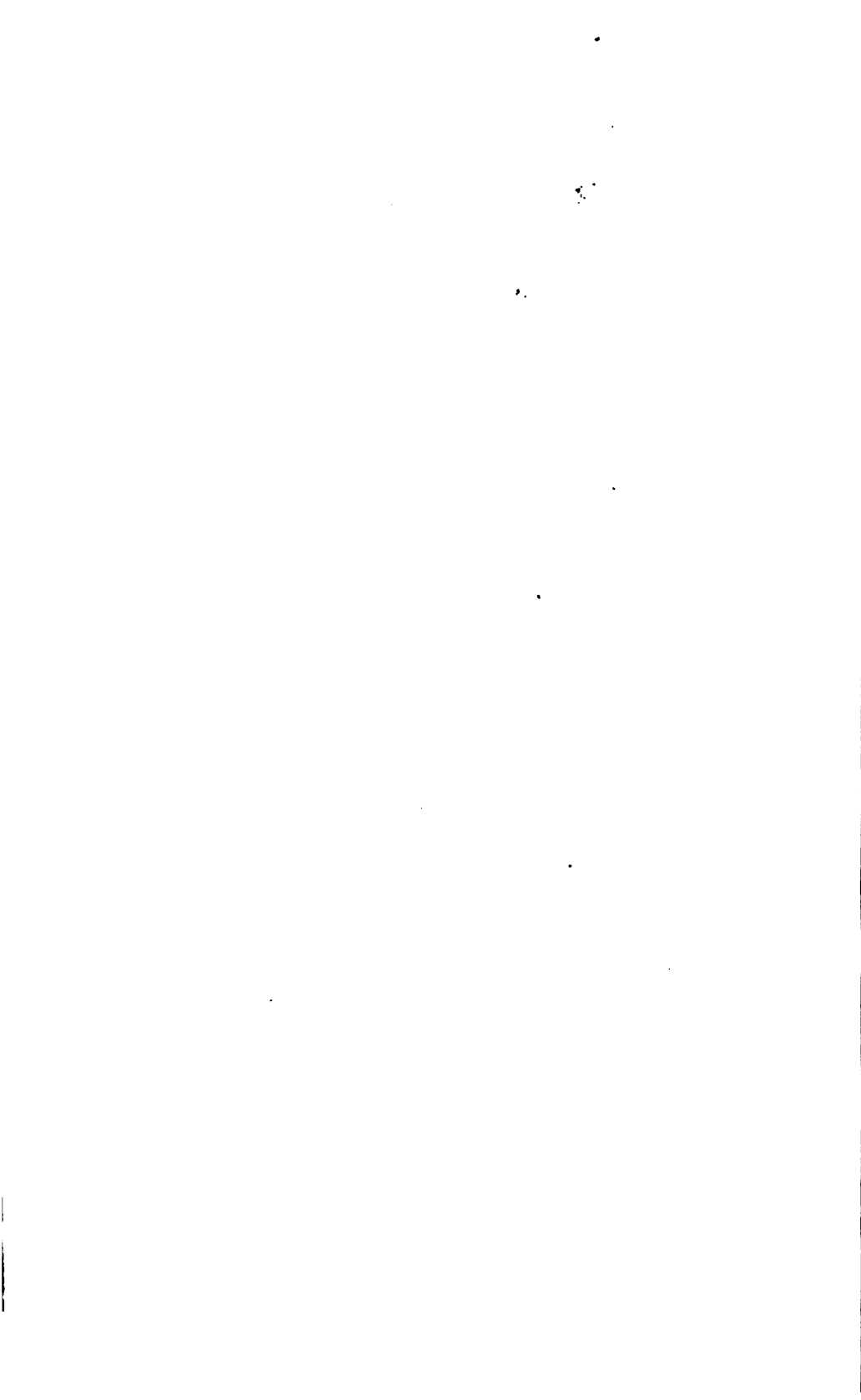
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





THE

DRIVER FAMILY:

A GENEALOGICAL MEMOIR

OF THE

DESCENDANTS

OF

ROBERT AND PHEBE DRIVER.

CORRECTIONS AND ADDITIONS.

JONATHAN ARCHER, (No. 51,) died April 28, 1842; his wife died January 12, 1882.

CHILDREN ELEVEN:

- 64¼ JONATHAN ARCHER,[†] born December 27, 1783; died unmarried, April 11, 1804.
- 64½ JOSEPH ARCHER,[†] born February 21, 1785; married MARY MARTIN, of Marblehead, Mass.
- 66 SARAH ARCHER,[†] born July 20, 1788; died April 25, 1854.
- 66¼ HANNAH ARCHER,[†] born August 10, 1790; married[†] JOHN LEFAVOR.
- 66½ BETHIAH ARCHER,[†] born February 27, 1793; died August 25, 1804.
- 67 ELIZA ARCHER,[†] born January, 1795; died May 2, 1880.
- 67¼ JOHN ARCHER,[†] born July 4, 1796; married ABIGAIL WOODWARD.
- 67½ WILLIAM ARCHER,[†] born April 18, 1798; died October 10, 1889; married MARY BOWDITCH.
- 68 LYDIA ARCHER,[†] born July 3, 1800; died January 12, 1882.

HARRIET RUTH (WATERS) COOKE.

NEW YORK:
 PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR
 BY JOHN WILSON AND SON,
University Press, Cambridge, Mass.
 1889.



66.549

*"Like leaves on trees the race of man is found,
Now green in youth, now withering on the ground;
Another race the following spring supplies,
They fall successive, and successive rise:
So generations in their course decay,
So flourish these, when those have passed away."*

POPE'S HOMER.

2,70

CS

71

D782

1889

PREFACE.

ERRATA.

Page 137, Line 11—Read 1830 for 1850.

“ 157, “ 29— “ William Hill for William Henry

“ 157, “ 26— “ 1842 for 1843.

“ 240, “ 4— “ 1795 “ 1796.

“ 282, “ 20— “ 1675, year omitted.

“ 336, “ 14— “ “died” for “born.”

“ 367, “ 9— “ Sept. 14th, 1880.

“ 367, “ 12— “ born at Malden, Mass.

“ 367, “ 21— “ born Jan. 5th, 1880.

“ 495, “ 3— “ 1809 for 1807.

records of the church (that of Lynn) where the family attended being entirely lost, when the church was removed to a new site; or else they were imperfectly kept, or so obliterated that it is

impossible to read them : thus many children are known only by the settlement of estates. Therefore it should be a matter of surprise that so much information has been gathered, as the estates were small, and the deeds few, the owners rich not in the goods of this world, but in Puritanic virtues.

All town, county, church, and probate records, and even grave-stones, have been searched for information concerning this family, and their collaterals compiled in the Appendix. These records have been given as found recorded, when spelling was rendered according to sound, and not rules, and capital letters according to the pleasure of the writer, and all words commencing with capital F were written double ff.

The records of the earlier families have been traced by Mr. Perley Derby, who is an expert in genealogy, in Salem, Mass., where he has always lived, and where he bears a high reputation, and where most of the families under consideration lived and died. Information of the other families has been obtained either from members now living, or those who knew of them, and from family Bibles, the earliest of which is a copy of the "Breeches" Bible. This belonged to some member of the family at a remote period, who had probably brought it over from England, where only it was printed and sold, perhaps by the emigrant. But this can never be certainly known, for both covers and the first books are gone.

William Driver, whose parentage is not definitely known, though the son probably of Robert Driver, Jr., owned this Bible in 1600, for the birth-dates of all his children, also of the children by his wife's second marriage, are to be found on the margins of its leaves, the first date being July 31, 1685, birth of his son John, who was his third child. From this family the Bible descended in the family in a direct line down to

the present owner, Dr. Stephen William Driver, of Cambridge, Mass. (No. 114), through whose courtesy all the records contained therein have been copied for this work.

All local histories have been carefully read for information concerning the places and times where the families under consideration lived; wills and deeds have been rendered in their original spelling as they appear on record, to give information, and also to make the history less dull and dry; explanatory remarks directly in the text have been introduced, that the subject-matter might be more easily understood, and that they might not be omitted by the reader. Thus by the assistance of many persons and much material, this history of a family has been compiled, which the writer presents as a free gift to all descendants and contributors.¹ She trusts that all will take as much pleasure in reading it, as she has felt in doing the needed work, which she does not consider ended, but for which she solicits additional information and corrections, as mistakes no doubt have unavoidably been made, as in some instances information has been obtained from other sources than the families themselves, some having been found not interested in the history of those who lived before them, and others having in no way noticed the request for relative facts concerning themselves, while others still have given only a part of the required data, consequently the remainder has been added from outside information. Thus, with this and similar obstacles, the compiler presents this history to the reader with the knowledge that she has made it as true and perfect as existing information would permit; facts always having been recorded as they were found on record, which, to be accurate, must be given

¹ To all others at \$3.00 a copy, delivered. To be obtained of the binder, William Waters, 101 Fulton Street, New York City, or of the compiler, Mrs. Cooke, 43 East Fifty-Seventh Street, New York, N. Y.

without apology, however disagreeable or pleasant; as the omission of the ugly ones, and the giving of only the beautiful, would not have been a true history, which this aims to be.

To all who have rendered needed information, many promptly and willingly, and in two instances unasked, the compiler is deeply indebted, and takes this opportunity to acknowledge the same; for without their aid her self-imposed task would have been a failure.

HARRIET RUTH (WATERS) COOKE.

43 EAST FIFTY-SEVENTH STREET,
NEW YORK CITY, 1888.



CONTENTS.

THE DRIVER FAMILY IN EUROPE.

PAGES

Those of the name of Driver as found in the "Hundred Rolls." — As found in "Parliamentary Writs." — Gascony. — Prefix <i>de</i> and <i>le</i> . — Driver as found in Berkeley Hundred. — As found in Bridge's His. of Northamptonshire. — De Driebl as in the "Great Pipe Roll." — Dive as in Baker's His. of Northamptonshire. — Dryver as in Bridge's. — Dryve as in Baker. — Town of Dives. — Dives' Coat of Arms. — Driver Coat of Arms. — Norfolk: Hugh Dryver, Mayor of. — Freeholders of Iselham and Whittlesford, Cambridgeshire. — Those of the name of Driver as found in "Calendar Pleadings." — Clericus. — Dives, Dyves, and Drivers, Members of Parliament, and Sheriffs of Northamptonshire. — Canons of the Church of the name. — Those of the name of Drever	1-20
Table of all the Driver families	21-23

THE DRIVER FAMILY.

FAMILY I.

Robert Driver. — Shepard Street, Lynn, Mass. — The first church of Lynn, and its fourth minister. — Obligations of English shipmasters in 1630. — Impost of Charles I. — Seventeen hundred emigrants from England arrive in New England in 1630. — Fifty families settle at Lynn, Mass. — Sixteen ships sent from England to New England by the Massachusetts Bay Company in 1630. — Early food of the Colonists. — Heads of the fifty Lynn families. — Heads of the five first families of Lynn, Mass. — Children of Robert Driver. — Town government of Lynn. — Town meetings. — Common labor. — First houses. — Hayward: first town pasture. — Nahant. — Freeman. — Freeman's oath. — Political rights of the freemen of Massachusetts. — "Legal" year; "historical" year. — Change of the year. — Division of the lands of Lynn, Mass. — Rumney Marsh. — Petition of Jane Armitage. — An "ordinaire." — Its license in 1645. — Anchor Tavern. — Complaint against Samuel Hall. — Presentment of Wm. Witter. — Appraisers of the estate of Hugh Churchman. — Petition to divide the common lands of Lynn, Mass., and fence them in. — Complaint for selling liquor to the Indians. — Driver's creek. — Deeds of Gift of Robert Driver. — List of those persons who in 1677 took the oath in New England of "Fidelity and Allegiance to the Government and Jurisdiction." — List of those of Lynn, Mass., who took this oath in 1678. — List of Capt. Gardiner's soldiers in King Phillip's war. — Robert Driver, Jr. — Town receipts from 1696 to 1700 for his services as sexton of the church. — A Robert Driver and

Nicholas Favor hung in Boston in 1675 for murder of Robert Williams. — Account of the trial. — Children of Robert and Phebe Driver. — Robert Potter and family. — Court order in 1675 for 1,000 additional men for the war. — Fifteen of them impressed at Lynn, Mass. — Petition in 1692 of eleven women to sit in the gallery of the church contrary to town law. — Seating the meeting-house. — Pews in same. — Deacon's seat. — Contributions. — Precentors. — Departing from church. — Duty of tything-men. — Carriages in use in 1734. — Purchase of Lynn and Reading, Mass. — Robert Potter. — Commoners. — Division of common lands of Lynn, Mass., in 1706. — Robert Potter's division. — His Deed of Gift. — His children. — His grandchildren. — Grant of 1721 to erect a mill at Lynn, Mass. — Nicholas Potter. — Depositions in Court concerning the death of the child, Eliz. Potter, in a tan-pit. — Deposition on an act of assault and battery in 1663. — Will of Nicholas Potter, Sr. — His children 25-56

FAMILY II.

Robert Driver, Jr. — Names of the fifteen men impressed at Lynn, Mass., for King Philip's war. — The military company of Lynn, and their accoutrements in 1630. — The march of seventy-five miles to the Narragansetts in 1675. — Petition for lands for service in King Philip's war. — A tract granted but never located; subsequently disposed of by Court to others. — A second petition forty-two years afterwards. — Committee appointed to survey and lay out two Townships. — Town granted called Souhegan West, No. 3. — Thirty-three years afterwards called Amherst, N. H. — Souhegan West portioned out in lots to the survivors of the war, or their representatives. — List of those of Lynn who drew these lots, which could be exchanged or sold. — Sale of Ruth Driver's lot. — Children of Robert Driver, Jr. — Probate matter pertaining to Ruth Driver. — Her land grants of 1706. — Her deeds. — Thomas Witt buys half of her house. — Deed of same. — Administration on his estate. — Will of John Witt, Sr. — Abstract of the will of Jonathan Witt 57-68

FAMILY III.

Richard Driver, of Lynn, Mass. — Iron works of Lynn. — Daniel Salmon. — Reward of the town for his service as a soldier. — A Richard Driver, of Boston, Mass. — His children 69, 70

FAMILY IV.

John Driver, of Lynn, Mass. — His children. — Removal to Boston, Mass. — Almshouse of Boston 71

FAMILY V.

William Driver. — His parentage. — His estate administered on by Daniel Grant. — County Court Records concerning him. — Early law respecting service in the Indian wars. — List of Capt. Joseph Gardiner's men of Feb. 29, 1675-76. — "Breeches" Bible. — William Driver's petition for a distillery. — He witnesses many deeds. — Deeds of Stacey to Driver. — Indebtedness to Mary Batter. — The same to Zebulon Hill. — Children of William Driver. — William Driver, Jr., to Daniel Grant. — Second marriage of Mary Driver. — Daniel Grant. — Amounts paid out of the estate of William Driver. — Petition of Jeremiah Neal. — Accounts rendered in Court by Mary Driver, alias Grant. — Daniel Grant appointed administrator of the estate of Mary Driver, alias Grant. — Will of Daniel Grant. — His children. — Children of Wm. Gale. — Children of John King. — Children of John Glover 72-86

CONTENTS.

ix

FAMILY VI.

PAGES

Salmon Driver. — Impressed for second Indian war. — Petition for his release. — His child 87

FAMILY VII.

Thomas Driver. — Stephen Ingalls. — Town bell-ringer. — Children of Thomas Driver. — Thomas Phippen. — Gen. David Phippen. — Children of Thomas Phippen 88-90

FAMILY VIII.

Capt. Michael Driver. — Robert Gray. — Paul Mansfield. — Deed of Eliz. Ashby. — Deed of Driver and Gray. — Children of Capt. Michael Driver. — Rev. William Bently 90-94

FAMILY IX.

Solomon Driver. — John Bishop. — Old Tenor. — Estate of Solomon Driver. — Hog-reeve. — Herding of cattle and swine. — Tything-men. — "Evening and morning the first day." — Hay warden. — Children of Solomon Driver 94-98

FAMILY X.

Stephen Driver. — His children 98, 99

FAMILY XI.

Capt. Michael Driver. — "Aunt Poynton." — Salem Marine Society. — Will of Capt. Michael Driver. — Deed of Driver and Bray. — Prizes and Privateersmen. — Letters of Capt. Driver on his voyages. — The "Three Brothers" schooner. — Michael Driver's deposition concerning the privateer "King of Prussia." — Disbursements of the schooner "Three Brothers." — Sloop "Betsy." — Invoice of merchandise of same. — Capture of same. — Released upon a compromise and a hostage. — Schooner "Mary" as a Flag of Truce. — Seized by English privateer "Revenge." — Released. — Hostages redeemed. — "Flag of Truce" seized a second time by a French privateer. — Letter concerning same. — Disbursements of schooner "Mary." — Schooner "Patty." — Children of Capt. Michael Driver. — Major Thomas Barnes. — His children. — William Le Bourdon (Boden). — His children. — William Boden, Jr.; his children. — Children of Michael Barnes. — Children of Thomas Barnes. — Children of Capt. William Patterson. — Children of Nathaniel S. Foster. — Child of Nathaniel F. Safford. — Children of Jonathan Lord Kimball. — Children of Moses Brown 99-121

FAMILY XII.

Capt. Solomon Driver. — His children 121, 122

FAMILY XIII.

Capt. John Driver. — His estate. — His children 122, 123

FAMILY XIV.

Stephen Driver. — River Street, Salem, Mass. — Cape Driver. — Deeds. — Children of Stephen Driver 124, 125

FAMILY XV.

PAGES

Benjamin Driver. — Children of Israel A. Dodge. — His will. — Origin of the Dodge family. — List of the prisoners of Dartmoor prison during the war of 1812. — Children of John Preston. — Children of Alvah Kendall. — Children of John Preston, Jr. — Children of Geo. W. Kingsley 126-130

FAMILY XVI.

Thomas Poynton Driver. — Shipped for England. — Seized and impressed on board English ship "Goliath." — Ship sent to reinforce Admiral Nelson's fleet at Egypt. — Battle of the Nile. — Administration on the estate of Thomas P. Driver. — The chase of the British frigate "Poitiers" into Salem Harbor in 1813. — Child of Thomas P. Driver. — Children and grandchildren of Joseph Dalton . . . 131-137

FAMILY XVII.

Stephen Driver, Jr. — Joseph Metcalf. — Catherine Neal. — Schools in 1637. — Shoe business of Stephen Driver, Jr. — Term "Cordwainer." — Law of 1698 concerning trades. — Cadets of Salem, Mass., in 1786. — Danvers and Salem Sail Company. — First piece of broadcloth made in New England. — Children of Stephen Driver, Jr. — Family of Millets. — Thomas Millet, his children and grandchildren. — Capt. Charles Millet. — His voyages. — His children. — Family of Jenks. — The emigrant Joseph Jenks. — Iron works of Lynn, Mass. — First engine for mills. — First fire-engine. — First die for coin. — First domestic tools. — Joseph Jenks, Jr. — Massachusetts law of 1651 against excessive finery. — Joseph Jenks, Jr., removal to Rhode Island. — His descendants. — Descendants of Major Nathaniel Jenks. — Their origin. — Children of Henry Johnson. — Ebenezer Buswell. — His ancestors. — His shoe business. — His children and grandchildren. — Buswell family in England and New England. — William Waters, his family and children. — Descendants of Chad Brown, of Providence, R. I. — Of Thomas Angell, of same place. — Children of Henry Clarence Cooke. — Of William Ellis Waters 137-157

FAMILY XVIII.

Solomon Driver. — His estate. — His children. — Estate of John Driver. — Will of Solomon Driver. — Richard Allen 158, 159

FAMILY XIX.

John Driver. — His imprisonment in 1758; his enlistment in 1776; his exchange in 1778. — His children 160

FAMILY XX.

Samuel Driver. — His enlistments in 1775-76. — His children. — Mrs. Driver's second marriage. — Aaron Lee 161

FAMILY XXI.

Thomas Driver. — Children of William Archer. — Heirs of William Herrick. — Deed of same. — Dr. Edward Creamer 162-165

FAMILY XXII.

Stephen Driver, 3d. — His shoe business. — His children. — Children of William Phippen Fuller. — Children of Brainard Brooks 165-169

CONTENTS.

xi

FAMILY XXIII.

PAGES

Rev. Thomas Driver. — His shoe business. — His pastorates. — His children . . . 169-171

FAMILY XXIV.

Rev. Joseph M. Driver. — Collegiate life in 1825. — His pastorates. — His children . . . 171-175

FAMILY XXV.

Capt. William Driver. — His apprenticeship. — His voyages. — Pitcairn Islanders. — "Old Glory." — Children of Capt. William Driver. — Children of William H. Summers. — Children of Edward Reece. — Children of Thomas H. Moore. — Child of Lewis Drake . . . 175-184

FAMILY XXVI.

George Driver. — His apprenticeship. — His shoe business. — His children. — Child of Rev. Jasper F. Wightman. — The Catholic Apostolic Church . . . 185-187

FAMILY XXVII.

Henry Driver. — His children. — Children of James Edmonson. — Children of Adam Woolf. — Child of William Webber . . . 188, 189

FAMILY XXVIII.

Capt. Andrew Driver. — His children. — Children of Israel Allen, and grand-child . . . 189, 190

FAMILY XXIX.

John Driver, Jr. — His children . . . 191

FAMILY XXX.

Nehemiah Driver. — Children of Charles Adams. — Child of Nehemiah Driver. — Children of William Stone. — Children of Azor Dodge . . . 191, 192

FAMILY XXXI.

Samuel Driver. — His children. — Children of Hilliard Morse . . . 193

FAMILY XXXII.

Stephen Pierson Driver. — Two poems. — His children. — Children of Geo. W. Ely . . . 194-196

FAMILY XXXIII.

George H. S. Driver. — His children . . . 197

FAMILY XXXIV.

Samuel Driver. — His children . . . 198

FAMILY XXXV.

William Luscomb Driver. — His children . . . 198

	PAGES
FAMILY XXXVI.	
Charles Millet Driver. — His children	199
FAMILY XXXVII.	
George Washington Driver. — His children	199, 200
FAMILY XXXVIII.	
Joseph Metcalf Driver. — His children	200
FAMILY XXXIX.	
Dr. Stephen W. Driver. — "Breeches" Bible. — A poem. — His child . . .	201-204
FAMILY XL.	
Thomas Driver. — His children	204, 205
FAMILY XLI.	
Edward Augustus S. H. Driver. — His children	205
FAMILY XLII.	
Major William Christopher Driver. — His child	206, 207
FAMILY XLIII.	
Henry Lynch Driver. — His children	207
FAMILY XLIV.	
Dr. John Driver. — His child	207, 208
FAMILY XLV.	
Capt. David Driver. — His children	208
FAMILY XLVI.	
Joseph Day Driver. — His children	209, 210
FAMILY XLVII.	
Samuel Driver. — His children	210
FAMILY XLVIII.	
Frank Wallace Driver. — His child	211
FAMILY XLIX.	
Col. William Raymond Driver. — His children	211, 212
FAMILY L.	
Andrew Brown Driver. — His children	212
FAMILY LI.	
John Hooper Driver. — His children	213

CONTENTS.

xiii

FAMILY LII.

PAGES

Samuel Driver, Jr. — His children. 312

FAMILY LIII.

George Norton Driver. — His children 214

APPENDIX.

Contents of Appendix. — Names of the twenty-three families contained therein. 216

THE ARCHER FAMILY.

Samuel Archer. — Hutchinson family. — Children of Samuel and Susanna Archer. —
Children of Matthew Dove 217, 218

SECOND GENERATION.

Samuel Archer, Jr. — His children. — John Archer. — Thomas Weeks. — His children. —
Deeds. — Nathaniel Pickman. — Children of John Archer. — His grandchildren. —
Children of Samuel Very 218-221

THIRD GENERATION.

Jonathan Archer. — His children. — Children of John Elkins 222

FOURTH GENERATION.

Jonathan Archer. — His children. — Samuel Archer. — His children. — Nathaniel
Archer. — His children 223, 224

FIFTH GENERATION.

Jonathan Archer. — His children. — Samuel Archer. — His children. — George
Archer. — His children and grandchildren 224-226

SIXTH GENERATION.

Jonathan Archer. — Children of William Ropes. — Children of Jonathan Archer. —
Samuel Archer. — His children and grandchildren. — William Archer. — His
children 226-228

THE BABBIDGE FAMILY.

Christopher Babbidge. — Affidavits of Nicholas Bartlett and Damaris Phippeny. —
Ann (Downing) (Gardner) Bradstreet. — Gov. Simon Bradstreet. — John and
Edward Carlton. — Children of John. — Children of Christopher Babbidge 229-232

SECOND GENERATION.

Christopher Babbidge. — East Parish Meeting-house. — Its successive pastors. —
First church of Salem, Mass. — Thirty-six of its members. — Children of Christopher
Babbidge 232-233

THIRD GENERATION.	PAGES
John Babbidge. — Madam Susanna Babbidge. — Her school. — Their children. — Christopher Babbidge. — First children of William King. — His maternal grandparents. — Children of Capt. Samuel King. — John Roberts. — Children of Christopher Babbidge. — Children of Capt. Robert Stone. — Second children of William King	234-237
FOURTH GENERATION.	
Benjamin Babbidge. — His children and grandchildren. — Child of William Cotton. — Children of Col. Samuel Archer. — Capt. Christopher Babbidge. — His son. — His second marriage. — Children of same. — Children and grandchildren of Andrew Ward. — Children of Thomas Wadleigh Taylor. — Children of Charles Hobart. — Children of Benjamin Farless	237-241
FIFTH GENERATION.	
Benjamin Babbidge. — His children. — John Babbidge. — His children. — Capt. Christopher Babbidge. — Capt. Edward Allen. — Children and grandchildren of Capt. Christopher Babbidge. — Children of Henry Russell	241-244
BECKFORD FAMILY.	
George Beckford. — His children	245
SECOND GENERATION.	
John Beckford. — His children	245-246
THIRD GENERATION.	
George Beckford. — His children. — Deacon John Beckford. — His children	246-247
FOURTH GENERATION.	
Joshua Beckford. — His children. — Samuel Beckford. — His children. — Children of Samuel Goodhue. — Children of William Goodhue	247-249
FIFTH GENERATION.	
Joshua Beckford. — His children. — Children of Stephen Driver, 3d	249, 250
BRAY FAMILY.	
Robert Bray. — Sire de Bray. — Children of Robert Bray	251, 252
SECOND GENERATION.	
Capt. Robert Bray. — His children. — Children of Jonathan Webb. — Children of William Cash. — Daniel Bray. — His children. — Children of William Mansfield. — Children of John Ingersoll	252-254
THIRD GENERATION.	
Capt. Benjamin Bray. — His children. — Capt. Thomas Poynton. — His will. — Will of Mrs. Poynton. — Children of Capt. Michael Driver	254-259
FOURTH GENERATION.	
Benjamin Bray. — His child. — Children of Robert Hale Ives. — John Bray. — His children. — Children of Robert Bray. — Capt. Daniel Bray. — His children. —	

CONTENTS.

xv

PAGES

Children of Capt. Benjamin Henderson. — Children of Capt. Nicholas Tillinghast
Snell. — Children of Robert Barr 260-263

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. Daniel Bray. — His children. — Children and grandchild of George C. Chase.
— Child of Fred Manley Creamer 263, 264

THE CASH FAMILY.

William Cash. — His children 265

SECOND GENERATION.

William Cash. — His children 265

THIRD GENERATION.

William Cash. — His children 266

FOURTH GENERATION.

Mary Cash. — Her husband, Capt. Thomas Dean. — Their children. — Children of
Joseph Waters. — Children of Joseph Gilbert Waters. — Children of William
Dean Waters 266, 267

THE CROWNINSHIELD FAMILY.

Dr. John Kaspar Richter von Kronenshelt. — His children 268

SECOND GENERATION.

John Crowninshield. — His children. — Clifford Crowninshield. — His children. —
Children of John Byrne 269, 270

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. John Crowninshield. — His children. — Children of Joshua Dodge . . . 270, 271

FOURTH GENERATION.

Sarah Crowninshield. — Her husband, Major John Saunders. — Their children . 271, 272

THE DALAND FAMILY.

Benjamin Daland. — His children 273, 274

SECOND GENERATION.

George Daland. — His children. — Robert Neal, Jr. — His children. — Children of
Nathaniel Foster. — His grandchildren 274, 275

THIRD GENERATION.

Benjamin Daland. — His children. — Children of Dr. Edward Creamer. — His
grandchildren. — Children of Rev. William Herrick. — Children of William
Archer 275-277

FOURTH GENERATION.

PAGES

Capt. John Daland. — His child by third marriage. — Children of Daniel Hobbs Johnson, Sr.	278
---	-----

THE DERBY FAMILY.

Derivation of the name. — Roger Derby, the emigrant. — His New England home- stead. — A Quaker. — His persecutions. — Notarial record concerning Elizabeth Haskitt. — Stephen Haskett. — Their children. — William Dynn, her first hus- band. — Notarial record concerning him. — Their children. — Children of Roger Derby. — His son Richard. — His grandson John. — Roger Derby's second chil- dren	279-283
---	---------

SECOND GENERATION.

Samuel Derby. — His children. — Col. John Hathorne. — His son Benjamin. — His children. — Children of Miles Ward, Jr. — Children of Miles Ward, 3d. — Chil- dren of Joshua Goodale	284-286
--	---------

THIRD GENERATION.

Samuel Derby. — Child by first marriage. — Children by second marriage. — Chil- dren of Wm. Lang. — Children of Kendall Flint. — Children of Thomas Field. — John Winn, Jr. — Children of Joshua Cross	286-288
--	---------

FOURTH GENERATION.

John Derby. — Capt. Robert Foster. — Col. Leslie's retreat. — Children of John Derby	289, 290
---	----------

FIFTH GENERATION.

Charles Derby. — His children	290
---	-----

THE FLINT FAMILY.

William, Thomas, and Edward Flint. — Hon. Thomas Flint. — William Wood. — Settlement of Concord, N. H. — First will on the Middlesex Probate records. — Thomas Flint. — William Flint. — His will. — His real estate. — His children. — Will of his daughter Alice (Pickering). — Her first husband, Henry Bullock, Jr. — His father and family. — Their settlement in New England. — Will of his father. — Henry's children. — Her second husband, Lieut. John Pickering. — His father. — Children of Lieut. John. — Grandchildren of the name of Pickering. — Child of Samuel Nichols. — Children of James Browne. — Children of Daniel King. — Child of Nathaniel Beadle. — Children of Richard Palmer. — Children of Joshua Ward. — Children of Miles Ward. — Children of Adoniram Col- lins	291-298
--	---------

SECOND GENERATION.

Ensign Edward Flint. — His children. — Thomas Lee. — His monument in Copps Hill Burial-ground. — Children of Joseph Dean. — Capt. Thomas Flint. — His estate. — Lieut. John Johnson. — William Johnson, the emigrant, who settled at Charlestown, Mass. — Captivity of Ruth Johnson. — She slain by the Indians in the Haverhill massacre at the same time with the emigrant. — Children of Capt. Thomas Flint	299-302
---	---------

THIRD GENERATION.

PAGES

Capt. Joseph Flint. — His estate. — His slave. — Will of Experience (Derby), his wife. — Their children. — David Flint. — His will. — His children. — His grandchildren, children of Thomas Metcalf, and of John Holman, and of Thomas Crafts. — Joseph Flint. — His children	302-305
---	---------

FOURTH GENERATION.

John Flint. — His child. — David Flint. — His child. — William Flint and others, in 1737, stand seized as tenants in common of land in Salem, called the Brick-kiln	306
---	-----

FIFTH GENERATION.

John Flint. — His children. — His grandchildren Flint	307
---	-----

THE HERRICK FAMILY.

Erick the Forester. — Signification of Einric. — The English family. — Eyrick. — His children	308
---	-----

SECOND GENERATION.

Henry Eyrick, of Great Stretton, Eng. — His child	308
---	-----

THIRD GENERATION.

John Eyrick. — His children	309
---------------------------------------	-----

FOURTH GENERATION.

Robert Eyrick. — His children. — Robert de Stretton	309
---	-----

FIFTH AND SIXTH GENERATIONS.

Sir Wm. Eyrick. — His descendant, Robert Eyrick. — Mandate from the Pope. — Robert's journey to Rome. — His consecration. — His children	309
--	-----

SEVENTH GENERATION AND EIGHTH.

Thomas Eyrick. — His children. — John Eyricke. — His epitaph. — His twelve children. — His grandchildren	310, 311
--	----------

NINTH GENERATION.

Sir William Heyricke. — His residences. — A member of Parliament. — Knighted. — Attached to the Court of Elizabeth. — Sent by her on an embassy. — His return and reward. — His misfortune. — His twelve children. — His son William his successor to his estate of Beaumanor. — His son Richard, Warden of Christ's College, Manchester. — His son Henry, the emigrant to America	312-314
--	---------

TENTH GENERATION.

Herricks in America. — Henry Herrick, the emigrant. — His land grant. — His letter to his brother John in England. — His church dismissal. — His marriage. — His agreement with Richard Lambart. — His will — His children. — Children of Philip Fowler, his grandchildren	314-316
--	---------

ELEVENTH GENERATION AND TWELFTH.

John Herrick. — His children. — John Herrick. — His children	316, 317
--	----------

THIRTEENTH GENERATION AND FOURTEENTH. PAGES

Robert Herrick. — His children. — John Herrick. — His children and grandchildren 317-319

FIFTEENTH GENERATION.

John Herrick, Jr. — His children. — Children of Samuel Dyer. — Children of Calvin Herrick 319

THE IVES FAMILY.

Family of Eve. — Grant in 1252 of Thomas Ives. — Roger Ivery, cup-bearer to William the Conqueror. — Hugh de Grentemaisnil. — His appointment as one of the administrators of justice over all England. — Made sheriff. — He becomes a monk. — His fourth son, Ivo. — Inherits his father's possessions. — He takes up arms in defence of Robert, Duke of Normandy. — His pilgrimage to Jerusalem, for which he mortgaged his possessions. — Ivo died on his journey. — His lands lost to his successors. — Rogerus de Ivery. — His reward. — Derivation of the name Ives. — Ivo de Usegate. — John Ives, of "Saham Tonye." — Livery of Thomas Ives. — Will of Thomas Ives, Yeoman, Ickford. — Wm. Ives's deed of gifts in 1639. — Thomas Ives, the emigrant. — Administration on his estate. — His marriages. — Admitted to First ch., Salem, Mass. — Inventory of his estate. — His children. — Children of John White 320-325

SECOND GENERATION.

Thomas Ives. — His children. — Capt. Ben. Ives. — His will. — His children. — Children of John Crowninshield, his grandchildren. — Children of Robert Rantoul, also his grandchildren. — Children of Samuel Very, part of whom were his grandchildren. — Very family in America. — Children of Capt. James Devereux, his great-grandchildren. — Philip D'Evereux. — Children of Wm. Dean Waters. — Lawrence Waters, the emigrant, his descendants. — Children of Peter Cheever. — His emigrant ancestor 325-330

THIRD GENERATION.

Samuel Ives. — His wife's second marriage. — Nathaniel Archer. — His children. — Capt. Ben. Ives. — Hon. Tristram Coffin. — The first of the name in England. — Elizabeth Gilman and her father, Hon. John Gilman. — Elizabeth Clarke (Clark, according to Coffin), born Somerby. — Col. Robert Hale. — Rev. John Hale. — Enoch Hale. — The name of Hale. — Louisbourg soldiers. — Notarial record concerning Ben. Ives. — His children. — Rev. Nicholas Gilman. — Joseph Gilman. — His appointments under government. — His children. — Ben. Ives Gilman. — Elder John Prince. — Mrs. Prince. — Children of Ben. Ives Gilman. — Samuel Ives, son of Capt. Benjamin. — Deed of John Ives and others to James Ford. — Children of Samuel. — John Ives. — His children 331-339

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. Robert Hale Ives. — Petition of five sea captains of Beverly to the Marine Society of Salem. — Children of Robert H. Ives. — Thomas Bancroft. — His lineage. — His children. — Capt. Ben. Ives. — His children. — Children of John Adams. — Capt. William Ives. — His children. — John Ives. — His children. — Children of Jeremiah Emmerton 339-343

FIFTH GENERATION.

PAGES

Thomas Poynton Ives. — Elder Chad Brown, of Providence. — His descendants. — Nicholas Brown, Jr. — His beneficence. — Children of Thomas P. Ives. — John Angell, of Providence, R. I., and his descendants. — Lineage of Martha Olney. Account of Roger Williams. — William Goddard. — Dr. Giles Goddard. — Lineage of Sarah Updike. — Journalistic accounts of Wm. Goddard. — Founder of the present postal system of the U. S. A. — Journalistic accounts of Mary Goddard. — Goddard lineage. — Wm. Giles Goddard. — His children and grandchildren. — Children of William Binney. — Dr. Thomas Perkins Shepard. — Lineage of William Fairfax, Esq. — Gen. Lewis Cass, a statesman, governor, and author. — William Ives. — His children. — Children of William Porter. — Children of Emmons Raymond Spear. — Children of Edward Augustus S. Driver. — John Mansfield Ives. — Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick. — Their persecutions. — Imprisonment and banishment of four of their children — Natural History Society of Essex Co. — Mrs. Ives. — Children of John M. Ives. — Children of Gilbert Lewis Streeter. — Child of Geo. L. Hawkes. — Thomas Pierce, the emigrant. — Children of Lewis Pierce. — Stephen Bradshaw Ives. — Founder of the "Salem Observer." — His children. — Children of Charles Sewall. — Children of Frederick M. Osborne. — Children of Frank A. Langmaid. — Benjamin Hale Ives. — His children. — Children of William Cleveland Henderson 344-359

SIXTH GENERATION.

Moses Brown Ives. — His children. — John Motley, the emigrant. — Sir Wm. Geo. Vernon Harcourt. — Robert Hale Ives. — His children. — Children of Prof. Wm. Gammell. — William Hale Ives. — His children. — Ben. Franklin Ives. — His children. — John Southwick Ives. — His children and grandchildren. — Charles Frederic Ives. — His children. — Stephen Bradshaw Ives, Jr. — His children. — Children of Charles P. Abbot. — Henry Perkins Ives. — His children. — Children of Charles F. Quincy. — Geo. Augustus Ives. — His children. — Ben. Hale Ives, Jr. — His children 359-366

SEVENTH GENERATION.

Charles Edwin Ives. — His children. — Geo. Burnham Ives. — His children . . . 367

KIMBALL FAMILY.

Richard Kimball. — His emigration. — His family. — Thomas Scott, Jr. — Henry Kimball and his family. — Children of Richard Kimball. — Children and grandchildren of Joseph Fowler. — Symon, the Indian. — Petition of Mary Kimball. — Her children. — Children of Edward Allen. — Children of Caleb Kimball . . . 368-373

SECOND GENERATION.

Henry Kimball. — Administration on, and inventory of, his estate. — Land of Wm. Rayner. — Daniel Kilham. — Humphrey Gilbert. — Children and grandchildren of Henry Kimball. — John Wyatt, of Ipswich. — Portion of his will. — Agreement between John Kimball and his grandmother. — Suit for same. — His children. — Bradford. — Rowley. — Thomas Stickney. — Tything-man. — Plumb Island. — Sale of Thomas Stickney — Richard Kimball. — His inventory. — Selectmen. — The lease of 200 acres of land for 1,000 years. — The county debtor to Richard Kimball. — His children and grandchildren. — Children of Wm. Foster. — Twelve proprietors to a tract of land in Boxford lease it for a meeting-house. — Children of Jonathan Foster. — John Kimball. — Will of Bridget Brad-

streets. — Tax collectors of Rowley for 1675. — Eleven men, in 1680, appointed to enforce the observance of the Sabbath. — Children of John Kimball. — Cornet Benjamin Kimball. — Overseers of Bradford. — Names of eighteen males who organize a church there in 1682. — Names of seventeen females admitted as members at the first communion. — Children of Cornet Ben. Kimball . . . 373-385

THIRD GENERATION.

Benjamin Kimball. — Deeds his son house, barn, orchard, and north end of farm, and six acres of meadow, etc. — His children . . . 385, 386

FOURTH GENERATION.

Aaron Kimball. — His children . . . 386

LUSCOMB FAMILY.

William Luscomb. — Bought a row of houses in 1680. — Paid for by instalments. — His children . . . 387

SECOND GENERATION.

John Luscomb. — His father-in-law's estate given his wife. — She sells eight acres. — Their child. — Wm. Luscomb. — His will. — His children. — Children of John Mugford. — Children of Nathaniel Felt . . . 387, 388

THIRD GENERATION.

Samuel Luscomb. — His children. — John Luscomb. — His children. — Wm. Luscomb. — His children. — Wm. Lander . . . 389, 390

FOURTH GENERATION.

Samuel Luscomb. — His children. — William Luscomb. — His children. — Children of Hero Nichols. — Children of Israel Woodbury . . . 390-392

FIFTH GENERATION.

William Luscomb. — His children. — Children of Stephen Webb. — Children of Capt. Abner Goodhue . . . 392, 393

METCALF FAMILY.

Metcalfe, derivation of. — Its origin. — Nappa, in Yorkshire, Eng. — Sir Christopher Metcalfe. — Michael Metcalfe, of Dedham, Mass. — Joseph Metcalfe, of Ipswich, Mass. — Ipswich in 1633. — Family of Michael Metcalfe, of Norwich, Eng. — Capt. Joseph Metcalfe. — Original proprietor of Ipswich. — His grant of land there. — He deputy to the General Court of Massachusetts for five years. — Yearly subscription to the support of Major Denison. — List of subscribers and their amounts. — Will of Joseph Metcalfe. — His child. — Children of Edward Beacham . . . 394-398

SECOND GENERATION.

Thomas Metcalfe. — Deeds to his son Joseph half of his farm. — Sells to Joseph Ayers. — Divides his remaining property among his children. — Children of Thomas Metcalfe. — Children of Thomas Ives. — Children of John White. — Will of William Butler, of Ipswich, Mass. — Inventory of his estate . . . 398-405

THIRD GENERATION.

PAGES

Joseph Metcalfe. — He deeds his estate to his son-in-law, James Davis, for the care Davis is to take of it. — He sells a house and twenty acres to Francis Crumpton. — Agreement between Joseph Metcalfe and his brothers and sisters. — Children of Joseph Metcalfe. — Children of Elder James Davis. — Children of Nathan Davis. — Children of Samuel Ross. — Children of Joseph Fowler. — Children and grandchildren of Benjamin Crombie 405-409

FOURTH GENERATION.

Joseph Metcalfe. — Children of Capt. John Ayers. — Will of Joseph Metcalfe. — He gives to Ipswich four acres of land as long as the house on it is used for a church. — Organization of first church in Linebrook Parish. — Geo. Leslie, the pastor of this church. — Children of Joseph Metcalfe. — Children of Aaron Kimball. — Benjamin Stickney. — His children. — William Stickney, the emigrant. — Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, of Rowley, Mass 409-415

FIFTH GENERATION.

Thomas Metcalf. — Inventory of his estate. — Will of his widow Ruth. — His children. — Capt. Israel Davis. — His war record. — His children. — Charles Davis deeds to Samuel Very the house at Buffum's Corner. — He buys 105 acres in Ipswich, part of which he sells to Allen Perley, his brother-in-law. — He removed to Belfast, Me. — His children. — Children of Dudley Stickney. — Matthew Adams Stickney. — His genealogical record. — The emigrant, William Waters. — Capt. John Symonds. — His war record. — His children. — Second children of James Cutler, Sr. — Jonathan Ropes. — His children and grandchildren. — First children of James Cutler, Sr. — Cutler deeds. — House at Buffum's Corner. — "Aunt Cutler." — Samuel Metcalf. — Children of Jeremiah Foster. — Reginald Foster, the emigrant. — His family. — His grant of land 415-426

SIXTH GENERATION.

Joseph Metcalf. — His three marriages. — Metcalf deeds. — His enlistment and war record. — Coat roll. — Orders from the Orderly Book of Crafts Regiment pertaining to Lieut. Metcalf. — Continental money. — Joseph Metcalf sells the house of his ancestors. — He sells his share in his sister Abigail's house. — His child 426-432

MOSES FAMILY.

Henry Moses. — Bridget Very. — Children of Edward Giles. — Children of Henry Moses 433

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. Eleazer Moses. — His children. — Children of Peter Cheever 434, 435

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. Eleazer Moses. — His real estate. — His children. — John Kehoo . . . 435-437

FOURTH GENERATION.

Samuel Moses. — His children. — Children of Edward Dalton 437

NEAL FAMILY.

PAGES

Its origin.—Thomas Neale.—Richard, son of Nigell.—His pedigree.—John Neale, the emigrant.—Anne Cromwell.—Sir Oliver Cromwell.—Cromwells originally bore the name of Williams.—Thomas Cromwell.—Will of John Neale, of Salem.—His brother Francis, of Casco Bay.—Children of John Neale 438-441

SECOND GENERATION.

Lieut. Jeremiah Neale.—His rank in the local militia.—He marshal of Salem.—His children.—Samuel Archer.—Hutchinson musical family.—Children of Samuel Archer.—John Neale.—Petition of Ann Neale.—Their children.—Joseph Neale.—His children.—Children of Samuel Ropes 441-445

THIRD GENERATION.

Jeremiah Neal.—His children.—Robert Neal.—His children.—Joseph Neal.—His children.—Children of William Pickering 445-446

FOURTH GENERATION.

Jonathan Neal.—His children.—Robert Neal, Jr.—His children.—Benjamin Neal.—Lydia Begoe, Sr.—Benjamin Beckford.—Children of James Norris.—Deed of Edward Norris.—Samuel Luscomb.—Children of Benjamin Neal.—Children of Samuel Luscomb 446-449

FIFTH GENERATION.

Jonathan Neal.—His daughter.—Children of Joseph Smith.—His grandchildren.—Capt. David Neal.—His children.—Children of Capt. Wm. Preston.—Children of Capt. David Brown.—Children of William Somers.—Children of Jonathan Preston.—Children of Samuel Preston.—Robert Neal.—Samuel Peters.—Child of Robert Neal 449-452

SIXTH GENERATION.

Daniel Neal.—His children.—Children of Asa Kilham.—Capt. Jonathan Neal.—His enlistment.—His children.—War record of David Augustus Neal.—His children 452-454

PALMER FAMILY.

John Palmer.—His deed of gift.—His children.—Children of Christopher Bubier 455, 456

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. John Palmer.—His will.—Palmer deeds.—Capt. John's children . . 456, 457

THIRD GENERATION.

John Palmer.—His children.—Children of John Saunders 457

FOURTH GENERATION.

John Palmer.—His children 458

FIFTH GENERATION.

Alice Palmer.—Her children.—Children of William Penniman Goodhue.—Children of Jonas Watson 458, 459

CONTENTS.

xxiii

PATTERSON FAMILY.

PAGES

William Patterson. — His children 460

SECOND GENERATION.

William Patterson. — His children 460

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. William Patterson. — His children 461

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. William Patterson. — His children. — Benjamin Patterson. — His children. —
Children of Augustus A. Melvin 462, 463

SAUNDERS FAMILY.

Philemon Saunders. — His children. — Will of Henry Skerry. — Children of Jonathan Webb 464, 465

SECOND GENERATION.

John Saunders. — Children of John Palmer. — Saunders deeds. — Children of John
Saunders. — Children of Rev. Daniel Hopkins 465, 466

THIRD GENERATION.

John Saunders. — Deeds. — His children. — Children of James F. Harrison 467, 468

SILSBEE FAMILY.

Henry Silsbee. — His children. — Moll Pitcher 469, 470

SECOND GENERATION.

Nathaniel Silsbee. — His children. — Children of Ephraim Skerry. — Children of
Jonathan Felt. — Children of John Felt 470-473

THIRD GENERATION.

Nathaniel Silsbee. — His children 472, 473

FOURTH GENERATION.

William Silsbee. — His children. — Children of Mansfield Burrill 473

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. Nathaniel Silsbee. — His children and grandchildren 474

WEBB FAMILY.

Jonathan Webb. — His children. — Neck-gate, Salem, Mass. — The fort. — Webb
street. — Children and grandchildren of John Flint 475, 476

SECOND GENERATION.

PAGES

Jonathan Webb. — Ship Tavern. — Children of Jonathan. — William Shepard, the emigrant. — His minister sons. — Children of Jeremiah Shepard. — Capt. Samuel Webb. — His children. — John Webb. — His children. — Children of James Carrol 476-480

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. Benjamin Webb. — His children. — James Gale, mathematical instrument maker, and drill-master of Washington Rangers 480, 481

FOURTH GENERATION.

Benjamin Webb. — His children. — Children of George West. — William Webb. — His children. — Stephen Webb. — His children 481-483

WEBB FAMILY, — CONTINUED.

Capt. Daniel Webb. — Walter Whitford. — Children of Capt. Daniel. — Children of Ebenezer Cook 484, 485

SECOND GENERATION.

John Webb. — His children. — Miles Ward. — His parentage. — His children. — Children of Jonathan Mansfield. — Perez Webb. — His children. — Daniel Webb. — His child 485-488

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. John Webb. — Webb deeds. — Removal to Boston, — residence in "Wing's Lane." — Owner of five schooners. — His children 489, 490

WELLMAN FAMILY.

Timothy Wellman. — His children 491

SECOND GENERATION.

Samuel Wellman. — Will of widow Mary Wellman. — Oliver Kempton. — His widow's administration of his estate. — Kempton deeds. — Children of Samuel Wellman. — Children of Geo. W. Mullet. — Timothy Wellman. — His estate. — His children. — Children of Thomas Phippen 491-494

THIRD GENERATION.

Com. Timothy Wellman. — Commodore in the War of 1812. — His children. — Capt. Timothy Wellman. — Peter Cheever, the emigrant. — Wellman deed. — Children of Capt. Timothy 494-496

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. Timothy Wellman. — Armed ship "Alexander." — Children of Capt. Timothy 496

CONTENTS.

xxv

ROLL IN THE CHURCH OF DIVES, NORMANDY.

PAGES

The five hundred companions of William in the Conquest of England in 1066 . 497-500

ADDENDA.

Explanatory notes 501

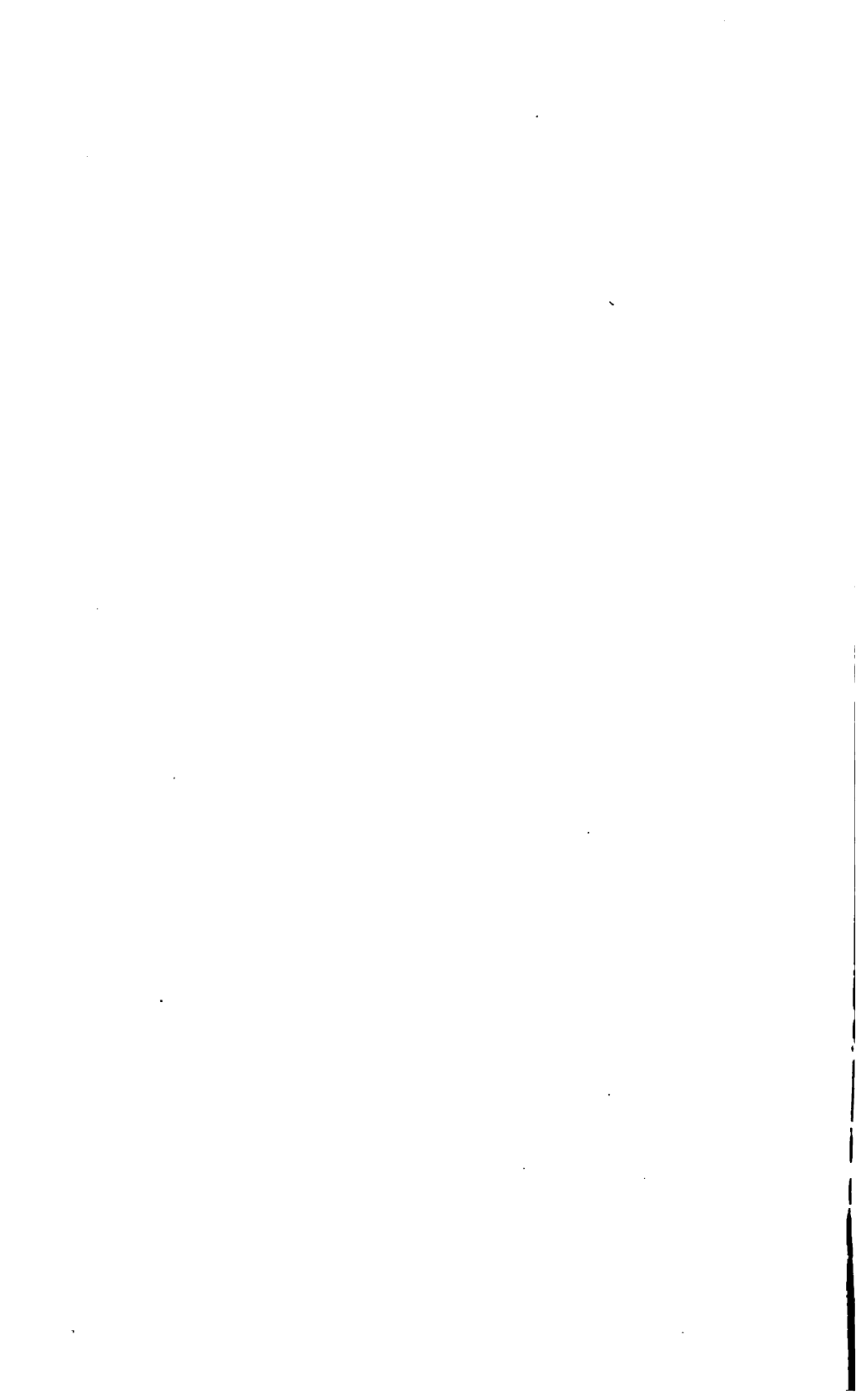
INDEX.

Christian Names of those born Driver 517

INDEX.

Other Surnames, not including that of Driver, except in the Appendix, and Drivers
in Europe 521

RECORD
OF
THE DRIVER FAMILY IN EUROPE.



GENEALOGY OF THE DRIVER FAMILY.

THE DRIVER FAMILY IN EUROPE.

THE first mention of the name of DRIVER is found in the "Hundred Rolls" of England, compiled in the reign of Edward I., which is a record of those who owned lands there in the time of the Conqueror, for which lands some paid rent, some paid sheep, some paid hens, and some paid service as a soldier.

These rolls, begun on Oct. 11, 1274, are written in antique abbreviated Norman-French Latin. The translation of those portions belonging to this family have been rendered by Dr. Stephen William Driver (No. 114), as found in Book II. of the Rolls, p. 426, and are as follows:—

"Alice le Driveress holds one messuage [house-lot and adjoining lands], which contains one rod and fifty acres of land, and returns each year seven pence [tax] during the seventh year of Edw. I. reign [1279]."

There is some doubt about the number of acres in the above account expressed in the original text by "di," — *dimidium* meaning in some places, in some books, like the Domesday, fifty acres; and in other places, and in other books, one half acre. The heading of the division where this account appears, reads:—

"Inquisitions taken on behalf of our Lord the King in the county of Cambridge in the seventh year of the reign of King Edward First.

"Gunilda Driver holds twenty-three acres of farming land and one half acre of meadow; she pays for the farm of the ville [small settlement] 15*sh.* 7*d.* [that is the right to make what she can in collecting the revenues due the king]." — *Hundred Rolls*, p. 44.

"Parish of Godesford. — The Prior of Okeburn holds the settlement of Okeburn by gift of Allen Driver, who gave it to them [the Prior and Monks of Okeburn] in free alms [a form of tenure under which the Church held most of its lands], and it is worth £10 per year. The Prior has both the franchise and the view of frankpledge, as appears by charter of our Lord the King." — *Ibid.*, p. 596.

The next mention found of the name appears in the "Parliamentary Writs," thus:—

"John Le Driver, Manucaptor of Hugo Wake, Knight of the shire returned for Northampton, 1311."

And again:—

"Richard Le Driver pressed to serve as a foot-soldier in Gascony, 1311. Deserts, etc. The Sherrif of the County of Essex is commanded to take him into custody. Writ tested at Westminster, July 13, 1311."

And again:—

"Robert Le Driver, manucaptor of Thomas Burgess, returned for Dorchester, 34 Edw. I. (1316)."

A "manucaptor," according to an ancient work called "The Interpreter, or Booke containing the Signification on Words," by John Covell, London, 1607,—

"From mainprise, signifieth, in our common lawe, the taking or receiving a man into friendly custody that otherwise is or might bee committed to the mercie of the prison, upon securitie given for his forth coming at a day assigned."

Hence, a person empowered to take bail and capture a person who forfeits it.

Gascony, an old province in the South of France, came into possession of the dukes of Guienne in 1054, with which province its history was from that time identified. Guienne, called also Aquitania, included Gascony. In 1152 it came into the possession of England, but in 1272 it was reconquered by the French; but at the peace of 1303 it was again ceded to the English, with whom it remained till 1451. Hence the need of pressing men to serve as foot-soldiers.

The prefix to surnames of De and Le was brought into use by the early Normans, who assisted in the conquest of England, who on returning to Normandy gave their awarded lands to their sons to go over and settle on them. Younger sons, hoping to find in them an elder brother's portion, eagerly took their new possessions, using their father's name, taken by them from either the territory from whence they came, or from some pursuit or occupation,—De for the territory, and Le for the occupation. These prefixes were not discarded till about the reign of Henry VI., 1422, when the names were left as now.

The name of Driver appears in the History of Berkeley Hundred, Vol. III. p. 63, Gloucester, England, thus:—

"Bradston lands, now Dryvers, late Thomas Lord Wentworth; by deed Thomas son of Thomas, late Lord Berkeley, granted in 2 Edward III. (1329), to Thomas de Bradston and Isabel his wife, and to his heirs, all his mesne, with all lands and pastures thereto belonging which Isabel de Wike sometimes held in Arlingham, to be held of the chief Lord by the services accustomed, which by the record of Rotulus Clousarum, 43 Edw. III. (1370), Mem' 6, are there said to be a third part of the manor of Arlingham. And these are now the inheritance of John Driver, son of Gyles Dryver, second son of Robert Dryver, and which the said John of late purchased of his cozen Gyles Dryver, son and heir of Thomas Dryver, eldest son of the said Robert Dryver, who purchased the same of —, but not held to contain, as much by as much as the said record of 43 Edw. III. doth make them. . . . In this Parish of Arlingham are divers lands and tenements commonly called Wall's lands, formerly owned by William Wall, whose son left them to Walter Wall, who died 24th of Henry VIII. (1533), who left them to Richard Wall, who died 2d of Edw. VI.; holden of this Lord Berkeley by suit to his Hundred Court of Berkeley for three weeks to three weeks, and are now the several inheritances of John Driver, by his wife, after 33d. Elizabeth (1571), and twenty-two other persons. These retain the name of Wall's lands, though now in the hands of several freeholders." — *Berkeley Hundred*, Vol. III. p. 64.

"Wike, or Wyke, consisted of two parishes united, which, from the names of the several possessors, were called Wyke-Dyve and Wyke-Hamon. By the inquisition taken in the reign of Henry III. (1216), William de Dyve, son of Gay or Wido de Dyve, co. Oxon, 1204, was found to die seized of the Manor of Wike, which was held of the Earl of Warwick by the service of one Knight's fee. His successor was John de Dyve, his son, who was slain at Evesham, co. Worc., in 1265, whose wife was Isabel de Wike. In the 9th. year of Edw. I. (1281), Henry de Dyve was found to have held it of the King *in capite*; and in the eleventh year of the same reign, the Crown presented to the rectory by reason of the minority of John, the son of the said Henry de Wike-Dyve. In the ninth year of Edw. II. (1316), Henry de Dyve was certified to be Lord of the Manor, and died seized of it in the 5th. of Edw. III. (1332). By a fine levied in the 16th. of Edw. III. (1343), the reversion of this Manor after the decease of Martha, the widow of Henry de Dyve, who then held it in dower, was conveyed to John de Dyve, the son and heir of the said Henry de Dyve, for the term of his life, with remainder to Sir John de Leukenore, for the term of his life, with remainder to Henry de Dyve, the son and heir of the said John de Dyve, and Elizabeth his wife, the daughter of the said Sir John de Leukenore, and their heirs." — BRIDGES, *History of Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 329.

"Pursuant to this settlement, after the said Martha, John de Dyve, and Sir John de Leukenore, this manor descended to Henry de Dyve and Elizabeth his wife, who remained possessed of it till the said Henry made a release of it to Roger Mortimer, Earl of March, and Sir Ralph Spigurnel, for the term of their lives, with remainder to the heirs of the said Roger." — *Ibid.* Vol. I. p. 329.

"In this parish of Arlingham, Gloucester co., also were divers lands and

tenements dedicated to the services of the blessed virgin Mary, to whom also the Parish church was dedicated; which lands were called Chantry lands, which in the time of Kynge Henry IV. were under the disposing and letting of those who had charge of the mass service of the blessed virgin Mary of Arlingham.

"The house the priest then before dwelt in and after was and yet is called our Ladies Priests house."

"And however these lands were conceived not to bee given to the Crowne by the statute of Chantries made in the first year of Kynge Edward VI., yet by an Inquisition found in the 13th. year of Queene Elizabeth she was by virtue of this act instituted unto them; and accordingly in the 14th. year of her reign granted them to Percival Gonstan in fee; and from him they came to Robert Dryver and others. Howbeit those Patents and grants through defect therein being made void, the same were anew granted by the said Queene in the 29th. of her reign to Sir Francis Walsingham and Francis Mills and their heirs, from whom the same are now in the hands of divers persons." — *History of Berkeley*, Vol. III. pp. 68, 69.

"But in Hillary term before next after the return of the said Inquisition his Majesties attorney general exhibited an Information of Intrusion against the said Geo. Lord Berkeley, Elizabeth Longe, widowe, myself, and John Dryver my tenant, to all said grounds for intruding thereunto and keeping the possession thereof from the king from the last of April 1st. of Queen Caroline, to this term of exhibiting this informacion (about 230 acres), 14th. of Edward II. S. de Drieby was given custody of manor and castle of Berkeley and ten other manors." — *Ibid.*

In the "Great Roll of the Pipe," which was an account of the returns to the king's exchequer from the sheriff of counties, officers, and crown debtors, in the 31st. year of Henry I. (1131), is to be found that, —

"Baldewin de Drieby renders an account of twenty-seven marks of silver, and that he has in his own charge Radolfus, son of Symon de Drieby, as long as he can be a soldier, with all his land. He paid into the exchequer five marks of silver. He owes twenty-seven and fifteen marks of silver."

In the "*Liber Feodorum in curia Scaccarij*" (exchequer) is the following, contributed by Dr. Stephen W. Driver, —

"From Testa de Neville were accounts rendered to exchequer about close of Edward II.'s reign (1307), and beginning of Edw. III. (1327.) Bedford and Buckingham counties, Miles Nerunt and Lucas de Kaynes render an account of the fee (or feof) of Henry Deyrel of the honor of Gifford (or of the great lands or estates granted as honor to Gifford). And of two marks from one fee of William, son of Reginald and Elye (Elizabeth?) Dryver of the same honor."

"The same Prior claims for himself one acre of land to farm the fee from Hugo Dive, paying to the same 100 shillings per annum, which is of the

barony of de Keine, which he holds from the gift of the king *in capite*, they know not by what warrant. The Prior was Osbtus Gifford, prior Burinesta, and Henry Dive. Gifford and Henry Dive they hold by service of Bread and Beer in their own market of Adington within the hundred aforesaid and the foregoing hearth-right — They know not by what purpose."

According to Baker, in his "History of Northamptonshire," Vol. I. p. 82, —

"In the 17th. year of the reign of John (1215), a precept was directed to the sheriff to deliver the lands of the late William Dive, of 'Branton' (same as Brampton, written Brantone in Domesday), to the custody of Robert Nevill; and another the same year describing them as the lands of Henry Dive, — perhaps a minor, as they were granted to be held only during pleasure. This Henry Dyve, lord of both Bramptons, and of Oxendon, and other manors in Gloucestershire, unfortunately killed a servant of Sir Robert Treaunt, or Tryan, the king's chamberlain, for which offence his body and land were consigned to the mercy of Sir Robert, who retained the whole of his estate except the moiety of Little or Chapel Brampton, which contained 1,260 acres, where he afterwards resided, and in 1240 he is certified to hold a one half fee in Brampton Parva, and of which place his descendants were usually designated till they acquired Harleston and Quinton, between which places they divided their residence, but at length deserted this county on obtaining Bromham, in Bedfordshire, with the heiress of Wyld."

According to Bridges, in his "History of Northamptonshire," Vol. I. p. 384, —

"In the 48th. of Edward III. (1375), Sir William de Quinton died jointly seized of the manor of Quinton, co. Northampton, with Isabell his wife, who survived him."

By the same records, —

"Laurence Dyve was found to be the next heir of Sir Wm. de Quinton. In the fifth year of Henry V. (1418), Laurence Dyve levied a fine of the third part of the manor, by the name of the manor of Netherbury in Quinton, in fee to himself. He became possessed of it in the fourth year of Henry IV. (1403.) In the 28th. of Henry VIII. (1537), Sir John Dyve died seized of the said manor, which he held of the heirs of the Earl of Kent by unknown service. His successor was William Dyve, Esq., his son and heir. This Gentleman died in the year following, and left the reversion of this Manor, after the death of John Dyve, his younger brother, to Lewis Dyve, his son and heir, who became possessed of it in the 37th. year of the same reign (1546), upon the decease of the said John, his uncle.

"In the 5th. of James I. (1608), it was in the possession of Sir John Dyve, who obtained the same year a grant from the crown for himself, his heirs, and assignes, to inclose certain pasture grounds adjoining to his lands in Quinton, which lay within the forest of Salcey, with leave to assart the wood, underwood, &c., growing upon them. This Gent died the following year, and

was succeeded by his son, Sir Lewis Dyve. This Sir Lewis in the 10th. Charles I. (1635) claimed common pasture for himself and tenants of the Manor of Quinton in the forest of Salcey from the first of May yearly to the feast of St. Martin's in November, and pleading prescription, had his claim allowed." — BRIDGES, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 384.

"In the reign of Henry II. (1216), Henry de Dyve was certified to hold in Little Brampton half a knight's fee of Simon de Montfort, of the honor of Leicester. On the marriage of Robert Dyve, his second son, with Avilis de Welton (she descended from Allelm, the son of Rqry, who came to England with the Conqueror, and whose posterity enjoyed the Lordship of Welton, Northamptonshire. Allelm's son was Adam de Welton, name taken from his possessions; her parents were Roger de Welton and first wife Elizabeth de Noers." — *Ibid.*, p. 96. He settled them, in fee tail, a moiety of all his lands and tenements here, reserving to himself the capital messuage in which he resided near the chapel. The other moiety was inherited by Ralph de Dive, his eldest son; on his decease s. p. it devolved to his said brother Robert.

"In the 3d. of Edward III. (1330), Ralph, the son of Richard le Dyve, released to Sir Thomas de Bucton, Kt., his heirs and assigns, all his right in those lands, tenements, rents, and service in Little Brampton, which on the death of Ralph his uncle descended to Robert le Dyve, brother and heir of the aforesaid Ralph, and which John de Buxton, grandfather to Sir de Bucton, had purchased of the said Robert le Dyve. In the 20th. of Edw. III. (1347).

"Thomas de Bokton and Henry Dyve accounted for half a fee in Brampton of the honour of Leicester. In the 29th. of Henry VIII. (1538), Sir John Dive, Kt., died seized of it, and was succeeded by William Dive, his son and heir, which William dying the year afterwards, left it to Lewis Dive, his son and successor, a minor of twenty years." — *Ibid.*, p. 492.

"Brampton at the Domesday survey was one of the manors retained by the Earl of Moreton in his own possession, and contained four hides. [A hide was considered by some to contain one hundred acres, by others to be as much as could be ploughed by one plough in a year].

"On the confiscation of the Moreton estate both the Bramptons (great and small) were included in that portion which subsequently held of the honor of Leicester; subordinate to which they formed part of Hugh Dyve's barony of East Haddon." — BAKER, *History of Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 82.

"East Haddon, according to Domesday folio 223, was granted out within a century of the Norman Conquest to the family of Dyve, who were considerable proprietors in the county and Nottinghamshire. In the inquisitions of knight's fees (1210), Hugh Dyve was certified to hold seven fees and a half in Northamptonshire of the honor of Leicester. He died in the lifetime of his mother, leaving three daughters and co-heiresses, — Matilda, wife of Sir Saher Saint Andrew; Alice, wife of Sir Richard Micegros; and Ascelin, wife of Sir Simon de Mucegros, — who with their husbands in 1227 had livery of the lands which had been assigned in dower to their grandmother." — *Ibid.*, p. 160.

"The great-grandson of Henry Dyve, of Brampton, of the time of John and Henry III., was John Dyve, who died in 1334; he married, Nov. 20, 1308,

Alice, the heir and daughter of Henry Bray, of Harleston. In the 24th. of Edw. I. (1296), Ralph Dive and Roger St. Andrew and Thomas de Bray were certified to hold the township of East Haddon.

"The church here dedicated to the Virgin Mary was given to Sulby Abbey by William, the son of Hugh de Dyve, and confirmed to it by King Edw. II." — BRIDGES, Vol. I. p. 504.

"Harleston manor was possessed by the family of Andrewe, which was held by a family named Lumley before the Andrewes owned it, to whom the Lumleys sold it. Robert Lumley who lived in the 12th. of Henry VI. (1434), son of Richard and Cecilie (Holdenby) Lumley, married Joane, daughter of Edmund Dive; but a second manor in Harleston and East-Haddon, Sir John Dive, sheriff 19th. of Henry VII. and 2d. of Henry VIII., died seized in the 29th. year of Henry VIII. (1538).

"By the inquisition taken on his death, he was certified to have held it of the Marquis of Dorset by fealty only.

"He was succeeded by William Dyve, Esq., his son and heir, who married Ann, daughter and heir of Lewis Aprice.

"This William, dying the next year, left it to Lewis Dive, his son, a minor twenty years old, who died in 1592. He married Mary, daughter of Sir Walter Strickland, and had Sir John Dyve, who died in 1607, who married second Beatrice, daughter of Charles Walcot, esq. She died in 1658, having married second John Digby, first earl of Bristol. Sir John Dyve had issue Sir Lewis Dyve, born 1595, who was colonel of the 11th. regiment in King Charles's army. Heath says that Sir Lewis Dyve himself had command of the expedition, Oct., 1643, when Charles I. sent Prince Rupert with a strong party of horse and foot into Bedfordshire, and took Bedford; that Sir Lewis had 2,000 or 3,000 horse. He came first to Amptill, then to Bedford, which town he entered, and took Sir John Norris and other parliamentary officers prisoners. From thence he went to Sir Samuel Luke's house and destroyed it. . . . He sold Harleston and East Haddon by parcel in 1652; he sold Quinton in the time of Charles I.; he died in 1669. He had a son John, who died young in 1601; buried at Bromham." — BAKER's *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 82.

"Sir Lewis Dyve reserved for his own use in Harleston his manor, or mansion-house, built of square stone, with offices, etc., which in 1652 was in the occupation of John Hesilrigge, esq. Sir Lewis being a zealous royalist, his estates were seized by the parliament for delinquency in September of that year. Dyve's heath, water grist mill, and a considerable estate were sold by the trustees for the sale of sequestered lands for 2,893£ 7s. 3d. to John Hesilrigge, esq., and William Denton, of Blisworth; and in December, 1658, the small remnant of Sir Lewis's estate here was conveyed in fee by the trustees for 44£ 14s. 9d. to Arthur Haselrich, son of the above John Hesilrigge." — *Ibid.*, p. 169.

"The Dyves of Wyke-Dyve were of one common origin with Henry Dyve, the mesne lord of Brampton, and Hugh Dyve, who claimed against Henry Dyve in 1202 the feudal service of enclosing a certain hay upon the vallum of the king's castle of Pevensey in Sussex, being the alleged tenure

appertaining to a knight's fee, which he holds of him in Brampton in the county of Northampton. Henry denied that his fee was chargeable with the service, and put himself on the great assize. A day was assigned, and in the following year Hugh renewed his claim, and offered to prove his allegation by one Ralph, the associate of Henry in the service. Henry protested against any other than the ordinary service of a knight's fee, which he acknowledged to be due from him to the said Hugh, and no ulterior proceedings are recorded." — BAKER, Vol. I. p. 82.

"Henry Dyve by charter s. d. gave a virgate of land in Brampton to the priory of St. Andrew in Brampton, subject to the yearly rent of 8s. 6d. and 8 hens to William de Hunttydon; and afterwards a second virgate of his demesne. The mansion of the Dyves is believed to have been contiguous to the site of the chapel in a close which still retains the name of Hall-Close. A small modern seat, late the property and residence of Mr. Pearce, which is in the occupation of William Rose-Rose, Esq., now stands on the field. The village is four miles from Northampton, on the turnpike-road to Leicester through Welford. By the census of 1801, it contained thirty-one houses and one hundred and seventy inhabitants." — BRIDGES, Vol. II. p. 403.

"Patroni

Incumb. et temp. Institut.

John de Monteacuto

Prior Hosp. St. John Jerus.

Laur. Saunders

Principal landowner, or tenants *in capite*.

Dom. Robt. Dryver

Cap. Feb. 20, 1533.

In the 12th. of Henry III. (1228), John de Montacute gave Haryngton, or Harington, and in later records called Hetheryngton, to the knights hospitalers of St. John of Jerusalem." — *Ibid.*, Vol. II. p. 34.

"Robert Dryver, prior at Haryngton, co. Northampton. It is worth in benefits accruing from the rectory there, leased to farm to Simon Clypsan as per deed, £16:00:00 per year." — *Ibid.*

"From that the portion to the archdeacon and the portion to the archbishop of Northampton was 10s. 07d.; and yet there remains £15:09:05; and for the tythe 40s. 12d." — VALOR ECCLESIASTICUS, Vol. IV.

"Robert Dryver, incumbent of Harington, Feb. 20, 1533, at which date he was appointed to the manor, on presentation of whom does not appear. — BRIDGES, Vol. II. p. 34.

"In the 25th year of Henry III. (1241), Robert de Dive, then prior, and his tenants in Harington were discharged from services due to the hundred court at Rothwell." — *Ibid.*

"(Harington, a village of Northamptonshire, contained twenty-eight families at date, and was in Rothwell Hundred. Soon after the Conquest the lordship was in the possession of Roger de Montgomery, father of Maud, wife of Robert, Earl of Morton, half-brother to the Conqueror.)" [A hundred consists of ten tithings, and every tithing of ten households, subsequently called shires. Hundred also denotes the jury by which the survey of Domesday Book was made.] "They were to give, upon oath, an account of all estates,

down to the slightest ownership, even to a flock of bees, or hens, which they owned; all of which was set down at length and returned by the sheriff into the exchequer, and from these returns Domesday Book was compiled."—LYSON.

The abbots and priors, according to Fuller, in his "Worthies," were considered the Gentry of the Country.

"By inquisition taken in the 24th. of Edward I. (1296), the prior of the hospital of St. John of Jerusalem, Robert de Dive, was found to hold the township of Hetherington, of the see of Mountague, but of whom and by what service there is no mention. In the 9th. of Edward II. (1316), he was lord of the manor.

"In the 25th. year of Henry III. (1241), Robert de Dive, then prior, and his tenants in Harington were discharged from services due to the hundred Court at Rothwell, later called Hetherington.

"Being summoned by a writ of *quo warranto* in the third year of Edward III. (1330), to show cause why he claimed to have view of frank-pledge twice a year of his tenants of Hetherington, he pleaded an immemorial enjoyment.

"Of the tenants of this lordship to the knights hospitallers, the principal appear to have been the family of Saunders, of which family was Edward Saunders, the son of John Saunders, yeoman, who died in the 6th. year of Henry VIII. (1515), seized of messuages, lands, and tenements in Harrington, which he held of the prior (Robert de Dive) of St. John of Jerusalem by fealty and a certain annual payment. His successor in this estate was Lawrence Saunders, his second son, who left them at his death in the 36th. of this reign (1545), to Thomas, his son and heir. By the inquisition then taken, he was found to have held them of the crown, as parcel of the late dissolved priory of St. John of Jerusalem. In the 33d. of Henry VIII. (1542), the manor of Hetherington, with other estates formerly belonging to the priory of St. John's, had been given to Francis Pygot in exchange for lands in other counties." — BRIDGES, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. II. p. 33.

"Henry Dyve, previously to the forfeiture of his estates having accidentally killed a servant of Sir Robert Treaut [as before mentioned], gave a one fourth part of Great Brampton, with the advowson of the church, to Pouncey Picot, in fee marriage with his daughter. In 1275 the jurors of the hundred presented that Peter Picot, grandson of Pouncey, had exercised the privileges of fee warren in Magne Brampton for twenty-four years past, but they knew not on what authority." — BAKER, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 84.

"Chapel Brampton contained 1,260 acres." — *Ibid.*

"William Dryve, Cl. Jan. 9, 1545, of Bowdon-Parva, Rothwell Hundred. The hundred of Rothwell is bounded on the east and north by Huxlow and Corby hundreds, with the River Welland, which separates it from Leicester-shire." — *Ibid.*

"It appears by inquisition taken in the third year of Edward III. (1330) that Hugh de Dive, of Goteham, in Nottinghamshire, had lands in Haldenby, Ravensthorp, Pisseford, Boketon, and Brampton, which in the reign of Henry III. (1216) were held of Simon Montfort, Earl of Leicester. On his decease they descended to his three daughters and co-heirs.

"Patroni
Rob. de Diva
Prior & Frat. Hosp. Jerusal.

That is, patron of Ravensthorp, Newbottle Hundred, Northamptonshire. This lordship was next Haddon; its widest extent is about 2 and $\frac{1}{2}$ miles, contained 58 houses, and 12 erected for the poor." — BRIDGES, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 535.

"At Braybroke (in Domesday, Bradebroc, Badebroc, and Balebroc), Rothwell Hundred, a lordship of 4,000 acres, under the head of *Incumb. et temp. Institut.* is found, William Driver, occur Rect. 1561, refig. 23 Jan., 1571." — BRIDGES, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. II. p. 13.

"The church at Guilsborough, north of Haddon, with the chancel, was 90 ft. in length, and 49 ft. 7 in. in breadth, and was given, with its appurtenances, by William de Dive to the knights hospitallers of Jerusalem, by whom it was appropriated to the priory. The date on its side is 1618.

"Hollowell, a hamlet of nineteen houses in the parish of Guilsborough, at the time of the Conquerors' Survey belonged to several owners. In the reign of Henry II. (1154) the bishop of Lincoln was possessed of an hide and one third part of an hide here which Robert de Dyve held of him." — *Ibid.*, Vol. I. pp. 566, 569.

"A little distance from Hollowell was Northoft, part of which lordship in the reign of Henry II. (1154) was held by the family of Dive, and was given by Hugh de Dive to the knights hospitallers of St. John of Jerusalem. In the twelfth year of King John a fine was levied of a third part of ten marks rent in Northoft, between Agnes, relict of said Hugh de Dive, demandant, and the prior of the hospital of Jerusalem, desorciant, claimed by said Agnes as part of her dower, to the use of the said prior and his successors." — *Ibid.*, p. 570.

"In the 20th. of Edward III. (1347), Agnes Dyve and Robert de Holewell accounted for half a knight's fee held in Holowell, Guilsborough Hundred, of bishop Lincoln. From henceforward no mention occurs of this Lordship of Hollowell till the 3d. year of Edward IV. (1464), when by inquisition then taken, Eustace Burneby was found to die seized of three tosts, and one virgate of land which he held in socage of Thomas Dive of Holewell." — *Ibid.*, p. 569.

"The abbey of Sulby was a convent of the premonstratensian order, founded about the year 1135. William de Dyve gave the abbey the church in East Haddon (year not given), which formed part of its revenue. It seemed the prevailing fashion of that time to present this abbey with similar donations. The revenues from such amounted in 1535 to 305£ 8s. 5d. This abbey in 1538, with its revenues and possessions, was surrendered; and the surrender by act of parliament, which passed the year following, confirmed to the King, and continued to the crown in the tenth and twelfth years of Queen Elizabeth." — *Ibid.*, p. 598.

"In the reign of King John (1199), Leodegarius de Diva held one knight's fee in Ashby-Legers of the King, as of the fee of Leicester. Ashby-Legers was next Braunston-on-the-West. (Leodegarius was a patron saint to whom the church was dedicated.)" — *Ibid.*, p. 15.

"By the inquisition taken in 1210, it was found that Leodegarius, or Ledger,

de Dive had one fee in Ashby-Legers in Cranford Manor. He was probably a branch of the Dyves of East Haddon; and the supposition is strengthened by certain lands here being in late inquisition returned to be of that barony. In 1215 he was Constable of Knaresborough Castle, of Yorkshire, and a mandate was issued to provide him with £20 in land for his support out of the possessions of the king's enemies. William de Dive had this estate in the reign of Henry III. (1216), three years, soon after which it passed to another family." — BAKER, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 246.

"In the 14th. year of Henry II. (1168), Henry de Dive accounted to the King's exchequer for 12£ 3s. 8d., arising from the farm of Brackley, Sutton Hundred, Northampton, till such time as the Earl of Leicester should regain his estate, his lands having been seized, he being taken prisoner by the King's forces near St. Edmundsburg, where he was fighting against them with a great body of Flemings with whom he invaded England. After two years his lands were restored to him." — BRIDGES, Vol. I. p. 329.

"In the 20th. of Henry II. (1174), the northern borders of Northampton being invaded by the Scots, an engagement happened near Alnwick in Northumberland, in which the Scots were routed, and William their king made prisoner. From thence he was conducted to King Henry at Northampton, where also the Bishop of Durham, Roger de Mowbray, and Earl Ferrers, with Anketil Mallore and William de Dive, constables to the Earl of Leicester, surrendered up the several castles which they had held against him.

"The public disturbances being thus composed, and a general tranquillity prevailing thro' the kingdom, Henry, with his prisoners, transports himself to Normandy." — *Ibid.*, p. 422.

The first of the name of Dive found in England was Benselin de Dive, one of the companions of William, Duke of Normandy, in the conquest of England in 1066. His name is the thirty-eighth on the list of William's followers, five hundred in all, which list, August, 1862, was affixed to the oldest church in Dives, — a companion record of that of Battle Abbey (see Appendix of this book, where the list, as taken from Burke's "*Vicissitudes of Families*," is to be found in full).

"Dives is a small town, in the department of Calvados, in Normandy, close to the sea-coast. This town is of high note in French and English history, for it was nigh to it, at the mouth of the Dive, that William the Conqueror and his companions in arms met for the subjugation of England. In the eleventh century it was one of the chief ports of the Duchy of Normandy." — BURKE, *Vicissitudes of Families*.


Thus it would appear that the family of Dive, or Dyve, Dyver, Dryve, and Dryver, or Driver, took their name from this town of Dives, according to the old way of distinction by the use of words expressing a man's occupation, his place of residence, his possessions, his personal appearance, or his parentage, to do away with

the confusion of the common repetition of John, William, and Robert in one family in the same generation, which occurred in many cases.

Whether all were of one family, is a subject of future inquiry; yet as it has been shown that they are found living at the same time, in the same town, in the same county, this doubt might be waived.

The family of Dives of Bromham, co. Bedford, Brampton, Harleston, Holwell, Quinton and Wyke, co. Northampton, were arms-bearing, their arms being, —

Gules, a fesse dancette between three escallops ermine. Crest, a wivern's wings, endorsed. Gules, in another account, a wivern with wings, — which arms are to be found on the market-house at Rowell, with ninety others; that of Dives occupying about the central position.

(Gules means red, depicted by perpendicular lines. Dancette means . Escallop means cockle-shell-like figures over the shield. A wyvern means a heraldic animal, whose wings and upper part of body resemble a dragon, the lower part, that of an adder or snake, and stands on feet, like a bird.)

Driver arms were, —

Per pale Gules and Or, a Saltire countercharged. Crest, a heart gules, winged Or; that is, the shield is covered with perpendicular red lines on a gold surface, crossed by the cross of St. Andrew, surmounted by a crest of a red heart with gold wings. This change in the arms could have been occasioned by an intermarriage, and the two families combining arms, or in the purchase of an estate, and with it the request that the arms should be combined, which in several instances can be found recorded in other families, and should occasion no confusion on the possibility of Dives and Dryvers not being of one common origin. Matilda Dyve, as has been given, married Sir Saher Saint Andrew, and Alice Dyve married Sir Richard Mickgros, and Ascelin Dyve married Sir Simon de Mucegros, who with their husbands in 1227 had livery of the land which had been assigned in dower to their grandmother.

Again, the Dives arms is found used thus, —

"The fesse Or, the escallops argent, crest the same; that is, the Fesse is formed by two horizontal lines drawn across the field of the escutcheon, emblematic of the military girdle worn round the body. The Drivers dropped the escallops, raised their lines from a girdle to a cross, and put wings on a red heart instead of the dragon snake. Why? will ever be the question." — *Arms found in Baker's Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 82.

"Hugh Dryver, coroner of Thetford, Norfolk, England, in the reign of Henry VII. (1485). The office was held by patent of the Duke of Lancaster, during life, till this year, when Henry VII. as Duke of Lancaster, and lord of the town, granted them the privilege that the old mayor should always be coroner for the succeeding year, which hath so remained ever since.

"In 1189, Richard II. changed the government from Provosts of the town

to a bailiff, coroner, and mayor. The bailiff to be nominated by the King; the coroner to be named by the Lords of the dominion, and was superior to the Mayor till 1373, when John of Gaunt, lord of the dominion, obliged the town to make the mayor superior to the coroner, which office was for life till 1490, when Henry VII. made the change as above stated. Thetford received its name in the Conqueror's time, — The Ford, meaning the inlet into Norfolk, the city on the Ford, or the Ford of the People; it has been a burgh ever since the Romans made it so, its inhabitants being called burghers. In King Edward's time this flourishing city became a hundred by itself, called Thetford Hundred. It contained 943 burgesses. The king had two thirds of the customs, and the other third belonged to the Earl of East Angles, which was afterwards Cambridgeshire." — *Blomefield, History of Norfolk*, Vol. II. p. 142.

Norfolk in 1886 is still the ancestral home of a family of the name of Driver, some of whom have emigrated to America, settled at Utah, and who, in appearance, features, habits, and temperament, resemble to a marked degree the family of Driver, descendants of the settlers of New England, well expressed by one of the Norfolk emigrants now in Ogden, Utah, thus: "Our family are Drivers by name and Drivers by nature. I never knew one of the family who could be kept down to common labor; the least show, and they are bound to rise. I never knew a beggar named Driver, nor one who cared to ask a favor of any one. The women are shrewd, and good workers, — no idle blood in them. Neither men nor women ever accept any principle advocated, as true without studying well before adopting it, or giving an opinion; and if not at all interested, pass it by without reflection."

"In 1490, Hugh Dryver was mayor of Thetford, Norfolk, England, at which date Thetford was a place of great renown and great antiquity, being a place of note before the coming of the Romans into Britain." — *Carter, History of Cambridgeshire*.

"There were forty-two freeholders of Iselham, a large village in the north-east corner of Cambridgeshire, bordering on Suffolk co. The thirtieth name on the list is John Diver [the r omitted]. The freeholders of Whittlesford, a village seven miles southeast of Cambridge, and forty-five miles north of London, in Cambridgeshire, were: —

James Jeffreys,
Leonard Sadler,
Thomas Barker,
Robert Wood,
Martin Osborn,
Richard Knights,
Robert Adams,

Robert Story,
John Crouch,
John Harwood,
James Champion,
James Driver,*
Thomas Turner,
Thomas Banks."

Carter, History of Cambridgeshire.

These, either by grant, purchase, or inheritance, were entitled to a share in all the common lands.

"In the 4th. of James I. (1607), John Driver, then Lord Bailey of Thetbury (Gloucestershire), was plaintiff against John Tamar, defendant, for carrying away without the lord's leave the Dowing, or soil out of the waste ground, called the cheeping" [or Golgotha of the town], "which Driver under the prerogative of his office appropriated to himself wherever Driver had composition from the defendant."—*Calendar Pleadings*. Thus Driver sold as a fertilizer all the refuse of the town which had been dumped on the waste ground of that town, which being bailiff he could do very well.

Calendar Pleadings, Vol. III., Case 2. "Plaintiff, John Seede, Defendant, John Driver. Relief against fraudulent agreement for a lease. Two closes of land in Tedbury held by plaintiff under lease from Henry Lord Berkley."

Calendar Pleadings, Vol. I., 33 Henry VIII. (1542). "Plaintiff, James Dryver; Defendant, Margery Hartley, John Dryver, Edward Walker; matters in dispute: seizure of cattle on disputed claim of debt, Wynewell, Colne Manor, Lincolnshire, Eng."

Calendar Pleadings, 7th. Elizabeth (1567). "Plaintiff, Mary Driver, widow and executor of John Driver, deceased; defendant, John Ireland; object of suit: Bill of everlasting contract for sale of premises, freehold and copyhold lands in Framingham, co. Suffolk; agreed to be sold by defendant to plaintiff's late husband."

Calendar Pleadings, Book VI., Case 16, 13th. Elizabeth (1571). "Thomas Bennett, plaintiff; Charles Cornwallis, defendant; objects of suit: deeds, evidences, etc., manor of Capella-Hall, in Trimly, or Trimeley, St. Martin, which complainant purchased of John Dryver whose widow recovered in C. B. her dowry out of the premises. It is contested that the premises form a part of the Manor of Grymston-Hall, Suffolk co."

Calendar Pleadings, 28th. Elizabeth (1586). "Plaintiff Henry Lord Wentworth; Defendants, Andrew Keine, Thomas Driver; matters in dispute: herbage panage [hog feeding] of woods called Bingewood, and Bushie Catts-hill, Elmset Manor, Suffolk co., Eng."

"Richard Driver, one of the yeomen of the forest chamber, king's bailiff, under the charge of Percevall, in the forest of Inglewood for life. [Second part of the patents of the 34th. year of Edw. III., — 1361.]

"William Driver, rector in 1561 at Braybroke, Rothwell Hundred, Northamptonshire, Eng., a lordship of 4,000 acres. He resigned Jan. 23, 1571." — BRIDGES, *History of Northamptonshire*, Vol. II. p. 13.

"William Dryver, Clericus" [clerk or clergy], "of Bowden Parva, Rothwell Hundred, Northamptonshire, Jan. 9, 1545." — *Ibid.*, Vol. II. p. 6. Thus rendered — "Dom. Will. Dryve, Cl. 9 Jan., 1545." ¹

Whoever was the head of a religious house held the lands, took care of the bridge, repelled invasions, and prayed for the souls (expressed by *in puram elemosinam*), and had the service of support of one night (expressed by *firmam timus noctis*).

¹ See page 11.

Clericus, clerk, or men in holy orders had to be examined by the bishop of the respective dioceses within twenty-eight days after presentation by the king or queen, or lord of the manor, after which time if they were not rejected as not qualified, they must be instituted or licensed to the benefice. They had to read and write English and Latin, — a qualification which originally belonged exclusively to them.

No tax-gatherer, or comedian, or slave, or one who performed public penance, no usurer, no legal official of the court, and none who had ever suffered from insanity could become a clericus.

The immunities that clerks enjoyed differed at different times in different countries; they consisted mainly in exemption from public burdens and from lay jurisdiction. Clerks were exempt from taxes and excused from fighting. The benefices that they enjoyed were certain ecclesiastical revenues, on condition of discharging certain services prescribed by the canons, or by usage. They implied three things: 1. An obligation to discharge the duties of an office which is altogether spiritual; 2. The right to enjoy the fruits attached to that office, which is the benefice itself; 3. The fruits themselves, which are the temporalities.

By the Lateran Council of 1215, whose authority was recognized by the Church of England, no clerk could hold two benefices with the cure of souls. Dispensations, though, could be obtained from Rome, before the reformation of the Church, to enable the clerk to hold several benefices at the same time. The patronage of some benefices was in private hands, whilst others were at the disposal of the crown, or public bodies. — *Abstract from Encyclopædia Britannica.*

"Patroni

Incumb. & temp. Institut.

Tho. Gryffyn, Arm.

9 Jan. 1545 "

Dom. Will. Dryve, Cl.

" Incumb. & temp. Institut.

Islip, Huxlow Hundred

William Dyve, Cl.

3 Sept. 1427."

"John Dyve, Esq., member of Parliament for the co. of Northampton, Henry VI. (1422), twice at Westminster.

"John Dyve, Esq., Member of Parliament for co. of Northampton, 33d. & 39th. Henry VI. (1455) and (1461) — sheriff 11. Henry VII. [1496].

"John Dive of Haddon, sheriff of Northamptonshire, 10th. of Henry VII. (1495)." — FULLER, *Worthies*.

"Sir John Dyve, sheriff of Northamptonshire, 19th. Henry VII. (1504) and 2d. Henry VIII. (1511). He married Isabel, dau. and co-heir of Ralph

Hastings, third brother of William, baron Hastings, chamberlain to Edward IV." — BAKER, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. I. p. 82.

"Lod. Dyve, sheriff of Bedfordshire, 37th. Henry VIII. (1546); also 4th. Elizabeth (1562); also 25th. Elizabeth (1583)." — FULLER, *Worthies*.

"John Dive, sheriff of same co., 36th. Elizabeth (1594); also 45th. Elizabeth (1608); also 1st. King Jacobus. He is called Knight.

"Parish of Lambert, co. Surrey, July 1, 1571; John Harforde married to Elizabeth Dryver." — SOMERBY, *Researches in England*, Vol. XX. p. 141.

"Sir Robert Driver, of Ipswich, Bart., high sheriff of Suffolk in 1669." — *History of Suffolk*, by Rev. Alfred Suckling.

"Nathaniel Driver, sheriff of Bristol, Eng., 1683." — *Ibid*.

"Deerbolts at Earl Stonham, a parish near Beacon Hill, on the road between Ipswich and Eye, England, was the ancient seat of the Driver family; Eye being the border town between the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk." — CAMDEN, *Britannia*, Vol. II. p. 169.

"Dr. Charles Driver, A. B., Hart Hall, Oxford, England, June 1, 1708."

"Jeremias Driverus, author of 'Commentaries on Hippocrates, Galen, and Celsus,' a professor of medicine in the university at Leoven, was of Brakele, a village in Flanders near Grandmont; died in 1554, aged 52."

"Anne Driver died at Putney, Eng., Aug. 15, 1780."

"Jonas Driver, A. B. Christ's College, Cambridge, Eng., 1822; A. M. in 1825."

"Sacred to the memory of Henry Driver, Esq., for several years member of the Corporation of Windsor, and one of its magistrates, and mayor of the borough. Died Dec. 5, 1868, aged 66 years." (Clever Churchyard, England.)

"Rev. Samuel Rolles Driver, Regius Professor of Hebrew at Oxford, England, and in 1886 canon of Christ Church, Oxford, England. One of the revisers of the Authorized Version of the Bible, completed in 1885." — *London Graphic*. The Regius Professorship was founded in 1546 by Henry VIII., with a stipend of £40. In 1630 Charles I. added to it the Canonry of Christ Church. Rev. Samuel Rolles Driver received: —

Pusey Elleston Scholar	1866
Clericus Mod.	1867
Clericus	1869
Pinnicott Scholar	1870
Senior Septuagint Prize	1871
" Syriac Prize	1872
Regius Professor	1882 "

Oxford, Eng., Catalogue of Graduates.

In the offices of sheriff of their county, knights of the shire in Parliament, and canons in the commission of the Church, and as clerks of the same, the name Driver has been traced in Northamptonshire variously spelled, from the time of the invasion of King William to the year 1886.

The "National Biography," published by the Royal Academy of Belgium, Vol. V., gives the following, written in French, the translation of which is :—

"Rombant de Dryver, sculptor, born at Mechlin. The tradition given, and which is somewhat vague, places Rombant Driver in the rank of the best artists; he contributed to the execution of the famous church of the abbey of Tangerloo, commenced July 25, 1536, and finished in 1548.

He worked with N. Clandessens on the ornaments which decorated the first story of this little monument.

We know that he belonged to an honorable *bourgeoise* family of Mechlin."

Mechlin for many centuries was the religious metropolis of Flanders, the patron saint of which was Saint Rombant, who suffered martyrdom June 24, 775.

The "Allgemeine Deutsche Biographie," Vol. V., makes mention that, —

"Friedrich Matthias Driver, born at Vechta, 23 Aug., 1754, died at Emsdetten, 5 June, 1809, was Doctor of Law at Münster, and assessor in the ducal superior court at Meppen. A much learned and historical writer at the court. Besides some works upon history, his especial province, he wrote, under the title 'Bibliotheca Monasterunsis sive Notitia de scriptoribus Monasterio, Westphalis, 1799,' the first dictionary of authors of Münster. It contains useful information concerning more than 350 writers, part of whom were born in Münster, and part have written about it, and extends from the earliest times to the present." — *Contributed by Emily W. Wühey, of Cambridge, Mass.*

Meppen is a city in the duchy of Meppen, in Germany, which duchy joins Holland. The city is on the River Ems.

Five estates await claimants of the name of Driver (see Chambers, "Index of next of Kin").

In London, England, in 1886, about twelve families reside of the name of Driver, from whom information would be very acceptable.

There is another family whose name is so similar to that of Driver, whose immigrants in this generation invariably call themselves Driver, that for the more perfect understanding of this work it seems necessary to make mention of them. Their name is Drever, who did and yet do reside in the Orkney Islands, most of them at the Island of Westray, one of the northernmost of the group.

"Drever (Orkney; granted by patent, 1809). Or, on a chev. az. betw. three griffins' heads erased gu. as many roses ar. barbed vert. *Crest*: an eagle rising regard. holding in the beak a pomegranate, all ppr."

The Orkneys were conquered in A. D. 860 by Harald Haarfagr, and Norse colonization then commenced.

In the Norse language there is a word *dreva*, meaning "snow," which, transformed into the proper noun Drever, could mean snowmen, or men who came from the region of snow, which could establish the claim of those who hold that those of the name of Drever were Norsemen.

Those of the name in America are all tall, powerful men, muscular and hardy, and speak with a strong Scotch accent. In no way do they resemble those of the name of Driver, save in energy, industry, and enterprise; for these, as a class, are short in stature, small of frame, with small feet and hands, and very English in appearance and habits.

Burke in his "General Armory" gives Drever and Driver each arms bearing families; but their coats of arms are quite unlike.

THE DRIVER FAMILY.

TABLE showing all the families of the name of Driver, born in New England from 1630 to 1897, in the order of their birth, indicated by the Roman numbers at the head of each family. Those members who lived and had families are shown by the numerals and letters placed before the names as they occur in the families; numerals for males, letters for females. Families of females are carried out under the family of their father. Those not numbered or lettered either died, remained unmarried, or nothing further is known of them.

I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.
1 Robert 2 Phoebe 3 Richard (perhaps) 4 John (perhaps) a Ruth	Robert 6 William b Sara 6 Salmon John	Richard John John Ezzer 7 Thomas 8 Michael	John John John Ezzer 7 Thomas 8 Michael	William William John Mary 7 Thomas 8 Michael	Salmon 9 Solomon 10 Solomon c Mary Margaret d Hannah Anna	Thomas Thomas Stephen c Sarah 11 Michael Elizabeth Margaret Hannah Anna	Michael (Capt.) Michael e Sarah 11 Michael Elizabeth Margaret Hannah Anna	Solomon Rachel 12 Solomon 13 John Mary William	Stephen Susanna Mary 14 Stephen Susanna Martha Martha Thomas	Michael (Capt.) Michael Hannah 16 Benjamin Paul Mansfield 16 Thomas Poynton A Sarah 17 Stephens, Jr.
XII.	XIII.	XIV.	XV.	XVI.	XVII.	XVIII.	XIX.			
Solomon (Capt.) 18 Solomon 19 John f Hannah 20 Samuel	John (Capt.) John Anna	Stephen Stephen Joseph Hannah A Twin 21 Thomas f Elizabeth Richard	Benjamin k Hannah l Sarah Benjamin Mary Michael Benjamin Mary m Ellen	Thomas Poynton n Rebecca	Stephen, Jr. o Ruth 22 Stephen, 8d. 23 Thomas (Rev.) 24 Joseph Metcalf (Rev.) 25 William (Capt.) 26 George 27 Henry g Harriot	Solomon Solomon Miriam 28 Andrew (Capt.) Hannah John Bethiah Samuel Solomon	John 29 John 30 Nehemiah e Elizabeth Daniel			
XX.	XXI.	XXII.	XXIII.	XXIV.	XXV.					
Samuel 31 Samuel Jacob	Thomas	Stephen, 8d. Stephen Beckford f Mary Beckford Stephen Beckford, Jr. u Elizabeth Helen 32 Stephen Pierson George H. Smith Susan Smith 33 George H. Smith 34 Samuel	Thomas (Rev.) 35 William Luscomb Stephen Henry 36 Charles Millet 37 George Washington Joseph Grafton	Joseph Metcalf (Rev.) 38 Joseph Metcalf John Saunders 39 Stephen William (Dr.) 40 Thomas 41 Edward Augustus Saunders Holyoke	William (Capt.) 42 William Christopher (Maj.) Eben Ropes v Martha Silsbee w Mary Jane George Wills Deilah Ann 43 Henry Lynch Robert Parks z Deborah Ann y Elizabeth Ropes z Ruth Metcalf Thomas Pitcairn.					

XXXVI.

George
Sophia Osgood
a2a Ruth Helen
Sarah Ellen

XXVII.

Henry
44 John Maclin (Dr.)
Henry
William Oliver
b6 Sally Maclin
Christopher Maclin
cc Ruth Metcalf
Stephen
did Elisabeth
Harriot

XXVIII.

Andrew (Capt.)
Rachel
Andrew
46 David (Capt.)
48 Joseph Day
cc Rachel
Abigail
John Hooper (Capt.)
f Maria
Jacob Hooper

XXIX.

John
Elisabeth
James
Daniel

XXX.

Nehemiah
99 Apphia

XXXI.

Samuel
Samuel
47 Samuel
h/h Anna

XXXII.

Stephen Pierson
ii Alice Goodhue
George Pierson
Mary Beckford
Margery Watson
Edith Louise
Theodore Goodhue

XXXIII.

George Hibbert Smith
Lucinda Larlin
Isabel Goddard
George Benjamin
Harold Burrill
George Hibbert

XXXIV.

Samuel
Theodore Prescott
Herbert Putnam

XXXV.

William Lascomb
Beulah

XXXVII.

George Washington
Henry Boyce
Edward
William

XXXVIII.

Joseph Metcalf
Caroline Maria
Martha Theodora
Susan Emma

XXXIX.

Stephen William (Dr.)
Martha Elisabeth (Beale)

XL.

Thomas
48 Frank Wallace
Edward Windfield

XLI.

Edward Augustus Saunders Holyoke
John Saunders
Helen May Ives
Edward Raymond

XLII.

William Christopher (Maj.)
Ida

XLIII.

Henry Lynch
Henry William
Sarah Jane

XLIV.

John Maclin (Dr.)
Henry

XLV.

David (Capt.)
49 William Raymond
60 Andrew Brown

XLVI.

Joseph Day
Nancy Butnam
Adella Low
ii Nancy Butnam
Daniel Low
61 John Hooper
Joseph Day

XLVII.

Samuel
Louise
Samuel
62 Samuel
63 George Norton
Allen

XLVIII.

Frank Wallace
Mary Louise

XLIX.

William Raymond
Eleanor Salisbury
William Raymond

L.

Andrew Brown
Emma Mc Cullock
64 William Mc Cullock
Mary Adelaide
Emily Francis Sinclair
David Ramsey

LI.

John Hooper
Anna Eastman
Bertha Adella
Henry
A son " "
A son " "
A son " "
A child " "
Isabella Purdit

LII.

Samuel
A daughter
A son still-born
A son " "
A son " "
A son " "
A son " "

LIII.

George Norton
George
Elisabeth A.
Fifty-three families.

THE DRIVER FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

FAMILY I.

1. **ROBERT DRIVER**, one of the first founders of Lynn, Mass., or Saugus, as it was for eight years called by the Indians, was born somewhere in England in 1592, as learned by a deposition given by him in court, April 27, 1657, where he stated his age as "65 years or thereabouts," and died in Lynn, Mass., April 3, 1680, aged eighty-eight years, having lived for fifty years just where he first settled, which, according to Lewis in his "History of Lynn," was in 1630, on Shepard Street.

Shepard Street from 1629 to 1700 was the main street of Lynn, having been so named for Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, who was the fourth minister over the First Church of Lynn, Mass., — then the only one; which church in 1682 was removed to the centre of the Common, and rebuilt, but previous to that date stood on land adjoining the property of Robert Driver, "the meeting-house path" forming his southern boundary line.

No account has been found of the time, from what port, or in what ship Robert Driver sailed from England, — probably on account of his unwillingness to take the required "Oathes of Allegiance and Supremacie," which all ship-masters, under a bond of £100, were obliged to make their passengers take before sailing from any port in England; hence it is presumable that he with his wife, Phebe, like thousands of others, came secretly to America to escape the hated subsidy or tax to the Crown which Charles the First imposed on the English people without the consent of Parliament, which act was resented throughout all England. Many could not, others would not, pay it, and so left the country for other lands,— to prevent which Charles prohibited all persons sailing for other

ports without a special warrant from him, which he granted to none who would not take the "Oathes of Allegiance and Supremacie," which was a promise to be true and faithful to the king.

It is positively known that early in the spring of 1630 eleven vessels left England for New England with seventeen hundred passengers, arriving at the port of Salem, Mass., in June of that year. Fifty of these families settled in Lynn, — probably on account of its being best suited for pasturage; for many of them, being farmers, had brought their horned cattle, goats, and sheep with them. In that same year the Massachusetts Bay Company sent over sixteen ships. One left England in February, one in March, four in April, eight in May, one in June, one in August, and one other was sent by a private merchant. These all arrived safe in New England at the port of Salem, where they found the colony in a sad condition; for eighty persons had died the winter before, and most of those alive were weak and ill from fevers occasioned by bad food, poor dwellings, and the great change from their English homes.

Mr. Johnson says: "The chiefest corn they planted, before they had plowes, was Indian grain; and let no man make a jest at Pumpkins, for with this food the Lord was pleased to feed his people to their good content, till Corne and Cattell were increased." Lewis adds "that their corn at first was pounded with a pestle of wood or stone, in a mortar made either of stone or a log hollowed out at one end, after the manner of the Indians. They cultivated large fields of barley and wheat, and malt was a staple article. Beer was the common beverage until the growth of the orchards enabled the substitution of cider; bean and pea porridge, or broth was drank; and hasty pudding made of corn meal was eaten with milk both morning and evening. Turnips were eaten in abundance, potatoes being unknown, as also were tea and coffee. Fish they had in abundance, especially sturgeon, cod, and bass, of which the two latter were used not only for food, but to manure the corn fields till forbidden by law in 1639." "When worms destroyed the corn before it was grown, or birds and squirrels plucked up the blade, or when it was come to the full ear and was destroyed by raccoons or deer, then they resorted to the berries of the field, ground nuts and acorns, for food, also parsnips and carrots; and for drink, a liquor made of pumpkins, parsnips, and walnut tree chips."

All this must have failed in 1630, for the colony had not enough food to feed themselves for a fortnight, and the Company had not brought anything for them,—in fact had not enough to feed the new arrivals, hence was under the necessity of giving them all liberty, who had cost them £16, or more, a person, to furnish and bring over; consequently the emigrants looked about them and decided to settle elsewhere than Salem, already fully occupied. So some went to Charlestown, some to Boston, some to Roxbury, Watertown, Saugus (Lynn), and others to Dorchester.

Of the fifty families who went to Saugus (Lynn), the heads were : —

JOSEPH ARMITAGE, a tailor, and proprietor of a corn and slitting mill on Saugus River. He opened the first tavern in the town, called the Anchor, which for a hundred and seventy years was the most celebrated in Essex County.

GODFREY ARMITAGE, a farmer.

ALLEN BREED, a farmer.

WILLIAM BALLARD, or **BULLARD**, a farmer.

GEORGE BURRILL, a farmer.

EDWARD BAKER, a farmer.

SAMUEL BENNET, a carpenter.

NICHOLAS BROWN, a farmer.

BONIFACE BURTON, a farmer, and the oldest man that ever lived at Lynn, being 113 years of age when he died.

JOHN BANCROFT.

THOMAS COLDAM kept Mr. Humfrey's windmill on Sagamore Hill.

CLEMENT COLDAM, a miller.

THOMAS CHADWELL, a farmer.

WILLIAM COWDREY, a farmer.

THOMAS DEXTER, a farmer, owned 800 acres of land; called by way of excellence "Farmer Dexter," built a mill and a weir across Saugus River; purchased Nahant from the Indian Chief for a suit of clothes, which occasioned the town three expensive law-suits in different years.

Robert Driver, a farmer (and by deed of gift, a tailor).

WILLIAM EDMUNDS.

GEORGE FARR, a farmer.

HENRY FEAKE.

JEREMIAH FITCH, a farmer.

SAMUEL GRAVES, a farmer; gave nearly £300 in 1635 to the colony.

ADAM HAWKES, a farmer; owned the farm where the iron ore was found.

JOHN HAWKES.

JOHN HALL.

THOMAS HUBBARD.

EDWARD HOLYOKE, a farmer, owned 500 acres of land.

EDWARD HOWE, a farmer.

Lieut. DANIEL HOWE, brother of Edward.

WILLIAM HATHORNE.

THOMAS HUDSON, a farmer; owned the lands where the iron-works were situated, part of which he sold for that purpose.

CHRISTOPHER HUSSET.

GEORGE KEYSER, a tanner.

CHRISTOPHER LYNDSEY, a servant to Thomas Dexter and kept his cattle on Nahant.

THOMAS NEWHALL, a farmer.

JONATHAN NEGUS.

Robert Potter, a farmer.

JOHN RAMSDELL, a farmer.

EDWARD RICHARDS, a joiner.

JOSEPH REDNAP, a wine cooper, — lived to be 110 years old.

Daniel Salmon.

SAMUEL SMITH, a farmer.

JOHN TAYLOR.

Capt. EDWARD TOMLINS, a carpenter.

TIMOTHY TOMLINS, a farmer.

Capt. NATH'L TURNER, a master mariner; owned the whole of Sagamore Hill.

THOMAS TALMADGE, a farmer.

Capt. RICHARD WALKER, a farmer.

THOMAS WILLIS, a farmer.

BRAY WILKINS, a farmer.

JOHN WHITE, a farmer.

WILLIAM WITTER, a farmer; noted for his peculiar notions concerning the baptism of infants, publicly stating "that they who stayed while a childe is baptized doe worshipp the dyvill, and take the name of the Father, Sonn, and holly ghost in vain and broke the Saboth."

Capt. RICHARD WRIGHT. (As found in Lewis's "History of Lynn.")

Five men with their families, probably comprising about twenty persons, says the same writer of Lynn, *commenced* the first settlement there in 1629, the five being Edmund and Francis Ingalls, William Dixey, and William and John Wood; but these fifty families in 1630 really made the settlement, for the five occupied only "a faire playne, somewhat less than a half mile in extent."

Robert Driver was thirty-eight years of age at this date, and his wife, Phebe, about the same age, — she born in England, but died in Lynn, Mass., Feb., 1683, three years after her husband; so it is safe to say they together sailed from England, but how much of their family came with them can only be conjectured. Their eldest children, Robert and Phebe, might have arrived with them, also Richard and John (if their children); but this will never be fully known, for the town records of Lynn, Mass., were destroyed by fire in 1690, except three pages, which reveal nothing concerning the births or deaths of this first family.

The early settlers of Lynn, Mass., were persons of high reputation and comfortable property, and lived in perfect democracy. They had Town Meetings every three months, for the regulation

of the public affairs. They cut their wood in common, from the wood lands which had been reserved for that use, and drew lots for grass in the meadows, — “a very serviceable arrangement for those farmers possessing a trade, who were thus enabled to continue working at that trade, without the interruption of tending cattle, or cutting grass or wood.” (Lewis.) Our emigrant was by trade a tailor, and probably enjoyed these town arrangements, thus being enabled to ply his needle for the benefit of his neighbors, as well as his own family, more frequently than he handled the scythe and axe, — quite necessary, according to a verse from an old English ballad, which runs : —

“ And now our old garments begin to grow thin ;
 And wool is much wanted to card and to spin ;
 If we can get a garment to cover without,
 Our other in garments are clout [patch] upon clout.
 Our clothes we brought with us are apt to be torn,
 They need to be clouted soon after they're worn ;
 But clouting our garments they hinder us nothing :
 Clouts double are warmer than single whole clothing.”

“The first houses of the colonists were rude structures, covered with thatch, eighteen feet square, and seven feet post, with the roof steep enough to form a sleeping-chamber. The better houses were built with two stories in front, and sloped down to one in the rear ; the frames being of heavy oak timber, showing the beams inside. For lime they burned clam-shells, and thus the walls were whitewashed. The windows were very small diamond panes set in lead opening on the outside. The fireplaces admitted a four-foot log, and had seats in the corners called forms, where, when seated, by looking up, the stars could be seen. The houses faced the south, that the sun at noon might ‘shine square ;’ so that in the absence of clocks the house formed a domestic sun-dial.” (Lewis.) Before these houses were built, the people lived in caves hollowed out of banks of earth. The land at first was not fenced in or otherwise divided ; the cattle were fed in one drove in one great pasture ; the farmers at first taking charge of all in turn, subsequently by one man, called a “hayward,” for whose support all contributed. The great pasture of Lynn was Nahant, as the following deposition of Robert Driver, as given by him in court, will show : —

“ April 27, 1657 : — Robert Driver, aged 65 years or thereabouts, sworn, saith, about 25 years since, most of the inhabitants of Lynn as then was, did joyne together and fenced in the Nehants, and did put cattell upon it,

and soe from time to time it has been a place to keepe the Towne Cattell." — *Town Record*.

"The Indian term was Nahanteu,—a dual word, signifying two united, or twins; as the two islands are not only connected together by a short beach, but both are joined to the main land of Lynn by a long beach: hence, the early settlers spoke always of both together as 'the Nehants.'" — LEWIS, *History of Lynn*.

The cattle were sheep, goats, and swine principally. The fence was of rails made across the beach to keep out the wolves, as those animals do not climb.

"All Englishmen were eligible to the franchise of the Massachusetts Company; but until elected by a vote of the existing Freemen, no one had any share in the government of the plantation or the selection of its governors." — PALFREY.

To become a freeman each person was legally required to be a respectable member of a Congregational church, and to take the following oath, as ordered by the General Court:—

"I, A. B., being by God's providence, an inhabitant and freeman within this jurisdiction of the commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself to be subject to the government thereof, and therefore do here swear, by the great and dreadful name of the ever-living God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yield assistance and support thereunto, with my person and estate, as in equity I am bound, and will also truly endeavor to maintain and preserve all the liberties and privileges thereof, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders made and established by the same; and further, that I will not plot nor practise any evil against it, nor consent to any that shall so do, but will truly discover and reveal the same to lawful authority now here established for the speedy preventing thereof.

Moreover, I do solemnly bind myself, in the sight of God, that, when I shall be called to give my voice touching any such matter of this state, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in mine own suffrage, as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce and tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favor of any man. So help me God, in the Lord Jesus Christ." — *Mass. Col. Rec.*, 117.

"Freemen had a sitting in the General Court, then held in Salem, Mass. There were four annual courts; but in 1632 it was ordered that freemen might be excused from attending all courts but that in May for the electing of the Magistrates. They continued thus to assemble till 1663." — *Annals of Salem*.

March 4, 1634-5: Robert Driver took the freeman's oath, when the clerk of the court spelt his name Robte Dryver; and it is thus recorded in the County Record, Vol. I. p. 153.

July 27, 1636; April 27, 1637; Aug. 3, 1637: Robert Driver served as juryman.

"The freemen of the Massachusetts Company in their corporate capacity, were owners of Massachusetts in fee, by a title to all intents as good as that

by which any freeholder among them had held his English farm." — PALFREY, *History of New England*, Vol. I. p. 387.

"Nov. 8, 1639: Robt Driver was enioyned to appear at the Quarter Court; cause not given." — *Records of Mass.*, 1628-1686, Vol. I. p. 282.

Previous to the change of the year in 1752, the "legal" year (as called by one author) began in March; hence February was the twelfth month: while the "historical" year (so called by the same author) began in January and ended in December; so in all old records both years are combined, and must be thus rendered in this History.

Job Shepherd's Almanack, published in Newport, R. I., by James Franklin, gives a letter showing how the British Parliament made an alteration in the style of the year in 1752, as follows: —

"KIND READER, — You have now such a year as you never saw before, nor ever will see hereafter.

The king and parliament have thought proper to enact that the month of Sept., 1752, shall contain but nineteen days, so that we are not to have two beginnings to our years, but the first of January is to be the first day and first month of the year 1752. Eleven days are taken from September, and begin one Tuesday, two Wednesday, and fourteen Thursday.

Be not much astonished, nor look with concern, dear reader, at such a deduction of days, nor regret as for the loss of so much time, but take this for your consolation, that your expences will appear lighter, and your mind be more at ease.

And what an indulgence is here for those who love their pillows, to lie down in peace on the second of this month, and not perhaps awake or be disturbed till the fourteenth in the morning."

"19 of the 11th month, 1634, its ordered that least. familyes shall have 10 acres, but greater familyes may more according to y^r numbers."

In 1638 the Court ordered that a committee be appointed that year by the town to divide the lands; according to Lewis in his "History of Lynn," "the committee completed their task, and a book was provided, in which the names of the proprietors, with the number of acres allotted to each, were recorded. There were one hundred and two names."

That book is lost; but a copy of the first three pages has been preserved in the files of the Quarterly Court at Salem, Mass., and on the second page is "Robert Driver, 20 acres."

These twenty acres were situated in Rumney Marsh,—so called until Jan. 8, 1738-9, when the inhabitants petitioned for a new town, to be erected under the name of Chelsea, which town is so called to this day (1886).

July 6, 1647: Robert Driver sold this tract of land to George Keasar for 40 shillings.

March 16, 1677-8: George Keasar, Salem, Mass., "gives by Deed of Gift to his son-in-law, Thomas Mould, and wife, Mary, his 12 acres marsh in 1st division of Rumney Marsh, Lynn, bounded E. on 2 acres of s^d Geo. Keasar, being part of 14 acres I formerly bought of John Poole and Robert Driver, W. on marsh of John Gillow, butting E. on the last division, N. on upland of Allen Breed, Sr."

Aug. 26, 1643: Jane Armitage presented a petition to the General Court, signed by about all the inhabitants of Lynn, Mass., Robert Driver among the signers, praying that her husband, Joseph Armitage, "might have custodie of an ordinarie, he being poor and bereft of employment." An "ordinarie" was a tavern, and Joseph Armitage opened the first one in Lynn, called the Anchor, which for one hundred and seventy years was the most celebrated in Essex County. At this date he was forty-three years of age, having been born in 1600; he lived till June 27, 1680. (Lewis, "History of Lynn.")

The Court allowed Joseph Armitage to keep the ordinarie, but not to draw wine; hence in 1646 "he petitioned the Court to license, to draw wine, whoever the town should choose." The Court chose Nicholas Potter, subsequently father-in-law of Ruth, daughter of Robert Driver, Sr., and wife of Robert Potter.

In 1645 the following law was passed: "Every person licensed to keep an ordinary," (tavern), "shall always be provided with good wholesome beer of four bushels of malt to the hogshead, which he shall not sell above two pence the ale quart, on penalty of forty shillings the first offence, and the second offence shall lose his license." No mention is here made of wine; hence the petition.

"Dec. 27, 1643: Robert Driver brings in a complaint agst Samuel Hall, of Salesbury, for beating & wronging his daughter Phebe, viz., a girle of about Tenn years of Age; & divers depositions being p^oduced to prove the same, yet the def^t not appearing. The Court granted out an Attachm^t for his appearance, the next Court att Ipswich; & also granted to the s^d Driuer (in regard of diuers wittnesses & other pr^{es}ent charges) the some of Twenty fyve shillings costs."

"The execution whereof Respitted till next Ipswich Court — granted a copie of this order — & d.d [delivered], wth all the depositions, vnto Robert driuer." — *Co. Ct. Records from 1638 to 1647-8*, pp. 145, 147.

"Samuel Hall, of Salisbury, for abusing the daughter of Robert Driuer, being about eight years of adge, by moderate stripe, called up^d, but appeared not,

27th 10th mo., 1643." — *Ibid.*

("In 1669, the said Sam'l Hall was of Langford, Essex co., Mass.; there he gives power of Attorney to Edward Gove, of Hampton, N. H., to sell estate and collect debts, etc.")

In 1641 Robert Driver was a witness in a presentment of William Witter "for houlding that the baptism of infants is noe ordinance of God, and that it is a badge of the whore of Rome."

July, 4, 1644, he was one of the appraisers, together with Hugh Burt, of the estate of Hugh Churchman, of Lynn, known as "Oulde Churchman." He made his will 14th. 4th. mo. 1640, wherein he mentions William Winter and wife, and their son Josiah and daughter Hanna, both under age, widow Ambrose, Edward Burt, Mr. Whiten (probably Mr. Whiting, pastor of the church of Lynn in 1638), and Mr. Hobert. William Winter sole executor. Probated 9th. 5 mo. 1644. Inventory was £24: 19: 11.

Aug. 5, 1659, he was a witness to the will of William Witter, the estate being appraised the November following by Robert Driver, William ~~Hacker~~^{Hacker}, and Thomas Ingalls.

July 8, 1661, he was a witness to an indenture between John Gillow and wife, Rose, and George Frayle, of Lynn, who deeds to the latter eight acres of salt marsh in Rumney Marsh in the first dividend laid out to the inhabitants of Lynn, bounded on John Witt, Thomas Newhall, Jr., and Thomas Browne.

July 22, 1661, Jenckin Davis, Lynn, deeds to George Corwin, of Salem, 14 acres in Lynn, with the dwelling-houses on the same, bounded W. on Robert Driver, E. on Richard Rooten, N. on Town Common.

June 12, 1663, Robert Driver witnessed the will of Richard Rooten.

"Nov., 1668: — This petition of Thomas Coldam & als., Lynn, was presented to the Court during the November term.

To the Honored Court now sitting at Salem, the humble complaint of seuerall of the inhabitants of Lynn. Wee, whose names are under written (with seuerall others) haueing land lyein comon in a generall feild some more & some lesse, for these many years could neuer agree to allot out a just proportion of fence suteable to each persons interest; & haueing made severall complaints to or selectmen for seuerall years past we have yett redress (though some easment we have made) but such of us whose lands lye next the outside are burdened & others that lye within som lands fence not at all & others fence nothing suteable to whatt wee doe that lye upon the outside, which wee feare maye ocation many sutes at law as there is one depending before the worshipfull Mayor Hathorne, whom we question not but may give this Honored Court further light in the case; or lands lye severall lotts deep & within the upland ther is a great quantity of sault medow that did never

fence but little or none; the feild is comonly called the great neck, or Mr. Needam's and Redknap's neck;

Now or humble request vnto the Honored Court is that or cause may be considered of and some course thought of that or burdens may be eased; that lands that lye within us boath upland & meadow maye help us on the outside fence, for we humbly aprehend that the salt meadow being of more worth and bringing forth more yeerly cleer profit than most of or upland, should be at as much charg in the out side fence & we herunto subscribed shall thank-fully acknowledge the care & paines of this Honored Court unto yor servants.

THOMAS ^{his} X COLDAM
 ^{signum}

JACOB KNIGHT

JOHN WITT

JOHN FULLER

SAMINUELL FRAYL

ROBERT ^{his} / DRIVAR
 ^{mark}

JOSEPH REDKNAP

SAMUEL TARBOX

JOHN ^{his}) TARBOX
 ^{mark}

HENERY RHODES "

"The Comon feild aboue mentioned is ordered by y^e Court to be left to y^e Selectmen of Line to order & proportion each man's share equall according to law." — *Bound Ct. Files, Vol. XIII., p. 122.*

Robert Driver in this petition of Nov., 1668, for some reason failed to sign his name himself, but allowed some one else to write it for him, he only making his mark. It was not on account of old age, for four years after, his signature is to be found on the record books well and plainly made, as it is many times previous.

June 25, 1672: Robert Driver, with several others, presented a complaint against John Hathorne, of Lynn, "for selling spiritous liquors to the Indians."

"April 16, 1673: Robert Ingalls, Lynn, & wife, Sarah, deed to Henry Rhoads 1½ acres salt marsh, in the salt marsh below the town which was formerly W^m Harkers; bounded E. on marsh of Henry Silsby, W. on marsh of Eleazer Lindsey, formerly Richard Rooten's — N. on marsh of Robert Driver's, Sen^r., S. on the sea."

It has been learned from the foregoing deeds and the few histories written on Lynn, and from Robert Driver's "Deed of Gift," made three years before his death, when eighty-five years of age, that his property, what little he had, was next that of the Meeting House, not far from the sea, and that a creek ran through it, called Driver's Creek to this day. Then a long stream of water winding its serpentine length from a pond near the Common to the ocean's shore. Now this creek is mostly bridged over, as the Eastern Railroad track lies over it, and either side shows but a

mere shallow bed, with but just enough water moving in it to preserve its shape.

Deed of Gift of Robert Driver, Sr.

"4 April 1683.

This indenture made y^e fifth day of January Anno: Dom: 1674, between Robert Driver Sen^r of Lynn in the county of Essex, tailor, of y^e one pt. & Robert Driver Junior of y^e same towne & county he being y^e naturall son of y^e s^d Robert Driver Senr. for & in consideration of his naturall affection of y^e afores^d Robert his son together with other good considerations moving him thereunto, hath with the consent of his now wife in reference to her surrendering up her thirds according to y^e law of dowries in a certaine p^{cell} of land in this writing expressed, given, granted, bargained & by deed of gift confirmed & by these pr^sents doth give grant alienate & by deed of gift confirme unto y^e said Robert Driver, his sonn & to his heirs & assignes forever a certaine p^{cell} of land scituate, lying & being in y^e towne of Lin, containing fouer acres be it more or less, it being part of house lott of the s^d Robert Driver Sen^r. & is bounded easterly with y^e land of John Davis & of Widdow Rooten, northerly with the towne comon & southwardly with the meeting house path in that corner next y^e land of Widdow Rooten & soe as y^e s^d path lyeth unto the gutter or run of water & then the s^d run of water to be the bound, & westerly with y^e land of or in the possession of William Crafts, together with comon liberties or pr^{ivilidges} whatsoever belonging unto y^e afores^d fouer acres.

To have & to hold as his owne proper right & interest forever, & moreover y^e s^d Robert Driver sen^r doth hearby covenant promise & grant to & with y^e s^d Robert his sonn that he had good right, full power, & lawfull authority in his owne name to give, grant alienate enfeoffe confirme & deliver y^e fore^d fouer acres be it more or less with all comons liberties & pr^{ivilidges} belonging thereunto with all the estate right title & interest of him y^e s^d Robert Driver in & to the same, & by him y^e s^d Robert Driver sen^r well & sufficiently saved & kept harmless & indemnified of & from all other bargaines, grants, gifts & recognisence charges, sutes-at-law & incumbrances whatsoever that may arise from any p^{son} or p^{sons} whosoever from by or under y^e s^d Robert Driver sen^r, his heirs, executors or administrators forever.

In witness whereof the p^{ties} above s^d hath unchangeably put to his hand & seale; this being to be understood if y^e s^d Robert his son shall sell, his brother Robert Potter shall have it, paying as much & as good pay as another.

ROBERT DRIVER SEN^R & a scale

PHEBE ^{her} DRIVER
mark

Signed, sealed & d^d in y^e presence of us witnesses.

JOSEPH ARMITAGE.

ROBERT POTTER.

Robert Driver owned this to be his act & deed & Phebe his wife yeilded up her thirds 21: 2: 1677 before me

WILLIAM HATHORNE, Assist."

On the same day Robert Driver, Sr., deeds the residue of his estate to Robert Potter, his son-in-law, of which the following is a copy : —

“ This Indenture made the twenty-sixth Day of January, Anno D^{omi} 1674, between Robert Driver Sen'r of Lynn, in y^e County of Essex, Taylor, of y^e one part, and Robert Potter of y^e same Town & County, son in Law unto y^e said Robert driver of y^e other part witnesseth that the said Rob^t Driver for & in consideracon of his owne inabillity together with his now Wives to mannage & carry on his affaires for their Comfortable Lively hood by reason of old age and also that Robert Potter their as afores'd hath with the consent of Ruth his now wife declared himselfe willing to Entertain them & alsoe carefully to provide all things necessary for y^m at his owne Charge both in time of their & Each their healths & sickness during both their lives, & at their death to give Each of them Christian buriall & in y^e meantime nine shillings in money annually during both their lives, to be at their owne dispose & for that End hath Bound himselfe his heirs Executors & administrators in the Summe of Two hundred pounds as may more at large appeare by a bond under his hand & Seale bearing date with These presents — Hath with y^e consent of Phebe his now wife given granted alienated Enfeoffed confirmed & Delivered & doth by these presents with her consent in reference to her surrendering vp of her thirds according to y^e Law of Dowries in the housing & Lands in this writing Expressed give grant bargain alienate Enfeoffe Conforme and deliver unto y^e s^d Robert Potter his heirs & assignes for Ever a certaine parcell of vpland & salt marsh ground situate lying & being in the towne of Lynn aforesaid with all buildings vpon it the s^d Land being part of y^e house Lott of y^e said Robert Driver.

The said lands containing in Estimation Six acres be it more or less & is bounded Easterly with y^e land of y^e widow Rooten & a Creeke & William Crafts & the land formerly in the possession of Mr. Daniel King Sen'r. Northerly with y^e meeting house path from the land of Widdow Rooten vnto the runn of Water & then the said Runn to be y^e Dividing bound betwixt y^e said Land & y^e land of Robert Driver Jun'r with all wayes Easements Comons liberties & priviledges whatsoever thereunto belonging; & Southwardly with y^e marsh of Henry Sillsby with all the Estate right Title & Interest of him y^e s^d Robert Driver in & to y^e same. To have & to Hold, to occupy & Enjoy to him y^e s^d Robert Potter his heirs assignes For Ever hereafter as his & their v^{er} right & Interest & moreover the said Robert Driver doth hereby vpon the aforesaid considerations give & grant vnto y^e aforesaid Robert Potter all other his Estate Whatsoever consisting in cattle household goods &c. and doth alsoe hereby covenant promise & grant to & with y^e s^d Robert Potter that he hath good Right full power & Lawfull Authority to his owne name to give grant alienate Enfeoffe confirme & deliver y^e same as abovesaid & that it shall & may be Lawfull to & for the s^d Robert Potter his heirs & assignes for Ever hereafter peaceably & Quietly To Have & to Hold to occupy & Enjoy to him his heirs & assignes for Ever and by him y^e s^d Robert Driver his heirs Executors & administrators

well & Sufficently saved & kept harmless & Indemnified off & from all former & other sales Gifts grants bargains wills recognisance charges suits at Law & Incumbrances what soever from by or under him the ^{sd} Robt Driver his heirs Executors or administrators for Ever.

In Wittness wherof the party aboves'd hath unchangebly put his hand & Seale.

ROBERT DRIVER SEN^a a Seale

her
PHEBE C DRIVER
mark

Sealed Signed & Delivered in y^e presence of VS. one word being Interlined before Signing & Sealing.

ANDREW MANSFIELD } Wit.
THOMAS NEWHALL }

Robert Driver owned this to be his act & deed & Phebey his wife yeilded up her thirds.

21: 2: 1677.

WM. HATHORNE Asst."

The "interlined" word which appeared in the original deed was not apparent in the copy on record.

From this "Deed of Gift" it is learned that Robert Driver, Sr., had two children, — Robert and Ruth; and from the complaint against Samuel Hall, that he also had a daughter, Phebe, who probably was dead at the time this deed of gift was made. Farmer and Savage give him two other children, — Richard and John; of whom there is no further evidence on record.

"In the autumn of 1677 the General Court ordered that the oath of Fidelity to the country be revived and put in practice throughout the Colony." — *Memorial History of Boston*.

Accordingly, Feb. 26, 1677, and also in 1678, this oath of "Fidelity & Allegiance to the Government & Jurisdiction" was administered to the following persons, among whom Robert Driver, Jr., is found each year: —

Bound County Court Files, Vol. XXVII p. 138.

"The list of those y^t were sworne by Captayne Thomas Marshall of Lynn according to the Generall Courts' order who tooke the oath; at a generall meeting vpon y^e 26th of ffebruary 1677, many of them & some since & are heere mentioned according to their severall Squadrons they are Inn, of Tithe men & Constables.

Imp^r: Of Ensigne Jn^o Fuller : & Matthew ffarrington Sent
their Squadrons.

Samuell Verry
Joseph Rhoads
James Robinson

| John Newhall Junior
| Nath'l Newhall
| Nath'l Kertland jun^r

| Henry Wormwood
| Andrew Townsend
| Joseph Farr

John Clarke	Joseph Hart	Robert Pottar Senr
Ely Rhoades	Richard Haven Senr	Robert Potter Junr
Joshua Rhoades	Nehemiah Goodale	Ebenezer Hathorne
John Witt	William Longley	Nathl Hathorne
Joseph Mansfield Junr	Thomas Browne Senr	Isaack Ramsdell
Joseph Wheat	Thomas Browne Junr	Richard Haven Junr
John fuller Junior	Joseph Browne	Aquilla Ramsdall
Edward fuller	John Newhall Senr	Moses Hudson
Elisha fuller	Joseph Newhall	John Mower
Samuel Hart Senr	Robert Burges	Saml Mower
Saml Hart junr	Henry Trevett	John Newhall Tertius

Of Henry Collins Senr & Henry Selsby their Squadrons.

John Lewis Senr	Saml Engoles	Thomas Graves Junr
Ezekiell Needham	Nathl Engoles	Samuel Graves
Thomas Brewer	Benj. Ireson	Wilm Smith
John Linzey	Jonathan Selzby	Mathyas farnsworth Junr
Thomas farrar Junr	Samuel Selzby	John farnsworth
Thomas Beal	Ephraim Selzby	John Richards
Richard Hood Senr	Henry Collins Junr	Griffin Harris
Richard Hood Junr	Henry Collins Tertia	Nicholas Hutchins
Willm Bassett Junr	Benj. Collins	Ben: farr
John Lewis Junr	Robert Rand Junr	John Blanco Junr
Robert Engoles Senr	Zachary Rand	Joseph Collins
John Engoles	Richard Richinson	John Marks
Robert Engoles Junr	Robert Coats Junr	

Of Serjeant Nathl Kertland & John Burrell Senr .

John Burrell Junr	Allin Brade Junr	Daniel Needham
Thomas Ivory	Allin Brade Tertia	Jacob Knight
Henry Stacey	Timothy Brade	Nathaniel Ballard
Moses Chadwell	Joseph Brade	John Tarbox
John "Brade" (Breed)	Joseph Hull	John Ballard

Of mr Laughton & Francis Burrell.

Hugh Alley	Robert Driver Junr	Samuell Tarbox
Samuel Laughton	Joseph Burrell	Eleazr Lynzey
Samuel Mansfield	Thomas Laughton Junr	Daniell Jonson
Abraham Roberts	John Daves	Domingo White
John Coats	Benjamin Redknap	Mr Samuell Cobbett
John "Neck" (Nick)	Samuell Jonson	

Of William Bassett Senr his Squadron & Eleazer Lynzey.

Mr Ralph King	Walter Phillips Senr	Thomas Purchis
John Ally	Walter Phillips Junr	Thomas Haynes
Philip Dory	John Phillips	Robert Haynes
Richd Cowdeck	George Oakes	Joseph Hibbard
Joseph fisk	Samuel Pike	

Of Edward Baker & William Merriam.

Joseph Edmunds	Josiah Rhoades	Peeter Twist
Willm Pasly	Joseph Hutchens	Macan Downing
Joseph Holloway	Saml Edmunds	Henry Dispaw
John Edmunds	Daniell Hutchins	Edward Dispaw
Joseph Mirriam	John Divan Junr	Macam Macallom
Ebenezer Stocker	Edward Baker	John Gilde

Samuell Penfield
Nath'l Lewis
John Dean

Samuell Jenckes
John Jenckes
Allestor Dugglas

John Chilson
John Severn

Of Thomas Bancroft.

Edward Marshall
John Pierson Junr
francis Hutchinson
John Hawckes

Moses Hawckes
Daniell Gowen
Nath'l Gowen
Daniel Eaton

John Coate
Thomas Hechenson
Samuel Stocker
William Clemons "

Co. Ct. Files, Vol. XXX. p. 58.

" OATH OF ALLEGIANCE

In the year 1678.

The names of thos Inhabitants of Lyn
which tooke the Oath of Allegiance
to the Kinge.

Mr Samuell Whitinge
Mr Joseph Whitinge
Mr Thomas Laughton
Capt. Walker
Mr Ralph Kinge
William Craufts
Samuell Cobbett
francis Burrill
Joseph Burrill
Henry Stacy
Moses Chadwell
Allen Bread Senr
Allen Bread Junr
Timothy Bread
Joseph Bread
Allen Bread sonne to Allen
Bread Junr
Joseph Hall
Nathaniell Ballard
Jacob Knight
Matthew Farrington Junr
Daniel Needham
John Tarbox
Nathaniel Handforth
John Ballard
Thomas Ivory
Theophilus Bayley
Robert Drier Junr
John Davis
Eliezer Lynsey
John Coates
Samuel Johnson
John Collins junior
Daniell Johnson
John Lynsey
Crispus Brewer
Thomas farrer Senr
Thomas farrer Jun

Richard Richardson
Richard Hud (Hood) Junr
William Bassett Junr
John Lewis Junior
John Ingolls
Robert Ingolls Senior
Robert Ingolls Junior
Nathaniel Ingolls
Samuell Ingolls
Benjamin Ireson
Henry Silsbey
Epraim Silsbey
Jonathan Silsbey
Samuel Silsbey
Henry Collins Senr
Henry Collins Junr
Henry Collins son to Henry
Collins Jr.
Benjamin Collins
John Collins
Michael Lambert
Benjamin Redknap
Samuell Penfield
Daniell Salmon
Richard Cowduck
William Bassett Senr
John Lewis Senr
Ezekiell Needham
John Blayno Junior
Thomas Beale
Michael Homar
Joseph Clarke
Darbey Manige
Benjamin farnworth
Nicholas Hutchins
John Richards
John Blayno Senior
George Oakes Junior

Francis Wonright
Walter Phillips Senior
John Phillips
Walter Phillips Junior
Samuel Pike
Thomas Purchiss
Oliver Elkins
John Dolley
Thomas Haines
Robert Haines
John Besse
Thomas Elkins
Samuell Tarbox
Hugh Alley
Domingo White
Samuel Laughton
William Markes
Joseph Collins
Thomas Graves Senior
Robert Coats Senior
Thomas Graves Junior
Marke Graves
Samuell Graves
William Smith
Robert Coats Junior
Charles Gott
Abraham Roberts
James Mills
Griffin Harris
John Alley
Robert Rand Senr
Robert Rand Junr
Zachariah Rand
Samuel Bly
Thomas Laughton Junr
Constable "

Mass. Archives, Vol. LXVIII. p. 93.

"A list of y^e names of Capt. Gardiners Souldiers in this p'sent Expedition (King Philip's War, 1675).

LYNN		
Nicholas Huchin	Thomas Kimball	Samuel Rods
John Linsey.	John Davis	Mark Bachelor
Robert driver	Samuell Graves	Richard Hutten
Daniel Huchin	Andrew townsend	Philip Welsh
Iseck Welman	Thomas baker	John Hunkens
	Isaack Hartt	Jonathan Looke "
	John Farington	

The taking of the oath of allegiance by Robert Driver Jr., Feb. 26, 1677, and again in 1678, and being one of Captain Gardner's soldiers in King Philip's war in 1675, for which service he with many others then living received a grant of land in 1686, is of marked importance right here in this history of the Driver family; for Drake in his "History of the Founders of New England," and Hotten in his "List of Emigrants to New England," both give one "Robert Driver, aged 8 years, who embarked in the 'Abigail,' June 17, 1635, for New England," whom Mr. Savage in his "Genealogical Dictionary," and Farmer in his "Register of the First Settlers of New England," calls son of Robert Driver, Sen., of Lynn, thus confounding the son of Robert Driver, our emigrant, who settled in Lynn, Mass., in 1630, with this Robert Driver of 1635, evidently a runaway from England, whom Cotton Mather in his "Magnalia," Book VI., states was hung for the murder of his master, he being a servant, March 18, 1674; but there appears no further evidence or proof of this fact, for the emigrant's son Robert was alive three years after his namesake was hung, as shown by the taking of the aforesaid oath, and also twenty-eight years afterwards, as shown by the following items, as taken from the "Lynn town account book of Debts: —"

"Dec 30: 1696: — The Town debt to Robert Driver, y^e 10: of June, '96, for Ringing y^e bell & sweeping y^e Meeting house.
£2: 4: 0."

"June 10, '98: — Then due to Robert Driver, for sweeping the Meeting house & Ringing the Bell in pay.
£06: 00: 00."

"June 10: 1700: — Then Dew to Robbert Driver for sweeping The Meeting House and Ringing the Bell in money.
£04: 00: 00 "

" *Contra.*

"Dec. 31: '96 — Robert Driver Rec^d in a bill to Thom^s Burage, Constable.
£02: 04: 00."

"July 13: '98: — Robert Driver Rec^d in two bills to Ed. Fuller & Zachary Rand constable, in pay.
£06: 00: 00."

"June 10: 1700: — Rec^d in one Bill to Joseph Mansfield, Constable, in money, four pounds.
£04: 00: 00."

"Jan. 30: 1700-1: then dew to Roberd Driver for sweeping the meeting-house in money
£01: 00: 00."

"Jan. 9, 1701-2: Rec^d one bill to Sam'l Burrill, Constable. money.
£01: 00: 00."

That a Robert Driver was hung in Boston, Mass., March 18, 1675, is beyond dispute; but in the "Book of Assistants," beginning in 1671, deposited in the clerk's office of the Supreme Judicial Court, Boston, being the court records for Suffolk co., is found that he was a Scotchman, living in Piscataqua, Me., a long way from Lynn, Mass., and the family of Drivers there living.

This statement is also to be found in the Diary of Judge Samuel Sewall, who lived contemporaneously with the event, where the following entry is made:—

"A Scotchman and a Frenchman kill their master, knocking him in the head as he was taking Tobacco. They are taken by Hew and Cry, and condemned: Hanged. Nicholas Feaver born in the Ile of Jersey: Robert Driver born in the Isle of Orknye in Scotland. Executed March 18, 1674-5."

Book of Assistants, p. 19.

"Att A Court of Assistants held at Boston 2d of March 1674-5, Robert Driver, Scotchman, being committed to prison (having fled, for murdering his Mr Robert Williams, of Piscataquay, fisherman) in order to his tryall, was brought to the barr, pleaded not Guilty, put himself on his triall by God and the country have his liberty to object against any of the Jury Impannelled, he objecting not was Indicted by the name of Robert Driver, late Apprentice & servant to the late Robert Williams for not having the feare of God before his eyes & being Instigated by the Divil in or about the 10th of February last together wth Nicholas favor, then y^e fellow servant did maliciously and wth wicked hands murder theire then master Robert Williams or did abett Consent vnto & Conceale the said murderers & villainous Act. Contrary to the peace of our Sovereigne Lord & the Jurisdiction—he having pleaded not Guilty After the Jury had perosed their evidence they brought in their verdict—they found him Guilty. The Court vnanimously Agreed that sentence of Death should be pronounced agst him accordingly the Gouve^r proceeded.

You Robert Driver having bin found Guilty as above are to Goe from hence to y^e place from whence you came & from thence to the place of execution & there to hang by y^e neck till you be dead.

God have mercy on thy Soule."

In the Court House, Boston, Mass., in the Suffolk co. Court Files, the full trial is recorded; four of which records will herein be given as they appear on file. It is desired that notice be taken particularly of the fourth paper, where Robert Driver states that "while he was with his parents, who lived in Scotland" (not Lynn, Mass.), "he was averse to y^e goverment, neglecting y^e meanes

of his educacon & refusing subjection to any service, & y^t being come hither without there privity, he hath rune away from sundry masters."

" Paper No. I. [Venire].

Suffolk Co.: Court Files, Ct. House, Boston, Bk. 15, 353.

To the Constables of Boston,

These require you in his Maj^{ties} name forthwith to Assemble the ffreemen of yo^r Towne together & signify to them that they are alike required to choose & send ten able persons five whereof to serve on the Grand Jury — the other five on the Jury of trialls for life lymbe & banishment at the Court of Assistants here by the speciall order of y^e Governo^r & Magists. called to be held in Boston on the 11th Instant being thirs day at eight of the clock in the morning for the triall of Nich^s Feavor now in prison for mur dering his master making yo^r returne of this warant to y^e Secretary at or before y^e time & not to faile —

Dated in Boston this eighth of March 1674

By Order of the Gou^rn^r & C.

EDWARD RAWSON, Sec^r.

[Indorsed on the back.]

Y^e Grand Jurey.
Deacon Henrey Allen
Deac. Peeter B [et]
Jn^o Phillepes
Rob: San ders
Ja []: E [lyott]

Jurey Tryalles
Mr Will Bartholo[mew]
M^r Humphry Hodges
Rich: [W] oodie
Will Engram
Rich: Midlecutte.

These men above [written] are chosen and warned to serve accordinge to y^e w^{thin} warent: per mee.

NICHO: PAIGE, Constable."

" Paper No. 2 [Venire].

To the Constable of Dorchester

These require you in his Majestyes name forthwith to assemble the ffreemen of your town together, and to signify vnto them that they are alike required to choose & send four able men, two whereof to serve on the Gran jury, the other two on the Jury of trialls, for life & limbe at the Court of Assistants here by the order of the Governour & Majestrates called to be held in Boston on the 11th of this Instant at Eight of the Clock in the morning, for the tryall of Nicholas ffeavor now in prison for murdering his master, making a Returne of this Warrant to the Secretary at or before the time & not to faile.

dated in Boston the 8th of March 1674

By the Order of the Gou^rn^r & C.

EDWARD RAWSON Sec^r

[Endorsed on back]

Wee have Assembled the freemen of our town to gather and chosen for the graniury

Samuel Clap
Enock wiswell

For Pety Jury
Amuell Weeks
Joseph Holms

by mee JOHN CAPEN
Constabel of Dorchester
This 10 of Martch 1674."

[Paper No. 3 from Elias Stileman.]

"Gr^d Island, y^e 24th feb., 1674.Hon^d S^r:

These few Lynes are to acquaint y^r Worp of a sad accedent fallen out lately Concerning a man that was murdered by his apprentice & a hired Serv^t not known vntill yesterday discovered by two boyes that happened to Ly in y^e house where it was done Mun day night last, who being benighted tooke up their quart^r there & on tuesday morning the ff lower being som w^t open saw in the cellar a place Like a grave & sherching to se w^t it was found a man covered wth a little earth & Leaves: their on exam^{on} I have taken; the murder was comitted a fortnight or somw^t more since: for the p sons, as is supposed to comitt y^e act this day fortnight came to this Island & then told some here y^t their M^r was gon to Cape porpose & Gott the key of a house where in his master dwelt & tooke out some Clothes as Lying & C. & told y^e pson who kept there masters key they were a going to strawbery bank" (now Portsmouth) "to carry it to wash & went up wth some y^t never mistrusted any thing; it is thought they killed him for his money w^{ch} is Judged to have been 40 pounds.

I have sent hue & cry Eastward & a nother Coms along with this & inclosed a Coppie of y^e Jury's verdict; if the hue & cry take them not before they gett out of this Juris diccon y^r Worp. best knows how to have y^m sherched for in y^r other. I am Inquireing after & getting w^t light I can thereabouts. I hope god will find out y^e murderers & teach us all to tremble at such awfull Guidences. please to accept of Servis's from

S^r Yo^r S to Command

STILEMAN.

[Endorsed on the back.]

To the Worpⁿ John Leveritt Esq.Gou^r of the Massachusetts CollonyIn Boston p^sentfr^m M^r Styleman

Rec. 27 feb. at night

betwene 8 & nine of the

Clocke before y^e Saboth"

[Paper No. 4, Driver's examination.]

"2:1:74-5

Robert Driver being examined doth confesse that he being the Apprentice of Robert Williams of Portsmouth, fisherman, they being together at Spruce creeke in a house that stood there empty, belonging to one ffabine of y^e I les of Shooles, there was with them Nicholas ffavour, a Jarzie man, who was also the said William's servant and it being upon the fourth day of the weeke, the 10th of this last month, the said Williams haveing turned himselfe to the fire to kindle it up or as though he would light his Tobacco Pipe the above named Nicholas Favour came behind him with an Ax & smote him therewith upon the side of his head so as made him settle a little on the one side; and not falling downe, he the said ffavour smote him a second blow & stroke him dead, so as y^t He saw him fall downe on the ground; where upon the said Driver saith, he went out of the house & made a crying out and the said ffavour called him againe & bid him hold his peace or else he would serve him in like manner; whereupon he came againe unto y^e house & saw the said ffavour draw his master from y^e place where he lay & put him downe the cellar, where the earth being froazen y^t a grave could not be digged he covered him

with leaves & rubbish as well as he could and then the said ffavour & he stayed in the said house together abt 2 or 3 houres after the murder was comitted, the said ffavour spending sometime in washing the blood from of his Cloathes: and he y^e said Driver did also change his cloathes & left his old coate in the house where the murder was comitted.

Also he y^e s^d Driver doth say & confesse that sundry times y^e s^d ffavour had demanded his wages of his master & they had jarring & discontent abt it and the said ffavour abt a week before the murder was comitted told him y^e said Driver y^t in case his M^r would not pay him his wages, he would breake his legs in peices & desired y^t he would consent thereto w^{ch} he denying y^e said ffavour told him y^t he was much affeard.

Also y^e s^d Driver doth confesse that the coate he left behind him was bloody, but saith it was his owne bloud occasioned by a blow y^t his M^r had given him some dayes before vpon his face.

After this he y^e said Driver saith y^t ffavour & he went together to his M^r house, where the said ffavour haveing the key opened the doore & they both went in & there y^e said ffavour also opened his masters chest & saw him tumbling over y^e cloathes & w^h was in it & after a while gave to him 2^d money saying he had y^e like quantity reserved for himeselfe; and after abt one houres stay in y^e s^d house they agreed to travell to Boston together, and y^e s^d ffavour said y^t for his owne concealem^t he would change his name from Nicholas to Philip & keep out of the sight of such as there knew him; & so they accordingly travelled together till they came to Wenham and all along the Rode y^e said ffavour pay^d there expenses; and w^h they left Wenham the said ffavour said he would go toward Marblehead to some of his country men there & he y^e said Driver came towards Boston, where he was Apprehended & Comitted to Prison.

Also the said Driver doth confesse that while he was with his Parents who lived in Scotland he was averse to y^e govern^t, neglecting y^e meanes of his educacion & refusing subjection to any service & y^t being come hither without there privy he hath rune away from sundry masters seeking thereby to gaine his liberty, & doth now for y^t through his owne folly & wickedness he is fallen in to y^e hands of Gods justice & hath not further to answer but y^t request of a selfe condemned malefactor for mercy & pardon his transgression in this matter," (on the margin is written) "being not y^e actual guilt of murder, but y^e concealem^t there of in manner as before exp^{ss}ed. this examination examination taken y^e day aboves^d before us

{ THO. DANFORTH
{ WILLIAM STOUGHTON

Owned in Court that this confession & examination of his was the truth in open Court 5 March [Attest.]

EDW: [RAWSON] Secr.

He also acknowledged in Court y^t ffavours breeches were bloody & wet."

[Paper No. 5. Nicho: favor, his Indictment.]

"Wee the Grand Jury for our Sovereigne Lord ye King, do present Nicholas ffavor by the name of Nicholas ffavor for not having the feare of God before his Eyes & being instigated by the Devill, in or abt the 10th. of febr: last: he the said Nicholas ffavor together with his then fellow servt Robert Driver, did maliciously and with wicked hands murder their then master Robert Williams or (aid?) abbett, consent unto & concale the said murderers & villanous act contrary to the peace of our Sovereigne Lord ye King his crowne & dignity & the lawes of God, & of this Jurisdicon.

we the Grand Jury doe find this Bill and leave him to further Trial: In the behalfe of the rest of the Jury.

and Accordingly was thereupon Indicted by y^e name as above of

RICHARD (BEERES ?)

We finde Nicholas flavor guilty according to y^e Inditement

WILLIAM BATHOLMEW

with consent of the rest"

"8:1:167 $\frac{1}{2}$

Nicholas flavor being examined saith that this last winter y^t he lived with Major Shapley at Pas Cattoqua.

That he did not know Robert Williams.

That he did not know Robert Driver y^t he knows of.

That he came from Piscattaqua ab^t 2 : mos & $\frac{1}{2}$ since.

that hee kept Major Shapley's milne" (mill) "& sometimes cut wood.

That it is almost 3 mo^s since he was at y^e great Island, at Pascattaqua.

That there was none in his company w^h he came from Pascattaqua & y^t there was no Scotchman in his company after Robert Drever came before y^e Gov^t

That he killed not his M^r Robert Williams.

That he saw Robert Drever at Cap^t Moores ab^t 6 : m^o past & not since y^t time except at M^r forelights in y^e river ab^t 4 mo :

That he lived 3 years & $\frac{1}{2}$ wth Major Clarke & Capt. little in Boston.

That he never wrought with Robert Drever.

That he never lived at Great Island with Robert Williams.

Robert Driver saith y^t they went in George Nordens canno from great Island to Strawberry banke & Nicholas flavor wth him.

That they lay together at Hampton in a Scotchman's house y^t drew beer formly, & was put downe.

That in Ipswich they lay together at a Scotchman's house & y^t M^r Cogsell can tell y^e name of y^e man.

That they lodged together at a Jarzie man's house y^t keeps a wind mill.

Nicholas flavor saith they did not lodge at y^e s^d Jarzie man's house.

Againe saith y^t he never wrought with Robert Williams.

That he saw not M^r Driver do itt nor did help to bury him.

That he hath been more y^a ten weeks from Pascattaqua.

That he was 3 weeks at Salem at his countryman's Simons."

Children of **Robert** and **Phebe Driver** were : —

2. **ROBERT DRIVER** ², born about 1631 ; living in 1702 ; died before 1706 or 7 ; md. Sarah ———. (See Family II.)
3. **PHEBE DRIVER** ², born in 1633 or 5, ascertained from the complaints of Robert Driver against Samuel Hall ; died probably before 1683, otherwise she would have been mentioned in the "Deed of Gift" of her father.
4. **RICHARD DRIVER** ², (perhaps son, according to Farmer & Savage ;) birth unknown : md. Jan. 6, 1664, Sarah Salmon (Town Record) : death unknown. (See Family III.)
5. **JOHN DRIVER** ², (perhaps son, according to Farmer & Savage ;) birth unknown ; living in 1680 ; md. first, Elizabeth ———, who died, May 26, 1674 ; md. second, one whose name is unknown, but her two children were John and Eleazer. (See Family IV.)

6. RUTH DRIVER², born about 1637; died in Lynn, Mass., March 18, 1704; md. in Lynn, Jan. 25, 1659-60, as his second wife, Robert Potter, son of Nicholas Potter and first wife Emma ———, who was born in England, in 1630; died in Lynn, Mass., March 21, 1709-10, a carpenter.

Robert Potter and family lived in Lynn, Mass., on Mill street, so named from the oldest mill in the town, which once stood on this street to grind its grist. Opposite to his house he had a tan yard in a field which extended back to the Rocks, where within a few years, Judge Newhall, the historian, had his summer residence.

In 1634 he became a Freeman.

Feb. 26, 1677. He took the oath of Allegiance together with his son Robert, and his brother-in-law, Robert Driver, Jr.

In 1675, the Court ordered one thousand additional men to be raised for the regular army to subjugate the Indians under King Philip.

Fifteen men were impressed in Lynn, Mass., for the service, of whom were Robert Potter and his brother-in-law, Robert Driver, Jr.

Subsequently with many others they petitioned the Court for the land promised them as an additional compensation for services rendered in that war, for which service soldiers received twenty shillings a month, Lieutenants four pounds, and Captains six pounds.

June 3, 1686, the land was granted them, but which was not actually received until 1734, forty-eight years afterwards, when Robert Potter was dead, and his grant of land was claimed and received by his seventh son, Benjamin, No. 31. (See grants under Family II.)

"In 1692 the town of Lynn voted that the persons under named in answer to their petition should have ability of the hindermost seat in the gallery to sit in, and fit it up as well as they please, in the north-east corner, provided they do not damage in the hindering the light of the window ;

Sarah Hutchins.
Mary Newhall.
Rebecca Ballard.
Susanna Cole.
Rebecca Collins.

Ruth Potter.
Jane Ballard.
Sarah Farrington
Rebecca Newhall.
Elizabeth Norwood.

Mary Haberfield."

Town Records.

This petition granting the "hindermost seat in the gallery" to women was contrary to custom, as in the gallery the young men sat in the back seats, middle-aged women in the front row, and girls occupying the centre tier of benches, as men and women sat apart in the meeting: women to the right of the front door on the ground floor, men to the left. There were three galleries, of which the singers occupied the front one, to which a flight of stairs led each side of the front door. Elderly persons or those deaf were seated directly in front of the pulpit.

The seating of the Meeting House, was quite an event, and on the Quarterly Court files of Salem is thus mentioned:—"In consequence of divers complaints having been made from time to time of disorder in the meeting house, and believing that the abuses in youth cannot be so easily reformed,

unlesse every house holder knows his seat in the meeting house ; the selectmen, the twenty-fourth of January, 1651, hereby order that every house-holder both men and women shall sit in those seats, that are appointed for them during their lives, and not to presse into seats where they are full already.

"They also declare that they have drawne a list of the names of the inhabitants and appointed them their places in the Meeting-house, and have set their names in each particular seat where they shall sit, and the *young men* are appointed to sit in the *four backer seats in the gallery* and in the two lower seats at the west door."

"At first the floor of this church was supplied with benches ; pews afterwards were separately set up by individuals as they obtained permission of the town. Thus the interior presented a singular appearance, for some were large pews and some small, some square, some long, some oblong, some with seats on three sides, some with seats on one side only. One pew, occupied by black people, was elevated above the stairs in one corner, near to the ceiling. The pulpit was on the north side, and large enough to hold ten people. Jan. 8, 1692, the town voted that twelve persons should sit at the table in the meeting-house, and that three should sit in the deacon's seat, and that eight persons should sit in the pulpit ; that them that are surviving, that were chosen by the town a committee to erect the meeting-house, and *Clerk Potter* [husband to the above-said Ruth (Driver) Potter] to join along with them, should seat the inhabitants of the town in the meeting-house, both men and women ; but it is to be understood that they are not to seat neither the table, nor the deacon's seat, nor the pulpit, but them to set there are voted by the town."—LEWIS.

"The deacon's seat was in front of the pulpit, or desk, if no pulpit, one of them with a money box in his hand for the contribution, which was taken every Sabbath afternoon, another one saying 'Brethren, now is time left for contribution ; wherefore as God hath prospered you, so freely offer.' Then the people in the gallery came down and marched two and two abreast up one ile and down another, until they come before the desk, when they placed their offerings, some one shilling, some two, or a half a crown, in the deacon's box, according to their ability and good will ; after this they sang a psalm."—COFFIN. Mr. Felt says this custom of taking a collection was omitted in 1768.

"In addition to the care of the contribution box, the deacons had the charge of the hour-glass, which was set running at the commencement of the sermon, — which was hardly considered satisfactory if it were not continued till the sands of an hour had ceased running. Sometimes the horologe was again turned, and the congregation invited to 'take another glass.'"—COFFIN.

"Men were appointed to tune the psalm in y^e Meeting house in time of publick worship, sometimes two, so that each could 'take their turn in that work, that it may be done with y^e more ease and cheerfulness.' With a pitch-pipe, the tune was set ; the singers [now the choir] sang the lines, the two next were given out, and thus the psalm from the Bay Psalm Book was sung in regular order, from the first to the last, four on each Sabbath. The precentors sat in the seats near the deacons' seat, facing the people."—COFFIN.

"The singing of the psalms was followed by a long prayer and a longer sermon. The benediction pronounced, there was a moment's pause; then the minister descended from the pulpit, took his wife on his arm, and, followed by his children, proceeded down the aisle, the clerical cortege gracefully returning the respectful bows and courtesies of the congregation. The clergyman's family was followed by the more aristocratic persons from the pews; these by the remainder of the audience. Many people took their dinner with them from home, some in tin pails, others in baskets, retiring to the church-yard or returning to the church to eat it, according to the weather, and thus stayed at the meeting-house during the short intermission between the services." — *Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian*.

Everybody was expected to attend public worship every Sunday if in good health. All absences were noticed, and it was the duty of the tything-man to see why they were, and to prevent their occurring again. All persons who lived any distance from church rode, the grandparents in the chaise, the father and mother on horseback, the mother riding on the pillion behind the father; the children walked, who in summer were barefoot, carrying their shoes in their hands, not putting them on until within sight of the meeting-house door. The carriages then in use were the chaise, the calash, and a vehicle called a chair. Lewis states that in 1737 there were in Lynn "14 chaises, 9 vehicles called chairs, and one calash." A horse-block for the convenience of the pillion riders stood by the front door of the meeting-house (there being folding doors on three sides of the church, without porches), and a long row of low sheds extending to the left sheltered the horses. "May 16, 1661, it was ordered that no person shall ride or lead a horse into the meeting-house under the penalty of forfeiting five shillings, nor discharge a gun in the meeting-house, or any other house, without leave of the owner or householder, under the like penalty." Probably occasioned by the Indians lurking about to seize the horses, and thus guns were necessary to protect the same.

When the minister came in there was a clatter of many feet on the wooden floor, as it was the signal for the men and boys who had been grouped about the meeting-house to come in; quietly they seated themselves, with demure "Sabba' day" faces, and the service commenced, not with the doxology, as now, but with two lines of a psalm read by the parson from the Bay Psalm Book, a deacon stepped forward and repeated it, then the precentor set the tune with the tuning-fork, and the choir sang the lines; the two next were given out, and thus the psalm was sung to the end, as before stated.

"Sept. 4, 1686, Robert Potter and six others of the selectmen of Lynn, for £16, in silver, purchased of the Indians all the tract of land which included the towns of Lynn and Reading." — LEWIS, *History of Lynn*.

Dec. 22, 1693; Robert Potter was chosen juror.

In 1691, 1692, and 1693, he was chosen to lay out highways and bounds.

March 8, 1688-9, and March 8, 1694-5, Robert Potter was chosen as one of the selectmen, who at first were called townmen, because they took care of the government of the town, and were intrusted with all its business.

Jan. 3, 1695-6, he was chosen "to warn all persons to throw up their fences that had by encroachment taken in any of the town common."

March 18, 1695-6, and March 1, 1702-3, Robert Potter was chosen fence-viewer; and May 9, 1698, to 1701-2, he was chosen surveyor of highways.

"At a meeting held May 16, 1700, it was propounded to y^e town for consideration whether they would sell a piece of land to Robert Potter where y^e meeting house stood and change y^e highway of y^e Doc^{ts} & lay it in or by John Ivory's land."

All freemen had an interest in the common lands, and at different times became owners, and under the Province laws became organized into a corporation under the title of "Commoners," and this corporation granted land to the town or individuals. Those who either by grant, purchase, or inheritance were entitled to a share in all common and undivided lands were called "freeholders."

April 15, 1706, at a town meeting held at Lynn, it was voted to divide the remaining common lands, only reserving the training field, now called the Common. They chose a committee of three persons from other towns to make the division, whom they directed to allow each proprietor at least one fourth upland, and as near his own dwelling as might be, and "all such as have foure acres of land, or any less quantity, to have privildg for five acres; and all such as have five acres to have priviledg for six acres," and so on till they come to twenty acres, counting two acres of pasture land for one of tillage land; we finding them to be rated but half soe much for pasture land as for tillage or Improved Lands; "are priviledged according to the number of acres they have on the List."

Robert Potter, Sr., had land granted him at this time in the following divisions:—

		acres.	poles.
In 1 st division	5 th range	2	: 117
" 2 ^d "	6 th "	4	: 110
" 2 ^d "	10 th "	3	: 60
" 2 ^d "	16 th "	4	: 110
" 2 ^d "	in the Lanthorn 3 ^d range	4	: 110
" 4 th "	Ox Pasture 4 th range	3	: 20
" 3 ^d "	in the body of the town 2 ^d draft 4 th range	6	: 60
" 5 th "	near Ox Pasture 11 th range	4	: 110
" 7 th "	Bass Neck 4 th range	1	: 156
" 6 th "	3 ^d range	1	: 21

"March 6, 1703-4. — Whereas Robert Potter junior had nine pole of land granted to him by the town y^e 9th of March, 1701-2, & he dyed before it was paid for therefore — *Voted*, that his father Robert Potter, Sen^r shall have twelve pole of land of the common where his daughter, to wit, his son Robert's Wildow now lies, including her house & barn & one pole at y^e Southerly End of y^e barn, he giving y^e same to me or more of his son Robert Potter's children provided he pays twelve shillings for the same, & y^e grant to his s^d son to be of none effect."

"March 6, 1703-4; — Robert Potter paid twelve shillings for the before s^d land."

March 8, 1704-5, five years before his death, Robert Potter, Sr., made the following Deed of Gift: —

"To all Christian People To whom this present deed of gift shall come.

Robert Potter of Lynn carpenter sendeth greeting :

Know y^e that I the s^d Robert Potter as well for & in consideration of the Natural Love, good will & affection which I have & bare unto my Son Benjamin Potter of the Town of Lynn afores^d as for divers other good causes and considerations me hereunto especially moving Have given and by these presents do fully, clearly, freely and Absolutely give, grant, aliene enfeoffe and confirm unto my s^d son Benjamin Potter his heirs Executors administrators and assigns forever three certain peices or parcells of land scituate laying & being in Lynn, afores^d —

First, all that piece or parcel of land lately in the possession of Robert Burgis, late of Lynn, dec'd, in the Mill street field so called, containing by Estimation six acres, be the same more or less, excepting, only the Westerly half part of the old orchard, so called, which six acres of land is bounded Easterly on the land of Samuel Newhall; Northerly on the Common; Southerly on the highway; Westerly on my own land —

Secondly, three acres and one hundred & six poles of land laying on the Easterly side of my Home lot laying all along by the side of the afores^d six acres, that is to say from the backside of y^e Barn formerly Burgis's, so up to the Rocks or Common and to measure nears as wide again att the lower end as at the uper end —

Thirdly, the one full half of my twelve acre Lott of salt marsh laying in the first Division att the far End of Rumney Marsh, That is to say, the full & just half of the breadth of said Lott laying on the north-east side from End to End —

Also all my right Title & Interest in or to the tan house standing below the highway near to my dwelling House in Lynn with the tan-yard, pitts, and all that appertains thereto with all my right Title and Interest in or to the land below the highway down to the brook or creek where said Tan House stands, as also the Westerly End of my shop with the land it stands upon, all which I give to my said son Benjamin as part of his portion, he paying the forty pounds money, which myself with my s^d son Benjamin and my son-in-law Joseph Floid are obliged to pay unto Abraham Lewis of Lynn afores^d
To Have and to Hold &c. &c.

ROBERT POTTER.

JOHN NEWHALL } Wit."
JOHN FULLER }

"May 7, 1707; — Robert Potter to son John 5 acres, where s^d John lives, the S. E. corner of which is about 2 ft. of my son Benjamin's shop: also all my right in the dwelling house & barn."

"March 30, 1709: — Robert Potter, Lynn, to son John, carpenter, the one half of my piece of land, not already given away, lying in y^e Mill street field, so called where I (Robert) have lived for many years, y^e whole bounded N. on y^e fence next y^e rocks: E. on land I have given to son Benjamin: S. on Country road: W. on land I have given son John: and to have y^e West side of s^d piece of land next to s^d John's own land; also one-half of my dwelling house & barn that stands upon s^d parcel of land & my s^d son Benjamin to whom I have sold the other half of s^d house & barn to have liberty to pass & repass from s^d house & barn: — Also 3 lots laid out to me in Lynn town common; one lying in the 1st division, called 600 acres; y^e 2^d in 2^d draft, laid out to y^e body of y^e town in 2^d division of Isaac Randall's swamp."

"March 30, 1709:—Robert Potter, Lynn, carpenter, to son Benjamin Potter, tanner, one-half of all my piece of land not already given away in y^e mill street field where I have lived for many years: bounded N. on fence next the rocks: E. on land given to son Benjamin: S. on country road; W. on land given to son John; and to have the Easterly side of said piece of land next to s^d son Benjamin's land; as also the one-half of my dwelling house & barn that stands on s^d piece of land, and my son John Potter, to whom I have sold y^e other half of s^d house and barn to make & maintain one-half of the fence that shall be necessary for yard or yards about s^d house & barn; also four lots of land laid out to me on Lynn Town Common. The 1st lot in 4th division, in the Ox pasture;—2^d lot in 5th division not far from y^e nine holes:—3^d lot in 2^d draft, 3^d division at Stony brook swamp;—4th lot in 6th division called 'little lots.'"

Children of **Robert and Ruth (Driver) Potter** were:—

I. **Robert Potter**⁴, born in Lynn, Mass., March 18, 1661; died according to his gravestone in the burial ground in Lynn, which says: "Here lyes buried the body of M^r Robert Potter, Aged 41 years—Dyed in the year 1702." Md. Jan. 9, 1681–2 Martha Halle, who was born in 1660, and died according to her gravestone, which is near her husband's, thus: "Here lyes y^e body of Martha Potter, wife to Robert Potter, Aged 49 years. Dyed July y^e 7th, 1709."

Children were:—

- (a) **EPHERIAM**⁴, born April 5, 1683; living in 1714: administered on his father's estate, Aug. 27, 1709; intention of marriage, June 5, 1708, to Sarah Witt, both of Lynn, Mass.; removed to Malborough, Middlesex co., where, Jan. 20, 1714, he sold land in Lynn to John Breed, "it being a lot laid out to his Hon^d father Robert Potter Jr."

Jan. 26, 1709–10, Epheraim Potter and wife Sarah, to Joseph Jacobs for £10, a lot laid out in the Common to Robert Potter's successors, being 11th lot, 3^d range in Bass Neck, Nahant.

July 4, 1710:—Epheraim Potter for £2:7:3, to Jos. Farr, a lot laid out to Robert Potter's successors on the common, lot 9, 3^d range, 4th division called the ox pasture.

- (b) **MARTHA**⁴, born June 21, 1685: died May 17, 1710. (g. s.)
 (c) **SARAH**⁴, born April 12, 1687.
 (d) **RUTH**⁴, born Feb. 17, 1688; died Feb. 26, 1688.
 (e) **RUTH**⁴, born March 6, 1690.
 (f) **ELIZABETH**⁴, born March 13, 1691–2.
 (g) **ROBERT**⁴, born Oct. 11, 1694: died, according to his gravestone, "Jan. 20, 1732–3, in y^e 39 year of his age." (Lynn Yard.) Intention of marriage Sept. 8, 1721, to Mary Breed, both of Lynn, Mass.

According to the gravestones in Lynn Burial Ground, their children were: Mary⁵, born in 1725, and died Oct. 12, 1758. Mercy⁵, born in 1728, and died Sept. 11, 1755. Ephraim⁵, born in 1732, and died Nov. 25, 1745.

Sept. 29, 1718:—Robert Potter⁴ petitions for a bit of land near the house Rowland formerly lived in.

"In 1725; we the subscribers according to the power given to us by y^e town, with the advice of y^e selectmen have made sale of the several pieces of land as hereafter described.

"To John Williams, three rods where Driver's hous stands, or near :
Recd £1:12:00.

Signed, ROBERT POTTER."

(h) REBECCA⁴, born Oct. 24, 1696.

(i) MARY⁴, born March 26, 1699; died May 26, 1700.

(j) NATHANIEL⁴, born July 16, 1701.

(k) ELIZABETH⁴, born May 4, 1704.

II. **Nathaniel Potter**³, born in Lynn, Mass., April 14, 1663: died in Boston, Mass., unmarried, after 1726. For at that date the Court at Salem, Mass., awarded £13:15:00, to Nathaniel Potter for three pieces of linen manufactured at Lynn. — NEWHALL'S & LEWIS'S *History of Lynn*.

III. **John Potter**³, born in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 13, 1665; md. May 27, 1692, Elizabeth Norwood: removed to Leicester, before 1722, for "Oct. 26, 1722, John Potter, son of Robert Potter, Sr., dec'd, was of Leicester, when he sold 6 acres in Rumney marsh, given him by said father."

"March 1, 1700: — John Golt, Malden, and wife Elizabeth to John Potter, Lynn, house carpenter, 2 acres salt marsh in Rumney marsh, lower division, bounded N. W. on meadow of John Lewis, E. on John Marshall Sr., S. E. with a small creek that runs between John Ivory's marsh, and S. with a creek & meddow of John Marshall 3d.

ROBERT POTTER SR., } wit."
NATH'L HATHORNE,

"April 21, 1709: — Robert Potter to son John, 3 lots of land in Lynn; 1st in Ramsdell's Neck; 2^d, just my half of 12 acres salt marsh in 1st div. of Rumney marsh; 3^d, 1 acre fresh marsh of Jos. Brown's house; also South end of my shop, that stands near John's dwelling house."

"March 2, 1715-16: — John Potter, carpenter, to eldest son Nathaniel Potter, as part of his portion, a lot of land with a dwelling house, by Mill street, betwixt my house and my brother Benjamin Potter's house."

Children were: —

(a) NATHANIEL⁴, born Aug. 17, 1693.

(b) ELIZABETH⁴, born Oct. 16, 1695: died Aug. 6. 1697.

(c) JOHN⁴, born April 9, 1699.

(d) ELIZABETH⁴, born Dec. 26, 1701.

(e) DELIVERANCE⁴, born Feb. 19, 1707-8.

(f) JOSEPH⁴, born Dec. 6, 1709.

IV. **Elizabeth Potter**³, born Feb. 9, 1667-8; died young.

V. **Elizabeth Potter**³, born Aug. 15, 1670; md. Joseph Floid.

VI. **Ruth Potter**³, born Feb. 27, 1673; intention of marriage published Jan. 2, 1698, to John Ivory, both of Lynn, Mass.

VII. **Joseph Potter**³, born Dec. 25, 1676.

VIII. **Benjamin Potter**³, (Capt.), born April 11, 1680; died April 25, 1745; intention of marriage, March 26, 1703, to Ruth Burrill. Only one child is known, Anna, who, according to her gravestone, "died aged 4 years and about 4 months, Feb. 16, —." (The year could not be read.)

"March 19, 1715-16:— Benjamin Potter, tanner; to Theoph^s Burrill, 1 acre, 21 poles, in 3^d range, 6th division, being the lot laid out to Robert Potter, Sr."

"Oct. 27, 1721:— Privilege granted Benjamin Potter, Jacob Newhall, and William Curtis, to erect a mill at Lynn, but d. d not complete their project, and in Town Meeting, Oct. 8, 1724, resigned up their grant to the town again."— *NEWHALL'S History of Lynn.*

In 1734, Benjamin Potter received for his father, Robert Potter, Sr., for services rendered in King Philip's war of 1675, a grant of land in Souhegan West (now Amherst, N. H.), marked on the chart as No. 31.

IX. **Samuel Potter**², born May 8, 1682: living in 1734-5; intention of marriage published March 13, 1707-8, to Elizabeth Heart, or Hart, dau. of Samuel and Sarah Heart, or Hart, of Lynn, Mass., where she was born Nov. 16, 1686. They were not married till April 1, 1709.

"Jan. 12, 1712-13:— Elizabeth Potter to her husband Samuel Potter, a tract of land called the nine score acres, in Lynn (Mass.), bounded East on Willis's meadow; North on Shubael Stearn's; West on Nath'l Hutchinsons; South on Samuel Hart; Provided always that during my natural life, my husband is debarred from selling or conveying s^d land without my leave; and whereas my hon^d uncle, Mr Thos. Hart, did by deed of gift give the above land to me with the proviso if she see fit to sell s^d land, to first give him the refusal."

Samuel Potter², born May 28, 1657, was the son of Robert Potter, Sr., and his first wife, whose name, or anything concerning her, is unknown; he was living at the date of the second marriage of his father; but probably was dead at the birth of the ninth child of that marriage, otherwise that child would not have received the name of Samuel, the old custom being to repeat the name of a child till one of the name lived.

Nicholas Potter, by trade a mason, and of Lynn, Mass., as early as 1634, was the father of Robert Potter, Sr. On the division of land in 1638, he received as his portion 60 acres. He (Nicholas) had an interest in the Iron Works at Lynn, till 1660, when he removed to Salem, Mass., giving his estates in Lynn to his two children by his first wife, Robert Potter, Sr., and Elizabeth Potter, wife of Thomas Newhall, of Lynn, Mass.

From the will of William Knight, of Lynn, who died March 5, 1655, wherein Brother Nicholas Potter, Geo. Keasur and John Witt are appointed overseers, and as John, the son of William Knight, had a daughter, Emma, it could be thought that the first wife of Nicholas Potter was a sister to said William Knight; and again, Nicholas Potter's sister may have been Emma and married William Knight, and then Nicholas could have been by William Knight styled "Brother Nicholas Potter."

Alice, widow of Thomas Weekes, of Salem, Mass., and perhaps daughter of William Plasse, was the second wife of Nicholas Potter, by whom there was no issue. Thomas Weekes died, Jan. 26, 1658, leaving two children, Bethiah, baptized Feb. 27, 1641-2, and Hannah, baptized Jan. 5, 1644-5.

"Mary Gedney, daughter of John and Sarah his wife, emigrants of 1637, was the third wife of Nicholas Potter, whom he married in Salem, Mass., and

had issue twelve children. After the death of Nicholas Potter, she became the wife of Joseph Boice, Jr., of Salem, Mass., and Feb. 1696, she gave a quit claim on her former husband's estate to her brother-in-law, Benjamin Potter, who died without issue, and the children of Nicholas Potter and Mary his wife divided the estate between them."— *Essex Institute Collection*, Vol. XVI.

"Elizabeth Potter, who, together with her brother Robert, received part of her father's estate in Lynn, Mass., there married Dec. 29, 1652, Thomas Newhall, born in 1630, the first white child born in Lynn. He was a descendant of Johannis de Nova Aula, or John de Newehall, or Newhall, who built a new hall in the manor where he lived, in England, giving it to that manor, the baronial proprietor of which bestowed on him his name."— BRIDGES.

She died Feb. 22, 1687, and he died April 1, 1687. They had a large family, consisting of six sons and three daughters; namely, Thomas, John, Joseph, Nathaniel, Elisha, Elizabeth, Mary, Samuel, and Rebecca. Joseph perished in a snow-storm, Jan. 30, 1705; he married Susanna Farrar, and had eleven children; one of them, Samuel Potter, was adopted by his uncle, Samuel Farrar, of Salem, Mass., who in 1692 was accused of witchcraft.

Elizabeth was drowned, when about two years of age, in a tan-pit of water, as the following depositions of her two aunts, Ruth Potter (Driver) and Elizabeth Newhall (Laighton), will show:—

"Court Files for the year 1665.

The testimony of the wife of Robert Potter" (who was Ruth Driver) "and the wife of John Newhall" (who was Elizabeth Laighton) "Testifeth and saith we seinge the wife of Thomas Newhall Juner in a graite fright for her child we went to helpe her looke for her child and we found it drowned in a pett of water a littell below the house of Thomas Newhall Juner."

"We Robart Potter and John Newhall" (who were the child's uncles), "understandin by Too Testimonies That Thomas Newhall's child was drowned in a pett which pett we heard George Kesar saye he digged: farther we doe Testifie that George Kesar had a Tanfatt in that pett. I John Newhall doe further Testifie that George Kesar did take up his fatt and left the pett open.

Sworne in court 29—9—65."

"The report of the Jury of Inquest in this case is as follows:

Wee under written being warned by Thomas Wheeler constable of Lynn to enquire of the death of a child of Thō: Newell Junr: y^e 13th of this p'sant month meeting at y^e Upon dwelling house of y^e afores^d Newell wee saw there a dead child, which we were informed was drowned in a pitt of water, which pitt or hole of water we were at, where did appeere to us two woemen: y^e wife of Robert Potter & y^e wife of John Newhall, y^t did say to us, y^t in y^t pitt they found y^e said child swimming or floating upon top y^t water & tooke up y^e s^d child, being dead when they found it, we alsoe asked y^e mother of y^e s^d child how long shee mist the child, whoe said to us, it was betweene half an hower & an hower & y^t y^e s^d child went from her well y^e last y^t she saw it living, and upon further inquirye we find noe other cause of y^e death of y^e s^d child, being about two years of age, but y^e said pitt being neere two foot deepe of water & mudd, being neere to y^e highway before y^e doore of y^e said Newell & the said pitt being six or seaven foot over & being failing ground, neere to y^e said pitt a child playing neere aboute there any small slip or stumble of the child would ocasion his fall into y^e aforesaid pitt."

Then followed the signature of the Jurors.

Thomas Newhall, the father of the above-said child, in the March term of the Quarterly Court of 1663, was tried on an action of battery for striking the wife of William Longley, when the following deposition was taken:—

"The testimony of Elizabeth Newhall y^e wife of John Senier and Mary Haven whoe sayth y^t Thomas Newhall Junier was desired for to howld a poole for to rone a line between Will Longley and John Newhall: y^e say^d Thomas Newhall stode on y^e land of John Newhalls: then came y^e two dafters of y^e say^d Longley namely Mary Longley & Anna Longley and threue stons at y^e say^d Thomas Newhall: afterward y^e say^d Anna toke up a peace of a pulle & stroke y^e say^d Newhall severall blows with it, & presently after y^e wife of y^e say^d Longley came with a broad axe in her hand and cam to y^e say^d Newhall and violently stroke at y^e say^d Newhall with y^e axe, but y^e say^d Newhall sliped aside & soe y^e axe missed him; orwise wee cannot but thinke but y^t hee had bine much wounded if not killed: then presently after y^e wife of Will Longley layd howld upone y^e poole from y^m. All this time y^e say^d Thomas Newhall did stand upon y^e land of John Newhall.

Taken upon oath 28: 1: 1663."

Testimony of Mary Longley on the other side:— who deposed that she, with her mother and sister Anna, was "striving to gett a poole from Thomas Newhall Junior, that he was holding up as I conceived to runne a line, he having hold on one end we on the other and the said Newhall being on one side of our orchard fence, and wee three on the other side of the said fence within our orchard: wee had almost pulled the poole out of his hands but his brother John came and helped him and pulled it from us, and after the said Newhall had got the poole againe he strucke my mother severall blows with the poole so that one of her hands was black and blue severall dayes after."

Nicholas Potter, when of Salem, Mass., made his will Oct. 10, 1677; proved Nov. 9th following, as follows:—

"1. Whereas I lately made a deed to my sonn Robert Potter of my house and land at Linn dated 26 of May 1675, which conveyance I doe by this my last will & testament confirme, upon the condition therein expressed to be observed.

2. For the land in the Northfield in Salem which I had in a formell will given to my daughter Elizabeth Newhall, but made voyde in the above said conveyance which said land be it more or less to my two sons had by my last wife viz. Samuell & Benjamin.

3. I give & bequeath to my two said sonns Samuel and Benjamin, all my house and ground at Boston . . . to enjoy it at the age of twenty-one years & if either of them dy before, the whole to be the survivors, only my will is that out of the said house and ground there shall be paid to my two daughters, viz. Sarah & Mary each of them the value of ten pounds to be paid them within one year after my sons come of age. . . .

4. I give that which will be due me from Isaack Williams at or after my deseace . . . which is eighty pounds; viz. to my daughter Bethiah £5, and the rest I give to all my six children borne by my last wife, viz.: Samuel, Benjamin, Sarah, Mary, Hannah, & the s^d Bethiah to be equally divided.

5. I give to my said six children . . . my house and ground adjoining in Salem to have each of them equal part, also about 4 acres of ground caled Pigden's lot.

6. I give to my 4 daughters viz.: Sara, Mary, Hannah & Bethiah all my moveables & household stuff to be equally divided.

Appoints his Hon^d father John Gedney ex'r & son Robert Potter & bro's Barth^e & Eleazer Gedney, overseers.

HILLARD VEREY }
NATHANIEL BEADLE } wit.

his
NICHOLAS P POTTER
mark

Taken Oct. 25, 1677."

Ind. Ct. Rec. 27 — 110.

Children of **Nicholas** and third wife **Mary (Gedney) Potter** were: —

1. MARY POTTER, born Jan. 4, 1659: died Oct. 29, —.
2. HANNAH POTTER, born March 25, 1661: bapt. in Salem, Mass.; died Oct. 28, 1662.
3. SARAH POTTER, born Oct. 4, 1662: died Sept. 29, 1688.
4. MARY POTTER, born Nov. 10, 1663: md. Samuel Elson, and had Mary, born Nov. 10, 1686; Samuel, born July 27, 1689; Sarah, born Oct. 7, 1692.
5. SAMUEL POTTER, born Jan. 9, 1664: died the next day.
6. HANNAH POTTER, born March 27, 1665-6: md. William Roch or Roach, and had William, born Aug. 12, 1692; Hannah, born Oct. 12, 1694; Elizabeth, born April 16, 1697; Mary, born Oct. 26, 1699.

"Articles of agreement between William Roch & wife Hannah, dau. of Nicholas Potter, Salem, dec'd.; Mary Ellson & Bethiah Witt, the other daughters — That s^d Mary Ellson & Bethiah Witt shall have for their part the house and land that was their father's lying in Boston, in Back St., North end of the town near the dwelling of Rev. Increase Mather — That s^d W^m Roch & wife Hannah shall have for their part the dwelling house, land &c. that was s^d Potter's in Salem, bounded S. on street; E. on W^m Bath & land formerly widow Eastwicks. — N. on Jos. Miles, dec'd; W. on Nath'l Gedney being 4 acres.

BETHIAH GEDNEY, }
DEBORAH GEDNEY, } Wit. Aug. 14, 1697."

7. LYDIA POTTER, born Feb. 26, 1666-7: died Sept. 17, 1668.
8. BETHIAH POTTER, born May 23, 1668: died June 27, 1690-1: md. Feb. 26, 1685, Thomas Witt, son of John and Sarah Witt, who was born in Lynn, Mass., July 25, 1661. Their children were Mary Witt, born Jan. 26, 1686-7; Thomas Witt, born Jan. 20, 1688-9; died Sept. 19, 1754. This Thomas Witt was the person to whom, Feb. 12, 1722, Ruth Driver, daughter of Robert Driver, Jr., as will be shown, sold one half of her house, formerly possessed by Robert Driver, she to live in the other half till her death, when Thomas Witt would become the possessor by purchase.
9. SAMUEL POTTER, born April 22, 1669: died before 1694: md. Rebecca Trask, dau. of John and Abigail (Parkman) Trask of Salem, where she was born April 23, 1674. No issue.
10. LYDIA POTTER, born July 16, 1670: died April, 1671.
11. BENJAMIN POTTER, born Nov. 6, 1671: died unmarried.
12. JOSEPH POTTER, born June 3, 1673: died young.

SECOND GENERATION.

FAMILY II.

ROBERT DRIVER,² Jr. (No. 2), son of Robert¹ and wife Phebe, born perhaps in 1631 ; living in 1701-2, when, as has been shown, he received £01:00:00 from Samuel Burrill, constable of Lynn, Mass., for services as sexton of the Meeting-House ; died before 1708, according to the deed of Abraham Wellman to John Brintall, to be found in this history under the account of his daughter Ruth. He married Sarah —, revealed by a petition to the Quarterly Court of 1689, asking that his son Solomon (who had been drafted for the Indian war), might be released, as some others had been, "for the life of his wife Sarah is bound up in her son Salmon." — *Town Record*.

Nothing further concerning her is to be found on record.

Feb. 21, 1677, Robert Driver, Jr., received from his father by Deed of Gift, four acres of land.

Feb. 26, 1677, Robert Driver, Jr., took the oath of "Allegiance and Fidelity to this Government and Jurisdiction" (Mass. Col. Rec.), at which time he was of the squadron of Mr. Laughton and Francis Burrell. He took the oath a second time, in the year 1678, of "Allegiance to the Kinge" (Ibid.),¹ — which oath was to be taken by all persons from sixteen years of age and upward within the colony.

Dec. 19, 1675, he was one of Captain Gardiner's soldiers in the war against King Philip, and assisted in the capture of the Narragansett Fort.

June 3, 1685, he with many others received a tract of land in Worcester co., Mass., for services rendered in this war ; no measures having been taken to secure the township,

July 1, 1727, another petition was presented for land for services rendered in King Philip's war. He received Lot No. 6, in Souhegan West (now Amherst, N. H.) ; but being deceased, his daughter Ruth, then his only surviving child, received it for him.

Dec. 30, 1696, Robert Driver, Jr., was creditor to the town of Lynn, Mass., for services rendered as the sexton to their only Meeting-House, — which service he rendered till Jan. 9, 1701-2,

¹ See pp. 38 and 39.

the date of his last payment; when either old age obliged him to resign his position, or death deprived him of all power of action.¹

Nov. 2, 1675, the commissioners of the colonies of Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Plymouth met at Boston, and after noticing the refusal of the Narragansetts to abide by the treaty they had made, issued the following order, "that in addition to the forces already raised for the prosecution of the war, there should be one thousand men raised and furnished with arms and provisions of every sort, to be ready at one hour's warning for the public service, and that each colony should furnish its proper proportion of the same." — SECOMB'S *History of Amherst, N. H.*

Accordingly, fifteen men were impressed at Lynn, Mass., Nov. 13, 1675, as being the proper proportion of that colony (Lewis), as follows: —

Thomas Baker, *Robert Driver*, Job Farrington, Samuel Graves, Isaac Hart, Nicholas Hitchens, Daniel Hitchens, John Lindsay, Jonathan Locke, Charles Phillips, Samuel Rodes, Henry Stacy, Samuel Tarbox, Andrew Townsend and Isaac Wellman.

The military company of Lynn, organized in 1630, at this date was commanded by Capt. Thomas Marshall, Lieut. Oliver Marshall, and Ensign John Fuller, which company, with the addition of these fifteen men, was commanded to be in readiness to march to the Narragansett country, and help subdue them. This company possessed two iron cannon, muskets, called "matchlocks," because fired by a slow-match instead of a percussion-cap, as now, and iron pikes ten feet long, and a "rest," or iron fork, to be stuck in the ground for the support of this heavy weapon. Soldiers of this date wore round their bodies a "bandolier," or belt holding a dozen tin cartridge-boxes, and also a sword. They wore a coat thickly quilted with cotton-wool to turn the Indian arrow, or an iron breastplate. To make a long march thus equipped, the men must needs be strong, and, which we can reasonably suppose, the fifteen picked men of Lynn were, and hence selected.

Dec. 9, 1675, the Massachusetts companies were mustered on Dedham Plain; but before setting out on their march they were promised a reward in land, in addition to their pay, for their services, provided that "they played the man and drove the Narragansetts out of the fort." — SECOMB'S *History of Amherst*.

The march to the country of the Narragansetts, which was situated in the neighborhood of the present towns of Warwick and Wickford, R. I., seventy-five miles from Lynn, Mass., commenced the next day. They often marched eighteen miles a day, through snow and over ice, at times two days without stopping to rest or eat, "with only one biscuit for every four men," according to the account of Benjamin Chase.

Cotton Mather says, "Their sufferings from cold and want of rest were terrible, enough to have discouraged any ordinary fortitude."

On the 18th. of the month, and the ninth day after they had left their homes, they reached a garrison, fifteen miles from the Narragansett Fort, expecting to pass the night; but the Indians had been before them, having

¹ See p. 40.

killed the inhabitants and burned their buildings. It was snowing, and they had to pass that night on the snow without any shelter. The next day, Sunday, they, at half-past five in the morning, commenced their march toward the Fort, which was in a swamp; it was still snowing, and all were tired and hungry; after passing over what is now Kingston Hill, they reached the swamp about two in the afternoon.

The entrance to the fort was found to be over a log covered with water and ice; but as soon as the order was given, the Massachusetts men, who were in front, were led on to the log by Capt. Isaac Johnson, and five other captains, all on the dead run. The six captains were instantly killed by the sharpshooters in the fort; but the troops pushed on, while the Connecticut men made an advance in the rear. After three hours of hard fighting the Indians were driven out of the fort into a cedar swamp close by, which was frozen over, the troops pursuing. They thus killed about seven hundred Indians, and wounded hundreds of others; while the troops lost six captains, eighty men, and about one hundred and fifty wounded.

The headquarters of the army were at Plymouth, to which place the troops went to be mustered out of service, and receive their pay; each man having been promised four shillings and sixpence a day for service, and thirty shillings a head for every Indian who had been slain, King Philip's head going at the same price as the rest (Benj. Chase's account).

After the disbanding of the troops, the survivors of Lynn, after an absence of six months, returned to their homes. Many of them were sick and disabled from long marches, want of food, and sleeping on the wet ground covered with snow. It was too late to put in the spring crops, hence their lands would yield nothing for some time, and their families would consequently suffer; therefore twenty-five men of Lynn and sixteen from other towns, Robert Driver, Jr., and his brother-in-law, Robert Potter, of the number, presented the following petition to the General Court of Massachusetts:—

“To the Honoured Governor and Company, The General Court of the Massachusetts Bay, that is to be assembled the 27 of May 1685.

The humble petition of several inhabitants of Lynn, who were sold, impressed, and sent forth for the service of the country, that was with the Indians in the long march in the Nipmugg Country, and the fight at the fort in Narragansett, humbly sheweth.

That your petitioners did in obedience unto the authority which God hath set over them, and love to their country, leave their deare relations, some of us our dear wives and children, which we would gladly remained at home, and the bond of love and duty would have bound us to choose rather soe to have done considering the season and time of the year, when that hard service was to be performed.

But your petitioners left what was dear to them, and preferred the publique weal above the private enjoyments, and did cleave thereunto, and exposed ourselves to the difficulties and hardships of the winter, as well as the dangers of that cruel war, with consideration to the enemy.

What our hardships and difficulties were is well known to some of your worships, being our honoured magistrates, as also what mercy it was from the Lord, who alone preserved us, and gave us our lives for a prey, by leading us through such imminent dangers, whereby the Lord gave us to see many of our dear friends lose their blood and life, which might have been our case, but that God soe disposed

towards us deliverance and strength to return to our homes, which we desire to remember and acknowledge to his most glorious praise.

But yet, we take the boldness to signifie to the honoured court, how that service was noe whitt to our particular advantage, but to the contrary much to our disadvantage. Had we had the liberty of staying at home, as our neighbours had though we had paid double rates, it would have been to our advantage as indeed we did pay our properties by our estates in the publick rates to the utmost bonds. Notwithstanding all, yet we humbly conceive that by the suppression of the enemy, which God by his great mercy vouchsafed, we poor soldiers and servants to the country were instruments to procure much land, which we doubt not shall and will be improved by the prudence of the honored court, unto people that need most especially.

And we, your poor petitioners, are divers of us in need of land, for want whereof some of us are forced upon consideration of departing this Colony and Government to seek accommodations whereby the better to maintain the charge in our families, with our wives and children and to leave unto them, when the Lord shall take us away by death, which we must expect.

And divers of us have reason to fear our days may be much shortened by our hard service in the war from the pains and aches of our bodies, that we feel in our bones and sinews and lameness thereby taking hold of us much especially at the Spring and Fall, whereby we are hindered and disabled of that ability for our labor which we constantly had, through the mercy of God, before, that we served in the wars.

Now, your poore petitioners are hopeful that this honored Court will be moved with consideration and some respect to the poor soldiery, and particularly to us, that make bold to prefer our petition, humbly to crave, that we whose names are hereunto subscribed, may be so graciously considered by this honored Court as to grant us some good tracks of land in the Nipmugg Country, where we may find a place for a township, that we, your petitioners, and our posterity may live in the same colony where our fathers did and left us, and probably many of those who went fellow soldiers in the war may be provided for, and their children also, in the portion of conquered lands their fathers fought for.

Your petitioners think it but a very reasonable request, which will be no way offensive to this honored Court, which, if they shall please to grant unto your petitioners, it will not only be satisfaction to their spirits for their service already done, but be a future obligation to them and those after them for future service, and ever pray."

Signed by twenty-five inhabitants of Lynn; namely, William Bassett, John Farrington, Nathaniel Ballard, Timothy Breed, Jonathan Locke, Daniel Johnson, Widow Hathorne, Samuel Tarbox, Samuel Graves, John Edmunds, Samuel Johnson, Daniel Golt, Joseph Hawkes, Andrew Townsend, John Davis, Joseph Collins, Samuel Mower, *Robert Potter*, Senior, Joseph Mansfield, *Robert Driver*, John Richards, John Lindsey, Philip Kertland, Joseph Breed, Henry Roades.

"On the 3^d of June, 1685, the Court granted them a tract of land in Worcester co., eight miles square, on condition that thirty families with an orthodox minister should settle there within four years." — *LEWIS'S History of Lynn.*

"No measures appear to have been taken by the grantees to secure the township granted them. It seems never to have been located, and the land in that part of the Province was afterwards disposed of by the Court to other parties." — *SECOMB'S History of Amherst, N. H.*, chap. ii.

July 1, 1727, — Forty-two years afterwards, — “another petition from the Narraganset soldiers was presented to the House of Representatives” (of Massachusetts), “asking for the grant of another tract of land in place of the one formerly granted,” which Secomb in his “History of Amherst, N. H.,” gives as follows:—

“June 16, 1728, the House of Representatives in answer to the Petition of the Soldiers that served in the Narraganset War:—

“Resolved, That Major Chandler, Mr. Edward Shove, Major Tilestone & Mr. John Hobson (or any three of them), be a committee fully authorized to survey & lay out two Townships of the contents of six miles square each, in some of the unappropriated Lands of this Province, and that the said Lands be granted & disposed of to the Persons, whether Officer or Soldiers belonging to this Province, who were in the service of their Country in the said Narragansett War, or to their lawful Representatives, as a Reward for their public services and as a full Satisfaction of the Grant formerly made by Great and General Court; and inasmuch as it is the full intent and Purpose that every Officer & Soldier who served in the said war should have a compensation made him over & above what Wages & Gratuties any of them have already received.

The Committee to lay out the townships attended to the duty assigned them and presented plans of the same at the session of the Court held in the month of December 1728. The plan hereto annexed shows the bounds of a Tract of Land laid out for one of the Towns Granted by the Gen^l Court to the Narragansit Soldiers. It lyes on the North Side Sowheggan River and adjoining thereto on the South. The East part of it is about four or five miles Westward of Merrimack River; and is att or Near the East end of the Late proposed line of Towns between Dunstable and Northfield. There is in it a Sufficient Quantity of Improvable Land capable of making a good Town.

The whole Plan contains 24,457 Acres, which is 1,417 acres more than is contained in Six miles square, which we are Humbly of opinion ought to be allowed for the Pond and Part of three Farmes that were formerly laid out & now Included in the Survey.

It was surveyed in the month of October 1728, with the assistance of Mr. Jonas Houghton, Surveyor, & John Goss & Stephen Mighill, Chairmen, who were sworn by Joseph Wilder Esq.

JOHN CHANDLER Jun ^r	} Committee.”
EW ^d SHOVE	
JOHN HOBSON	

This petition required the signature of Governor Belcher, which for some reason he did not sign till April 26, 1733, six years afterwards.

The township thus granted was known as Narragansett No. 3, and subsequently as Souhegan West, No. 3. Jan. 18, 1760, it was incorporated as a town, at which time it received the name of Amherst, from Gen. Jeffrey Amherst, at that time Commander-in-chief of the British forces in North America.

The first meeting of the proprietors of Souhegan West was held at Salem, Mass., July 17, 1734. At this meeting *Capt. Benj. Potter* (nephew of the said Robert Driver), *Capt. Richard Mower*, and *Mr. Daniel Kenney* were appointed a committee “to take a Particular view of y^e scircumstances of sd

Township, and make Report to y^e Society or Grantees at their adjournment on the second Tuesday in September next.

At a subsequent meeting of the proprietors held at Salem, Aug. 13, 1734, Capt. Benj. Potter (aforesaid), was chosen Treasurer of s^d Proprietors."

(The title of Mr. at this date was applied to captains, military captains, eminent merchants, schoolmasters, doctors, magistrates, and clergymen; all others were termed goodman.)

"At a meeting held Jan. 8, 1734-5, the proprietors drew their respective lots, a full list belonging to each town being given. Those of the town of Lynn are as follows:—

- | | |
|------|--|
| Lot. | LYNN. |
| 103. | Thomas Baker. |
| *18. | John Ballard, for his father John Ballard. |
| 100. | Wm Bassett, for his grand-father Wm Bassett. |
| 72. | Michael Bowden, for his father-in-law John Davis. |
| 49. | Timo. Breed, for his father Timothy Breed. |
| 92. | Eben'r Burrill, for his brother Jno. Burrill. |
| *78. | Eben'r Burrill Jr., for his grand-father Joseph Mansfield. |
| 65. | Henry Collins. |
| 39. | Wm Collins, for his brother Joseph Collins. |
| *6. | Ruth Driver, for her father Robert Driver. |
| 29. | Samuel Edmons. |
| 91. | Joseph Farr, for his father Joseph Farr. |
| *17. | Joseph Farr, for his father-in-law John Lindsey. |
| 110. | John Farrington, for his father John Farrington. |
| 107. | Samuel Graves, for his father Samuel Graves. |
| *35. | Joseph Haven, for his father Joseph Haven. |
| 60. | Jonathan Johnson, for his father. |
| 32. | Richard Johnson, for his father Samuel Johnson. |
| *30. | Edmond Lewis, for his father John Lewis. |
| 21. | Richard Moor, for his father John Moor. |
| 8. | John Newhall. |
| 111. | Samuel Newhall, for his uncle Samuel Farrow. |
| *31. | Benjamin Potter, (nephew of s ^d Robert Driver), for his father Robert Potter. |
| 20. | Benjamin Ramsdell, for his father Aquilla Ramsdell. |
| 36. | Robert Rand, for his father. |
| 73. | Samuel Tarbox's heirs. |
| 16. | Andrew Townsend's heirs. |

(A * placed before a lot signifies that it has been exchanged for another.)"

"The committee was directed to lay out 60 acres to each proprietor for his or her home lot, what was wanting in quality should be made up in quantity. Complaint having been made by some that many of the lots laid out by the committee were not as good as others for want of quality and thus not fit to settle on. Voted that each proprietor shall have liberty to exchange his Lott or Lotts by quitting his right to such Lott as he shall draw to all proprietors by taking other Lott or Lotts."

Ruth Driver No. 9, who drew Lot 6 for her father, Robert Driver, sold it one month after to Samuel Walton and Jonathan Foster (Samuel Walton was one of the first to settle this township, according to Secomb in his "History of

Amherst, N. H."), learned from the following deed: Middlesex Deeds, Vol. XLII. p. 495:—


"Ruth Driver to Jonathan Foster et al.

Ruth Driver of Lynn Essex Co. single woman and only surviving child & heir of Robert Driver formerly of Lynn, dec'd, for and in consideration of £30. money of the Prov. of Mass. to me in hand before the en sealing hereof well & truly paid by Jonathan Foster of Redding, turner, & Samuel Walton of Lynn, cooper, conveys to said Jona. Foster & Samuel Walton in first & equal halves all that my whole right title & interest in the new town granted by the Gen. Court to a number of persons who lived in the Province aforesaid in the Narraganset War, as by s'd grant may more fully appear, which town is known as Souhegan West, which right I am intituled to as the sole surviving heir of Robert Driver, that is to say the sixth lott in the draught of lotts that shall be drawn as a part of and by virtue of the abovesaid Right, Provided that Jona. Foster & Samuel Walton duly perform all the several articles & conditions upon which the grants were made.

26 Feb'y 1734-5.

Signed & sealed in
presence of

BENJ. POTTER (her nephew), }
EBENEZER NICHOLS } Lynn.

RUTH  DRIVER
mark

Essex SS Lynn Feb. 26, 1734-5. Then Ruth Driver personally acknowledged this instrument to be her act & deed.

THOMAS BURRILL

Midd. Cambridge. Jan. 26, 1741.

Received and entered by

FRANK FOXCRAFT."

Children of **Robert, Jr.**, and **Sarah Driver**, as taken from the Essex co. records, excepting first child, William (which records in 1885 were in the office of the city clerk of Salem, Mass.), were:—

7. **WILLIAM^s DRIVER**, born probably in Lynn, Mass., perhaps in 1660; old enough in 1675 to enlist in Capt. Joseph Gardner's company, as a soldier in King Philip's war; died in Salem, Mass., in 1691-2; md. before 1681, Mary Glover. (See Family V.)
8. **SARA^s DRIVER**, born probably in Lynn, Mass., in 1664-5; died Feb. 5, 1666 (Town Record).
9. **RUTH^s DRIVER**, born (probably in Lynn, Mass.) Oct. 4, 1667 (Town Record); died after 1734-5, unmarried.

This daughter appears in probate matter as early as 1706, when she was 39 years of age. In 1734 she was the only surviving child and heir of her father, as she states in the deed to Samuel Walton and Jonathan Foster.

"Feb. 16, 1698-9: John Ivory & wife Ruth to Thos. Burrage for £10, 2 acres, bounded E. on pasture land of Theoph^s Bayley, N. on Mathew Farrington; S. and W. on s'd Burrage.

RUTH DRIVER, }
RUTH BLIGH, } Wit."

April 15, 1706, voted to divide the common lands (Lynn Commoner's Record); at which time

	Acre.	Poles.
" Ruth Driver had granted in 1 st div., 8 th range	1.	15
" " " " in 2 ^d div., 10 th range	1.	140
" " " " in 12 th range, 2 ^d div.	1.	140
" " " " in 2 ^d div. (called Lanthorn), 4 th range, 2 ^d draft	1.	140
" " " " in 3 ^d div., 4 th range,	1.	140
" " " " in 4 th div., 3 ^d range, Ox pasture	1.	40
" " " " in 5 th div., 10 th range, near Ox pasture.	1.	140
" " " " in 6 th div., 2 ^d range	2.	72
" " " " in 7 th div., 2 ^d range, Bass Neck	2.	126"

"Dec. 12, 1707:—John Newhall & wife Esther, to Jos. Jacobs, for £9:10^s—8 acres, 10 pole land laid out to me in Lynn town common, being 3^d lot, 10th range, 2^d division, 1st draft, laid out to the body of the town, the lot laid out to widow Lois Burrill, lying on one side, and the lot laid out to Ruth Driver, on the other side."

"March 5, 1708-9:—Thomas Roote, Lynn, to Jos. Jacobs a lot laid out to me on the town common, 12th lot, 2^d range, 7th div. Bass Neck, Nahant, between lots of Ruth Driver, & Nath'l Ingalls."

"July 5, 1708:—Abraham Wellman & wife Elizabeth, Lynn, deeds to John Brintnall, Esq., Boston, 1 acre land in Lynn, laid out to me (Wellman) for a recompense, on the town common, being the 6th lot, 8th range in the 1st division called the 600 acres; y^e lott laid out to Ruth Driver lying on one side, and y^e lott laid out to Eben'z Bancroft lying on the other."

"Jan. 26, 1709-10:—Ruth Driver, Lynn, single woman. for 30 shillings to Joseph Jacobs, weaver, 1 acre, 140 poles, being a lot laid out to me on Lynn town common, in y^e 4th lot, 10th range; 1st draft; 2^d division; y^e lot laid out to John Newhall tertius lying on one side & y^e lot laid out to John Witt, lying on the other side.

MARY	^{her} V ^o	GEFFORDS	} Wit.
	mark		
ELIZABETH	^{her} mark	POTTER	} Wit."

Feb. 9, 1708:—Ruth Driver deeds to John Breed, 126 pole of land laid out to her in Bass Neck (Nahant).

"Dec. 25, 1709:—Ruth Driver to John Brintnall, of Boston, 1 acre, 15 poles land, laid out to me on Lynn town common in the 600 acres, being Lot 5, 8th range, 1st division."

"Dec. 30, 1710:—John Witt, Sr., late of Lynn, now of Marlboro, for £9:14^s, to Jos. Jacobs, Lynn, a lot of 8 acres, 40 poles laid out to me in the Commons, being 5th lot, 11th range, 2^d div., lying between the lots of Ruth Driver and John Edmonds."

"June 8, 1710:—Ephriam Potter, Lynn, (nephew of Ruth Driver), & wife Sarah, for £65, deeds to Mrs. Mary Jeffords, widow, 3 acres, 12 poles

upland, near s^d Jeffords house, with a dwelling house & barn on the same bounded E. on Jeffords, S. on Hugh Alley, W. on land of Ruth Driver, N. on town Common."

May 20, 1717: — Ruth Driver sold to John Hart, of Lynn, one acre in the Town Common.

"Agreement between Mary Ivory, widow of Thomas, on the one part, and Ruth widow of John Ivory on the other part to settle their estate. S^d Mary with the advice of her children: viz. Joseph Bass, Boston, & wife Lois & Theophilus Ivory of Charlestown, Jedbatha Rand, widow, Samuel Baxter & wife Hannah, Mary Ivory, and Deborah, widow of Benjamin Ivory, all of Lynn & y^e above s^d Ruth Ivory, together with her son-in-law Thomas Witt & wife Mary . . . have agreed on certain parcells of land as their mother's dower . . .

The 4th piece is that salt marsh lying & joyning on Driver's Creek, so called . . .

July 10, 1720.

Signed & sealed in prescence of

BENJAMIN POTTER (for) ELIZABETH BASS.

" " " THEOPH^o IVORY.

" " " DANIEL MANSFIELD JR.

DANIEL MANSFIELD JR.

THOMAS RAND.

THOMAS MANSEY.

her
RUTH X DRIVER."
mark

Feb. 12, 1722-3, Ruth Driver, spinster, sells to Capt. Thomas Witt half of her house and land in Lynn, "formerly possessed by Robert Driver," for eighty pounds. The houses of this period were constructed with two spacious rooms on either side of the front entry, opening from which were bed rooms, sitting room, kitchen and dining room; above were chambers, and above them an attic and attic chambers, with a sloping roof. Unless the family was very large, say fourteen children, the family occupied but one side of the house, another family the other side, — which perhaps would consist of the widowed grandmother and a married son or daughter on one side, another married son or daughter the other side; but in Ruth's case she evidently was left alone on both sides of her house; hence according to the economy of the time sold to a stranger, though not unknown to her; and also no doubt to increase her means of support, learned by the following deed:

"Feb. 12, 1722-3: — *Driver to Witt.*

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS that I Ruth Driver of Lynn, in the county of Essex, in the province of the Massachusetts bay in New England, Spinster, for and in consideration of the Sum of eighty pounds lawful money of New England to me in hand well and truly paid or in law secured by Thomas Witt of Lynn in the county and provience aforesaid, Husbandman, the Receipt whereof I hereby acknowledge and myself therewith fully satisfied contented and paid, do

by these presents Give Grant bargain sell Aliene Enfeoffe, and confirme unto the s^d Thomas Witt his heirs and Assigns forever.

One Messuage or tenement of houseing and lands lying in the Township of Lynn Afores^d in the field betwixt where M^r Ralph Tomkins now dwells and where the Old Meeting House formerly stood, which s^d homestead was formerly possessed by Robert Driver together with five lotts laid out to the s^d Ruth Driver on Lynn Town Common as they are hereafter Described, the s^d homestead bounded as followeth—

Easterly on the land formerly possessed by Robert Potter and now by M^r Ralph Tompkins, and Southerly and Westerly on the lands formerly possessed by John Ivory and now improved by his Successors, and Northerly on Lynn Common or training field so called, and contains three Acres, be the same more or less, Excepting Only, and it is to be so understood that y^e s^d Ruth Driver doth Reserve to herself a personal improvement of the Westerly end of the Dwelling house dureing her Natural life and that the s^d Witt do keep the Other part of s^d house, in repaire dureing that term, and after he decease then to be and Remain firm to the s^d Witt his heirs and assigns As the other Estate.

The first of s^d Common lotts is the twelfth lott in the twelfth Range in the Second Draft in the Second division lying near Chens-hills so called the lott laid out to Capt. Theophilus Burrill lying on the one side and the lott laid out to Theophilus Farrington lying on the Other side thereof and contains one Acre, One hundred and forty poles; the Second s^d lotts is the Nineteenth lott in the Fourth Range in the fifth Division the lott laid out to Nathaniel Hood lying on the one side, and the lott laid out to Joseph Jacobs lying on the other side thereof and contains One Acre and forty poles; Y^e third of s^d lotts in y^e third lott, in the fifth range in y^e fifth Division the lott laid out to John Fuller lying on the one Side and the lott laid out to Widow Mary Jefferds lying on the other side thereof and contains one acre one hundred and forty poles.

the fourth of s^d lotts is y^e twenty fourth lott in third Range in y^e fourth Division the lott laid out to Timothy Breed lying on the one side the s^d Range ending on the other side and contains one acre, and forty pole.

The fifth and last of s^d lotts is the sixteenth lott in the tenth Range in y^e fifth division, the lott laid out to Thomas Norwood lying on the one side and the lott laid out to Robert Potters Successors lying on the other side thereof and contains one acre and forty poles.

To have and to Hold, the before mentioned homestead together with the s^d five lotts of land as they are severally bulled bounded & described or howsoever Reported to be bounded with all the wood, timber, Rocks, stones, water-courses, fencing, Rights profits priveledges and appurtenances &c &c . . .

In Witness whereof I y^e s^d Ruth Driver have hereunto affixed my hand & seal on the twelfth day of February Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred twenty & two three.

Signed sealed & D^d in psence of us

her
RUTH X IVORY
mark

RUTH ^{her}
signe DRIVER

her
LOIS Z IVORY
mark
(1722-3) "

After the death of Ruth Driver, this house, as it descended in the family of Witts, was no longer known as the Driver house, but the Witt house, — so called to this day, its present number being 20, situated on Shepard Street (Lynn); the name of the street being the same as when it was built in 1635, then named for the fourth minister of Lynn, as before mentioned.

That the said Thomas Witt was not a stranger to Ruth Driver is learned by his marriage, which made him the nephew of Robert and Ruth (Driver) Potter, aunt and uncle of the said Ruth Driver, No. 9. He was a sea-captain, and when he bought the half of the house of Ruth Driver was about thirty-two years of age, having been born Jan. 20, 1688-9; died before April 14, 1755, as administration on his estate was granted his widow Mary, April 14, 1755. In the Inventory is named " $\frac{1}{2}$ of a piece of salt marsh at Driver's Creek." In the division of the estate, "his widow Mary is to have the E. end of the dwelling-house, — $\frac{1}{2}$ of the cellar and barn; 4 acres, 64 poles land, being part of the homestead, bounded N. & E. on remaining part of s^d homestead, S. on fence that parts y^e premises & y^e salt marsh. W. partly on land of John Burrage & her own land, set to her as part of her fifths.

Lot No. 1. — Settled on Gedney Witt, being dwel'g house barn & land, bounded on town common & heirs of Rich'd Pappoon, dec'd, he to pay to heirs of Ivory Witt (the eldest son), dec'd £51 : 14^s.

Lot No. 2. — Settled on John Witt, his brother, £17 : 4^s : 8^d.

Lot No. 3. — Settled on Benj. Witt, 2 acres in Nahant, 2 acres salt marsh by Jacob Newhall & 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres salt marsh by Driver's Creek.

Guardianship of Benj. Witt, a minor upwards 14 years, son to s^d Thos. Witt, granted his brother John, March 29, 1756."

The grandfather of the said Capt. Thomas Witt was John Witt, Sr., who by will gave the land next to Ruth Driver, spinster, to his son Thomas, father of the said Capt. Thomas Witt. Hence, Ruth Driver, all her life, must have been a neighbor to Capt. Thomas Witt and his father's family, — again showing that she was well acquainted with the Witt family.

"Will of John Witt, Sr.

Sept. 12, 1675 ; pd. March 28, 1676.


Names dau. Ann Burnitt ; daus. Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Martha, son John, my dwelling house & lot.

To son Thomas (father of Capt. Thomas), all my land by the meeting

house (Ruth Driver lived next door), which I bought of Mr King with all commons & ten acres of marsh.

To wife Sarah:—£10 to be paid by mee to my Grand daughter Hester Witt, as it being so willed by her father Jonathan Witt: Friends John Bur-
rill & Nathaniel Kirtland Sr. Overseers: wife Sarah Ex'x.

ANDREW MANSFIELD }
JOSEPH MANSFIELD } Wit.
DEBORAH MANSFIELD }

his
JOHN  WITT Sen: "
mark

The uncle of the said Capt. Thomas Witt was Jonathan Witt, who made his will Jan. 11, 1664; proved March 29, 1665, where-
in he gives to his wife, —

“The house & land my father Witt bought of my father Diman, with the land my father Diman promised me lying in the same field by the brick field for life time, after her decease, to his child.

Item: my corne lying in the house I give my wife; All my hay lying at my house:— All my Beding my father Witt gave me:— 2 cows in my father Diman's hands & all the rest of the portion my father Diman gave me.

To my father Witt all the meddow he intended to give me. My father Witt doth ingage for me to pay Goodman Flood, £1: 5^s:— Goodman Hood 20^s:— Goodman Lindsew (Lindsey) 20^s:— Goodman Driver 16^s:— And to Mr. Chickering for severall times coming to him & other things with Equi-
tie he shall require for me for my care and to pay Mr Emore for his costs.

Item: I give my brother John Witt all my wareing cloathes & Hatt & Shewes and furniture of my horse & all my tools.

Item: I appoint my wife to pay the French doctor & the Rest of my other debts y^t is not here exprest.

I make my wife Exicitor:— My father promiseth to give to my child if itt live till itt come to age, ten pounds.

Witness,

THOMAS TOWNSEND,

JONATHAN WITT.”

AN ^{h_{ir}} () BURTT.

 mark

10. SALMON^s DRIVER (subsequently Solomon), born in Lynn, Mass., Aug. 11, 1670; died before 1722-3; md. some one unknown, and had issue Solomon, and perhaps others. (See Family VI.)

11. JOHN^s DRIVER, born Dec. 2, 1673; died before 1722-3.

SECOND GENERATION.

FAMILY III.

RICHARD DRIVER ² (No. 3), according to Farmer and Sayage perhaps son of Robert ¹ and Phebe Driver, born —, died —, md. in Lynn, Mass., Jan. 6, 1664, Sarah Salmon, dau. of Daniel Salmon, of Lynn, Mass. She was born there in 1641, for in court in 1659 Sarah Salmon gave a deposition stating that her age was eighteen years.

Her father, Daniel Salmon, was employed at the Iron Works in Lynn, which works were commenced in 1643 by John Winthrop the younger for making scythe-blades, axes, hoes, ploughs, hammers, all and every kind of tool and instrument used by the colonists in agriculture or building, — for which purpose he brought over from England skilled workmen.

In 1636 Daniel Salmon was a soldier in the Pequot war, being twenty-six years of age, for which service, Dec. 30, 1661, it was voted to grant him a tract of land; hence a committee was chosen to view the land adjoining his premises.

It was, however, not granted him, it being prejudicial to his neighbors.

In 1672 he attached the property of the town to the value of forty pounds for not in 1661 laying out the land to him.

On the 27th of June of that year the Court required the town to give him six acres near his house (Lewis's History of Lynn).

Richard and Sarah (Salmon) Driver have no children on record; yet they may have been ancestors of a Richard Driver, of Boston, Mass., who, June 24, 1792, made his will, which August 14th following was proved, in which he names daughters Rosanna, wife of James Halbrook, and Ann Wilson Motley, wife of Richard Motley, "they to have liberty to dwell in my house with their families, they paying a reasonable rent."

"Wife Mary to have the use and income of the Real & Personal estate, and at her decease or inter-marriage, all said estate to go to said Rosanna, Ann, and Victor John Driver, whom I appoint executor."

The said Richard Driver, of Boston, according to the records of Trinity Church, Boston, married, Nov. 16, 1758, Ann Wilson Robinson; she born in 1740, died in Boston Nov. 11, 1779, aged

39 years, and had issue seven children, whose baptism is also on that church record as follows : —

- (a) ROSANNA DRIVER, bapt. — 1757 ; md. Dec. 20, 1789, James Holbrook.
- (b) MARY DRIVER, bapt. Sept. 20, 1759 ; md. by William Watter, June 15, 1773, to John Berry ; she died Oct. 29, 1779, aged 20.
- (c) ANN WILSON DRIVER, bapt. Oct. 11, 1761 ; md. July 15, 1781, Richard Motley, and had
 - I. ANN MOTLEY, bapt. July 21, 1782. Sponsors were Matthew Bailey, Sarah Keefe, and Mary Driver.
 - II. SUSANNA MOTLEY, bapt. March 12, 1786.
- (d) RICHARD DRIVER, bapt. July 29, 1764, died Sept. 6, 1765. Sponsors were Thomas Hicks and Hannah Robinson (King's Chapel Records).
- (e) RICHARD THOMAS DRIVER, bapt. Nov. 20, 1766. Sponsors were Hannah Robinson and Mary Gerald.
- (f) VICTOR JOHN DRIVER, bapt. Sept. 26, 1773.
- (g) SARAH DRIVER, bapt. Dec. —, 1776 ; died March 10, 1776.

Richard Driver married second, according to the records of Trinity Church, Boston, May 3, 1781, Mary Christopher.

That Richard Driver in 1784 lived in Boston, Mass., is known from the fact that in that year he was taxed on two hundred and fifty dollars worth of real estate situated in Ward 8. (Boston Town Record).

In the tenth report of the "Record of the Commissioners of Boston" is a reprint of the first Directory of the City of Boston for the year 1789, at the end of which, under the heading of "Omissions," is found, "Richard Driver, boarding house, Pierce's alley."

What became of this family, or their descendants, could not be ascertained. Queries were placed in the "New England Historical Register," also "Magazine of American History," without any notice received in reply.

Three generations stand between them and the family of Richard Driver, of Lynn. Who were living of the Boston family before them ; and who living after the Lynn family, as herein mentioned ; and if the two families were at all connected, — the compiler trusts yet to be informed of.

On the marriage record of Trinity Church, Boston, "Mary Driver, Boston, April 26, 1711, to Joseph Robins, by Cotton Mather," is recorded, — which was forty-six years before the birth of the first child of the said Richard Driver, of Boston ; hence there seems to have been a family of the name of Driver living in Boston at that date, of whom all record seems to have been lost, as nothing further was recorded before, or after.

SECOND GENERATION.

FAMILY IV.

JOHN² DRIVER, (No. 4), perhaps son (according to Farmer and Savage) of Robert¹ and Phebe Driver: born —; died —; md. first in Lynn, Mass., to Elizabeth —, who died in Lynn, Mass., May 26, 1674, leaving one son, namely: —

12. **JOHN³ DRIVER**, born in Lynn, Mass., May 23, 1674; died May 31st, following.

He (John) married second in Lynn, Mass., one whose name is unknown, and had issue two sons, namely: —

13. **JOHN³ DRIVER**, born in Lynn, Mass., May, 16, 1678.

14. **ELEAZER³ DRIVER**, born in Lynn, Mass., Aug. —, 1680; died the same month.

In 1681 John Driver must have removed from Lynn, Mass., to Boston, for in the "Report of Commissioners Record of City of Boston," Vol. X. p. 70, by Wm. H. Whitmore, is the following:

"Know all men by these presents, y^t I. Thomas Skinner, baker, do binde myselfe, Executors & administrat^{rs} to Thomas Brattle, Treas^r of the town of Boston and his successors, in the sune of forty pounds, that John Driver, or any of his family, shall not be chargeable to this Towne duringe his of any of theire abode therein, witness my hand.

Sept. 2nd. 1681.

THOMAS SKINNER."

In 1685 John Driver still was an inhabitant of Boston, for his name is the seventeenth on the list of those taxed that year for the support of the almshouse of Boston, Mass., made by Capt. Daniell Turells, under letter D., "Rates for y^e Alms House made March 18th, 1685, John Driver," is found.

This house was not built until 1685, though the first proposal for an almshouse was made in 1660. Special rates were established for it, and the inhabitants taxed for its support. It was a two-story brick building in the form of an L, with a gable roof, on the corner of Park and Beacon Streets, Boston, appropriated to the aged and infirm poor (Snow's History of Boston).

What became of the said John Driver, or his son John, is a subject of inquiry. He was probably about forty years of age in 1685, at the most; and his son was seven years old, — both too young to entirely disappear.

THIRD GENERATION.

FAMILY V.

WILLIAM DRIVER* (No. 6), son of Robert* (Robert¹) and Sarah Driver, born ———, perhaps in Lynn, Mass.; died in Salem, Mass., in 1691; md., date not known, Mary Glover, dau. of John and Mary (Guppy) Glover; she born in Salem, Mass., May 1, 1666 (he probably not many years older); she md. second, March 6, 1692, Daniel Grant; she died before Nov. 28, 1707, at which date her second husband, Daniel Grant, took out a letter of administration on the estate of her first husband, though administration was granted her on the same Feb. 5, 1691-2, she giving bonds with Lieut. Jeremiah Neal and Richard Prytherche. Inventory of his estate, as first taken by John Ropes and John Ward, was £156:2s. Daniel Grant married, second (date not found), Mary ———, known only by his will.

William Driver's parentage is somewhat of a mystery. He could have been son of either Robert Driver, Sr., or Robert Driver, Jr.; for the first Robert was of marriageable age in 1630, and the second Robert of marriageable age in 1655. William of marriageable age in 1681, the probable date of the birth of his first child.

The County Court Records state that "William Driver came to Salem in 1685, a young man, by trade a tallow-chandler." From what place he came, the record fails to give, — perhaps from Lynn; for Feb. 29, 1675 and 1676, his name is the twentieth on the list of those who served in King Philip's war under Capt. Joseph Gardiner, for which service he received £2:14s. (see list on next page).

In this list his name stands next those known to have been residents of Lynn; and as no family of the name of Driver as yet has been found as living at that date in any other town than Lynn, it might be considered that William enlisted from Lynn.

"The danger from Indians in these early times was such that in the year 1645, a law was passed requiring the youth from ten to sixteen years to be exercised with small guns, half pikes, bows and arrows." — *New England Historical Register*, Vol. XXX. p. 83. Sixteen years of age also was fixed by the Court for taking the oath of allegiance to the country. Hence, if William was but fourteen years of age, as it seems, all things considered, he would have been old enough to enlist in this military company, which con-

sisted of ninety-five men, enlisted at Salem, from the adjoining towns, Lynn included; mustered at Dedham Plains, Dec. 10, 1675, and marched with the army towards the rendezvous at Wickford.

The April number of the "New England Hist. Gen. Register" copies the following list from the "Massachusetts Colony Records," Vol. V. p. 517:—

"Capt. Joseph Gardiner and his men Feb. 29th 1675 & 6.

	£ s. d.		£ s. d.
Wm Hathorne Capt.	11:09:08	Benjamin Chadwell	02:14:00
Samuel Gray	03:06:07	Stephen Greenleaf	01:10:00
Peter Cary	02:14:00	Amos Gurdon	02:14:00
Jeremiah Neall	04:18:00	Peter Emos	02:14:00
Peter Cole —	02:14:00	William Webb	02:14:00
Joseph Price	01:13:00	Robert Sibly	02:14:00
Samuel Tarbox	03:09:03	Andrew Ringe	02:14:00
Sam. Beadle	04:01:00	Benjamin Langdon	03:00:00
Benjamin Hooper	02:14:00	James Briarly	04:01:00
Rice Husband	02:14:00	Benjamin Webster	02:14:00
Marke Stacy	02:14:00	Freegrace Norton	03:12:00
William Hollis	02:18:00	Israel Thorne	02:14:00
John Clark	01:14:00	Ezekiel Woodward	02:14:00
Thomas Weymouth	02:14:00	John Wheeler	05:08:00
William Hutchins	02:07:00	William Wainwright	02:14:00
Christopher Read	02:14:00	John Boutell	00:18:00
William Bassett	05:04:04	Jonathan Clark	02:14:00
Samuel Graves	02:14:00	William Williams	02:14:00
John Farrington	02:02:00	Samuel Rust	04:01:00
<i>William Driver</i>	02:14:00	Benjamin Sweet, Lieut.	03:00:00
Andrew Townsend	02:14:00	Henry Dow	01:16:00
Jonathan Looke	02:14:00	Silvester Hayes	03:03:00
Charles Knight	03:03:00	Thomas Tenney	02:14:00
Edward Haradine	02:19:02	Joseph Jewett	02:14:00
John Trask	02:17:08	John Boynton	02:14:00
Joseph Houlton	02:14:00	Peter Coomes	03:08:00
Isaac Welman	02:14:00	Jonathan Copp	01:04:00
William Pritchett	02:14:00	John Mann	02:04:00
John Maston	02:14:00		

When William Driver came to Salem he not only was married and had two children, but he had in his possession a "breeches" edition of the Geneva Bible, translated in Geneva in 1578, printed in London, Eng., in 1608, called the "Breeches Bible" on account of the rendering of Genesis, iii. 7, "they made to themselves aprons," which in this edition is translated, "they made to themselves breeches."

Who was the first owner will never be definitely known, for as it passed down in the family it was roughly treated, as the covers and first signatures have been torn off and lost, thus forever destroying the name of the first owner and his records, which, according to the custom of the time, would have been found on

the missing part; but William is known to have been once the owner, as the birth-date of his son John is on the margin of the first leaf of what is now left of this Bible, and his other children follow according to birth, in his own handwriting, known because the writing corresponds with his signature found on bills of sale, deeds, etc., belonging to him, to be found in the Probate Office of Salem, Mass.

The children of the second marriage of his wife also are found recorded on the next following pages, written on the margins of the leaves and the blank spaces at the end of all the chapters, as this Bible is not bound with blank leaves for a family record, as Bibles now are.

The dates of the births and deaths (no marriages) of the Driver family appear on the rest of the leaves of this Bible, down to the family of Michael Driver, Third, father of Stephen Driver, Jr. (grandfather of the compiler), who in turn became the owner of this Bible, but who made no record on its pages, having purchased for his own use an edition of the Bible known as Scott's Bible, which was bound in several volumes, and thus easier to handle for family use. The old "Breeches Bible" was then kept in the bedroom of his wife Ruth, for her own private use, she reading out of it every night and morning until 1824, when her son Joseph started for Harvard, and desired the Bible to use at college, which was given him, and which he ever after retained in his possession until his death in 1878, when it descended to his son, Dr. Stephen William Driver, of Cambridge, Mass., No. 114, who, in 1887, is the owner. There was another Bible in the family, printed in German text, with the Apocrypha, which was sold at auction after the death of Mrs. Stephen Driver, Jr., with the household effects, all traces of which seem to be lost.

William Driver must have been a person of enterprise, for besides making candles, we find that, May 2, 1687, "he petitioned for a license to distill and sell liquors" (Co. City Records), — a fashionable and genteel business at that date. This was two years after his settlement in Salem, Mass.

He was also sought after as a witness, for many deeds bear his name. For example: "July 10, 1688 — William Driver, Salem, witness to deed, from Richard More Sr. to his son Richard, of part of his dwelling house."

Jan. 11. 1688-9: — William Driver witness to deed from John Conant, Marblehead, formerly of Beverly, to Philip English, Salem, $\frac{3}{4}$ acres in Beverly and 30 acres in Wenham Pond.

March 25, 1689: — William Driver, witness to deed from heirs of Nathaniel Pickman, to Timothy Lindall, Salem.

Jan. 10, 1690-1: — "William Driver, Thos. Hawkins, & Edward Humphrey, wit. to agreement between Elizabeth, widow of Thadeus Riddan, Marblehead, & her son John Riddan, to whom she gives all that her messuage, tenement & farm given her by her father King & lying in Lynn, formerly in the occupation of Walter Phillips, together with 6 acres of salt marsh in Lynn town marsh also my just thirds & right that is due or coming to me in M'h'd, or hereafter may become due in & to the houses, lands, goods, chattels, money, plate, jewells, or any other estate, both movable & immovable . . . To have & to hold . . . for the term of 999 years . . . provided said John Riddan shall pay unto his mother Elizabeth Riddan £10 yearly during her natural life in money or such goods that may be necessary for her maintenance . . . Essex SS.

William Driver personally appeared this 21 Feb. 1698-9 before me (Jona Corwin) and made oath y^t he was present & saw Elizabeth Riddan & John Riddan sign seal & deliver the within written as their act & deed . . ."

Jan. 3, 1690: — William Driver, Salem, Chandler, bought of Susanna Stacey and her sons John and William Stacey, administrators of their deceased brother, Joseph Stacey, the estate belonging to the latter, situated near the town meeting house (the present First Church stands upon its site), with all the shops, upper and lower rooms, as given in the following deed; thus showing where the first of the name resided in Salem, Mass. : —

Deed of Stacey to Driver.

"Bee itt knowne unto all men by these presents that I Susannah Stacey of y^e towne of Sclem in y^e county of Essex in New England, for and in consideracon of y^e s^ume of fortye pounds of currant money of New England to me in hand paid by William Driver of said towne, chandler, att and before y^e ensealing and delivery of these presents, wherewith I confesse my selfe fully sattisfied, contented and paid have bargained and sold and by these presents doe fully cleerly and absolutely bargain and sell with the good liking and consent of my well beloved sons William and John Stacey who are jointly administrators to the said estate of their deceased brother Joseph Stacey in plaine & open markt within y^e said town of Salem all and every part and parcel of the tenement which was my sone Joseph Stacey's deceased scituate stand & being within y^e said towne of Salem neer the said towne meeting house being butted and bounded as followeth viz : — with the street northerly, westerly with y^e land of Mrs. Gardners, Southerly, with the land of Mr. Stileman's, Easterly, all and every part and parcell of land & tenements and being the same which was purchased by Capt. George Corwin with all the shops upper rooms, lower rooms, cellars, & with all and every part and parcel thereof.

To have and to hold the s^d tenement and land with all privildges and appurtenances and all and singular other the premises & every part and parcell thereof unto the s^d William Driver his heirs and assigns forever, and I the abovesaid Susannah with y^e consent of my sons William and John Stacey, for myselfe my heirs,

executors and administrators & for every of them doe covenant promise and engage to and with the said William Driver his heirs executors administrators and assignes and every of them by these presents that I the said Susannah with y^e consent of my said sons William and John, att the time of the en sealing hereof hath full power good right, lawful authority and true title to graunt aliene, bargain, sell and confirme y^e before bargained premises and every part and parcell thereof unto the s^d William Driver his heirs & assignes in manner and forme aforesaid and according to the true intent & meaning of these presents; and I y^e s^d Susannah Stacey with the consent of my said sons William and John for myselfe, my heirs executors and administrators and for every of them, doth further covenant promise and grant to & with y^e said William Driver his heirs, executors and assignes by these presents that y^e said messuage or tenement, shops upper rooms and cellars and all other the premises above by these presents mentioned bargained and sold and from time to time and at all times hereafter forever shall be remaine and continue to the said W^m Driver his heirs and assignes forever free & cleere and freely & clearly acquitted & discharged or otherwise by the said Susannah Stacey her heirs or assignes, sufficiently saved & kept harmless of and from all and all manner of bargaines, sales, jointures, dowers, leases, annuities, rents, statutes, judgements, executions, intrusions, and from all other charges, titles, troubles and incumbrances whatsoever, had made, committed, suffered or done by me the said Susannah Stacey or my said sons William and John Stacey, or by means of theirs, mine or y^e procurement or any other person or persons claiming from by or under me or them or any of myne or theirs or by my means or theirs, right, title, consent, privacye or procurement and I the said Susannah Stacey will att any time hereafter at y^e reasonable request of the said William Driver, his heirs or assignes, doe or cause to be done, acknowledged, executed and suffered all and every such act and acts, thing and things in the law whatsoever for the future and more better assurance and making of the said messuage & tenement with premisses or appurtenances by these present mentioned to be bargained, and sold unto y^e said William Driver his heirs and assigns forever, In witness whereof I, the abovesaid Susannah Stacey with the consent of my sons William and John Stacey have hereunto sett my hand and fixed my seale this third day of January Anno : Dom : one thousand six hundred & ninety one.

Signed sealed and delivered in y^e presence of us

RICHARD PRYTHERRICKE
THOMAS PINCENT
JOHN GYLES

SUSANNAH STACEY, her mark & seale
X

WILLIAM STACEY

his X mark
JOHN STACEY, & seale.

Hannah Stacey, William Stacey and John Stacey personally appeared this 3^d of January 1690-1, acknowledged this above instrument to be their act and deed before me

JONATHAN CORWIN, Assist."

("Current pay, at this date, was thirty shillings New England coin, to twenty-two shillings sixpence sterling.")

"Jan. 14, 1691: — Know all men by these presents That I William Driver of the Towne of Salem in y^e County of Essex in New England, Chandler, do Owe and stand indebted Vnto Mary Batter of above said Towne and County in the summe of six pounds money which I the said William Driver my Heires Executors Administrators & Assignes do promise to pay or cause to

be paid vnto the said Mary Batter her Heirs Executors administrators or assignes or order at or Before the fourteenth day of Aprill next Ensueing the date hereof at the said Mary's dwelling House in Salem.

In witness whereof I have vnto sett my hand and fixed my seale this fourteenth day of January Anno Dom: one Thousand six hundred and ninety and one

WILLIAM DRIVER."

"Recd of William Driver

14^l candels att 6.

0 : 7 : 0

Recd candels 30. No []^{re}

6 doz. tow inkcornes 16

$\frac{1}{2}$ of tobacco 3^d

Recd 1 y^d of Shad

£0: 4^s: 6^d"

This indebtedness of Wm. Driver to Mary Batter was written on one side of a large sheet of paper, and on the reverse side was the following receipt of Mary Batter, the amount being paid by Mary Driver, wife of William, he probably having been very ill when he wrote, or caused to be written, the indebtedness not only to Mary Batter, but also to Zebulon Hill, as given on next page, —

"be it known by all home it may concern that i Mari batters of the town of Salem, widow, doe acknowledg myself fully sattisfied and paide the mony that was du to me by bil as you may se on the other sid of this buil from William driver deaseat and paid to mestress bat-ter afore saide by me Mrs. Mary driver alias Grant upon ballans of all accounts as witnes our hands and seals.

MARY BATTER.

JOHN WOODWELL } Wit."
SARAH MILES }

This receipt bears no date; but Zebulon Hill's indebtedness of Sept. 18, 1691, is signed by William himself, so he was alive and able to write at that date; but this is the last account of any kind found on record to his name, not even a will has been found, — a customary preparation at that time for death; but a bill of £5:06:11 was brought into court from Dr. James Holgate, "for cyhrgery & physick," which might seem that William Driver died soon after a surgical operation, or too much medicine, as Dr. Anthony Rowndy had a bill of £10 for medicine charged to William Driver. His wife Mary married second, March 6, 1692, and July 26, 1692, she was "licensed to retail spiritous liquors;" hence William must have died before these dates.

Where he was buried cannot be stated with any certainty; his daughter Elizabeth, an infant, died before her father, and a stone in Charter St. Burial Ground, Salem, Mass., to this day marks her

grave. A large space surrounds her resting-place, large enough for William and all his family to be interred ; but no graves are visible at this date, nor any stones.

Indebtedness of Zebulon Hill.

" Bee it Knowne vnto all men by these prsents, That I William Driver of the Towne of Salem in the county of Essex in New England, Chandler, do owe & stand Bound vnto Zebulon Hill Senior of the said Towne & County in the full and just summe of tenne pounds in currant silver money of New England which I the said William Driver, my Heirs, Executors administrators & Assignes do Promise to pay or cause to be paid vnto the said Zebulon Hill his Heirs Executors Administrators assignes or orders at or before the first day of March Next Ensueing the date hereof In Wittness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal this Eighteenth day of September annoy Dñi one thousand six hundred & ninety one.

WILLIAM DRIVER.

Signed Sealed & Delivered in
the Presents of us JN^o GYLES.

John Gyles made oath that he saw William Driver Signe seale & deliver this Bill & y^t he then sett to his hand as wittness thereof before me,

JOHN HIGGINSON Jun^r "

Children of **William** and **Mary (Glover) Driver** were:—

15. WILLIAM DRIVER⁴, born about 1681 or 2, cordwainer; mentioned in the account of his mother, rendered in court in 1703, as having "paid £4 to set him out to prentice in 1693;" living April 30, 1702, when he sold all claims to his father's shop and lands to his stepfather, Daniel Grant; but "out at sea," Nov. 28, 1707, when Daniel Grant administered on the estate of his father, William Driver, stating that "all y^e children" (of W^m Driver's) "being under age except one *out att sea*." This is the last found on record concerning him, hence it might be considered that he never returned to New England.

William Driver to Daniel Grant.

April 30, 1702:— William Driver, cordwainer, son of William Driver, deceased, sold to his step-father, Daniel Grant of Salem, chandler, "all claim to a shop, and land bounded N. on the Main" (now Essex) "St., W. on a lane between the meeting house and said shop to the S. on land of David Gardner to the E. with Samuel Phillips, which shop and land was my father's William Driver, late of Salem, dec'd, and all my claim in said father's estate." Witnesses were John Lander and Samuel Phillips, Jr.

"Know all men by these presents that I William Driver Salem in the county of Essex and province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, cordwainer, for the sum of ten pounds current money of the province afores^d to me in hand paid by my father-in-law Daniel Grant of Salem, chandler, the Receipt whereof I doe hereby acknowledge and myselfe herewith fully satisfied paid and contented, I doe

give, grant, bequeath and surrender up unto my aboves^d Father, Daniel Grant, his heirs Executors administrators and assigns all my right and claime in or unto a shop and land it stands upon in Salem afores^d and is bounded as followeth viz: — to the North with the Maine Street — to the West with a lane betwixt the meeting house and said shop — to the South with the land of David Gardner — to the East with Samuel Phillips, which shop and land was my Father's, William Driver, late of Salem afores^d Dec^d — and all my Right and claime and Interest in all and every part of my selfe my heires Executors administrators and Assignes for Ever. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seale at Salem this 30th day of Aprill in the yeare of our Lord seventeen hundred and two.

WILLIAM DRIVER.

Signed sealed & delivered in the presence of

ELIEZUR KEYSER Jun^r }
JOHN LANDER. }
SAMUEL PHILLIPS Jun^r }

Elizur Keyser and Samuel Phillips made oath that they were present and did see William Driver signe seale and deliver the aboves^d writeing or Instrument and that they did then set their hands as witnesses.

Salem Aprill the 5 day 1705.

Before me JOHN HATHORNE Just Peace."

Deeds, Vol. 17, p. 127.

16. JOHN DRIVER⁴, born July 3, 1683 (Essex Inst. Collections), of whom nothing further is known but that his mother paid £01 : 04^s for his schooling, as rendered in court.
17. MARY DRIVER⁴, born 1684 (?); died —; mentioned by her mother in court as having paid "6 shillings to learn Mary to write."
18. THOMAS DRIVER⁴, born in Salem, Mass., March 24, 1686-7; md. Jan. 1, 1712, Mary Ingalls. (See Family VII.)
19. ELIZABETH DRIVER⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 28, 1688-9; died, according to her gravestone, in Charter Street Burial Ground, Salem, Mass., "Aug. y^e 25, 1690, aged 16 months."
20. MICHAEL DRIVER⁴, born in Salem, Mass., July 13, 1691; died July 1, 1729-30, master mariner; md. Sarah Gray Nov. 4, 1714. (See Family VIII.)

Mary Driver, widow of William, March 6, 1692, Ct. Co. Rec., married second Daniel Grant, who was probably a native of Salem, Mass., as he is found recorded to have been in 1661 "a proprietor of common and undivided lands" of that place. He died in Salem, Mass., June, 1718, having married second one Mary, learned only by his will, which see, page 84. He was a tallow-chandler, and probably continued the business of William Driver both in the distillery and the candle-factory, as "Mary Driver, July 26, 1692, was licensed to retail spirituous liquors."

Out of the estate of William Driver together they paid the following amounts:—

"BOSTON y^e 17th [] m^o, 1692.

Lo: BROTHER

W^m Drivers Widow doth owe mee six pounds.

I pray you Receive it of her for mee.

I have Grat ocaſion for money. This our Loves to you all.

I Remayn Thy Bro.

Jⁿ^o SOAMES."

"rec^d three pounds money of M^r Driver upon y^e acct. of Jⁿ^o Soams as wittness my hand this 19th, mo. 1692.

SAM^{LL} SHATTOCK."

"Salem : 23 : June 1693.

March y^e 12th 1693/4.

Then Received the full Contents of this within written Bill the summe of Ten pounds in currant money of New England.

I say Received from daniel grnt & mee

ZABULON HILL.

Witnessed &

JOHN GYLES

JOHN LODER

THOMAS LARIMORE."

"Received of Daniel Grant five pounds six shillings and Eleaven pence which was due to from y^e Estate of William Driver, late of Salem Deceased.

I say Received by me this 17th day July 1793.

JAMES HOLGAT."

[He was the family doctor. Dr. Anthony Roundy was also a medical doctor of Salem at this date.]

"The Estate of W^m Driver Deceas'd is Debitor

To W^m Browne on the Ballance of Accot made vp wth his widdow & Relict the 14th June 1692: Tenn pounds, ninteen shillings & 7¹/₄ to be in Good Candles at sixpence y^t or money which I doe Accept of Daniel Grant for the pay ment of soe much there being an Acco^t between us which I cannot at p^{re}sent settle it with him; as wittness my hand this 27th Aprill 1695.

WM. BROWNE."

"This may Certifie whome it may concerne that M^r Mary Grant hath satisfied me for what was due to me from her fformer Husband William Driver.

Salem 29 — Aprill 1695,

JOHN HIGGINSON JUN^r

due when he dyed 6 / 6^d

funeral charges 1 : 11 : 9

£1 : 18 : 3 "

"Accompted with Widdow Mary Driver this 25th feab^r 1691-2 and Bill due to me is £06 : 02 : 10¹/₄

Cred^t By Dan^l Grant 06 : 02 : 10¹/₄

00 : 00 : 00

14th May 1694 B all

& BENJ. BROWNE."

"These may Certifie whome it may Concerne that Dan^l Grant of Salem chandler hath paid and secured to me all that was due from the Estate of William Driver and from Mary Driver his Relict & Administratrix being in all about twenty & two pounds money as Wittnesseth my hand.

Aprill 29th 1695.

& JOS. WOLCOTT "

"These maye Certifie all Whom^e soever it may Concerne Thatt Daniel Grant did well and Truly pay or ceafe [cause] to be payed unto mee all Whatsoever Was Due To mee From y^e Estate of W^m Driver of Salem Deceased and Doe hereby full aquit and Discharge hime from all Dettes Dues or D em andes ff orm s^d Estate as Wittness my hand.

Salem Ageste y^e 29. 1695.

MARY BATTER."

"Rec^d of Daniel Grant fifteen shillings it being due from y^e Estate of William Driver to me.

Salem 1696.

SAM^l PHILLIPS."

"These May Certifie all Whomsoever it may Concerne that Daniel Grant did Well and Truly pay or caused to be payed vnto mee all Whatsoever was due to mee from y^e Estate of W^m Driver of Salem Deceased and do hereby fully aquit & discharge him from all debts & dues on demand from s^d Estate as wittness my hand.

Salem Aprill the 24th 1695.

JOHN HATHORNE.

The above sum pay'd was foure pound, sixteen shillings and six pence.

July 23^d 1703 Testes

JOHN HATHORNE."

"These may Certifie whome it may Concerne that Daniell Grant of Salem Chandler hath paid and secured to me all that was dew from the Esteat of William Driver and from Mary Driver his Relict and Administratrix being In all about Eight pounds money as wittness my hand.

July 20th 1703.

the mark F of FLORENCE MACARTY.

Witness

ELIZUR KEYSER
JOHN LOWTHER "

"Whereas William Driver late of Salem Deceased was in ye year 1689 Rated thirty shillings, I William Curtis Jun^r one of y^e Constables of said Salem for said year 1689 Doe acknowledge that I have Received of Daniel Grant the said thirty shillings as witness my hand this 24th day July of 1703

WILLIAM CURTIS JUNIOR."

Ten years after the death of William Driver, Jeremiah Neal, bondsman for Mary Driver, alias Grant, administratrix, somewhat fearful of the result of his responsibility, on account of her not rendering her account within the required limits of the law, petitioned the Probate Court, July, 1703, to issue the following citation:—

"ESSEX, ss.

JOHN APPLETON, Esq.. Judge of Probate, &c.

To Daniel Grant & Mary Grant alias Dryver Adm^x to the Estate of yo^r former Husband, William Dryver, Late of Salem, Chandler, dec'd.

Whereas complaint hath been made by Jeremiah Neal who became bondsman for y^e right of adm^o on s^d Estate and you haveing for a long Time neglected making up yo^r sd administration as yo^r bonds Require. Whereby y^e said Jerem^b Neal lies Exposed to the Law.

Wherefore Each of you are hereby Required In her Majes^{ty} Name to make yo^r Psonal appearance before y^e said Judge this Instant July att Ipswich att the house of M^r Francis Crumpton Innholder Then & There to give & make up an account of yo^r adm^o otherwise you must expect your bonds to be prosecuted.

Hereof fail not.

Dated at Ipswich July 17 Anno Dom 1703."

Accordingly, Aug. 2, 1703, Daniel Grant and Mary Grant, alias Driver, rendered in court, at Ipswich, the following account:

"Acc^t rendered by Mary Driver alias Grant and Daniel Grant my now husband.

		£	s.	d.
1692	p ^d a debt to Jno Somers, owing from s ^d Estate	6	00	00
1693	p ^d Doc ^t James Holgate for cyhrgery & physick	5	06	11
	p ^d Doc ^t Anthony Rowndy for medesine	10	00	00
1693-4	p ^d a debt to Jno. Cromwell	02	06	06
	p ^d Zebulon Hill £10 & 8 Charge Resting	10	08	00
1694	p ^d a debt to Benj. Browne to him owing	06	02	10½
	p ^d Will ^m Curtis Rates for y ^e year 1689	01	10	00
1695	p ^d Maj ^r Will ^m Browne	10	19	07½
	p ^d Peter Chevers	05	00	00
	p ^d Coll ^r John Hathorne	04	16	06
	p ^d Mrs. Mary Batter	06	10	00
	p ^d Jn ^o Higginson	01	18	03
	p ^d Josiah Wolcot	22	00	00
1700	p ^d Cap ^t Jn ^o Turner	11	00	00
1703	p ^d Florance Maccarte	08	00	00
	to set W ^m Driver to prentice 1693	04	00	00
	to Thomas Drivers Diet & attendance & physick & Clothing five years & fitting out to prentice he being about 4 or 5 years old when his father dyed	08	00	00
	to Michael Drivers Diet attendance, physick & Cloathing ten years he being about half year old when his father dyed	15	00	00
	to Mary Driver to learn to write I paid	00	06	00
	John Driver's schooling	01	04	00
	Thomas Drivers schooling	01	04	00
	Michael Drivers schooling	01	04	00
	Disburton Reparation of y ^e shop at several times	16	00	00
1696	p ^d a debt to Sam ^l Phillips	00	15	00
	To ffuneral charges	02	00	00
	To bond & Letter of adm ^o	00	07	00
	Registering y ^e Inventory	00	03	00
	Allowing y ^e acc ^o 5s — Registering y ^e acc ^o 2 ^d	00	07	00
	Quietus 4 ^s — allowed y ^e adm ^t for Trouble	00	04	00
	& charge of administration	03	10	00

CR.

		£	s.	d.
1692	to the Inventory of y ^e above Estate amounting to	156	02	00
1698	to Rec ^d a debt of Sam ^l Williams	06	00	00

	£	s.	d.
to Rec ^d a debt of Edmond Galle	00	06	00
to Rec ^d a debt of Jn ^o King	00	10	00
to Rec ^d a debt of Mrs. Devorix	00	06	00
1699 to Rec ^d from Barbadoes shipt by Maj ^r Jn ^o Pilgrim to neat proceeds amounting to £20 here	20	00	00
to Improvement of shop at £3 $\frac{2}{3}$ year from July 1692 to this present is 11 years amounting to £33 two thirds whereof is	22	00	00
	£205	04	00

her

MARY *M* DRIVER alias GRANT

mark

DANIEL GRANT."

"ESSEX ss. Before the Hon^{ble} John Appleton Esq. Judge of Probate & Grant-
ing Letters of adm^o wthin Said County of Essex att Ips. August 2^d, 1703. Mary
Driver alias Grant, adm^r to y^o estate of her husband William Driver Late of Salem
Dec^d appeared & Exhibited y^o above s^d acc^o of her adm^o & made oath That it was
a true account so far as she proceeded.

Therein which was accordingly allowed.

Sworn Attest DANL ROGERS, Regr."

Mary Driver, alias Grant, died soon after this, and before she
completed her administration on her first husband's estate, for on
record is found the following:—

"Whereas Admo of all & singular y^o Goods Chattells, Rights, & Credits
of W^m Driver Late of Salem Dec^d Intestate was committed to Mary Driver
Relict of said Dec^d and shee Dyeing before shee had compleated y^e same & y^e
children being under age except one out att sea & M^r Daniel Grant being chief
credit^r to y^o estate of y^e said Dec^d W^m Driver, wherefore y^e County afore-
said Greeting—Trusting in yo^r care & fidelity I doe by these p^sents comitt
unto your power & authority to administer all & singular y^e goods, chattells
Rights & Creditts of y^e s^d Dec^d y^t have not been adm^d upon by y^e form^r
adm^x, well & faithfully to dispose of y^e same according to law and I doe
hereby constitute & appoint you y^e said Daniel Grant Adm^r of all & singular
y^e Goods Chattells Rights & Credits of y^e Dec^d aforesaid not before admin-
istered on by y^e afores^d adm^x.

Dated att Ipswich y^e 28 day of Novembr Anno Do 1707.

Daniel Grant of Salem Chandler as principal & Samuel Phillips & Stephen
Ingalls of s^d Salem as sureties gave bond in £100. Nov. 28, 1707."—*Pro-
bate Rec.*, Vol. IX. p. 136.

"March 3, 1709–10:—Daniel Grant as administrator to William Drivers
estate sold to Daniel Caton for £47:10, his (Drivers) dwelling house, and
15 ft. of land near the old meeting house which was afterwards conveyed to
Roger Stevens of Marblehead."

From this it is reasonable to suppose that at this date Daniel
Grant had either married or was about to marry his second wife,

Mary, known only through his will, made May 3, 1718, as found in Probate Record, Vol. XII. p. 190, and was thus preparing to live in another house; or he went to live in hers, — often the way of “y^e olden time,” and so sold the Driver house.

Daniel Grant's Will.

“In the name of God Amen.

The Third Day of May 1718, I Daniel Grant of Salem in y^e County of Essex in New England Tallo Chandler, being very weak & sick of Body But of p^rfect mind & memory Thanks be given unto God. I therefore calling to mind y^e mortality of my Body & knowing it is appointed for all men once to Dye Doe make & Ordaine this my last will & Testament, that is to say principally & first of all I give & Recomend to the earth to be buried In a Decent and Christian Buriall att y^e Discretion of my exc^r nothing Doubting but att y^e Gen^l Resurrection I shall receive againe the same by the mighty power of God — and as touching such Wordly Estate wherewith It hath pleased God to bless me In this life, after my Just Debts & funerall charges are paid, I Give & Demise & Dispose of y^e same in y^e following manner & forme.

Imp^r — I give & bequeath to Mary my Dearly beloved wife y^e sum of Twenty pounds of passable mony of New England to be payd by my Executor In twelve months after y^e first twelve months & all hir wareing apparell linnen & woollen which Is hers or what shee can own to be hers when that shee was married to mee.

To Matthew, Daniel & Eliz^d my three children each proportionably ten pounds & to my Daughter More my chest of Drawers with all y^t is in itt.

Item, — I give to my youngest son James whom I constitute make & ordaine my sole Executor of this my last Will & Testament all & singular my Estate Debts Dues or Demands by him freely to be possessed & enjoyed. And I Doe hereby utterly Disallow revoke & Disannull all other or former Wills, Testaments, Bequests & Executors by mee In any ways before named willed or bequeathed Ratifyeing & confirmeing this & no other to be my last will & Testament.

Further, I bequeath to Matthew my Eldest son my best apparell y^t I have If he shall return home. If not my Executor to have This being added before the signeing & sealing hereof, as witness my hand before these witnesses.

DAN^l GRANT (Seal)

STEPHEN X INGALLS

DANIEL DARLING

WILLIAM YOUNG.

ESSEX ss. SALEM, July 17, Anno D^o 1718.

Before y^e Hon^{ble} John Appleton Esq^r Judge of y^e probate of Wills &c. In said County —

Stephen Ingalls, Dan^l Darling & William Young all psonally appeared & made oath y^t they were psent & saw Daniel Grant late of Salem Dc^d signe

& seale & heard him publish & Declare y^e above written Instru^t to be his last Testament & when he so did he was of good understanding & Disposing mind to y^e best of y^r Discerning & y^t att y^e same time they sett to y^r hands as witnesses In his psence.

Sworne attest DAN^l ROGERS Reg^t.

Upon which this will Is proved approved & allowed The Exec^r being under age made choice of his Broth^r Michael Driver to be his Guardian Dureing his minority.

DAN^l ROGERS Reg^t."

This widow of Daniel Grant is found once on record, as follows :—

"Jan. 21, 1719-20. Alex^r Mackmallin, to Mary Grant widow of Daniel of Salem, for £18, deeds a small tract of land with a dwelling house standing thereon, bounded E. (being 26 ft. in breadth), by y^e Prison lane, or highway: N. (being 41 ft. $\frac{1}{2}$ long) by a small highway, or path: W. & S. by s^d Mackmillan's land.

JOHN GLOVER } Wit."
RUTH EPES }

Children of **Daniel and Mary Driver (Glover) Grant** were :

- (a) ROBERT GRANT⁴, born Oct. 31, 1693; died before 1718.
- (b) MATTHEW GRANT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May 20, 1695; died March, 1733; administration on his estate granted his brother James Grant, April 14, 1733.
- (c) DANIEL GRANT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., March 10, 1697; died May, 1774, æt. 77 years (Salem Gazette).
- (d) JAMES GRANT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 3, 1698-9; md. first, Hannah Neal, and had Mary, born in Salem, where she was baptized, Jan. 20, 1722-3. He md. second, March 24, 1724, Hannah Gedney, dau. of William and Hannah (Gardner) Gedney; she born June 12, 1701. They had eight children, namely:—
 - 1. WILLIAM GRANT⁵, bapt. Dec. 27, 1724.
 - 2. HANNAH GRANT⁵, bapt. June 5, 1726; d. y.
 - 3. SARAH GRANT⁵, bapt. July 14, 1728.
 - 4. HANNAH GRANT⁵, bapt. Aug. 16, 1730.
 - 5. ELIZABETH GRANT⁵, bapt. April 24, 1737.
 - 6. SUSANNAH GRANT⁵, bapt. July 22, 1739.
 - 7. MARGARET GRANT⁵, bapt. Jan. 11, 1740.
 - 8. RUTH GRANT⁵, bapt. March 6, 1742.
- (e) ELIZABETH GRANT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May 27, 1700; d. young.
- (f) ELIZABETH GRANT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May 31, 1702, "between ten and eleven o'clock in the day," family Bible, wherein all these children of the name of Grant are recorded. She married Dec. 15, 1721, William Gale, son of Abraham and Lydia (Ropes) Gale, he born

Aug. 13, 1699, who, as Felt says, "had kept a reading, writing, and cyphering school within the bridge."

Their children were nine; namely:—

- (1) WILLIAM GALE⁵, born Oct. 5, 1722.
- (2) ELIZABETH GALE⁵, born July 26, 1724; md. Dec. 21, 1744, John King, and had six children:—

JOHN KING⁶, bapt. Sept. 1, 1745
 ELIZABETH KING⁶, bapt. Oct. 4, 1747.
 MARY KING⁶, bapt. Feb. 5, 1748.
 JAMES KING⁶, bapt. May 27, 1751.
 WILLIAM KING⁶, Feb. 24, 1754.
 LYDIA KING⁶, Jan. 7, 1759.

- (3) SAMUEL GALE⁵, born June 25, 1726.
- (4) MARY GALE⁵, born Oct. 3, 1728.
- (5) ANN GALE⁵, born March 2, 1730.
- (6) ABIGAIL GALE⁵, born Oct. 3, 1735.
- (7) SARAH GALE⁵, born April 3, 1738.
- (8) LYDIA GALE⁵, born Sept. 9, 1740.
- (9) ABRAHAM GALE⁵, born Aug. 2, 1742.

The father of Mary Driver, alias Grant, John Glover, was the great-grandfather of Gen. John Glover, of Marblehead, Mass., the great Revolutionary patriot; he settled early in New England, where he married, Jan. 2, 1660–1, Mary Guppy, and had issue seven children, all born in Salem; namely:—

- (1) JOHN GLOVER, born Aug. 29, 1661; adm. granted David and Joseph Glover, his nephews, Nov. 27, 1736.
- (2) WILLIAM GLOVER, born March 15, 1663; adm. granted his mother, Mary, Dec. 6, 1700.
- (3) MARY GLOVER, born May 1, 1666; died before Nov. 28, 1787; md. first, *William Driver*; md. second, Daniel Grant.
- (4) SARAH GLOVER, born July, 1668; md. — Skinner.
- (5) HANNAH GLOVER, born June 24, 1670; md. Peter Henderson.
- (6) BENJAMIN GLOVER, born April, 1677; died March, 1736; md. Abigail Henderson.
- (7) EBENEZER GLOVER, born April 13, 1685; md. Sept., 1706, Rebecca Stearns.

THIRD GENERATION.

FAMILY VI.

SALMON (subsequently **SOLOMON**) **DRIVER**³ (No. 10), son of Robert² (**ROBERT**¹), and Sarah Driver, born in Lynn, Mass., Aug. 11, 1670; died before 1734-5, learned from the deed of Jonathan Foster to his sister Ruth, wherein she states that "she is the only surviving child of her father Robert Driver;" married —, and had one child, and perhaps others.

He probably was named for the wife of his uncle Richard, who was Sarah Salmon, — a name not uncommon at that date. Fuller in his "Worthies," Vol. I. p. 191, mentions "Nathaniel Salmon, divine, topographer, and antiquary, born at Meppershall;" also Thomas Salmon, historian and geographer, born at same place.

When, or why, the name Salmon was changed to Solomon does not appear on record. Solomon was evidently considered preferable, for that name only continued in the family for generations.

This Solomon was impressed into the service of his country for the second Indian war, which broke out in 1688, occasioned by revenge which for twelve years had been burning in the breasts of the Eastern Indians for their friends killed and sold into slavery in the war of 1675-6, — which war, with intervals, continued till 1698.

It was for this son that the father in 1689 petitioned the Court, "that his son Solomon might be released as some others had been for the life of his wife Sarah is bound up in her son Solomon." — *Town Records*.

Child of Solomon and Sarah Driver was : —

21. **SOLOMON DRIVER**⁴, born about 1694; died before Nov. 30, 1747; md. first, Rachel Bishop; md. second, Jehoidan Haskell (see Family No. IX.)

FOURTH GENERATION.

FAMILY VII.

THOMAS DRIVER ⁴ (No. 18), son of William ³ (ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Mary (Glover) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., March 24, 1686-7 (Town Records; also Family Bible); died —; md. Jan. 1, 1712, Mary Ingalls, daughter of his "friend and master Stephen Ingalls," and wife Dinah (Elson). She was born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 6, 1691; admitted to the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 21, 1728. Thomas also was a member of this church, where, Dec. 9, 1711, together with his brother Michael Driver, he was baptized.

He served an apprenticeship at the tailor's trade with Stephen Ingalls, which occupation, on attaining his majority, he abandoned for that of a sailor. At twenty-two years of age, July 29, 1708, being about to make his first voyage he "appoints his friend and master Stephen Ingalls his attorney to collect his debts, deeds &c. during his absence." How many voyages he made, was not ascertained, nor how long he followed the sea; but after he settled down at home, he received an appointment from the town as bell-ringer.

This person was a "notable and useful individual to the town, for he was a general waiter on the City Magistrates, keeping the room in which they assembled in order, placed the chairs in their proper positions, and rang the bell at the hour for coming together" (Mrs. Lamb's History of New York). This must have been somewhat the work of Thomas Driver, for on the Session Records is found his account, "for Tolling the Bell and attendance on y^e Superior Court," for which he received from the County Treasurer forty shillings.

No administration or settlement of his estate is on record, nor any notice of his death.

Children of Thomas and Mary (Ingalls) Driver, baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., in which town they were born, were:

22. THOMAS DRIVER ⁵, born Oct. 6, 1713; bapt. Oct. 18, 1713.
23. STEPHEN DRIVER ⁵, bapt. March 25, 1716; died in 1748; md. Susanna Pope (see Family, No. X.).
24. MARY DRIVER ⁵, bapt. Oct. 19, 1718; md. May 3, 1737, William Murray, son of William Murray; he bapt. in First Church, Salem, Feb. 7, 1696. They had one son, THOMAS ⁶, bapt. April 23, 1738.

25. MARGARET DRIVER⁶, bapt. Dec. 23, 1722; d. young.
 26. MARGARET DRIVER⁶, bapt. Feb. 7, 1724-5; died Dec., 1764; "owned the covenant in the First Church, Salem, Mass., Jan. 20, 1753; md. Nov. 2, 1749, Thomas Phippen, son of Nathaniel and Margaret (Palfrey) Phippen, he bapt. in the First Church, Salem, Jan. 13, 1730-1; died about 1793.

Thomas Phippen's great-grandfather was Gen. David Phippen, the emigrant, born in Devon, Eng., whose father was Robert Fitzpen, and his mother Cecilie Jordan, dau. of Thomas Jordan, of Dorset, Eng. They had four children, of whom David was the second son; the first son being Owen Fitzpen, a great traveller, who with ten others was taken captive by sixty-five Turks in Algiers, against whom they all fought, gaining their liberty. They reached Carthage, where the Spanish king offered Owen Fitzpen a high position in his kingdom if he would become a papist, which he refused. He lived to return to England, and there died.

Gen. David Phippen came to New England, and first settled in Hingham, Mass., where, in 1635, he married Anne Ager Cromwell, dau. of Thomas Cromwell, and grand-dau. of Giles Cromwell, of Newbury; he subsequently removed to Falmouth, where he owned an extensive tract of land, running six miles inland on the Penobscot River; also a mill at Casco Bay. He was treacherously killed in the Indian war, Aug. 10, 1703, while accompanying a flag of truce inside the fort at Falmouth. After his death his family removed to Salem, Mass. Thomas's grandfather was Joseph Phippen, whose second son, Nathaniel, married Margaret Palfrey, June 29, 1710, and had children, Nathaniel, David, Abigail, Israel, Anstis, Lydia, and Thomas, who married Margaret Driver aforesaid.

Descendants of the fourteenth generation were living in Salem, Mass., in 1885 (Phippen Genealogy).

Children of **Thomas** and **Margaret (Driver) Phippen** were:

- (a) THOMAS PHIPPEN⁶, bapt. March 1, 1751-2; died Dec. 22, 1839; md. Dec. 27, 1774, Rebecca Wellman, dau. of Timothy and Mary (Henderson) Wellman, born Oct. 3, 1735, and sister to Hannah Wellman, who married Benjamin Driver No. 46. (See Appendix, Wellman Family, No. 16.)
 (b) WILLIAM PHIPPEN⁶, born Feb. 27, 1752; md. Lois Hitching, who had a son George, a Baptist minister, and a son Thomas, who married Sarah Lufkin. The descendants of George live in New York and Connecticut; and of son Thomas in Boston and its vicinity.
 (c) JAMES PHIPPEN⁶, bapt. April 21, 1754; died young.

(d) JAMES PHIPPEN⁶, bapt. April 13, 1760; drowned when a lad.

(e) A child, bapt. April 17, 1763.

Thomas Phippen married second, April 12, 1766, Sarah Smith, a widow, probably of John Smith, who, Aug. 7, 1755, married Sarah Ingalls; hence her maiden name was Sarah Ingalls. She was for many years blind. They had one child, namely:—

(f) OLIVE PHIPPEN⁶, bapt. April 19, 1767; md. March 27, 1790, Isaac Perkins.

March 25, 1765, Thomas Phippen was living in Ward 1, Salem, Mass., when he sold to David Phippen his mansion-house bounded W. on Louder's Lane.

Dec. 17, 1793, Sarah Phippen, widow, sold land in Marblehead, called "Ingalls Farm," to Samuel Sewall, of Marblehead (Phippen Genealogy).

27. HANNAH DRIVER⁵, bapt. Oct. 29, 1727.

28. ANNA DRIVER⁵, bapt. Oct. 19, 1729.

FOURTH GENERATION.

FAMILY VIII.

Capt. MICHAEL DRIVER⁴, (No. 20), son of William³ (ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mary (Glover) Driver, master-mariner, born in Salem, Mass., July 13, 1691, where, Dec. 9, 1711, at adult age, he was baptized in the First Church, with his brother Thomas. He died July, 1729; md. Nov. 4, 1714, Sarah Gray, dau. of Robert and Sarah (Grover) Gray, she born in Salem, Aug. 22, 1695; bapt. as his wife in the First Church there, March 27, 1715. She was a descendant of Robert Gray, the emigrant, and his wife Elizabeth, who died in Salem, Mass., Jan. 23, 1661-2, having made his will Jan. 1, 1661, in which he mentions daughter Elizabeth Gray, sons Joseph and Robert, daughters Bethiah, Hannah, and Mary, servant Elizabeth Wicks. Gives Geo. Hodges a quadrant, a fore staffe, a gunther's scale, and a pair of compasses. Proved June 25, 1662. Inventory £608. 01. His widow Elizabeth married second, June 23, 1663, Nicholas Manning, son of Richard and Anstiss (Calley) Manning, who was born in St. Petrox Parish, Dartmouth, Eng., June 23, 1644.

Capt. Michael Driver died July, 1729, and his widow Sarah was published July 24, 1731, to Capt. Paul Mansfield, son of Paul and Sarah (Carter) Mansfield, he born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 2, 1693-4;

and from a fragment of writing on the margin of a leaf in the "Breeches Bible," he died at sea on board the brig "Bradford," March, 1762. Nothing further is known of him, but from a receipt of Capt. Michael Driver, son of the aforesaid Capt. Michael Driver, there must have been a son, Paul Mansfield, Jr., who shipped with Capt. Michael Driver, Jr., in 1759, on board the ship "Three Brothers," and according to that receipt received £5:10:00 for 5½ days' work, which will be given in its proper place.

Who was the mother of this son cannot be stated, as Paul Mansfield, Sr., was a widower when he married Sarah Driver, having married Elizabeth Stratton, a widow, Oct. 13, 1727; hence his mother could have been Elizabeth Stratton, or Mrs. Driver. He had a brother, William Mansfield, born Jan. 2, 1697, who married, Nov. 2, 1721, Hannah Bray, dau. of Daniel and Hannah (Brown) Bray, and had children, William, Paul, Daniel Bray, John, Hannah, and Susanna. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 10.) Hence the said Hannah (Bray) Mansfield was cousin to Benjamin Bray, who married Sarah, dau. of Capt. Michael Driver aforesaid.

May 28, 1759, Benjamin Ward, John Ives, Capt. Benjamin Herbert, and Daniel King were appointed a committee on the estate of Paul Mansfield to set off the widow's thirds, in which instrument the widow was named as the wife of Paul Mansfield, formerly wife of Michael Driver.

The balance of the estate was settled on her son, Michael Driver, and her daughter, Elizabeth Driver, then wife of John Bray, the latter paying to her sister Sarah, then wife of John Webb, £33:6:8.

May 6, 1718:—Michael Driver and Samuel Gray, gunsmith, bought of Elizabeth Ashby, widow, 80 rods of land bounded W. on the homestead of Jonathan Glover; N. on Epes Lane (now Church Street, Salem); E. on Prison Street, or lane (now St. Peters Street). S. partly on land of Samuel Beadle, deceased, and Capt. Habakkuk Gardner, "which land has fallen to me, I am y^e only surviving child, heir of Elizabeth Gray, alias Elizabeth Priest, deceased, and part of it conveyed to me by deed of gift by my aforesaid mother, father Priest joining in."

Elizabeth Ashby was the widow of Benjamin Ashby, to whom she was married Oct. 27, 1700; she was the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Gray) Priest, being baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., August, 1680. Her mother was the daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Gray, hence sister to the mother of Sarah Gray, wife of Capt. Michael Driver. She was baptized in the same First Church, March 9, 1662.

Feb. 3, 1727:—Michael Driver and his wife Sarah, for £37:10, deed to Samuel Gray (her brother) one quarter of the homestead "which was our

father Robert Gray's, given to said Sarah in his last will ;" bounded N. on Benjamin Beadle ; E. on a lane ; S. and W. on Habakkuk Gardner.

The following deed shows that Sarah Driver, alias Gray, was a sister of John, Samuel, and Benjamin Gray, all of whom were children of Robert and Elizabeth Gray :—

"Driver & Gray.

To all people to whom these presents shall come Greeting.

Know y^e That Jn^o Gray, gunsmith, Sam^l Gray, gunsmith, Benjamin Gray, gunsmith, & Sarah Driver, widow, all of Salem, in y^e County of Essex, Great Grand Children of Edm^d Grover, late of Beverly in the county of Essex, Cordwainer, Dec^d., & Grand Children of John Grover, the first or Sen^r, late of Beverly above s^d, Husbandman Dec^d — For and in consideration of the sum of sixty five shillings in Provincial Bills of credit to us in hand well & truly paid before the Ensealing hereof by Will^m Grover of Beverly in the county of Essex, Cordwainer, alias husbandman, the Receipt Whereof we Do hereby acknowledge and our Selves Herewith fully Satisfied & Contented & Hereof & of Every part and parcel thereof Do Exonerate Acquit & Discharge Him the s^d William Grover his heirs Ex^{ts} & Adm^{rs} for Ever by these presents Have given Granted bargained sold aliened Conveyed & Confirmed & Quite Claimed and by these presents Do freely fully & absolutely Give Grant bargain Sett aliene Convey and Confirm & Quit Claim unto the s^d W^m Grover his Heirs & assigns for Ever all our Right, Shares, part, proportion, Dividend, Inheretance, Claime, Challenge or Demand which we now have or Ought to Have in Time to Come may have of or unto our Great Grandfather Edmond Grover above s^d Right or Rights In the Common Lands in the Towne of Beverly above s^d as also unto our Grand father John Grover Sen^r Right or Rights in the Common Lands in Beverly Above said. To Have & To Hold . . . in Wittness whereof we have hereunto set our Hands & Seals in Salem the fourth Day of April in y^e second year of his Majesties Reign George the Second by the Grace of God of Great Brittain France & Ireland King Defender of the Faith.

Anno Domini 1729

Signed Sealed & D^d in
presence of us ELIZ^d GEDNEY
HANNAH MARSTON

}

JOHN GRAY & a seal
SAMUEL GRAY & a seal
BENJ. GRAY & a seal
SARAH DRIVER & a seal

Mem^o These Two Witnesses
are to Jn^o Grays executing this

Instrument 4 November 1729, Hannah Marston — Eliz^d Davis "

June 15, 1760 :— Michael Driver was witness to a deed of Nathaniel Archer and wife Hannah (Ives) to Paul Mansfield, Jr.

Nov. 17, 1770 :— Michael Driver was a witness to a deed of Samuel Archer and wife Mary to Nathaniel Archer.

Children of **Capt. Michael** and **Sarah (Gray) Driver**, all born in Salem, Mass., and there baptized, were :—

29. MICHAEL DRIVER⁵, bapt. July 7, 1723; died young.
30. SARAH DRIVER⁶, bapt. July 5, 1724; died before 1801; md., first, July 11, 1746, Benjamin Bray, son of Benjamin and Hannah (Lander) Bray, who died a few years after his marriage, and she married second, as his second wife, John (Phippen) Webb, son of John and Elizabeth (Phippen) Webb; his first wife having been Ammi Swasey (see Appendix, Webb Family Continued, No. 11); he bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 10, 1712; died in Boston, Mass., in 1779.

Children by her first marriage were:—

- (a) SARAH BRAY⁸, bapt. Oct. 9, 1748; died in Beverly, Mass., Sept. 27, 1782; md. March 20, 1766, Robert Hale Ives, son of Capt. Benjamin and Elizabeth (Hale) Ives, he born in Beverly, Mass., July 18, 1744; died at sea Oct. 19, 1773. They had four children; viz.:—
- (1) ELIZABETH IVES⁷, born in Beverly, Mass., Dec. 15, 1767; died Jan. 18, 1801; md. Nov. 10, 1797, Thomas Bancroft.
 - (2) THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁷, born in Beverly, Mass., April 9, 1769; removed to Providence, R. I., where he died April 30, 1835; md. March 16, 1792, Hope Brown.
 - (3) CHARLOTTE IVES⁷, bapt. in Beverly, Mass., April 27, 1771; died March 31, 1789.
 - (4) ROBERT HALE IVES⁷, bapt. in Beverly, Mass., April 4, 1773; died in Lisbon, Portugal, June 4, 1795.

(See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 22, and Bray Family, No. 15.)

Children by her second marriage were:—

- (b) WILLIAM WEBB⁶, bapt. Sept. 17, 1758.
- (c) ELIZABETH WEBB⁶, bapt. Feb. 3, 1760.
- (d) ABIGAIL WEBB⁶, bapt. Aug. 2, 1761; and perhaps others.

John Webb at the time of his second marriage had two children, — John Webb, bapt. Oct. 9, 1743, and Ammi Webb, bapt. Aug. 3, 1746.

31. MICHAEL DRIVER⁶, born July 29, 1726; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 28, 1785 (Salem Gazette); published Dec. 8, 1753, to Sarah Bray. (See Family XI.)
32. ELIZABETH DRIVER⁶, bapt. in the First Church Jan. 11, 1727; died about 1778; md. April 18, 1750, John Bray, son of Benjamin and Hannah (Lander) Bray; he born about 1724; died Nov. 19, 1803. This was the third marriage between the families of Capt. Michael Driver and Benjamin Bray; for Sarah Driver, dau. of Capt. Michael Driver, married Benjamin Bray, son of Benjamin Bray, and her sister, Elizabeth Driver, married his brother, John Bray, and their brother, Michael Driver married their sister, Sarah Bray. The only remaining child of Benjamin Bray, Hannah, married Thomas Poynton. (See Appendix, Bray Family.)

Elizabeth and John Bray had nine children, all baptized in the Tabernacle Church (Baptist), Salem, Mass.; namely:—

- (a) JOHN BRAY⁶, bapt. June 2, 1751.
- (b) ROBERT BRAY⁶, bapt. Dec. 22, 1751; d. y.
- (c) BENJAMIN BRAY⁶, bapt. July 28, 1754; d. y.

- (d) HANNAH BRAY⁶, bapt. Jan. 28, 1759; md. Capt. Benjamin Webb (see Appendix, Webb Family, No. 22).
- (e) ROBERT BRAY⁶, bapt. Nov. 16, 1760.
- (f) ELIZABETH BRAY⁶, bapt. June 12, 1763.
- (g) THOMAS POYNTON BRAY⁶, bapt. Sept. 20, 1764.
- (h) BENJAMIN BRAY⁶, bapt. June 14, 1767.
- (i) DANIEL BRAY⁶, bapt. Oct. 12, 1769; died Nov. 30, 1849 (see Appendix, Bray Family, No. 17).

The pastor of the East Church (Unitarian) of Salem, Mass., at this date was Rev. William Bentley, born in Boston June 22, 1759, settled at Salem, East Church, in 1783, and there continued until his death, Dec. 29, 1819. His capacity for work was wonderful. Besides preparing two written sermons a week, he found time to write sixty books on theology, astronomy, geology, and other sciences, and to learn twenty-one languages. He also found time to correspond with scholars in Syria and Barbary, and other foreign places, and also to write regularly for the "Essex Gazette" and "Salem Register." He visited his flock often, buried all their dead, married all who desired it, and with it all kept a diary concerning their affairs, in which he entered an account of anything of interest that occurred among them daily. This diary is now (1886) to be found in the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., in which briefly he mentions the abovesaid John Bray as follows:

"A venerable man, died of a gradual infirmity; his parents died aged; his wife a Driver, long dead; long infirm, of the greatest industry, and most peaceful temper. A shoemaker, lived in Essex St., opposite Herbert St."

FOURTH GENERATION.

FAMILY IX.

SOLOMON DRIVER⁴ (No. 21), son of Salmon³ (ROBERT², ROBERT¹) and Sarah Driver, born in Lynn, Mass., about 1694; administration on his estate granted his widow, Jehoidan (she being his second wife), Nov. 30, 1747. He removed from Lynn to Gloucester, Mass., where till 1733-4 he was engaged in the fishing trade.

Oct. 17, 1718, when of Gloucester, he was published to Rachel Bishop, a miss of nineteen years. Their marriage is found recorded in Manchester, the next town. She was the daughter of John and Anna Bishop, of Manchester, Mass., where she was born Dec. 13,

1698, and died Sept. 21, 1732. They are both buried in the old Burial Ground in Manchester, Mass., where a gravestone marks only her grave; he, dying fifteen years after, is without a stone.

John Bishop, her father, had land in Gloucester bounds before and after 1700. He died in 1733, and his widow, Anna, administered on his estate, which was divided among his children as follows: John; Anne, alias Wallis; Rachel, alias Driver; to her heirs, she being dead; Lydia, alias Knowlton; Mary, alias Bear; Prudence, alias Webber.

Rachel Driver's heirs received £10:13:6½, besides her share in the real estate.

Solomon Driver married second Jan. 1, 1735, Jehoidan Haskell, of Manchester, Mass., who administered on his estate, Nov. 30, 1747. Inventory taken by John Foster and Jonathan Herrick, Dec. 5, 1747, amounting to £185:6:9.

Capt. John Lee, John Foster, Samuel Allen, Jr., Thomas and Benjamin Allen, were a committee to make a division of the estate. After the widow's dower had been set off, it was found that the balance of the estate would not admit of making an equitable division among the rest of the heirs; and it was agreed that Solomon, the eldest son, should pay to his sister Rachel, the eldest daughter, £13:5, and the same sum to the heirs of brother John and son William. John Osment was appointed guardian of John's children. William Driver, a lad nine years of age, makes choice of his mother, Jehoidan Driver, as his guardian, March 20, 1748.

"Manchester, Feb. 22, 1748-9;—Received of Jehodah driver Administrator to the Estate of her Late husband Solomon Driver deseced twenty shillings old tenor

pf SAM^l ALLEN JUN^r."

"In 1748, there were three kinds of bills; old tenor, which passed at seven and a half for one; that is seven shillings and sixpence in bills, was equal to one shilling lawful money; middle, or three fold tenor, and new tenor. . . . April 1, 1750, Province bills first issued in 1702, ceased to pass." — *Town Record*.

"December the 22^d 1748, Received of Mrs. Driver, the wife of M^r Solomon Driver of Manchester, Late Decesed y^e sum of nine pounds & twelve shillings in old tenoure Due to mee on acCompt, from s^d Driver's Estate. I say Received p^r mee
JAMES EVELETH."

"Manchester feb. 8, 1748-9.

Received of Jehoadan Driver administx to the Estate of her husband Solomon Driver Late of Manchester Dec^d y^e sum of twenty pounds old tenor, on acmpt^t of a Bond given to Leday Haskell. Isa Receiv^d per order by me

JOHN HASKELL."

"Manchester Dec. 1748.

Received of Johoadan Driver Administrax, the sum of fourty Eight Shillings old tenor Do from the Estate of Solomon Driver of Manchester Decyed Do in the year 1743

Received in full by me

JOHN FOSTER "

"Salem Feb^r 6, 1748

Rec^d of Mrs Driver Adm to the Estate of her late Husband Sol. Driver late of
 Manchester Deceas^d twelve pounds Old Tenor :

Rec^d by the hands of Will^m Day

of me EFES SARGENT.

£12:00:00 "

"1744 November:

M^r Solomon Driver is Dr. to Benj Gray To one Doz. Chairs £02:10:00 "

"April 24, 1749. — John & Rachel Herrick acknowledge the receipt of £13:5: of their father, Solomon Driver's estate." — *Probate Records*, Vol. XVI. p. 216.

Dec. 29, 1730. — Solomon Driver, while of Gloucester, Mass., with his wife Rachel sold to Ezekiel Woodward, three parcels of land containing six, eight, and ten acres respectively, located between Little River and Little Cove.

"March 17, 1734-5: — Solomon Driver was chosen hog reeve." — *Town Records*.

This local officer was more "primitive than the officer of Tithing-man or Petty Constable." Before there were keepers of the peace, there were keepers of swine, "which roamed tribal domains."

In New England the very first liberties specifically granted to towns were concerning the herding of cattle and swine. In the Colonial Records of Massachusetts we find resolutions like the following: —

"Every towne shall have liberty to make such orders aboute swine as they shall judge best for themselves." Towns were ordered to choose yearly "some one discreet person who shall bee called the hogreeve, who had power to seize all wild swine going without a keeper, without yoke of tethering line, or some means of restraint." — *New Eng. Gen. Register*.

"March, 1735-6. — Solomon Driver chosen tything man." — *Town Records*.

At this date a tything man was a parish officer, annually elected to keep good order in the church during divine service, which he accomplished by means of a long pole with a knob at one end, and a bunch of feathers or a squirrel's tail at the other end. With the knob he kept the dogs out of church and struck restless or bad children, oftentimes on the head, to bring them to order; and with the other end he tickled the faces of those asleep, causing them to again pay attention to the service, as continued sleeping in church was a crime; for on record is one Roger Scott, presented at Court, February, 1643, "for common sleeping at the public exercise upon the Lord's day, and for striking him that waked him." In December following, not having amended his conduct, he was sentenced by the Court to be "severely whipped" (Lewis). Again, Aug. 4, 1646, Mr. Thomas Dexter was presented at the Quarterly Court "for a common sleeper," in meeting for public worship, and "fined." Mr. Dexter was the richest man in Lyun, but

this was not the day of distinction ; evidently all were alike treated for a similar offence. Tythingmen also were to make complaint of any disorderly conduct on the Sabbath-day, and to enforce the observance of that day ; also to report any violation of the public order. In church their seat was the first from the door, so that they could well see the whole congregation, which they occupied only a short time, for as soon as the service began, they commenced to keep order and enforce silence by passing up and down the aisles, which in no way disturbed the people, and then to the galleries ranged on three sides of the church.

That the text, " And the evening and the morning were the first day," might be literally rendered, the Sabbath of this date commenced at sunset Saturday night, and ended at sunset Sunday night. Saturday night eight o'clock was the usual hour for retiring, nine o'clock other nights.

" July 4, 1737 : — Solomon Driver chose petit juror." — *Town Records*.

" March 12, 1738-9 : — Solomon Driver, chosen hayward, or hay warden."

A township officer, whose duty it was to impound stray cattle, and feed them, until redeemed by their owners.

" March 9, 1740-1 : — Solomon Driver chosen a second time as tything man." — *Manchester Records*.

Children of **Solomon and Rachel (Bishop) Driver** were : —

33. **RACHEL DRIVER** ⁶, born in Gloucester, Mass., June 23, 1719 ; published Oct. 21, 1744, to John Herrick, son of Robert and Mary (Edwards) Herrick, to whom she was married Nov. 30, 1744. He born in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 7, 1723 ; removed with his parents in 1725 to Manchester, Mass. In 1751 he removed to Canterbury, Mass., his father accompanying him, and probably Rachel, where she died, for no record of death is to be found in Manchester, Mass. After her death he married, second, Elizabeth Smith, of Canterbury, Mass.

Children by **Rachel** were : —

- (a) **ROBERT HERRICK** ⁶, bapt. in First Church of Manchester, April 20, 1746 ; died young.
- (b) **RACHEL HERRICK** ⁶, bapt. same place, April 12, 1747 ; died young.
- (c) **MARY HERRICK** ⁶, bapt. same place, April 17, 1748.
- (d) **JOHN HERRICK** ⁶, bapt. same place, Feb. 10, 1750 ; md. Mary Butts, of Canterbury, Mass., and had Calvin and Rachel.

Children by **Elizabeth** were : —

- (e) **ROBERT HERRICK** ⁶, born in Canterbury, Mass. — : —
- (f) **DANIEL HERRICK** ⁶, " " " " —
- (g) **ELIJAH HERRICK** ⁶, " " " " —
- (h) **JOSEPH HERRICK** ⁶, " " " " —
- (i) **MARY HERRICK** ⁶, " " " " —

(j) ANN HERRICK⁶, born in Canterbury, Mass. —(k) RUTH HERRICK⁶, " " " " —

(See Appendix, Herrick Family, No. 57.)

34. SOLOMON DRIVER⁵, born in Gloucester, Mass., Oct. 27, 1720; died about 1763; published Dec. 11, 1742, to Hannah Allen. (See Family XII.)35. JOHN DRIVER⁵, born in Gloucester, Mass., Nov. 8, 1722; killed by Indians, Nov., 1743; master-mariner; md. Anna Osment. (See Family XIII.)36. MARY DRIVER⁵, born May 7, 1728; died young.Child of **Solomon and Jehoidan (Haskell) Driver** was:—37. WILLIAM DRIVER⁵, born March 28, 1738; lived in Manchester, Mass.; published Jan. 1, 1754, to Martha Masters, of Beverly, Mass. No issue.

FIFTH GENERATION.

FAMILY X.

STEPHEN DRIVER⁵ (No. 22), son of Thomas⁴ (WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mary (Ingalls) Driver, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 25, 1716; died in 1748-9; md. Feb. 21, 1736-7, Susanna Pope, of Boston, Mass., a Quakeress, who subsequently became a member of the First Church of Salem, Mass., until 1745, when they united with the Episcopal Church of Salem, worshipping at St. Peter's Church there. Administration on the estate of Stephen Driver was granted his widow, Susanna, Feb. 20, 1748-9, inventory being £107 : 18 : 2½.

Jan. 29, 1749-50, Susanna Driver, alias Porter, represented her husband's estate as insolvent. Hence within a year of the death of Stephen Driver his widow must have married a man named Porter, but no record of that marriage was attainable.

Dec. 10, 1737, Stephen and Susanna Driver, with several others, witnessed the marriage of Joseph Basset, a Quaker, to Eunice, dau. of Isaac Hacker, of Salem, also Quakers.

"Salem, April, 1748.

Stephen Driver	Dr.
	£
to making Stephen Higgon a pr of Breeches . .	1 : 00 : 00
to Butons 8/. Buckram & osmbrigs 4/6	0 : 12 : 6
to thread & silk 8/. mohear 3/6	0 : 11 : 6
to making Thomas Brite a sute	10 : 00 : 0
to silk for y ^e Jacket 7/6 — Jacket Buttons 9	0 : 16 : 0
to Woding 5/.	0 : 05 : 0
for milk in the year 1748	9 : 17 : 6
	23 : 13 : 0

pr me EPHRAIM INGALLS."

"Stephen Driver to Ebenezer Storer, Boston, Dr.
To Sundries £721:19:6
Dec. 6, 1748."

(The "sundries" indicated dry goods, without specification.)

Children of **Stephen and Susanna (Pope) Driver** were: —

38. SUSANNA DRIVER ⁶, bapt. First Church, Salem, Mass., Feb. 11, 1738; d. young.
39. MARY DRIVER ⁶, bapt. First Church, Salem, Mass., July 27, 1740.
40. STEPHEN DRIVER ⁶, bapt. First Church, Salem, Mass., Dec. 20, 1741; md. first, Hannah —; md. second, Elizabeth Lawrence. (See Family XIV.)
41. SUSANNA DRIVER ⁶, bapt. First Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 16, 1743.
42. MARTHA DRIVER ⁶, bapt. First Church, Salem, Mass., Dec. 2, 1744; d. young.
43. MARTHA DRIVER ⁶, bapt. St. Peter's Church, Salem, Mass., June 8, 1746.
44. THOMAS DRIVER ⁶, bapt. St. Peter's Church, Salem, Mass., July 17, 1748; d. young.

FIFTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XI.

Capt. MICHAEL DRIVER ⁵ (No. 31), son of Capt. Michael ⁴ (WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Sarah (Gray) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., July 29, 1726; bapt. there in the First Church, July 31, 1726; died there Thursday, Aug. 25, 1785 ("Salem Gazette," issue of Aug. 30, 1785); master-mariner; great-grandfather of the compiler.

He was published Dec. 8, 1753, to Sarah Bray, dau. of Benjamin and Hannah (Lander) Bray. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 19.) She born in Salem, Mass., July 6, 1727; died between 1815 and 1817, concerning which there is a difference of opinion, as one grandchild stated that grandmother was 90 years old at her death, while another stated that she was 94. Be that as it may, she lived to a great age; and the compiler's mother, a grandchild born in 1810, states that she was so small when her grandmother died that her eldest sister Ruth was sent to take her in her arms out of bed to see grandmother die, and she was so held till the old lady breathed her last, being considered too small to be placed on the floor, on account of the height of the high post bedstead of that date, which required a pair of bed-steps to get into it, and the high

feather bed on which grandmother lay ; yet she was old enough to remember what her grandmother did and said, how she looked, and where she sat always on the bench in the chimney corner to be near the fire.

Sarah (Bray) Driver, the abovesaid, was sister to Hannah (Bray) Poynton, known in the family from generation to generation as "Aunt Poynton," who in her will excluded the Driver family, as shown in the Appendix, under Bray Family, — principally, no doubt, on account of the Drivers being Federalists ; while Aunt Poynton, having married an Englishman, was a Tory, and kept her chimneys whitewashed, — the Tory mark of that time.

The house of Capt. Michael Driver was about opposite that of Aunt Poynton, which his widow occupied with her children for some time after his death, up to which time they must have been good friends, as Capt. Driver at his death held a note of Mrs. Poynton's. In course of events Mrs. Capt. Driver sold her house and became a member of the family of her youngest son, Stephen, Jr., — a rank Federalist. His house was at the head of Broad Street, next to the Great Pasture, — a long distance from the house of Aunt Poynton ; this, and the difference in sentiment, made a breach between the two families which time served to widen rather than heal, till at last they were not even on speaking terms, — naturally the estate was left to others more remote.

Capt. Driver and wife both were members of the Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass. (Baptist), where all their children were baptized. As far as now known, all remained in that persuasion but Stephen, Jr., who became a Unitarian, and so continued till his death ; so also his wife and eldest daughter, Ruth ; but his other children, Thomas, Joseph, and Harriot, became Baptists, and Stephen, George, and Catherine Congregationalists, while William and Henry attended the Episcopal Church.

Dec. 6, 1710, Michael Driver witnessed a deed from Judah Masury to Joshua Mackmillian, of Salem, Mass. At this date he was but nineteen years of age, — very young to serve as a witness.

"Salem, Mass., June 1, 1758 ; — Rec^d of Rich^d Derby the sum of one Hundred and Twenty-six Pounds 10^s. Old Ten^r in full for 7 months Pay in the Salisbury.

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"Dec. 8, 1759, Michael Driver bought of John Bray and wife Elizabeth" (sister of said Michael), a small parcel of land, it being a part of the homestead late their father Michael Driver's estate, which was set off to said Bray and his wife as their right.

March 25, 1766, Michael Driver became a member of the Salem Marine Society, which was formed "for the purpose of raising a fund wherewith to relieve such of their Members as thro' Misfortune at Sea, or otherwise, or by Reason of old Age or Sickness, stand in Need of Relief, & the necessitous Families of deceased members ; also to communicate in Writing, to be lodged with the Society, the Observations they make at Sea by any Matters which may render Navigation, particularly on this Coast, easier & safer."

The original members, all sea-captains, were eighteen, Michael Driver being the sixth on the list, which is as follows : —

"Thomas Eden	John Hathorne
John Ropes	Larkin Dodge
Samuel Webb	William Bartlett
William Lilly	Joseph Lambert
Amos Mansfield	Benj. West
Michael Driver	Edmund Giles
Israel Obear	William Slewman
Edmund Needham	Samuel Williams
Robert Hale Ives	Israel Lovett "

Laws of the Marine Society, Salem, Mass.

On page 112 it is stated that "Capt. Michael Driver must have been a man of energy and means, as subsequently the Society held his bond and note in 1768 for £60, to settlement, 1787, with interest, amounting to £75, he having died Aug. 1785. His widow on the list of beneficiaries, 1788."

July 24, 1783 ; — Michael Driver, cordwainer, and wife, Sarah, sold to William Northey "one right in the great pasture, formerly belonging to my father Michael Driver.

BENJAMIN DRIVER } Wit."
PAUL DRIVER }

Aug. 20, 1785, he made his will as follows : —

Will of Michael Driver.

"I Michael Driver of Salem, in the county of Essex, Mariner, do make this my last Will and Testament.

I give to my Wife Sarah, the whole of my Estate Real and personal ; in trust nevertheless, and to the uses and subject to the Limitations herein after mentioned that is to say for the payment of all my just Debts and funeral charges ; And the Remainder thereof to the use of said Sarah, for her Support during her natural Life & for the bringing up such of my children as are under twenty-one years of age at my Death.

And I hereby give full power and authority to my Executor hereinafter named to sell and dispose absolutely the whole of my Estate, real as well as personal, or any part thereof if they shall judge the same to be necessary for the purposes aforesaid (if any there be) at the time of the Death of Sarah my Wife.

My will is that the same as may be after the said's decease shall be equally distributed to my children, Hannah the wife of Thomas Barnes, Benjamin, Paul, Thomas, Sarah and Stephen, their Representatives, Heirs & Assignes. And

I appoint Sarah my Wife and my son Benjamin Executors of this my last Will & Testament made under my hand and Seal

Signed Sealed published & declared by said Michael the Testator to be his last Will & Testament in presence of us

BENJAMIN OSGOOD

JACOB BACON

BENJAMIN OSGOOD JR.

MICHAEL DRIVER"

Probated Dec. 8, 1785. The widow Sarah and Benjamin giving bonds in \$600, with Jacob Bacon, physician, and William Chandler, tailor.

His signature was largely and plainly written, but the letters are all scolloped, as though his hand trembled greatly.

Deeds, Vol. VIII.,

p. 83. Nov. 16, 1795 : — Sarah, widow of Capt. Michael Driver,

deeds one fifth of the Bray Estate to Benjamin Henderson, for which she received £8 : 8d.

Driver and Bray Deed.

" Know all men by these presents that we John Bray of Salem in the County of Essex, cordwainer, for one undivided fifth part Daniel Bray of said Salem, yeoman, & Mary his wife for another fifth part, Hannah Poynton, of said Salem, widow, for another fifth part, Sarah Driver of s^d Salem, widow, for another fifth part, and Thomas Ives of Providence, in the state of Rhode Island, Merchant, for one tenth part, and Elizabeth Ives of Salem, singlewoman, for the other tenth part. In consideration of forty two pounds lawful money to them paid by Benjamin Henderson of Salem aforesaid, Mariner, viz. eight pounds, eight shillings to the said John Bray, eight pounds, eight shillings to the said Hannah Poynton, eight pounds, eight shillings to the said Sarah Driver, four pounds four shillings to the said Thomas Ives, four pounds four shillings to the said Elizabeth Ives, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge give grant sell and convey unto the said Benjamin Henderson his heirs and assigns their fifth parts & the s^d Thomas and Elizabeth their tenth parts, and all the right estate and interest of the said John Bray, Daniel Bray & Mary his wife, Hannah Poynton, Sarah Driver & Thomas Ives & Elizabeth Ives of and in that part of the real estate in Said Salem, late of Benjamin Bray late of said Salem, mariner, deceased, & whereof he died seized, namely a certain piece of land situated in said Salem containing ten & a half poles, be the same more or less and is bounded as follows : northerly on Browne street there measuring forty feet three inches ; — easterly on land of Daniel Bray, sixty seven feet seven inches : — southerly on land of Capt. John Gardner forty two feet, and westerly on land of William Luscomb, sixty nine feet two inches, with the privileges and appurtenances thereof. To have and to hold the same to the said Benjamin Henderson & his heirs and assigns that we are lawfully seized in fee of the premises, that they are free of all incumbrances that we have good right to sell and convey the same to the said Benjamin Henderson, and that we will warrant and defend the same to the said Benjamin Henderson and his heirs and assigns forever against the said John Bray, Daniel Bray & Mary his wife, Hannah Poynton,

Sarah Driver, Thomas Ives & Elizabeth Ives do hereat put their hands & scales the 14th day of November Anno domini 1795

Signed sealed & delivered
in presence of us
DANIEL BRAY
BROADST PARKER

JOHN BRAY & a seal
DANIEL BRAY & a seal
MARY BRAY & a seal
HANNAH POYNTON & a seal
her
SARAH + DRIVER & a seal
mark
ELIZABETH IVES in behalf } & a seal
of THOMAS IVES
ELIZ^A IVES & a seal

Essex Ss. Salem, November the 16th A. D. 1795.

Then the within named John Bray, Daniel Bray, Hannah Poynton, and the above named Sarah Driver and Elizabeth Ives, personally appeared and acknowledged the within written Instrument to be their free act & deed
before me

RICHARD MANNING Justice of the Peace

Essex Ss. Rec^d Dec^r 23, 1795 & recorded & examined by

JOHN PICKERING Reg^t."

Capt. Michael Driver was a master-mariner, bold and adventurous, in the days when all vessels were in danger of being seized on the high seas by privateersmen, as prizes, wherever found. Many of these prizes were never heard from, being confiscated, and the men thrown into English prisons, and prison ships, from which escape was rare, and the suffering most terrible; hence captains of vessels did everything to avoid being seized, particularly Capt. Driver, for tradition tells that his father was at some date seized with his vessel, thrown into the Old Mill prison at Plymouth, Eng., and his vessel burned; but if so, for a certainty will never be known, for those who could confirm the account are dead, and all Capt. Driver's papers are lost, having been collected many years ago by his grandson, Rev. Thomas Driver, No. 76, for a history of the family, which, for some reason unknown to all now living, was never produced.

Capt. Driver sailed in the employ, at one time, of Capt. Richard Derby, whose papers after his death were sold at auction, and Mr. Matthew Adams Stickney, of Salem, Mass., became the purchaser of the following ones pertaining to a few voyages of Capt. Driver, which the compiler purchased of Mr. Stickney, and herein gives them in full, without change of any kind.

SUR

"ST. EUSTATIA, December the 31, 1761.

having another opportunity to write to let you know how affairs are with me.

I arrived in 19 Days and Capt. Elkins in 20 Days. I have sold about 20 hhd. at 6 peases. But here is Two or three sail arived since with fish so Capt. Elkins will go to windward.

I Beleav Capt. Samuel Masurey is at St. Christophers. Capt. Abst is not arived. this my second By way of Boston

Sur

Your humble Sevt.

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"Invoice of Sundry Merchandize shipt by Richard Derby on his own acct & Risque on board the schr Three Brothers, Michael Driver, Master, bound to Eustasia & consigned to s^d Driver for Sales & Returns.

	£
To 23 Q ^r Casks of Vidoma Wines @ £40	920
To 60 bar ^d Mackrel @ £6 : 10 ^p	320
To 70 Cask Raisins @ £11 : 00	770
To 80 Casks of Oyle @ 7	560
To 80 Q ^{us} Mech. Cod @ £6 : 5	500
To 40 ^m Shingles @ 80/ ^p	160
To 1400 Hoops @ 50/	35
To 11 ^c 1 Pot Iron @ £8	90

£3425

Reduced to Lawful Money is 475 : 13 : 4

"A true Acct of Goods on board the schr Three Brothers on acct of me

	£
Thirty five & ag ^r Q ^{us} of Codfish £5 : 5	175 : 1 : 3
Seven Casks & ten Jarrs of Raisins @ 12 & 5	134 : 0 : 0
Two Hh ^{ds} of Wine @ £60	120 : 0 : 0
One & a half bar ^d Mackrell @ £8	12 : 0 : 0

341 : 1 : 3

To Comissions on above £5 ^p ct.	17 : 0 : 0
Insurance 20 ^p ct.	71 : 6 : 0
To freight of above Goods	126 : 0 : 0

£555 : 7 : 3

The above acct is in old Ten^r w^a reduced into sterling at 10 for one . £55 : 10 : 9

^p ^m MICHAEL DRIVER

Dec. 12, 1759."

The "Three Brothers," was a schooner of fifty-five tons burden, about the usual size of a vessel at this date when speed was necessary, owned by Mr. Richard Derby, owner of many vessels, which went out laden with fish, lumber, and provisions, and returned with sugar, molasses, rum, oil, and salt, as did the "Three Brothers," as will be shown.

This was the time of the French war, and vessels usually carried eight or more cannon. It is to be hoped that Capt. Driver was thus prepared to meet privateers, for on his homeward pas-

sage he was chased by an English one, called the "King of Prussia," the account of which is given in his own words, taken from his own lips, under oath, recorded on the Notarial Records of Salem, as follows:—

Michael Driver's Deposition.

"Michael Driver on Oath declares as followeth, I was master of the schooner 'Three Brothers,' of abt Fifty five Tons burthen and own'd by Rich^d Derby of Salem Merch^t laden with a valuable Cargo of Fish, Wine Oyle, Raisins & Lumber & haveing with me a Mate & three Mariners, on Saturday the 28th Day of July A. D. 1759 on our voyage from St. Eustasia to Leeward we were chased by an English Privateer Schooner called the King of Prussia, Commanded by Capt. James Snellock, owned as we understood by John Smith and others all of Antegua.

As soon as the Privateer came near Enough she fired upon us and gave us nine shot in all; and some passed between our masts, and others very near. I hoisted an English Ensign at the first shot, & struck at the ninth. Upon striking the Privateer hailed us and ordered myself and Boat on board immediately.

I took two men and went on board the Privateer. Capt. Snellock kept us there & ordered his Lieutenant and some of his men to go on board of our Schooner then called the Prize. Sometime after this I was suffered to return to my Schooner and found the Privateers men had taken into their Possession a quantity of fish and had taken my Trunk and Chest, (the Keys of wh^{ch} They demanded and had), seven hundred & ninety seven pieces of Eight" (a piece of money then in use, of the value of \$8.00), "and carried them away; then a Prize master was put on board us & we were to go to Tortola; but on Sunday we were ordered to Spanish Town & there to wait until the Privateer came; upon which it was asked why we might not go to Tortola, it being the first Port.

Capt. Snellock answered with an oath that he would send us to Antigua for there the schooner would be condemned he knew, and that if they would not condemn her then he swore he would condemn her himself.

On Wednesday the first of August, we arrived at Spanish Town, where the Privateers men took out of our Schooner, Fish, Mackerel, Wine, Oyle and Raisins as much as they pleased.

On Fryday the Lieut. came & ordered me to go in the Prize to Antigua. I desired that the men should go with me. I asked the Lieut. the Reason of all this piratical Conduct. He answered me that what he did was by his Captains Orders who must answer for it, and that he (the Lieut.) went according to his orders. We accordingly proceeded on Sunday for Antigua with the Prize;—arrived there the Tenth of Aug^t.—I was kept on board three Days against my Will & express Desire, and no Boat was suffered to come along side of the Prize to speak with me.

When I was allowed to come on Shore I found the owners of the Privateer: Their Behaviour & Conduct was such that this together with the Cap-

tains Conduct and Behaviour to me before, fully convinced me that I should get nothing by tarrying there : so I left the Prize in their Hands and proceeded home to my owner.

MICHAEL DRIVER.

MASCOLL WILLIAMS, }
RUSSEL WYER, } Wit.

Essex Ss. Salem, Dec. the 8th 1759. Ebenr. Tozier deposes to the same."
(Supposed to have been the mate).

"Disbursted for the schooner three Brothers.

	£	s.	d.
pay ^d Benj ^m Brown one Days work	1	0	0
pay ^d for two pounds of Thrums [ends of Cotton web]	1	0	0
pay ^d for A Lanten	1	5	0
pay ^d Thomas Bright one Days work	1	0	0
pay ^d Paul Mansfield [his half-brother], 5½ Days work	5	10	0
pay ^d Samuel gail half Day work	0	10	0
pay ^d for 48 pounds Beef @ 2/♄	4	16	0
pay ^d Nath ^l Archer	3	2	0
	£18	3	0
Deduct Hospital Money	2	16	0
	£16	13	0

SALEM Feb. 1759,

then received y^e Within Contents by me

MICHAEL DRIVER."

It is not probable that Capt. Driver remained ashore over a year, but no record of any voyage made by him appears till 1761, when, being fifty-five years old, he became master of another schooner, owned by Richard Derby, the "Betsy," of about fifty tons burden, bound for Newfoundland, known by the following papers :—

"Invoice of Sundry merchandise Ship^t by Rich^d Derby on his owne ac^t & Rec^d on board the Sloop Betsy, Micall Driver Master Bound to Newfoundland & Consign^d to s^d Driver for Sailes & Returnes.

List.

4 Hogr ^d & 12 Bar ^l of Rum ♄ Invoice at 843 gal ^{lo} @ 18/—	1758 — 14
10 Bar ^{ls} of Sug ^r ♄ Invoice @ 26 — 3 — 16 @ 18£	484 — 1
3 D ^c of Bred as ♄ Invoice 11 — 10 — 14 @ 9£	100 — 2 — 6
To 37 Barrels of Pork — @ 21 £	777 — 0 — 0
To 3 Do of Beff — @ 18 £	54 — 0 — 0
To 19 Do of Pitch — @ 6.10/	123 — 10
To 15 Do of Tirpentine — @ 6	90 —
To 15 Do of Tar — @ 5£	175 —
To 6½ mo of Boards @ 16£	100 —
To 13¾ mo of Shingles @ 70/	48 — 2 — 6
To 323 Bus ^l of Corn @ 20/	323 —
To 22 Hogr ^d for the Corn & Bred @ 15/	49 — 10
To 4 Rum Hogs ^d @ 90/ 12 Rum Barrels @ 30/	36 —
	3342 — 5 — 0
To 4 B B ^r of Log ^s ♄ Invoice at 10.3.24	@ 18194 — 10
	3539 — 15 "

"SALEM, May 1761.

I acknowledge to have the above goods on board the sloop Betse & Promise to Be Accountable thereof According to orders this Day Receiv^d

§ Me MICHAEL DRIVER.

Coppy of Invoice

Voige to Newfoundland."

After leaving Newfoundland, where he seems to have arrived without any adventure, he proceeded to Guadaloupe with the "Betsey," and by a document found among his papers, it is learned that after leaving Guadaloupe he was chased by a French cruiser, captured, and sent back to that port, where an agreement was made to ransom his vessel and cargo, by paying 6,000 livres (one livre equal to one pound avd.), and a hostage to be left until the ransom was paid. Accordingly, William Adams, mate of the "Betsey," was left.

This method of releasing upon a compromise and a hostage is thought to have been rather an expected arrangement, as the document, by the color of the ink, appears to have been kept ready filled, with space left for the name of the vessel, sum to be paid, date, etc., which would be necessary to insert after an agreement had been made.

This agreement was in French, the translation thereof being:

"ADMIRALTY OF BORDEAUX,
PORT OF BORDEAUX.

"We the undersigned Andrew Fabre, Lieutenant Commandant of the King's ship, the 'Aigu'" (meaning sharp), "of Toulon, and Michael Driver, master of the schooner 'Betsey,' have agreed as follows, to wit: That I Andrew Fabre acknowledge to have captured the said schooner 'Betsey,' belonging to Richard Derby of Salem, about fifty tons, the 4th of the present month of April, 1762, in latitude 22:00 North, longitude 70:30 West, on her passage from Guadaloupe towards Salem, under the English flag, with English passport, with a Cargo of Sugar, Molasses, and Coffee, for account of Richard Derby, Merchant of Salem, which schooner I have agreed to release on condition of the payment of a ransom by said Michael Driver for the sum of six thousand livres, and as security of the payment of said ransom I have received into my possession as hostage William Adams of Salem from the crew of said schooner. Hereby praying all friends and allies to allow said schooner to pass in safety to said port of Salem without hindrance of any kind. That the said Michael Driver may deliver the said schooner and cargo to Richard Derby, owner thereof, who by his agent, Michael Driver, has voluntarily agreed to pay to me the sum of six thousand livres for security of the payment of which said William Adams is in my possession, promising not to violate the conditions of this obligation, which is done in duplicate, each

party to have one; which we have signed with the said William Adams, pilot, whom we have received as hostage.

Done on board the King's ship 'Aigu,' 4th day of April, 1762.

(Signed) FABRE."

In a pamphlet on the Marine Society of Salem, Mass., its history, etc., mention is made of Capt. Driver's adventures, and also states, that on his arrival at Salem, it was learned that a vessel of Newburyport, Mass., name not given, was placed in a similar situation as the "Betsey," and that a hostage for redemption had been left in the same place as the hostage from the "Betsey," of the name of Nicholas Hussey.

This vessel probably belonged to Capt. Lawrence Furlong, of Newburyport, for immediately Capt. Richard Derby communicated with him, and made arrangement to fit out the schooner "Mary" as a Flag of Truce, with all the necessary documents attending a Flag of Truce, and the funds necessary for the redemption of the two hostages. Capt. Michael Driver to command her. Consequently Capt. Driver received the following appointment.

"SALEM May 31st 1762.

Capt. MICHAEL DRIVER.

You being appointed Master of the Schooner Mary, as a Flag of Truce, you having your necessary Papers with you, we now order you to Embrace the first Good Opportunity of wind & weather & come to sale, & make the Best of your way for Cape Francois on the Island of Hispaniola & at your arrival there, we Order you to Apply to the Commander in chief there, for your Hostage Mr William Adams & for Capt. Lawrence Furlongs Hostage Mr Nicholas Hussey & if you can Obtain them, we Order you to Pay the money that Each of them went Hostage for, together with the Expence & Charges that have arisen or may arise by or for them, as you have money with you for that purpose. We order you to comply with your Flag in every Respect & Break no acts of Trade, neither Trade yourself or suffer any of your People under any Pretence whatsoever to Trade, Keep a Good Look out at Sea, Make all the dispatch that you Possibly can, we wish you a good Voyage & Commit you to the Care & Protection of the Almighty & are your Friends & Employers.

The Above is a True Copy of my Orders Rec^d this Day from Capt. Rich^d Derby, & Capt. Lawrence Furlong

(signed) MICHAEL DRIVER."

"SALEM, June 3^d 1762.

"Rec^d of Rich^d Derby Sixteen Hundred & Fifty Three Pieces of Eight to carry to Cape Francois, to Redeem M^r Will^m Adams & to pay the charges for him that hath Arisen, or may arise & have also Rec^d of Capt. Lawrence Furlong to redeem M^r Nicholas Hussey & Pay the charges

Twenty-Eight Hundred & Seventy one Pieces of Eight & have given a Rec^t for this Last sum to Cap^t Furlong

(signed) MICHAEL DRIVER."

On the reverse side is the following:—

"J^{no}. NUTTING Notary
and Tabellion Publick
duly admitted and sworn

Province of the Massachussets Bay
in N. England

ESSEX Ss. SALEM Sept 15, 1762

Dwelling in Salem in the Province afores^d do hereby certify that the copy within written is truly transcribed from the Original and carefully compared with the s^d Original shewn me by s^d Cap^t Rich^d Derby

In Testimonum Veritalis

J^{no} NUTTING
Not^o Pub."

"SALEM, June 2^d 1762

S:

I haveing no knowledge or Personal Acquaintance with you, but as I am Recommended to Apply to you for to Assist Cap^t Michael Driver for to Obtain his Hostage Mr W^m Adams & Cap^t Lawrence Furlongs Hostage Mr Nicholas Hussey; I have made bold to write to you, which Liberty Please to Excuse; I being unacquainted with the customs at Cape Francois, this is therefore to desire the favour of you to assist Cap^t Driver if he should meet with any Difficulty or want any assistance to Procure the Above named Hostages, or if he should want any more money than he hath with him. I should take it a very Great Favour if you would please to Honour his Draught as far as One Hundred Pounds Sterling (if he should have occasion to Draw—he may Draw on M^r Rich^d Smith at Philadelphia, at New York upon the Hon^{ble} Philip Livingston, at Rhode Island on Mess^{rs} Godfrey Malborne & Co. or at Salem on me), you may Depend on having his Draught duly paid with Honour & Thanks, but I hope he will not want any more money than he hath with him unless some unforeseen Accident should happen. The Reason of sending Only Money enough to pay the Ransom & settle such other Charges as I thought must of necessity arise is because of the Trouble that might arise upon meeting with a Privateer, as the Privateers take every Advantage of a Flag of Truce Especially if they find more money on Board than they think Sufficient to Redeem the Hostage & pay the Charges. Your favour herein will Greatly Oblige

Your Unknown Friend &

Humble Servant.

To M^r ROBERT MECARTY Merch^t
or M^r STEWART
of Cape Francois."

"SALEM June 3^d, 1762.

Capt^t MICHAEL DRIVER

If you should have occasion to draw for money if you can, I would have you draw on me, but if they do not care to take your Draught on me you

may draw on Mr Rich^d Smith of Philadelphia, or on the Hon. Philip Livingston at New York, or on Mess^{rs} Godfrey Malborne & Comp^{rs} at Rhode Island, which Draught^t shall be duly paid.

I have wrote to desire Mr Rob^t Mecarty as also Mr Stewart to Honour your Draught as far as one Hundred Pounds Sterling. If you draw for money write the gentlemen that you Draw so that upon the first Notice I will replace the Money with Honour and Thanks

I wish you a good Voyage an am

Y^r. FRIEND.

The above is a True Copy of Instructions Rec^d. this Day from Cap. Richard Derby

(signed) MICHAEL DRIVER."

Capt. Driver did not reach Cape Francois directly, for contrary to the laws of nations, an English privateer, "Revenge," James McDonald, master, captured him, and sent him to New Providence, Bahama Islands.

Here he made protest before the authorities, and was set at liberty with vessel and cargo. He pursued his voyage to Cape François, redeemed his hostages, and was ready to depart Sept. 6, 1762, but Monsieur Blanch, commanding a French frigate called "La Tigre," seized the "Mary," took out the hostages and crew, put them on board the frigate bound to St. Iago, Cuba. Here Capt. Driver was detained till December, when his vessel was returned.

Worn out and without food, he was obliged to go to Jamaica for repairs, known from the following letter:—

"JAMAICA ff These are to certify all whom it doth concern. That Michael Driver, Master or commander of the ship or vessel called the Mary of Salem Burthen Twenty Tons, or thereabouts, mounted with Guns, Navigated with Three Men, Built and bound for Salem, hath here loaded and taken on board Ballast. And these are to certify, that it appears by the Original Register now produced to Us, That the above Mentioned Vessel was Registered at Boston the Eighteenth day of June (2) 1762.

Given under our Hands and Seals of Office at Shingvton [Kingston?] in Jamaica, the fifteenth day of December 1762, in the Third year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lord George the Third, King of Great Britain, &c.

RICH^d. REYNELL
Coll^r "

Seal
of
Jamaica

When Capt. Driver arrived at Salem, his case was represented to the Colonial Government, and transmitted to Gov. Shirley at New Providence, with bill of costs; but no redress was ever made. (Abstract from the History of the Salem Marine Society.)

"Capt. Drivers act^t of Cash p^d & Sund^{rs} Disburstments in Sch^r Mary Capt. Richard Derby & Cap^t Larans furlong Dr.

	Charges @ New provedens	£	s.	d.
To	A protest 8 peopel to be Discharged	18	0	0
To	Stoars, four sheet and candels	16	4	0
To	poylateg 5 To A fee to my Lawyer	27	0	0
To	Departing of myself and peapel	84	0	0
		145	4	0

	Charges at Cape Francois	£	s.	d.
To	Capt. Hussey's Ransom and Charges	2870	0	0
To	William Adams Ransom	1700	0	0
To	White Lead 2 pieces and petaters for people	0004	0	0
To	Cofey and Rum for Stores	0008	0	0
To	four hundred of oranges at 8 Bits	0008	0	0
To	Departing and washing for me and Capt. Hussey	0030	0	0
		4620	0	0

To	Expense at St Iago in Cuba	0030	0	0
		4795	4	0

	To Charges @ Jamaica	£	s.	d.
To	Entering A protest	01	10	9
To	Carpenters Bill	15	10	9
To	Charges at a Secketreys			
To	2 Barels pork at 5p. To 2 Barels Beef @ 90/	19	0	0
To	Candels shugar and cofey	03	0	0
To	154 pounds of Bread @ 25/ and cask	02	1	0
To	warter and cupering of W. Cask	01	10	0
To	A Clasp for a mast & goos neck & a with	01	05	0
To	A hamer 5/ and 2 gimlets	00	10	0
To	Rum for pepel 10/ To A hundred of yams	11	10	0
To	A half hour glass 3/9 To Twine 3/9	00	07	0
	Payd to a fort	00	05	0
To	Stors to come hom	02	0	0
To	Departing and washing for Capt. Hussey and myself	06	0	0
To	Cash Let Stephen Archer have, 2 Gall ^r Rum & Sugar	06	0	3
To	Cash Lett William Adams have	01	17	9
To	Cash Let Danel Adams have	01	0	9
		71	4	7
To	0=3=14 pound of Bread reserved of Cap ^t Gils to be payed to M ^r Roaps	£		

and Contrarey

Cr.

		£	s.	d.
By	Cash Reseved to be Ransom	1653	0	0
By	Cash I Drew on you for	200	0	0
By	Cash Reseved of Cap ^t Furlong	2871	0	0
		4724	0	0
By	Cash Reseved of Cap ^t Thomas Elkers (This charge belongs opposite Jamaica charges on Cr. side).	70	0	0

Capt. Driver is next found on board of another schooner belonging to Richard Derby, called the "Patty," — with what success cannot be known, as only the following receipts are now to be found: —

"SALEM Sep: 5th 1763

Rec^d of Rich^d Derby the sum of Twenty Six Pounds 13/4 in part for the Portlidge Bill of sch^r Patty

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"SALEM Feb: 25th 1764

Rec^d of Rich^d Derby the sum of Fifty Two Pounds Seven Shillings & 3^d in full for the am^t of Portlidge for Sch^r. Patty Voyage from S^t. Martins

£52 : 7 : 3

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"SALEM March 21st. 1764

Rec^d of Rich^d Derby the Sum of Thirty Five Pounds Thirteen Shillings Law^l Money in full for Entering & Clearing & disburstments & advance Wages for Schooner Patty.

£35 : 13 : 0 Lawfull Money

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"POINT PETER the 4, Aug. 1764

CAPT DERBY,
Sur.

I have But about A hundred and fourteen barrels of molasses on Board season is come that the Roads are so Bad that it is Imposebel for the Carts to Bring the Molasses Down.

Sur. I have aplyed to M^r. Boutineau for assistance according to your orders, as I have not the Tung," (meaning probably that he could not speak French with the people), "and have Taken his advise in all the affair and had to shew them it would Take a great Deal of

Time to go through a Cors of law before that we could get sentence against them. But the old general is Dead and the New one is pleased to give his orders against any frenchman that oeth to the English for payment to Be made which orders we have got against Mark Butear for the Balance to Be pay'd in fifteen Days so that if the wether Be good I hope to be loaded soon and to settle all my affairs here

Sur

I Reseved your letters by Cap^t. Putnam and Capt. Saunders. Capt. Saunders is I hear and have sold for cash and to Granarda to Load, Molasses here is at 42/ a Long Side, and at port Luea at 36/ But then the frait from port luea is 6/ which makes it equal

Here the burnt hole breaks the sentence.

Sur Your

Most humble Servant

MICHAEL DRIVER.

P. S. Sur. I have Trubel in settlen this affair But hope with the Blessing of God I shall Now settle the whole. Capt Sims is like to lose his for Not having Security of Malvayn

Expected to sail the last of Aug."

This letter was folded and sealed with wax, addressed on the reverse side thus:

"To

Mr.

RICHARD DERBY

March:

in Salem New England."

"Capt^t Derby Sur. pleas to pay to Benj Corning the sum of nineteen pounds Eighteen shillings and seven pence for his wages with me the last Voia^g
Sur

December the 12, 1674.

Your hum^b Serv^t

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"SALEM Aug. 20, 1765.

These certifie that Capt^t Rich^d Derby of Salem in the County of Essex this Day made Entry of having shipped on Board the schooner Patty Michael Driver Master, Bound to Piscataqua to say one Barrell Rum containing thirty one Gall^{ls}. & declard Bona Fide the same Rum was to be dispose of there

PETER FRYE
Coll."

"SALEM Oct. 8th 1765

Rec^d of Rich^d Derby Twenty Four Pounds & Ten Pence Law^l. Money in full for my Wages & the Peoples Voyage to Maderia, New York &c. & in full of all acc^{ts} this day

MICHAEL DRIVER."

"1768 Capt. Michael Driver sails in ship 'Patty,' cargo of Molasses, for Richard Derby." — *Salem Gazette*.

Children of **Capt. Michael and Sarah (Bray) Driver** were :

45. MICHAEL DRIVER ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 28, 1754 ; died unmarried at sea before 1785. Master-mariner.

His vessel was seized by the English as a prize, condemned, and he allowed to return home.

He shipped in a vessel bound for Salem, working his passage for the privilege of returning, having lost everything with his vessel.

While helping load her, a hogshhead slipped the cam-hooks, striking his arm off at the shoulder as it fell.

During the voyage, in a storm he fell into the sea from a yardarm, where he had gone to reef a sail, not being able to hold on with his one arm, as the vessel lurched. The long-boat was sent out for his rescue, but a shark seized him just as the boat reached him. "Thus perished as brave a seaman as ever shipped the port of Salem," according to his nephew, Capt. William Driver, No. 78, who furnished this account.

46. HANNAH DRIVER ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 25, 1757 ; died March 20, 1821 ; md. in 1778 Maj. Thomas Barnes, son of William Barnes, of Boston, he born there in 1752; died in Salem, March 14, 1821; both husband and wife were buried on the same day, in the same grave, in Howard Street Burial Ground, Salem.

He may have been a descendant of Thomas Barnes, aged 20, one of the forty passengers aboard the ship "Speedwell," of London, Robert Lock, master, bound to New England, May 30, 1656, who were landed "at Boston the 27th of the moneth 1656." — *New Eng. Hist. Register*, Vol. I. p. 132.

Continental Army rolls, Secretary's Office, Boston State House :
"At a Military Board, held at West Point, N. Y., from July 24th

to Aug. 3d, 1779, for a settlement of rank among the Massachusetts line officers — Thomas Barnes of Salem was confirmed as Major in 3^d Mass. Regt., and in 1780, he was Major of the 12th Mass. Regt. under Col. Sprout."

While the army were stationed around Boston, Maj. Barnes obtained a furlough to visit his family at Salem; while there he was induced to take a venture in a privateering expedition. On his return to his quarters in the army, one of the party who it was said desired to obtain his position, entered a complaint at headquarters against him for having transgressed military rules in the capacity of privateersman; for which act he was tried, cashiered, and his sword taken from him, and thus dismissed the service. The person who made the complaint received his position of major. Major Barnes must eventually have been pardoned, for his name is to be found on the roll of Revolutionary Pensioners.

He was by trade a cabinet-maker, but there is no record of his ever having made any use of it; but in his day every boy must learn some trade.

After he left the army he opened a dry-goods store on Derby Street, Salem, where every day he could be seen dressed in the French style of dress, — green coat, brass buttons, white broadcloth small-clothes, ruffled bands, and high top-boots, with white leather bands: no doubt very becoming to him; for he is said to have been a very handsome man, both in form and carriage.

They had eight children, all born in Salem, Mass.; namely: —

1. EUNICE BARNES¹, born 1779; died in New York city, July 4, 1845; md. in Salem, Mass., aged 16 years, William Boden, son of William and Experience (Downing) Boden, he born in 1775; died at sea, Sept. 26, 1820; md. Oct. 12, 1795.

His mother, Experience Downing, was the daughter of Richard and Temperance (Derby) Downing; Temperance Derby being the daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Young) Derby. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 17.)

His father's name originally was Le Bourdon, of the Island of Jersey. In the church in the Parish of St. Heliers, on that island, the place of his birth, on the register of baptism is to be found: —

"Edward, son of William Bourdon and of Mary Sohier his wife, was baptized the twenty-second day of February, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-one. Edward de St. Croix (brother of his father) godfather & Jane Le Boutillier godmother.

LOUIS MALLET, Register."

His father, William Le Bourdon (subsequently Boden), was a mariner, and owned a very large estate on the Island of Jersey. As the rents became due he

made stated trips to his old home, collected the rents himself, brought the money away with him in bags to his home in Salem, and is said to have buried them somewhere, but where no one knew. He died in Salem, Oct. 27, 1807, aged 61 years, and as the heirs could not find the money they commenced to dig for it in every conceivable place, but without success, for it has never been found. Thus the descendants lost their inheritance, and now never expect to find it, having long ago stopped the search.

Jan. 27, 1783, William Boden, the father, bought of Benjamin Goodhue, for £54 : 1 : 8, a house-lot on the northern corner of what is now Lynn and Andover Streets, Salem, and quite near River Street, or Driver's Point, where lived Stephen Driver (No. 40). On this corner Mr. Boden built and occupied a house, which in 1885 still stands. He was a drum-major in the Revolutionary Army. He married, as above said, Experience Downing, and had twelve children. The eldest, William, who married Eunice Barnes aforesaid, for a number of years ran a vessel, named the "Alert," between Boston and Baltimore, to England. July, 1807, he took on board the family of John Bertram, then residents of the Parish of St. Saviour, Isle of Jersey, consisting of eight persons, — one of whom, a son, John Bertram, subsequently became one of the most opulent merchants of Salem, Mass. They were bound for Baltimore, but the vessel proving leaky, they put into Boston, Sept. 1, 1807. Here John Bertram, Sr., met a Capt. Pinel of Salem, who advised his going to Salem, which he did, they all being for a time in the house with Mr. Boden. A lady, a descendant of the Boden family, who furnished most of the above information, has in her possession a letter of William Boden, Sr., to his brother Edward at St. Heliers, written a few months before his death, a copy of which she kindly furnished the Compiler for this History, as follows: —

"SALEM, Sept. 7, 1807.

DEAR BROTHER, —

I have received by favour of Mr. John Bertram, your letter of the 14th Sept., by Mr. John Bertram himself & I take the opportunity of sending you the answer to it as soon as the occasion presents itself. It is now three years since I have had any news from you although that I have written to you at different times. I have had none of your news in answer to them letters. As to this letter I received it with pleasure. At the exception of the sad news of the death of my sister-in-law which has caused a great mourning in my family. My family are all well. Hoping it is the same with you and all your family. All my boys are married, and the eldest has at present eight children; the girls are not yet married. My family was large to the number of twelve. We have now only nine, and all would be very much pleased to see all your family. My compliments thousands & thousands times to you & to your family. My compliments to my sister Manon. I have not heard any news from Mr. Geo. Picot for the money which is due to me in the Island of Jersey at present that I am old & too ancient for to go to Europe otherwise I would go to see you & your family. Mr. John Bertram and his family are at present in my house & Mr. James Le Gallais & Elias Cabot, son of John Cabot from off the sands in St. Heliers, you will give them compliments from him which is by favour of him writing the letter, they are going to lodge in Fore Street Salem. nothing else for the present except that I remain your Brother till death

WILLIAM LE BOURDON.

N. B. Send an answer as soon as you can."

The record of his brother Edward, copied from that of the church of St. Heliers, as before given, is on the back of this letter.

The twelve children mentioned by him were :—

1. WILLIAM BODEN, born in 1775; died at sea Sept. 26, 1820; md. Oct. 12, 1795, Eunice Barnes abovesaid.
2. SALLY BODEN, born in 1778; died unmarried.
3. CHARLES DERBY BODEN, bapt. Oct. 30, 1780; md. April 18, 1800, Joanna Elliot.
4. EDWARD BODEN, bapt. Feb. 17, 1782; died at Nantucket, before 1807.
5. JOHN BODEN, born in 1784; md. July 23, 1807, Elizabeth King, dau. of William and Rebecca (Phippen) King; she bapt. in the East Church, Salem, Jan. 15, 1786, William King, her father, having been the son of William and Anstis (Crowninshield) (Babbidge) King (see Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 16), and grandson of Samuel and Elizabeth (Barton) King. Her mother, Rebecca Phippen, was dau. of David and Priscilla (Beckford) Phippen, and granddaughter of John and Rebecca (Pinsent) Beckford.
6. ELIAS BODEN, born —; died young.
7. ELIAS BODEN, born in 1786; died Oct. 25, 1801, aged 15 (gravestone).
8. EXPERIENCE BODEN, born —; md. — Rich.
9. LUCY BODEN, born about 1793; md. Nov. 26, 1715, John Mansfield, son of Joseph and Lucretia (Derby) Mansfield (see Appendix, Derby Family, No. 22).
10. NANCY BODEN, born about 1796; died in 1878; md. Dec. 13, 1813, Thomas Hutchinson.
11. POLLY BODEN, born —; died young.
12. POLLY BODEN, born —; died aged 18 years.

Children of Eunice (Barnes) and William Boden, Jr., were eleven, all born in Salem, Mass.; namely :—

- (a) WILLIAM BODEN^s, 3d, born Feb. 9, 1796; died March 18, 1822.
- (b) EUNICE BODEN^s, born April 4, 1797; died Feb. 21, 1802.
- (c) MARY BODEN^s, born Nov. 2, 1798; died Nov. 11, 1830; md. June 3, 1827, Theodore Littlefield, son of Nathaniel and Betsey (Eldridge) Littlefield; he died March 10, 1851. Children were: 1. Mary Elizabeth^s, born April 10, 1828; 2. Theodore Augustus^s, born Jan. 2, 1830.
- (d) EDWARD BODEN^s, born Nov. 2, 1800; died Nov. 9, 1803.
- (e) MICHAEL BARNES BODEN^s, born July 2, 1801; died Sept. 11, 1802.
- (f) MICHAEL BARNES BODEN^s, born Jan. 2, 1802; died Oct. 9, 1804.
- (g) EDWARD BODEN^s, born Oct. 9, 1804; died April 7, 1878; md. July, 1828, Martha Southwick, dau. of John and Polly (Foote) Southwick; she born Feb. 24, 1806; died of small-pox in New York City, Aug. 1, 1865. They had six children: 1. Edward Sullivan^s; 2. Mary Foote^s; 3. William^s; 4. John Henry^s; 5. James Sullivan^s; and 6. Michael Barnes^s.
- (h) HANNAH BARNES BODEN^s, born Dec. 30, 1806; died March 20, 1859; md. Aug. 27, 1837 (Family Bible), Thomas Ashbury Foster, son of William and Annah Choate (Knapp) Foster. They had six children: 1. Thomas^s; 2. Elizabeth Boden^s, living in Salem in 1885; md. Nov. 24, 1859, Israel Safford Lee, son of William and Lois Derby (Safford) Lee; 3. Thomas Albert^s; 4. Edward Augustus^s; 5. Matilda Louise^s; 6. Mehitabel Smith^s.
- (i) JAMES SULLIVAN BODEN^s, born Dec. 10, 1810; died March 24, 1864; md. Oct. 8, 1842, Mrs. Elizabeth (Cushing) Boden, widow of Michael Barnes Boden, his brother; she living in 1885 in Boston. No issue.
- (j) AUGUSTUS CHARLES BODEN^s, born Sept. 20, 1813; died Oct. 10, 1841; md. August, 1840, Angeline —, of England. No issue.
- (k) MICHAEL BARNES BODEN^s, born May 16, 1816; died Jan. 14, 1841, on board the brig "Gazelle," of Salem, Mass., while lying off the coast of Africa; md. March 18, 1839, Elizabeth M. Cushing. No issue. She married second her husband's brother, James Sullivan Boden. (Mrs. Lee and Mrs. Foster

furnished most of the data on the Barnes Family, for which the Compiler is deeply grateful.)

2. MICHAEL BARNES, born in 1780; died Aug. 9, 1807, of fever, on board the ship "Unicorn," on her homeward voyage from Surinam to Salem, he being the first mate. He married in Salem, June 10, 1804, Eunice Peele, dau. of William and Elizabeth (Becket) Peele; she born July 10, 1781; died in Salem, March 31, 1869, as widow of Capt. Christopher Babbage, whom she married, as his second wife, Dec. 1, 1822 (see Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 29).

Two children by each marriage; namely:—

- (a) WILLIAM PEELE BARNES⁸, born June 20, 1804; bapt. in the East Church, Salem, Mass., May 15, 1808, after the death of his father; died, unmarried, on board the ship "Brazil," at Montevideo, Uruguay.
 - (b) MICHAEL DRIVER BARNES⁸, born Aug. 22, 1806; bapt. with his brother; living in 1885 in Quincy, Mass., at the Sailors' Snug Harbor; md. in 1846, Mrs. Hannah (Crandell) Leach, dau. of John and Mary (Verte) Crandall; she born Nov. 7, 1816; died March 3, 1874, in Cincinnati, Ohio, buried in Harmony Grove, Salem. Children were two: 1. William Peele⁹, born June 12, 1846; died Jan. 14, 1847; 2. Mary Elizabeth⁹, born May 15, 1849, md. June 11, 1869, Geo. Egbert Thomas, son of James and Diadamia (Poole) Thomas; both living in 1885 at Melroe, Mass. Mrs. Thomas contributed all of the Barnes data, going from family to family and personally interviewing them; thus obtaining that which could not be found on any public record. They had two children, one living in 1885, Ada Isabelle¹⁰, born March 18, 1875.
 - (c) CHRISTOPHER BABBAGE⁸, born —; died young.
 - (d) MARGARET BABBAGE⁸, born —; died young.
3. THOMAS BARNES⁷, born Aug. 27, 1781; died in Salem, Feb. 24, 1817; md. August, 1804, Esther Dodge, dau. of Capt. Israel and Mary (Brown) Dodge of Wenham, Mass., where she was born Feb. 28, 1783; and died March 22, 1863. Children were:—
- (a) AARON DODGE BARNES⁸, born Oct. 12, 1805; died July 28, 1845; md. in 1825, Mary Cleaves Brewer, dau. of John and Hannah (Dodge) Brewer of Wenham, Mass.; she born April 11, 1805; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass. They had thirteen children: 1. Aaron Dodge⁹, and 2. Paul Mansfield⁹, twins; 3. Rebecca Dodge⁹; 4. Mary Brown⁹; 5. Hannah Dodge⁹; 6. Sarah Allen⁹; 7. Rufus Dodge⁹; 8. Thomas Driver⁹; 9. John Perkins⁹; 10. Albert Everett⁹; 11. Ruth Ann Estes⁹; 12. Nancy Maria⁹; 13. Israel Dodge⁹.
 - (b) PAUL MANSFIELD BARNES⁸, born March 23, 1807; died May 29, 1821.
 - (c) ESTHER DODGE BARNES⁸, born March 29, 1809; died Feb. 12, 1882; md. Sept. 29, 1831, Rufus Dodge, son of Jacob and Mary (Lee) Dodge of Wenham; he born June 12, 1809; died Jan. 22, 1875. Child was: 1. Harriet Maria⁹, born in 1832.
 - (d) ISRAEL DODGE BARNES⁸, born Jan. 22, 1817; died Oct. 1, 1844; md. in Wenham, Mass., Mary Smith Foster, dau. of Moses and Abigail (Smith) Foster; she md. second, May 3, 1858, as his second wife, the father-in-law of her daughter Susan, Rev. David Oliver Allen, who died July, 1862; she died Aug. 3, 1867. No issue. Children by first marriage were: 1. Maria Leavitt⁹, born May 3, 1814; 2. Susan Potter⁹, born Oct. 16, 1834; md. first, May 17, 1858, fourteen days after her mother, Dr. Myron Oliver Allen, son of Rev. David Oliver Allen and Myra (Wood); he died Aug. 1, 1861; she md. second, Dr. Geo. Washington Doane, son of Timothy and Mary Payne (Ryder) Doane. No issue. 3. Israel Foster⁹, born May 31, 1839. md. Jan. 6, 1862, Elizabeth Ann Langdell, dau. of Joseph and Mary (Colwell) Langdell of Cambridge, Mass., and had three children.

4. **MARY BARNES**⁷, born June 2, 1783; died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 18, 1852; md. June 19 (Town Records), June 11 (Family Bible), 1803, Capt. Benjamin Patterson, son of Capt. William and Sarah (Archer) Patterson; he born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 22, 1779; master-mariner; died July 8, 1818; buried in Howard Street Burial Ground, Salem, Mass. She md. second, Jan. 12, July 15 (Town Records), 1822, James Marvin, Jr.

Children were six, all born in Salem, Mass.; namely:

- (a) **MARY ANN PATTERSON**⁸, born Feb. 10, 1806; died October, 1853; md. Jan. 12, 1835, William Wardwell. No issue.
- (b) **BENJAMIN PATTERSON**⁸, born Feb. 21, 1808; died April 22, 1809.
- (c) **BENJAMIN PATTERSON**⁸, born Jan. 17, 1809; died November, 1856, unmarried.
- (d) **MEHITABLE SMITH PATTERSON**⁸, born Feb. 10, 1811; died Feb. 6, 1848; md. June 23, 1833, Augustus Melvin, son of James and Susan (Barnett) Melvin; he born Dec. 13, 1809; died July 21, 1853. They had four children (see Appendix, Patterson Family, No. 25).
- (e) **ELIPHALET SMITH PATTERSON**⁸, born Aug. 1, 1813; resides in Salem, Mass., in 1885; md. there, Sept. 1, 1838, Ann Fuller, dau. of Thomas and Nancy (Caruth) Fuller; she born in Salem, Sept. 10, 1810. No issue.
- (f) **WILLIAM PATTERSON**⁸, born Aug. 24, 1817; died June 4, 1818.

Child by second marriage was:—

- (g) **LEONARD P—MARVIN**⁸, born March 22, 1822; living in 1885; md. **Mary Lewis**, a widow. No issue.

5. **HANNAH BARNES**⁷, born in 1785; learned from a sampler worked by her in her eleventh year, now in the possession of Eliphalet Smith Patterson, who kindly contributed the information. The sampler bears the following inscription, done in cross-stitch:—

“Wrought by Hannah Barnes, in 1796, in the 11th year of her age.”

“In thy fair book of Life Divine Dear God inscribe my name,
There let it fill some humble place beneath the slaughtered Lamb.”

At this date all girls were taught, generally at school, to make this piece of needlework, then known as a sampler. It was in cross-stitch, on canvas, in various colored silks, or floss; comprising the alphabet both in Roman and capital letters, finished by a verse of poetry, oftentimes original, or a text of Scripture, underneath which was the name of the maker of the sampler, with her age, and date of completion,—all of which was surrounded most generally by a border of flowers, with a basket of flowers at the bottom, and sheep, or a bunch of grapes, at the top. This was the simpler design, while others had a square house worked under the letters, with a flower-pot and rosebush at one side, the bush taller than the house, while at the other side stood a horse larger than both house and bush. Others had at the top a monument, surmounted by a funeral urn, with a woman leaning on it, and a weeping willow hanging over all. These were called mourning pieces, and had some superscription in memory of those dead. Others had classical subjects, such as the parting of Hector and Andromache, or still others had Scriptural subjects.

These samplers were remarkable specimens of art, the false perspective many times making them very laughable. The needlework was always neatly executed, and no girl was considered educated who had not wrought one. They were always framed and hung on the wall of the sitting-room or best chamber, where they formed the chief ornament. These samplers have been handed down in the families of New England, where now one or more can at any time be shown. This

sampler of Hannah Barnes was the means of establishing her identity, as no other record at present is to be found.

6. SARAH BARNES⁷, born April 2, 1789; died in Salem, N. H., May, 1825; md. April 9, 1809, Nathaniel S—— Foster (S—— supposed to have been Sparhawk), bricklayer. He was born March 10, 1786; died April 9, 1825, in Salem, N. H., and probably there buried. Children were:—

(a) NATHANIEL S. FOSTER⁸, born March 9, 1810; died in New York city about 1838.

(b) WILLIAM FOSTER⁸, born March 3, 1811; died April 30, 1846; md. Nov. 22, 1833, Ruth Town Hood, of Maine. She born May 18, 1807; died July 20, 1862. In 1836 they lived in Melrose, Mass., where Mr. Foster bought considerable property on and in the neighborhood of the street which now (1886) bears his name. Children were:—

1. THOMAS OTIS FOSTER⁹, born Oct. 18, 1834; died July 15, 1872; md. Mrs. Rozella (Quimby) Prescott. No issue.

2. ELLEN CORDELIA FOSTER⁹, born Jan. 11, 1836; died Dec. 3, 1836.

3. EMILY RUTHELLA FOSTER⁹, born Feb. 14, 1838; md. Aug. 21, 1862, Thomas Harlow, son of Richard and Catherine (Crawford) Harlow; he born Dec. 29, 1841. They had three children.

4. ALBERT HOOD FOSTER⁹, born Sept. 10, 1843; died Jan. 7, 1845.

(c) BENJAMIN FOSTER⁸, born Nov. 1, 1813; died Aug. 26, 1840; md. Dec. 18, 1836, Sarah Townsend, dau. of Samuel and Mary (Chandler) Townsend. No issue. She married, second, Henry F. Wilson, and died in Littleton, Me., April 10, 1884, without issue. Henry F. Wilson living there in 1885.

(d) MILES BARNES FOSTER⁸, born April 2, 1815; died Dec. 23, 1821.

(e) OTIS FOSTER⁸, born Aug. 13, 1817; died Feb. 13, 1860; md. April 3, 1842, Caroline Sally Hunt, dau. of John and Cyrene (Foster) Hunt; she living in 1885 in Holliston, Mass., with her daughter, Mrs. Flagg. Children were:

1. GEORGE OTIS FOSTER⁹, born Jan. 14, 1843; died unmarried, July 7, 1864.

2. CAROLINE CYRENE FOSTER⁹, born Dec. 23, 1848; living at Holliston, Mass., in 1885; md. Dec. 23, 1867, Frank Whitney Flagg, son of Benjamin and Harriet (Whitney) Flagg; he born Dec. 27, 1841; died Jan. 6, 1882. They had three children.

(f) STILLMAN FOSTER⁸, born Sept. 23, 1822; died Sept. 19, 1865; md. in 1854 Mary Murch. Children were:—

1. AUGUSTUS MELVIN FOSTER⁹, born about 1855.

2. CHARLES FOSTER⁹, born about 1860.

“Reginald Foster was the emigrant ancestor of this family in America. He was descended from an ancient and respectable family settled in the West of England, connected with those of the name in the North of England, who wrote their name Forster, and were distinguished for their exploits against the Scots, mentioned in ‘The Lay of the Last Minstrel’ and in ‘Marmion.’” — *New England Hist. and Gen. Register*, Vol. I. p. 352.

7. ELIZABETH BARNES⁷, born about 1794; removed with her brother Miles first to New York city, then to Ohio, before 1822, where she married a lawyer, whose name or anything concerning him has been forgotten by her present family, and where her identity was completely lost. (Information concerning her or hers desired.)

8. MILES BARNES⁷, born in 1796; died April 17, 1822 (Boden Family Bible), perhaps in Cincinnati, Ohio, — that fact being omitted; probably unmarried. Ensign of the Washington Rangers, of Salem, Mass.; subsequently member of the Salem Cadets. A painting of him is in existence, probably taken when he was about twenty-five years old. Owned by the Compiler.

47. BENJAMIN DRIVER⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 6, 1760; died of consumption, Nov. 13, 1811; md. Feb. 26, 1786, Hannah Wellman. (See Family XV.)
48. PAUL MANSFIELD DRIVER⁶, born in Salem, Mass., July 9, 1762; died unmarried, between Sept. 23d and 30th, 1788; for under the death notices in the "Salem Gazette," then called "Salem Mercury," issue of Sept. 30th, 1788, is: "In this town, Mr. Paul Driver." This paper was issued at that date once a week.

On the military roll, office of Secretary of State, Boston, Mass., is to be found:

"Paul Driver, Mariner on board y^e Armed Brig Griffin, Gideon Henfield commander," and credited with $\frac{1}{4}$ of a share. "Sworn to May 23, 1780, before me Warwick Palfray, Naval Officer." He was then eighteen years old.

"July 24, 1783: — Michael Driver, cordwainer, and wife Sarah, sold to William Northey, one right in the great pasture, formerly belonging to my father, Michael Driver.

BENJAMIN DRIVER }
PAUL DRIVER } Witness."

49. THOMAS POYNTON DRIVER⁶, born March 22, 1766; died Aug. 2, 1788, at the Battle of the Nile, Egypt; md. June 26, 1791, Rebecca Wellman. (See Family XVI.)
50. SARAH DRIVER⁶, known as Sally, born Jan. 23, 1768; said to have been very handsome; died Feb. 25, 1808; md. by the Rev. Dr. Barnard, of Salem, Mass., June 10, 1796, to Capt. George K. (perhaps Knight) Smith, son of George and Elizabeth (Lander) Smith; he bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 21, 1762; date of death not found. He was a master-mariner, and in 1819 commanded the brig "Alonzo," to Maranhham, South America. He made some voyages to Bilboa and the Mediterranean Sea. No issue by this marriage, but he adopted a little girl, five years of age, known as SALLY SMITH⁷; she born in Salem, Mass., June 11, 1791; died there March 16, 1810; md. Aug. 1, 1808, Nathaniel Foster Safford, of Salem, Mass., son of Nathan and Elizabeth (Foster) Safford; he born in North Yarmouth, Me., June 13, 1786; removed to Salem in 1806; died there Nov. 20, 1847; merchant; admitted to Essex Lodge of Freemasons, Aug. 4, 1812.

Child was: —

1. SARAH SMITH SAFFORD⁸, born in Salem, Mass., May 16, 1809; died there, Feb. 19, 1865; md. May 21, 1840, in Salem, Mass., to Jonathan Lord Kimball, son of Jonathan Choate and Mary Kimball; he born in 1809; died Dec. 5, 1845. His grandfather was Jeremiah Kimball (born July 18, 1750; died Feb. 1, 1831), whose father was Jeremiah Kimball (born about 1725; died Jan. 9, 1765), and his father was John Kimball (born Oct. 19, 1693; died Dec. 6, 1754), whose father was John Kimball (born in 1631; died May 6, 1698), and his father was Richard Kimball, the emigrant (born in Eng. in 1595; died in Ipswich, Mass., in 1675). He embarked from Ipswich, England, April 10, 1634, in the ship "Elizabeth," with wife Ursula, and seven children; first settled in Waterbury. Sarah and Jonathan's children were: —
- (a) SARAH ELIZABETH SAFFORD KIMBALL⁹, born in Salem, Mass., March 16, 1841; md. June 6, 1865, Benjamin Hale Ives, son of Benjamin Ives (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 74); living in Salem, Mass., in 1885.

(b) **JOSEPHINE EUGENIA KIMBALL**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., April 2, 1845; living in 1885 in Newburyport, Mass.; md. Sept. 5, 1871, Moses Brown, of that place. Children were:—

(a) **ARTHUR PERKINS BROWN**¹⁰, born May 4, 1873.

(b) **HENRY SAFFORD BROWN**¹⁰, born Aug. 28, 1875.

(c) **MARY PERKINS BROWN**¹⁰, born Feb. 4, 1878; died March 22, 1879.

(d) **EDWARD STICKNEY BROWN**¹⁰, born —.

NATHANIEL FOSTER SAFFORD, after the death of Sally Smith, married second, Oct. 10, 1813, Hannah Woodbury, dau. of William and Mary Woodbury; she born in Hamilton, Mass., June 18, 1791; died in Salem, April 18, 1856.

Children by this marriage were:—

2. **NATHAN FOSTER SAFFORD**⁸, born in Salem, Mass., July 16, 1814; died Nov. 28, 1814.

3. **NATHAN FOSTER SAFFORD**⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 19, 1815; living in 1885 in Boston, Mass.; a lawyer; md. Feb. 10, 1845, Josephine Eugenia Morton, dau. of Joseph Morton, of Milton, Mass. One child, Nathaniel Morton⁹, born in Dorchester Mass., Jan. 31, 1848.

Mr. Safford kindly furnished the Compiler with the foregoing valuable data pertaining to his father's family, which she desires to acknowledge and return thanks, as without it this section of the history of the family would have been very incomplete and incomprehensible.

51. **STEPHEN DRIVER, JR.**⁸ (called Jr. because his second cousin, Stephen Driver, No. 40, was living at the same time), born March 17, 1772, in the same place; died March 24, 1850; md. June 27, 1795, Ruth Metcalf, grandparents of the Compiler (see Family XVII.).

FIFTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XII.

Capt. SOLOMON DRIVER⁵ (No. 34), son of Solomon⁴ (**SALMON**³, **ROBERT**², **ROBERT**¹) and Rachel (Bishop) Driver, born in Gloucester, Mass., Oct. 27, 1720; died about 1761, according to the records of the First Church of Manchester, Mass.,—probably at sea, being a master-mariner.

He was published in marriage to Hannah Allen, Dec. 11, 1742, dau. of Samuel and Sarah Allen; she born April 29, 1721.

There is no settlement on record of any estate of Capt. Solomon Driver, but Dec. 3, 1764, his widow, Hannah, bought of Samuel Allen, Jr., mariner, of Manchester, and wife, Sarah, one acre of land.

Her name does not appear on the tax-books of Manchester after 1780; hence it is presumable she died some time during the year previous.

Children of **Capt. Solomon** and **Hannah (Allen) Driver** were : —

- 52. **SOLOMON DRIVER**⁶, born in Manchester, Mass., March 20, 1744; died July, 1831; md. Dec. 1, 1768, Miriam Hooper. (See Family XVIII.)
- 53. **JOHN DRIVER**⁶, born in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 12, 1746; a seaman; md. Jan. 14, 1768, Elizabeth Leach. (See Family XIX.)
- 54. **HANNAH DRIVER**⁶, born in Manchester, Mass., Aug. 31, 1748; died —; md. Dec. 1, 1768, Samuel Perry, and had one daughter, **SARAH PERRY**⁷, born Dec. 23, 1771.
- 55. **SAMUEL DRIVER**⁶, born in Manchester, Mass., where, Feb. 25, 1749, he was baptized; died before Dec. 8, 1800; md. Bethiah Allen. (See Family XX.)

FIFTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XIII.

Capt. JOHN DRIVER⁵ (No. 35), son of Solomon⁴ (**SALMON**⁵, **ROBERT**², **ROBERT**¹), and Rachel (Bishop) Driver, master-mariner, born in Gloucester, Mass., Nov. 8, 1722; killed by Indians at Cape Sable, in 1743, known from the following record of the town: "It was Generally thought he" (John Driver) "was killed by y^e Ingens some time In November at Gedore Habor or at Cape Sabell In y^e year 1743."

He was published Dec. 20, 1741, to Anna Osment, dau. of John and Anna Osment; she born in Manchester, Mass., April 1, 1722. She married, second, John Day, to whom she was published Feb. 27, 1745. She died October, 1761. * He died before Dec. 17, 1759, as administration on his estate was granted his widow, Anna, who gave bonds with Benjamin Osment, tailor, and John Allen, innholder, of Manchester, Mass., Dec. 17, 1759. Inventory was taken by Jonathan Herrick, John Allen, and John Tewxbury, Jan. 21, 1760. Anna Day makes oath to the truth thereof . £96 : 2 : 8
House, barn, and land 73 : 6 : 8

Nov. 17, 1760 : — Estate represented insolvent.

Due from the estate, £74 : 16 : 8; £50 : 19 : 11 of which is not allowed as secured by mortgage

Oct. 5, 1761, another account was rendered, showing the real and personal estate to be £90 : 16. Debts, £82 : 4 : 11.

"1 bed & bedding 85/; 1 case draws 26/8; 1 chest 5/4 = . .	£5:17:4
2 wheels 5/4; 2 tables 4/; bellows 1/6; 2 meat barrels 4/ =	14:10
1 lamp 8d.; 1 pott 2/; 1 trammel =	8:00
1 looking glass 4/; pewter 11/2; pillow cases 2/; cradle 2/8 =	19:00
candlestick 6d.	06
	<hr/> £8:00:04"

"Oct. 5, 1761, which amount the Ct. allows & gives her for necessaries, she to pay charge for administration.

June 8, 1761, administration on her estate was granted Anna Day, mother of her husband John Day, who gave bonds with Andrew Woodbury & John Allen.

Inventory of her estate was then

To 1 1/2 acres of land at 93/4	£7:00:00
To 1/3 of a pew in the meeting house	2:13:04
	<hr/> £9:13:04

Estate Dr.

To Funeral Charges	£1:10
To Bonds of adm ^r journey &c.	1:02
To apprizing of estate, & swearing apprizers	:15
To adm ^x for time, trouble, journey this day	1:05
Examining & allowing this acct.	04
the Estate 1/	01

£4:17

Essex SS. Oct. 5, 1761: This account being Exam^d and sworn to is accepted and allowed By me JOHN CHOATE J. P.

Essex SS. Oct. 5, 1761. And the Residue or Balance of s^d Estate I Do assign to & settle on Anna Day, mother to the dec^d & on her heirs, as the s^d dec^d left neither Father, Brother or Sister nor any Descendant from them, so that the whole Real Estate, does fall by law to said mother & her heirs and this is to be recorded accordingly

JOHN CHOATE, Probate Judge."

Thus the court settled both accounts under one date, Oct. 5, 1761.

Children of **Capt. John** and **Anna (Osment) Driver** were:

56. JOHN DRIVER⁶, born Sept. 17, 1742; died young.

57. ANNA DRIVER⁶, born April 15, 1744; died before Oct. 5, 1761.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XIV.

STEPHEN DRIVER⁶ (No. 40), son of Stephen⁵ (THOMAS⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Susanna (Pope) Driver, bapt. in the First Church, Salem, Mass., Dec. 20, 1741; died —; md. first, Hannah —, of whom nothing is known; she died before 1770; he md., second, Nov. 16, 1770, Elizabeth Lawrence, dau. of Richard and Mary (Stinger) Lawrence, of Marblehead, Mass.; she bapt. in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass., Nov. 11, 1739; died in Salem, Mass., before 1812.

Stephen Driver was a housewright, and lived on River Street, Salem, Mass., which street runs parallel with, and on the border of North River, Salem, Mass. A small point of land jutting out into the river near Stephen Driver's property was called Cape Driver, by which it and vicinity are still known. Stephen Driver himself was often called "Cape Driver," to distinguish him from his second cousin, Stephen Driver, Jr. (No. 51), who lived and did business in Salem, Mass., at the same time, though he was a younger man than his cousin by thirty years. The two Stephens were sons of first cousins (see pages 22, 23), whose fathers (Thomas and Michael) were brothers, sons of William Driver (No. 6), — thus without doubt second cousins; though there are those living who to this day stoutly maintain that no relation ever existed between the families.

The foregoing must obliterate any confusion formerly created in the family by these Stephens.

"July 18, 1774: — Stephen Driver sold to James Smith, of Marblehead, for £13:6:8 a piece of land lately bought of Benjamin Beckford, bounded W. on land in possession of said Beckford, said to belong to Edward Kitchen. S. on the road 5 pole, 4 links. E. on Beckford. N. on high water mark (North River), containing 22 and one half pole."

This estate Mr. Driver bought of Benjamin Beckford and wife Sarah, July 2, 1773.

"July 27, 1786: Stephen Driver bought of John Woodburg, Salem, housewright, and wife Elizabeth, a small tract of land bounded South on a lane" (now Lynn Street), "12 ft., W. on said Driver, 5 pole; N. on North River, 12 ft.; E. on said Woodburg, 5 pole."

"Nov. 28, 1796, for \$37.69, Stephen Driver bought of Lydia Beckford

(widow of Benjamin), by quitclaim, the east front room of the house where he (Driver) now lives, it being a part of the estate of Benj. Beckford.

THOS. BECKFORD } Wit."
JOHN ARCHER }

Feb. 7, 1801 : — Stephen Driver, and wife Elizabeth, sold to Richard Eaton of Marblehead, for \$100, "all our one-quarter part in common and undivided dwelling house, land and rocks under the same, near the old meeting house, so called in Marblehead, it being the estate of our late father Richard Lawrence, deceased."

"Sept. 30, 1807 : he and wife Elizabeth, sold to Benj. Punchard, inspector, a lot of land in River St., bounded S. on said street 50 ft.; W. on said Driver and running N. to North river; N. on North River 50 ft.; thence S. by E. on Robert Wallis to the street with the dwelling house and other buildings."

"April 1, 1810 : — he and wife Elizabeth for \$600, sold to Elizabeth Williams a parcel of land on River St. Salem, bounded S. on said street 170 ft.; W. on heirs of Shillaber dec'd. extending from said street to North River, then running South by East on said Wallis to River Street, with three dwelling houses and a shop, and all other buildings standing thereon, . . . the premises being in part subject to a mortgage to Benj. Punchard; dated as above Sept. 30, 1807."

Sept. 14, 1812, Stephen Driver sold to Eben'r Worcester of Salem, Mass., housewright, for \$150.00 "all my right in equity of redeeming a parcel of land, bounded South on River St., 50 ft., West on my own land, running North to North river — North by said river 50 ft., thence running South by East on land of the late Robert Wallis, dec'd, now of William Knight to first bounds on River St., with the dwelling house, and all the buildings thereon."

Child of **Stephen** and **Hannah Driver** was : —

58. STEPHEN DRIVER⁷, born about 1766; bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 7, 1776. No other record found concerning him.

Children of **Stephen** and **Elizabeth (Lawrence) Driver** were : —

59. JOSEPH DRIVER⁷, bapt. Aug. 2, 1772; probably died young.

60. HANNAH DRIVER⁷, bapt. Jan. 15, 1775; md. Dec. 16, 1798, Stephen Glover, of Malden, Mass.

61. A twin to Hannah⁷, bapt. Jan. 15, 1775; died soon.

62. THOMAS DRIVER⁷, bapt. March 30, 1777; md. Feb. 19, 1804, Mrs. Mary (Daland) Archer, widow of W^m Archer. (See Family XXI.)

63. ELIZABETH DRIVER⁷, bapt. June 13, 1779; md. Feb. 27, 1802, John Bell.

64. RICHARD DRIVER⁷, bapt. March 10, 1781; died young.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XV.

BENJAMIN DRIVER⁶ (No. 47), son of Capt. Michael⁵ (CAPT. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹) and Sarah (Bray) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 6, 1760; died there of consumption, Nov. 1, 1811; md. there, Feb. 26, 1786, Hannah Wellman, dau. of Timothy and Mary (Henderson) Wellman; she born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 15, 1761; there baptized in the Tabernacle Church, June 1, 1766; died July 14, 1847 (see Appendix, Wellman Family, No. 19).

Rev. Dr. Wm. Bentley in his Diary states, that, "Mary widow of Timothy Wellman died Jan. 31, 1811, aged 74 years, she a Henderson; md. at 18; Husband lost on the Banks. Four daughters left. Phippen, Dean, Driver and Swaney. Son Timothy died Dec. last."

Mary Wellman, her mother, lived with her daughter, Mrs. Driver, for many years, and died in her house, as above stated.

Benjamin Driver was an original member of the Salem Cadets, joining in 1785.

"Dec. 31, 1788: — Benjamin Driver, and wife Hannah sold to Hannah Poynton, relict, widow of Thomas Poynton, mariner, a small piece of land, or house lot, with the building thereon, bounded on the street, leading from St. Peters Church, to the Court House; North on said street, W. on John Bray; S. partly on Andrew Oliver Esq. and partly on Jonathen Webb. E. on a garden spot and dwelling house on which the widow Sarah Driver, and others now live, to the said street.

STEPHEN DRIVER } wit."
SALLY DRIVER }

Children of **Benjamin** and **Hannah (Wellman) Driver** were: —

65. **HANNAH DRIVER**⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 3, 1786; died about 1830; md. Nov. 7, 1809, by the Rev. Rufus Anderson, of Wenham, Mass., Israel Dodge, son of Capt. Israel Andrew and Mary (Brown) Dodge, of Wenham, Mass.; he born there, July 14, 1787; died there of consumption before 1822.

Considerable uncertainty having always existed as to the identity of the said Israel Dodge, his family will be given as received from the town clerk

of Wenham, Mass., without any omission, as taken from the town books of Wenham, Mass.; marriages:—

“Mr. Israel Andrew Dodge and Mrs. Mary Brown y^e former of Wenham, the latter of Ipswich, entered their names and intention of marriage with —, March 31st. 1770, & the same was posted at our meeting house y^e 1st day of April following. Gave a certificate of it April 26th 1770.”

Births and deaths:—

“The nine following children Born to Israel A. Dodge by Mary his wife viz.:—

Adam. Born Dec^r 14th 177—: d. Dec^{mb} 24th 1777

Polly. Born Feb⁷ 14th 1776

Oliver. Born April 6th 1779: died Sept. 15, 1779

Sally. Born Feb⁷ 15th 1781

Easter. Born Feb⁷ 28, 1783; md. Aug. 1804, Thomas Barnes, son of Hannah (Driver) Barnes.

Nancy. Born Jan⁷ 13th 1785.

Israel. Born July 14th 1787; md. Nov. 7, 1809, Hannah Driver.

Moses. Born June 9th 1789

Aaron. Born July 9th 1792.”

“Will of Israel A. Dodge.

“In the name of God amen.

I Israel A. Dodge of Wenham in the County of Essex and Commonwealth of Massachusetts, gentleman, make this my last will and testament.

Imprimis—I give and bequeath to my beloved wife Polly the whole of my real estate for her to hold, use, occupy and enjoy so long as she shall remain my widow and no longer. I also give to my said wife two cows, two good sheep, my horse and chaise, my great bible, all my household furniture of every kind and all the provisions of food and drink of every description which may be on hand at my decease and also so much fodder as may be necessary to feed the above named cows, horse and sheep should my decease take place at such season of the year as to make this provision necessary.

Item—I give and bequeath to my grandson, John Reddington, the sum of one hundred and twenty dollars to be paid to him in one year after my decease.

Item—I give and bequeath to my daughter Polly the present wife of Uzziel Dodge, the sum of one hundred and twenty dollars to be paid to her or her heirs in one year after my decease.

Item—I give and bequeath to my grand daughter Sally Hood, the sum of one hundred and twenty dollars to be paid to her in one year after my decease.

Item—I give and bequeath to my grandson John Hood, the sum of twenty dollars to be paid to him in one year after my decease.

Item—I give to Hannah, now widow of my late son Israel Dodge dec^d the sum of fifty dollars, to be paid to her in one year after my decease.

Item: I give and bequeath to my six grand children, children of my son Oliver Dodge, namely:—Israel, Salina, John, Charles, Sarah Ann, and Hannah, the sum of fifty dollars, to be equally apportioned to and among said last named grandchildren, or to the survivors or survivor of said grandchildren, and to be paid to said grandchildren, at the decease of my son Oliver Dodge.

Item:—I give, bequeath and devise to my two daughters, Esther, widow of Thomas Barnes, dec^d, and Nancy, present wife of Sylvester Wilkins, and to their heirs and assigns forever, all the residue, remainder, and reversion of all my estate, both real

& personal, after the payment of all my just debts, funeral charges, expenses of settling my estate and all and each of the above named legacies: and after my said wife Polly shall cease to occupy the same on condition that they my said daughters, Esther and Nancy and their respective heirs shall from and after the period when they shall come into possession of the estate herein devised to them make all necessary and suitable provision for the support of my said son Oliver, and for him only, during the residue of his life both in health and sickness, and at his death shall cause his remains to be decently interred, and if any question shall at any time arise respecting the amount of support necessary for said Oliver's comfort, or the manner, time or place of furnishing it, the decision shall be referred to the selectmen of the town of Wenham for the time being, and my will is that if either of the legacies or devisees above named, shall have claim or challenge any demand upon my estate as debt due from my estate, that the same shall be paid from his or her respective portion or share herein given, bequeathed, & devised, and no otherways; and I do hereby constitute and appoint my said wife Polly sole Executrix of this my last will and testament, and I do hereby fully authorise and empower my said Executrix to sell and convey by deed fully executed, so much of my real estate, as she shall find necessary to pay the balance of my debts beyond the amount of personal estate and each of the above and before named legacies, and I do confirm this and no other to be my last will and testament.

In witness whereof I hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty sixth day of July
A. D. one thousand eight hundred and twenty two

ISRAEL A. DODGE. [Seal.]

Signed sealed published and
declared by the said Israel A Dodge
to be his last will and testament
in presence of us who have hereunto
subscribed our names in presence of
the testator, and in presence of each other

N. CLEAVELAND
SAM^L. OBEAR
ENOCH FAULKNER

As expressed in the widow's Letter Testamentary, Israel A. Dodge died March 17th 1823; she being appointed executrix, May 20th following. The will was presented for Probate May 20, 1823, when it was proved and allowed."

The Dodge family in this country originated in England from the same original stock. In this country they came from three brothers, — William, Richard, and John, who came to Salem, Mass. William Dodge came over first in the ship "Lyon's Whelpe," which sailed from Yarmouth, Eng., May 7, 1629. He returned to England (Lancashire), where he married, and returned to Salem, with his wife and two brothers, Richard and John. Richard settled in Beverly, and John at Wenham, Mass. Richard's descendants are sandy hair and complexion; John's light hair and complexion. Some of the family joined Roger Williams, and afterwards settled in Rhode Island. Some went to Long Island, Esopus Creek, and New York.

They had been a warlike race of men, as appears by their coat of arms, and did great service in England by Peter Dodge, and in this country as officers and soldiers in the Revolution. Among the officers were five at Bunker Hill; viz., Major Richard Dodge, Captains Barnabas and Abraham, Lieut. Robert, and Ensign Paul Dodge. Samuel and Levi Dodge served during the war; so also did Israel Dodge, of Canterbury, Conn., who was lieutenant when the war closed. In England they reside in Lancashire, Norfolk, and Suffolk. — *New Eng. Gen. Register*, Vol. XV. pp. 254-255.

66. SARAH DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., March 14, 1788; died there July 6, 1866; md. Sept. 23, 1811, John Preston, mariner, son of Capt. William and Hannah (Neal) Preston; he born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 20, 1781; died there Aug. 9, 1855. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 50.) She admitted to the First Baptist Church of Salem, Mass., Nov. 6, 1812.

John Preston, during the war of 1812, sailed from Salem for England in a vessel whose name has been forgotten. This vessel was seized by the English, sent to England as a prize, where she was condemned, and all on board thrown into Dartmoor Prison; many died of want and neglect, but John Preston lived to return to Salem after an imprisonment of two years. During this time his family resided at 42 Broad St., Salem, Mass., but on his return they removed to the family homestead on Summer Street, No. 23, where his descendants still reside (1887).

"List of persons who were prisoners at Dartmoor during the war of 1812, belonging to Salem, who were alive at the close of the year 1833." (Communicated to the Essex Institute Hist. Collections, by Dr. Benj. F. Browne, himself a prisoner, — Vol. V. p. 235): —

"Nathaniel Ingersoll	John Willis	Nathaniel Phippen
William Atkins	Isaac B. Shepard	James Thompson
Thomas Sleuman	Joseph Strout Strout	Joseph B. Winn
Allen S. Putnam	Henry Tibberts	John Kimball
Richard Davis	George R. Richards	James Bowie
John Wheeler	Henry Upton	Nathaniel Weston
John Melcher	Israel Phippen	John N. Grush
Francis Skerry	John Preston	David A. Neal
Hezekiah Wilkins	Henry Hubon	Jonas W. Perkins
Samuel Shepard	John Waters	Michael S. Wheeler
Benjamin Browne	Charles M. Downing	Henry Gracie
George P. Phillips	Lewis Lawrence	Samuel Tucker."

Children of John and Sarah (Driver) Preston were: —

1. PRISCILLA WELLMAN PRESTON⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 18, 1813; died there June 9, 1881; md. Oct. 13, 1836, Alvah Kendall, son of Benjamin and Sibbel (Cummings) Kendall; he born at Thetford, Vt., May 3, 1805; died at Salem, Mass., April 6, 1874. His parents both born in Dunstable, Mass. Children were: —

(a) WILLIAM HENRY KENDALL⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 12, 1841; md. June 13, 1883, Ellen Nicoll, dau. of Robert and Elizabeth (Lynda) Nicoll, of Truro, Nova Scotia, where she was born Aug. 10, 1834. No issue. Both living in 1885 in Salem, Mass. The said W. H. Kendall in 1884 was Royal Arch Mason of the Washington Royal Arch Chapter, of Salem, Mass.; also Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts; also Knight of the Royal Cross, Knights Templars, of Salem, Mass.; and a member of the Grand Council of Select Royal Masters of Massachusetts.

(b) FLORENCE PRESTON KENDALL⁹, born July 22, 1850; died Dec. 20, 1851.

2. JOHN PRESTON, JR.⁸, born June 18, 1816; living in 1885 with his family in California; md. first, Sept. 16, 1840, Margaret Stevens, who died April 28, 1860; md. second, June 10, 1862, Mary Elizabeth Haskell,

dan. of Thomas Coombs and Miriam Haskell, of Marblehead, Mass., sister of the husband of her stepdaughter. No issue. Children by first marriage were:—

- (a) MARGARET STEVENS PRESTON⁹, born Sept. 6, 1841; md. Jan. 29, 1861, Reuben R. Haskell, son of Thomas Coombs and Miriam Haskell. Living in 1885 in California.
- (b) FRANCIS PERLEY PRESTON⁹, born June 20, 1846; md. Jan. 1, 1868, Mary E. Archer, dau. of William Archer. Both living in 1885 in Salem, Mass.
- (c) SARAH ELLEN PRESTON⁹, born July 29, 1849; died Sept. 6, 1851.
- 3. SARAH PRESTON⁸, born in Salem, Mass., April 19, 1820; died there, Jan. 11, 1888, unmarried.
- 4. HARRIOT NEWELL PRESTON⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 9, 1821; died June 9, 1823.
- 5. HARRIOT ELIZABETH PRESTON⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 21, 1824; md. May 18, 1848, by the Rev. Samuel Worcester, D.D., George Washington Kingsley, son of James and Lydia (Owen) Kingsley; he born in Salem, Mass., June 28, 1823; baker; both living in 1885 in Salem, Mass. His father born in Danvers, Mass., in 1786; his mother born in Salem, Mass. Mr. Kingsley is a Past Grand Mason of the Essex Lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows.

Children were:—

- (a) DAVID PRESTON KINGSLEY⁹, born June 5, 1849; md. March 20, 1872, Nora Josephine Griffin, dau. of James F. and Sarah (Hayes) Griffin. Children four. All resided in 1885 in Norwood, Mass.
- (b) REUBEN SANBORN KINGSLEY⁹, born July 9, 1850; md. Feb. 8, 1871, Margaret Ann Lawrence, dau. of John and Margaret Lawrence. Children three.
- (c) GEORGE SOMERS KINGSLEY⁹, born March 2, 1852; died Oct. 11, 1881, unmarried.
- (d) FRANK DONALDSON KINGSLEY⁹, born June 10, 1859; md. Nov. 28, 1879, Georgianna Brown Dearborn. They had two children, both living in 1885, in Salem, Mass.
- (e) HARRY KENDALL KINGSLEY⁹, born April 21, 1870.
- 6. DAVID BROWN PRESTON⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 28, 1826; died Nov. 11, 1847, of consumption preinduced by a fall on the ice, striking his knee, which caused a white swelling. His limb was amputated Dec. 10, 1834; consumption followed, of which he died.
- 67. BENJAMIN DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., April 26, 1790; died Sept. 16, 1794.
- 68. MARY DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 5, 1791; died Nov. 12, 1793.
- 69. MICHAEL DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 27, 1793; died Jan. 20, 1814.
- 70. BENJAMIN DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 9, 1794; died Oct. 30, 1797.
- 71. MARY DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., April 21, 1796; died Oct. 4, 1797.
- 72. ELIZA DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 15, 1798; died there, June 14, 1884, at the house of William H. Kendall, where she had gone to pay a visit; md. Jan. 25, 1840, Nathaniel Alley, who died in 1862; resided in Lynn, Mass. No issue.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XVI.

THOMAS POYNTON DRIVER⁶ (No. 49), son of Capt. Michael⁵ (Capt. Michael⁴, William³, Robert², Robert¹) and Sarah (Bray) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., March 22, 1766; died Aug. 2, 1798, from wounds received at the Battle of the Nile, Aboukir Bay, Egypt, in a naval engagement; md. June 26, 1791, Rebekah Wellman ("Salem Gazette," issue of June 28, 1791); she dau. of Samuel and Mary (Kempton) Wellman; bapt. June 1, 1766, in the Tabernacle Church (Baptist) of Salem, Mass.; died about 1848. (See Appendix, Wellman Family, No. 11.)

Thomas was an expert and efficient seaman, and made many voyages; but tradition and record have preserved the account of but two, — his first and last voyages.

The first was made when thirteen years of age, as found on the public records, thus: —

"Thomas Poynton Driver, aged 13, sailor, light complexioned, 4 ft. 10 in. high, belonged to Salem, on board ship Pilgrim, Joseph Robinson, Commander, Sworn to 4th Aug. 1780, before Warwick Palfray, naval officer, Salem."

The exact date of his last voyage from Salem, or the name of the vessel, are known only with doubt; but it is known that it was in the year 1798, when he was thirty-two years of age, and that his vessel was seized by the English, taken as a prize to England, condemned, and Thomas impressed on board the English ship "Goliath," T. Foley master, a seventy-four gunship, of the fleet of Earl St. Vincent, which, with twelve other seventy-fours, were being made ready to send to Admiral Nelson to reinforce his fleet, in the expedition to Egypt to subdue the French under Napoleon. Consequently, all seamen, wherever found, were seized upon for this service.

Thomas, for some reason not now known, was placed on board the "Goliath" at one of the guns. Soon after sailing, they met an American vessel and gave chase. Thomas was ordered to fire, which promptly he refused to do, saying, "he never could or would be guilty of firing on his own countrymen." This misdemeanor was punishable with the lash; accordingly Thomas was bound to the breech of his gun, and received forty lashes from a right and left cat-o'-nine-tails in hand of two British seamen, — the greatest indignity a mariner can suffer. Again he was ordered to fire, and again he refused, adding with strong language, "he would die first, and then he would n't." This was threatened to be reported to the British Admiralty, for which he cared not; fire he would not, and did not, — which probably established his reputation for

bravery, and presumably saved him from being put in irons, — the usual punishment for a like offence; also the approaching action needed all brave men actively engaged, rather than helpless in irons.

"The French fleet arrived at Alexandria on the first of July, Admiral Brueys in command. He moored his ships in Aboukir Bay, not being able to enter the port, which time and neglect had ruined; the headmost vessel being as close to a shoal on the N. W. as possible, and the rest of the fleet of thirteen ships of the line, and four frigates, carrying eleven hundred and ninety-six guns and eleven thousand two hundred and thirty men, formed a kind of curve along the line of deep water, thus moored in such a manner as to bid defiance to a force more than double their own.

The English ships, of which the 'Goliath' was a part, were all seventy-fours, thirteen in number, and one fifty-gunship carrying ten hundred and twelve guns, and eight thousand and sixty-eight men, did not reach Aboukir Bay till the first of August, about ten in the morning. At four in the afternoon Capt. Hood, in the 'Zealous,' made the signal for the enemy's fleet.

As the English squadron advanced, they were assailed by a shower of shot and shells from the batteries on the island, and the enemy opened a steady fire from the starboard side of their whole line, within half gun-shot distance, full into the ships. It was received in silence. Capt. Foley led the way in the 'Goliath,' out-sailing the 'Zealous,' which for some minutes disputed this post of honor with him. Intending to fix himself on the inner bow of the 'Guerrier,' because he considered that the guns on that side of the French ship were not ready for action, he kept as near the edge of the bank as the depth of water would admit; but his anchor hung, and having opened his fire, he drifted to the second ship, the 'Conquérant,' before it was clear; then anchored by the stern, inside of her, and in ten minutes shot away her mast. Hood, in the 'Zealous,' took the station which the 'Goliath' intended to have occupied, and totally disabled the 'Guerrier' in twelve minutes. The third ship which doubled the enemy's van was the 'Orion,' Sir J. Saumarez commander. She passed to windward of the 'Zealous,' opened her larboard guns; then passing inside of the 'Goliath,' sunk a frigate which annoyed her, hauled round towards the French line, and anchoring inside, between the fifth and sixth French ships, took her station on the larboard bow of the 'Franklin.' The 'Audacious,' Capt. Davidge Gould commander, fixed herself on the larboard bow of the 'Conquérant,' and when that ship struck, passed on to the 'Peuple Souverain.' The 'Theseus,' Capt. R. W. Miller, followed, brought down the 'Guerrier's' remaining main and mizzen-masts, then anchored inside the 'Spartiate,' the third in the French line. The other four ships of Nelson's division were the 'Minotaur,' Capt. T. Louis; 'Bellerophon,' Capt. H. D. E. Darby; 'Defence,' Capt. John Peyton; and 'Majestic,' Capt. C. B. Westcott, which with the 'Vanguard,' Capt. Berry, on board of which was Admiral Nelson, anchored on the outside of the enemy, within half pistol-shot of their third ship, the 'Spartiate;' but the 'Culloden,' Capt. Trowbridge, was fast aground, nor could he with the assistance of the 'Leander' and the 'Mutine' brig get off in time to bear a part in the action. His ship, however, served as a beacon to the

'Alexander' and 'Swiftsure,' which would else inevitably have been lost on the reef from the course they were taking in the darkness.

The 'Vanguard' opened a tremendous fire, and in a few minutes every man stationed at the first six guns in the fore part of the deck was killed or wounded. These guns were three times cleared. Nelson himself received a severe wound on the head, which from its profuse bleeding was deemed mortal, both by Capt. Berry and himself, and he made preparations accordingly while waiting to have it dressed, not allowing the surgeon to so do till his turn came. He appointed Capt. Hardy to command his own ship, Capt. Berry to go home with the news of the victory, then he dictated his dispatches; when his wound was dressed, the surgeon stated that it was merely superficial, but to keep quiet.

A cry came the 'Orient' was on fire. In the confusion Nelson, unassisted and unnoticed, made his way on deck, and to the astonishment of every one gave orders that boats should be sent to the relief of the enemy. About seventy of the crew were saved by the English boats, but among the many hundreds who perished were the commodore, Casa-Bianca, and his son, a brave boy, only ten years old.

By daybreak the next day the 'Guillaume Tell' and the 'Généreux,' the two rear ships of the enemy, were the only French ships of the line which had their colors flying; they cut their cables in the forenoon, not having been engaged, and stood out to sea, and two frigates with them. The 'Zealous' pursued; but as there was no other ship in a condition to support Capt. Hood, he was recalled. Thus ended the battle of the Nile, fought in Aboukir Bay, Aug. 2, 1798. If Nelson had not been wounded, it was generally believed by the officers that not one of the French vessels could have escaped; but as it was, the victory was the most complete and glorious in the annals of naval history."—Abstract from the "Life of Nelson," by Robert Southey, Esq., Poet Laureate.

In this Battle of the Nile, Thomas Poynton Driver lost his life. Whether he died instantly, or subsequently from his wounds, can never be known, as those who for a certainty could tell joined him long ago, while from those yet living could only be learned that the news of his death reached Salem a full year after the event. Travel at that date being dangerous, was consequently slow. When to the honor of the British Admiralty he is told that his entire wages, his prize-money, together with his chest of clothes, were sent to his widow, — "on account of his great bravery," was the message accompanying them, which bravery appeared in more than one of his descendants, as will be shown.

Administration on his estate was not granted his widow, Rebekah, till March 20, 1799, when she gave bonds with Benjamin Driver, and Stephen Driver, Jr., her brothers-in-law.

Inventory of his estate was \$840.25, as taken by Joseph Henfield, Samuel Sweetser, and John Pinchard, March 4, 1800.

Among the items mentioned was the eastern end of a dwelling-house, the land under and adjoining in Church Street, \$750, and a bond of Hannah Poynton for \$256.66.

This house is said to have stood where now there is a thoroughfare running between the Essex House on Church and Essex Streets, Salem.

Rebekah Driver lived there in 1813, when the boats from the 64-gun frigate "Poictiers" chased the schooner "Portland," Sinclair, master, during the night into Salem Harbor, causing much fright to the citizens. Guns were fired and bells were rung to rouse the people to action and warn them of the impending danger.

Rebekah was alone in her house, her husband being dead, and her only child, a girl, was married and lived some distance away. Stephen Driver, Jr., her brother-in-law, lived at the head of Broad Street, quite a long distance from the harbor, and far from the conflict; but he remembered how near it Rebekah lived alone, and that some one should go and remove her to a place of safety; so he hurriedly dressed, seized his gun, his good wife holding the light for him to load it, at the same time cautioning him to be sure and not hurt any one if he had to fire; arrived at Rebekah's house, where he found her sitting in the entry on her husband's chest of clothes, ready for whatever was to take place, with nine beautiful valenciennes lace caps on her head, one above the other, which caused her brother Stephen to laugh loud enough to be heard above the noise of the guns outside, at the same time asking her "what would be the use of her saving her caps if her house was to be taken from her?" "This use," she said, "that the British ruffians shall not have one of them either for their wives or sweethearts, nor my husband's clothes, having already taken enough from me." But she did not have occasion to go out with them on, for the firing soon ceased, the boats withdrew, and quiet again reigned in Salem.

Child of **Thomas Poynton** and **Rebekah (Wellman) Driver**
was: —

73. **REBECCA DRIVER**⁷, born in Salem, Mass., in 1792; died of consumption there in 1846; md. July 7, 1811, Joseph Dalton, son of Edward and Sarah (Moses) Dalton. (See Appendix, Moses Family, No. 29.) He was born in Salem, date not found, and from 1818 to 1846 was the head of the shoe firm of J. & E. M. Dalton. How much longer he lived after 1846 was not obtained. According to his son, Eleazer Moses Dalton, living in Salem in 1885, aged ninety years, Edward Dalton came from Ireland when quite a young man, and settled in Salem, Mass. He was actively engaged in the Revolution, and died March 3, 1851.

"The name Dalton is derived from the town of Dalton, in Lancashire, England, a corruption of Dale-ton, the town in the dale; or D'Alton, abbreviated

to Dalton, that is, from the high and rocky hill." — *ARTHUR, Derivation of Fam. Names*, p. 110.

Felt, in his "Annals of Salem," states that on Feb. 19, 1782, "the American privateer 'Junius Brutus,' carrying 20 guns and 110 men, brought a prize into Salem." In the "Historical Collections of the Essex Institute," Vol. I. p. 112, a brief sketch is given of this privateer, with a list of the officers and seamen, among whom are named "Capt. John Brooks, who had nine shares in the prize; Lieut. Wm. Patterson (probably the father of Benj. Patterson, who married Mary Barnes, then a lieutenant, afterwards a captain), six shares; Edward Dalton, gunner (father to the abovesaid Joseph), three shares; Oliver Kempton Wellman (brother to Rebekah (Wellman) Driver), seaman, one share; and Thomas Driver (then 16 years old), seaman, three fourths of a share; Thomas Webb, prize-master, three shares; Stephen Archer, prize-master, three shares; and John Archer, seaman, three fourths of a share," — all connected with the family.

Children of **Joseph and Rebecca (Driver) Dalton** were eight, all born in Salem, Mass.; viz.: —

1. **THOMAS DRIVER DALTON**⁸, born Oct. 5, 1812; died in 1862 or 4; md.

Sarah Newell, of Marblehead, Mass. (date not given); she died in Boston in 1853. She was the niece of the wife of Robert Osborne, a nephew of Robert Foster, who in 1775 had a quantity of cannon belonging to the Provincial Congress stored in the cellar of his house, which he was informed while in church, Feb. 26, 1775, would be seized by three hundred British soldiers, then coming to Salem by the way of Marblehead. He instantly ran out of church, shouting at the door "The British are coming," started home on the run, ordering at the same time that the bridge should be raised to stop the British crossing over into Salem. He is said to have had a high, shrill voice, and for that reason his order was heard two miles, where some minute-men, under Col. Timothy Pickering, were stationed, who hastened to impede the soldiers under Col. Leslie. This delay gave Mr. Foster time to remove the cannon to a piece of woods in North Salem, near Gen. Devereux's homestead. Then the bridge was lowered, the British allowed to march into Salem as far as Mason Street, then, returning the way that they came, reached Boston without the cannon. This account, of Col. Leslie's retreat was voluntarily furnished the Compiler by the grandson of Robert Foster, and differs a little from another account, to be found in the Appendix. If Col. Leslie had succeeded in this, the Revolutionary War would have commenced in Salem, instead of Lexington. *Thomas D. Dalton md. 2d. and had Rufus & a dau.*

The children of **Thomas Driver Dalton and Sarah (Newell)**

were: —

- (a) **REBECCA DALTON**⁹, born about 1834; died in 1883; md. — Hall, of Boston.
- (b) **JOSEPH HENRY DALTON**⁹, born about 1835.
2. **JOSEPH ALLEN DALTON**⁸, born Jan. 6, 1814; md. Nov. 29, 1838, Mary Fairfield, dau. of Samuel and Esther (Rye) Fairfield; she born March 22, 1814; died July 21, 1887.

Children were : —

- (a) SARAH ELIZA DALTON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., May 22, 1839; living in Philadelphia, Pa., in 1885; md. in 1863 Thorndike Chase, son of George C. and Mary (Bray) Chase, of Salem, Mass. They had two children die in infancy; also Frank Chase¹⁰, born May 15, 1864; living in Salem, unmarried, in 1885; clerk in the post-office.
- (b) SAMUEL DALTON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., June 25, 1840; md. March 9, 1863, Hannah Frost Nichols, dau. of William Frye and Abigail (Buffington) Nichols, and had issue, Edith Buffington¹⁰, born Dec. 10, 1869, and Robert Osborne¹⁰, born June 12, 1879.

Mr. Samuel Dalton in 1861 was a private in the Salem Cadets; he enlisted in Company D, 14th Mass. Regiment, for the War of the Rebellion. He was promoted to Sergeant, then to Second Lieutenant, then First Lieutenant in the said regiment, which subsequently became the First Mass. Heavy Artillery. In 1864 he was mustered out, when he rejoined the Salem Cadets as a private. In 1866 he was elected Captain of the Cadets, then Major, and afterwards Lieutenant-Colonel. December, 1881, he was promoted to Colonel, and Inspector on the staff of Gov. Long, of Massachusetts. Jan. 4, 1883, he was made Adjutant-General of the State of Massachusetts, with rank of Brigadier-General. The characteristic traits of Thomas P. Driver certainly were inherited by this descendant, as also by others of the name of Dalton, as will be shown, for many of the Dalton family took active part in the late war.

- (c) JOSEPH FRANKLIN DALTON⁹, born April 19, 1842; md. June 14, 1866, Eliza J. — Trask, dau. of Thomas and Eliza (Treadwell) Trask, of Salem, Mass., and had issue, — Grace Garland¹⁰, born July 11, 1868; Harry Franklin¹⁰, born Aug. 3, 1871; Elizabeth Felt¹⁰, born March 23, 1873; Arthur Treadwell¹⁰, and Albert Fairfield (twins), born March 25, 1877; Arthur Fairfield died Sept. 30, 1877.

Mr. Joseph F. Dalton during the War of the Rebellion was clerk to Com. Preble, and at the taking of New Orleans, La., April 26, 1862, he was on one of the heavily armed vessels in Admiral Farragut's fleet.

He was Postmaster of Salem, Mass., from 1881 to 1885; Deputy-Collector of the Port of Salem, Mass., from 1873 to 1883; clerk at the Custom House, Salem, Mass., from 1865 to 1873; member of the City Council in 1872 and 1873; School Committee in 1885; member of the Salem Cadets since 1865, of which in 1885 he was the commander, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel.

- (d) LARKIN DALTON⁹, born Jan. 21, 1849; living in Salem, Mass., in 1885, unmarried.
 - (e) GRACE FAIRFIELD DALTON⁹, born July 19, 1854; living in Salem, Mass., in 1885, unmarried. A vocalist of high local reputation.
3. SAMUEL MOSES DALTON⁸, born June 4, 1818; died in 1836 in Calcutta.
 4. REBECCA DRIVER DALTON⁸, born June 3, 1820; died Aug. 20, 1821.
 5. EDWARD HENRY DALTON⁸, born June 7, 1821; died in 1872 at Tewksbury, Mass., where he was a supervisor of the Insane Asylum; md. in 1846 Sarah Vanderford. No issue.
 6. ELEAZER MOSES DALTON⁸, born March 15, 1824; died April 30, 1825.
 7. ELEAZER MOSES DALTON⁸, born May 29, 1825; died June 22, 1864; md. April 21, 1850, Elizabeth Rebecca Wilson, dau. of Jacob and Sarah (Gardner) Wilson; she born June 19, 1828; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 20, 1860.

Mr. Eleazer M. Dalton during the War of the Rebellion was a private in Company D, First Mass. Heavy Artillery. He was in the engagement at Petersburg,

June 16, 1864, made by Gen. Grant against Gen. Lee. After the battle his nephew, Samuel Dalton, an officer in the same regiment, found him dead on the battle-field. He was buried on the field. Children were:—

- (a) ELIZABETH REBECCA DALTON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 28, 1853; died Jan. 16, 1882, unmarried.
- (b) EDWARD HENRY DALTON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., April 17, 1856; living there in 1885; md. Oct. 6, 1876, Georgianna Francis Smith, dau. of Charles Timothy and Achsah (White) Smith, and had issue: Mary Brown¹⁰, born Feb. 3, 1877; George Howard¹⁰, born Dec. 11, 1880; Harry Ernest¹⁰, born Sept. 18, 1879; Ralph Edward¹⁰, born April 19, 1882.
- 8. WILLIAM THATCHER DALTON⁸, born Nov. 17, 1850; md. first, Feb. 12, 1854, Lydia Brown, dau. of Jonathan and Mary Brown, of Salem, Mass., where she was born April 8, 1832, and died Nov. 26, 1862; md. second, Aug. 20, 1877, Mary Hill Crandall. No issue. He was living in 1885 in Salem, Mass. In the War of the Rebellion he served in the Union Army from 1862 to 1864, but the rank or regiment was not obtainable. Children of first marriage were:—
 - (a) ANNIE DALTON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 9, 1856; md. Sept. 27, 1879, William Summers Goldthwait, son of Aaron and Mary Goldthwait, and had issue, Arthur Peabody¹⁰, born April 8, 1880.
 - (b) MARY BROWN DALTON⁹, born April 8, 1858; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass., unmarried.
 - (c) WILLIAM HENRY DALTON⁹, born March 4, 1860; died Oct. 28, 1860.
 - (d) CAROLINE LYDIA DALTON⁹, born Nov. 12, 1862; died Sept. 10, 1863.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XVII.

STEPHEN DRIVER⁶, Jr. (No. 51), son of Capt. Michael⁶ (Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Sarah (Bray) Driver; grandfather of the compiler; called "Junior" because his second cousin Stephen, No. 40, was living at the same time in Salem, Mass., neither of whom had a middle name.

He born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1772; died there, at the house of his son Stephen, March 24, 1850; buried in the family tomb, Broad Street Burial-ground; md. June 27, 1795, Ruth Metcalf, dau. of Joseph and Catherine (Neal) Metcalf; she born in Salem, Mass., within sight of Castle Hill, Nov. 6, 1770; died in Salem, Mass., in her house at the head of Broad Street, next the Great Pasture, Aug. 24, 1837; buried in the family tomb (see Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 24, and Neal Family, No. 39).

Joseph Metcalf, her father, was son of Thomas and Ruth (Flint) Metcalf, and grandson of Joseph and Sarah Metcalf (see Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 22, and Flint Family, No. 34). Catherine Neal, her mother, was the daughter of Robert Neal and Catherine (Daland) — see Appendix, Daland Family, No. 10, and Neal Family, No. 47. She baptized, together with her twin brother Robert, in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 15, 1740-1, whom the compiler of the "Neal Genealogy" failed in any way to record, only giving Robert, her brother.

The family always considered her to have descended from the Neals of that name in Ireland, who for so many hundred years held rule there; but these Neals of Salem, as far as can be traced, have been shown in the "Neal Genealogy" and in the Appendix of this book to have been of English origin; which see.

Ruth Metcalf, aforesaid (as stated in the Metcalf Family, No. 20, Appendix), was left an orphan at about four years of age, at which time her father, Joseph Metcalf, entered the Continental army, and Ruth was adopted by his sister, Abigail (Metcalf) Cutler, known to the family as "Aunt Cutler," who had no children of her own. She tenderly reared and carefully educated Ruth, even teaching her to write, — a great accomplishment for girls at that date, who were only taught reading, spelling, catechism, and plain and ornamental sewing.

Schools were only for boys, and the first one opened in Salem, Mass., was in 1637 called the Latin School; here "English, Latin, Greek, good manners, and the principles of Christian religion were taught." "In 1699, writing, cyphering, and reading were introduced. Part of the year school time was from 7 A. M. to 4 P. M.; the other part from 8 A. M. to 5 P. M., with no vacation. Girls were not admitted to schools in Salem till 1793, then not as associates or equals of boys. They had to attend the hour at noon the boys took for luncheon, and an hour after school at night." — *Sketch of Salem*. Accordingly, for a girl to be able to write as early as 1776 was a great accomplishment, and something to be talked about for life, which Ruth ever did with great pride to her daughter Harriot, mother of the Compiler, with whom she lived till her death, and who contributed the information.

Ruth, when about fifteen years of age, had the great misfortune to lose by death her Aunt Cutler, who left the house they were living in to her (Ruth); but in some way there was a flaw in the instrument, and thus Ruth was deprived of her house and home, as well as her aunt. Where she lived after her aunt's death, or who took charge of her until her marriage, which was a period of ten years, was not ascertained.

Stephen Driver, Jr., aforesaid, was a practical shoemaker, — so called at that time because he took apprentices to learn the trade. On the public records

he is styled a cordwainer, — which is incorrect, as that was a designation for a ladies' shoemaker, which he was not, and never was, as he made boots and shoes only for gentlemen. "The term cordwainer had its origin from Cordova, a city in the south of Spain, where a peculiar leather was manufactured for ladies' shoes. The word in Spanish is Cordoban; in the Portuguese, Cordovam; and in the French, Cordouan, whence the term Cordouaniers, or Cordwainers. In 1756, a leather made of the skins of the goats of Tafflet was introduced at Cordova, since called Morocco. It was superior to anything which had been previously used for the manufacture of ladies' shoes. The leather was designed for ladies' shoes, and those who worked on it would be considered as ladies' shoemakers, and hence cordwainers were originally ladies' shoemakers." — LEWIS, *History of Lynn*.

About 1794 Stephen Driver, Jr., together with Louis Tucker, as Tucker and Driver, commenced business in Salem, Mass., in a shop on Essex Street, nearly opposite the corner of Cambridge Street, — a two-story wooden building with an attic; Mr. Tucker furnishing the capital, and Mr. Driver the knowledge of the business.

They did work only for gentlemen, and at first only on shoes. The few boots made at this time were straight soles, high tops, with bands, often of white leather, and square toes. The sizes were few, and just two different widths; but one day a midshipman, named John Hill, gave Mr. Driver an order for a pair of high top-boots to be made right and left, with set wrinkles over the instep; consequently Mr. Driver had to prepare a last for this order, as it was the first ever given in Salem. The boots were made and sent home, but they gave Mr. Hill no end of trouble, for he ever failed to remember that they were left and right, and as they were skin-tight, according to order, Mr. Driver was repeatedly sent for to take them off; this so annoyed him that he burned the lasts, and nothing could induce him to make another pair as long as he was in the business.

One day a farmer rode into Salem with produce to sell; and stopping at the door of Mr. Driver's shop, called out to know "what he charged to make a pair of shoes for a boy thirteen years old." Considering that the boy wore the size usual for his age, Mr. Driver replied, "One dollar and a half." About a week after, the farmer again came to town, with his son, who walked into the shop of Mr. Driver to have his foot measured; at a glance Mr. Driver saw that not a last for boys in his shop would fit this one, — which was proved, as the measure showed that elevens, a size for a large man, would be required to fit this boy. Mr. Driver had not in the shop a last of this size, having never before been called on to make so large a shoe for any one; again he prepared a last, for he had agreed to make a pair of shoes for this boy at a price, and he proposed to keep his word, — for which he was noted; but he never made a second pair of elevens, for as soon as the shoes were finished, the fire was fed with that pair of lasts.

About 1798 Messrs. Driver and Tucker dissolved partnership, Mr. Tucker opening a hotel in Salem, on the corner of Essex and Crombie Streets, called Tucker's Tavern, which he kept about sixteen years, when he sold out to one Grant, who after a time sold to Jabez Barton, when it was called Barton's

Tavern, and the square, or block, as Barton's Square. Mr. Tucker bought a farm south of Salem, back of the old millpond, where he lived till his death. Mr. Driver continued the boot and shoe business alone, a neighbor, Mr. Peirce, furnishing him with a loan sufficient to so do. He put six journeymen in the chambers of his shop to make the boots and shoes, and six down stairs with himself to do the cutting. As his three sons, Stephen, Thomas, and Joseph, became old enough, they entered their father's shop to learn the trade.

In 1816 his son Stephen, then nineteen years of age, desiring to commence business for himself, bought his time of his father, and took a shop on Front Street, where the Walwork Block now stands (1885). The firm was Stephen Driver, Jr., & Son, on account of the son being a minor, and obliged to use his father's name and credit.

In 1822 the next eldest son, Thomas, left his father's shop to enter that of his brother Stephen, who, at the continual solicitations of the ladies of Salem, had extended his business to making shoes for them, as well as for the gentlemen. Thus he was obliged to take a larger shop and a partner who could devote all his time to the work of this shop. Accordingly Thomas bought out his father's interest with his brother Stephen, and the firm then became Stephen and Thomas Driver.

This shop was on Essex Street, then called Old Paved Street, a few doors west of Court Street (now Washington Street), present number 156.

Joseph Driver was now the only son working for the father; but he was not at all interested in his work, having long desired to study for the ministry, and thus was anxious to prepare himself to enter college, consequently was much more interested in books. In this he was encouraged by his brothers, who together had long talks how among six boys one should be a minister, and as Joseph was fond of reading and had written considerable poetry, it was considered that he was the one to preach. In all this the father had no sympathy, and whenever he found Joseph at work with a book suspended over his head, at the same time studying, he was anything but pleased, for with the prevailing notion of his day, he considered that all boys should have a trade, and confine themselves to it afterwards.

Nevertheless Joseph kept on with his work and study, and in 1824 entered the Sophomore Class at Harvard College. Thus the last son left the father, who continued his business until 1839 with the aid only of his journeymen. At the death of his wife he sold his business and shop, which the purchaser had bodily moved and placed on Summer Street, Salem, Mass., east of Broad Street Burial-ground, altering it to a dwelling-house, its number being No. 5. It was occupied as a tenement until within a few years. It still stands in 1886, yet shows the decay of its one hundred years.

Mr. Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence," says: "All other trades have fallen into their ranks and places, to their great advantage, especially Coopers and Shoemakers, who had either of them a corporation granted, enriching themselves by their trades very much. As for Tanners and Shoemakers it being naturalized with their occupations to have a higher reach in managing these manufactures than other men in New England are, having not changed their nature in this, between them both they have kept men to their stands hitherto almost doub-

ling the price of their commodities, according to the rate they were sold for in England, and yet the plenty of Leather is beyond what they had there, counting the number of the people, but the transportation of Boots and Shoes into forraign parts hath vented all however."

"June 1, 1698, the Court enacted 'that no person using or occupying the feat or mystery of a butcher, currier, or shoemaker, by himself or any other, shall use or exercise the feat or mystery of a Tanner, on pain of the forfeiture of six shillings and eight pence for every hide or skin so tanned.'

They also enacted that no Tanner should exercise the business of a butcher, currier, or shoemaker. 'And no butcher shall gash or cut any hide, whereby the same shall be impaired, on pain of forfeiting twelve pence for every gash or cut.'

It was also enacted that no 'shoemaker or cordwainer shall work into Shoes, Boots, or other wares, any leather that is not tanned and curried as aforesaid, nor shall use any leather made of horses hide for the inner sole of any such boots or shoes on pain of forfeiting all such shoes and boots.' — LEWIS, p. 186.

In 1801 Stephen Driver, Jr., became a member of the Salem Cadets, — a regiment instituted there Dec. 6, 1786, at which time it was called "Salem Independant Cadets." Soon after joining he was made First Lieutenant, which office he held as long as he belonged to the regiment.

The regimental dress at this date was a red broadcloth coat, white small-clothes, white stockings, buckled shoes, ruffled bosoms and bands, and a three-cornered hat. This uniform was very becoming to Mr. Driver, who was a tall, fine-looking person, being full six feet in height, good figure, — in short, considered a handsome man. He had his picture taken in this outfit, done in some preparation of wax then in use, which in course of time disappeared, — perhaps given away by himself, as he was noted for like acts of generosity.

Stephen Driver, Jr., was an original member of the Salem "Charitable Mechanic Association," instituted Oct. 1, 1817. He was also the captain of the "Danvers and Salem Sail Company," which company was a voluntary fire brigade, composed of the citizens of Salem and Danvers, Mass., whose implements for putting out fires were a large duck sail-cloth used to wet and cover roofs of houses to prevent their catching fire, or to smother those already on fire; ladders kept at convenient places at the corners of streets, under cover, and hand-buckets. These hand-buckets were made of leather, and ornamented, and each member was required to own two, and keep them hanging in their front hall, — called in Salem, entry, — handy to the stairs and front door, to seize as they ran to the fire. These buckets were used to pass the water from the cisterns to the tubs of the fire-engines, or to directly throw the water on the fire. Where in one family several were members of the fire brigade, the ceiling of the front entry presented a funny appearance, hung full of these fire-buckets, which were not at all noted for beauty.

Each member had to carry a large bag made of duck, and a bed-key; in the bag they packed the bedding as they stripped the beds, and with the bed-key they took down the beds, preparatory to throwing them out of the windows. The bedding at that date was considered very valuable, consisting of an enormous feather-bed, bolster and pillows, blankets, comfortables, bed-curtains and valances, quilts and linen.

As this is a history more particularly for the family, it may be of interest

to know that Mr. Driver could not sing at all, although many of his children did, and many of his descendants do; but Mrs. Driver did, and that very sweetly. As Ruth Metcalf, she attended the singing-school kept by Mr. Lowell Mason, a teacher of note, and whose hymns are still in use. He had a way of trying every one's voice who came to the school more times than once.

One night he requested Mr. Driver to stand up and have his voice tried; striking the tuning-fork, he required him to sound "Do." Mr. Driver tried, and made nothing but a grunt, which displeased Mr. Mason, who fiercely asked him "Why he kept coming there all the time, when he had not the voice of a frog?" Mr. Driver promptly replied, "To see Miss Metcalf home." What happened next was not told.

The first piece of broadcloth made in New England was at the factory of Richard Crowningshield, at South Danvers,—olive-green in color. Mr. Driver had a coat made from it,—the first in Salem,—with bright brass buttons, with which he wore a red vest and brass buttons, and a white cravat. This was the extreme of the style at that date. Several of his children distinctly remembered this suit, and often made mention of it. But he never would powder his hair, or wear high top-boots with white bands.

"Aug. 7, 1822; — Stephen Driver Jr. and Hannah Dodge, widow, John Preston, mariner, and wife Sally, Eliza Driver, single, Eunice Barnes, widow, and James Marvin, cordwainer, and wife Mary all of Salem, Nathaniel S. Foster of —, bricklayer, and wife Sarah, and Elizabeth Barnes, single, of Cincinnati, Ohio, for \$136.90, convey to Joseph Dalton, cordwainer, the west end of a dwelling house and land under it bounded N. on Church St.; E. on land of heirs of Thomas Driver, dec'd; S. on heirs of Benjamin Webb dec'd; and W. on land of Abijah Chase.

Eleazer Moses Dalton, Witness."

Children of **Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver** were :

74. RUTH DRIVER¹, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 9, 1796; died there Feb. 20, 1822; buried in Howard Street ground; md. by Dr. James Flint, Aug. 24, 1817, Charles Millet, son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Masury) Millet, of Salem, Mass., where he was born May 7, 1793, and there died June 6, 1878; buried in Harmony Grove, Salem; master mariner. He married, second, Aug. 10, 1824, Sarah Archer, dau. of Nathaniel and Sally (Beckford) Archer; she born in Salem, Mass., July 6, 1797; died there Feb. 18, 1877.

The family of Millets descended from Thomas Millet, who sailed from England, "Aprilis 1635 In the Elizabeth de Lo (London) W^m. Staggs Mr. prd. theis vnder writen names brought out; from minister of St. Saviors Southwark of their conformite Tho: Millet 30. Joshua Wheat 17. Maria Millet uxor 29. Jo: Smith 12. Versula Greenoway 32: Ralph Chapman 20: Henrie Bull 19: Tho. Millet 2."

Thomas Millet settled in Dorchester, where he lived till after 1647. Babson, in his "History of Gloucester," says: "He came here with the rare title of 'Mr.' — a distinction to which he was entitled by the place he filled in the church, for he was the successor of Elder William Perkins, of whom he bought a house and land in 1655, and all the land he owned in the town. Mr. Millet's name does not appear

among the ministers of his time, yet the Court records of March, 1658, show Thomas Millet, plaintiff, against William Stevens, 'for withholding a wrighting of the subscription of the inhabitants of Gloster for payment of their several sums to Mr. Millet for his labours among them, and his own proportion included, which is 50 shillings.' The jury gave a verdict in favor of the plaintiff." His wife was Mary Greenoway, dau. of John Greenoway, she born in England in 1606; died in Gloucester, Mass., Jan. 5, 1682. Their children born in Dorchester, Mass., were:

- (a) JOHN MILLET, born in 1635.
- (b) JONATHAN MILLET, born in 1638, died same year.
- (c) MARY MILLET, born in 1639.
- (d) MEHITABLE MILLET, born in 1641.
- (e) NATHANIEL MILLET, born in 1647; md. at Gloucester, Mass., Ann Lister, dau. of Andrew Lister (tavern-keeper at Gloucester, Mass., in 1648) and Barbarie, and had eleven children, of whom Nathan ², born in 1685, md. Feb. 3, 1709, Sarah Babson. They had Jonathan Millet ⁴, born Feb. 9, 1713, who married at Salem, Mass., May 15, 1734, Mary Henfield, dau. of Joseph and Lydia. They had Jonathau Millet ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 25, 1735, who married, Sept. 14, 1758, Sarah Mansfield, dau. of Benjamin and Sarah (Hardy) Mansfield. They had eight children, of whom Jonathan Millet ⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 12, 1764, married, Nov. 30, 1788, Elizabeth Masury. They had seven children, viz.:—

- (n) JONATHAN MILLET ⁷, born 1791; lost at sea in 1821.
- (b) CHARLES MILLET ⁷, born May 7, 1793; md. first, Ruth Driver; second, Sarah Archer above-said.
- (c) WILLIAM MILLET ⁷, born in 1795; lost at sea young.
- (d) ELIZA MILLET ⁷, born in 1798.
- (e) NATHAN MILLET ⁷, born in 1800; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.
- (f) JOSEPH MILLET ⁷, born in 1802; died in 1868, whose ^{very} kindly contributed the record of this family; also the account of the English family, as follows: "The emigrant Thomas Millet descended from John Myllet of Redwood, near Leominster, Co. of Hereford, England. He married Aarea, daughter of John Martin. His second son was Henry Myllet of Chertsey, gent., attorney-at-law, Staples Inn, Holbourn, London; buried at Chertsey, Jan. 6, 1630, by name Henry Millet, senior. He married Jane, daughter of John Chapman of Chertsey, who was there buried, Aug. 30, 1628, as wife of Mr. Henry Millet, Senior. They had sons Henry Myllet, Humphrey Myllet, Robert Myllet, and Thomas Myllet, the emigrant, who married Mary Grenoway."

(The Compiler desires to acknowledge Mr. Millet's valuable contribution, which not only made this family more interesting, but confirmed what had been obtained from other sources, — a favor not to be forgotten.)

Capt. Charles Millet, aforesaid, was a master mariner of considerable renown in New England, for twice he was the first person to open a foreign port to American trade, — first, in 1826, at Zanzibar, Africa; and second, at Australia, in 1832. The voyage to Zanzibar was made in the brig "Ann," owned by Henry Prince & Son, of Salem, leaving the port of Salem March 12, 1826, for Mocha, where he arrived June 26th. Here he found a great scarcity of breadstuff; so, after contracting for a homeward cargo of coffee, gums, &c., he left his clerk in charge of the business, and he left with his vessel for Zanzibar, Africa. There he obtained a cargo of small grain, called

by the natives *jonarree*, and also purchased ivory for the homeward cargo. Disposing of the grain advantageously on his return to Mocha, he shipped for Salem with his homeward cargo, where he arrived after an absence of fifteen months, May 9, 1827. This was the first *trade* with Zanzibar, but not the first vessel to enter her port.

This was not Capt. Millet's first voyage at sea, for in 1822, when his first wife died, he was absent on a long voyage, and on his arrival home his two brothers-in-law, Stephen and William Driver, went to meet him at the wharf and break to him the sad news of his bereavement, — a terrible blow to him, for he deeply loved his wife Ruth, and never forgot her all his long life, and ever spoke of her with tenderness in his voice to the last. (This tribute to his memory may the family kindly allow the Compiler to make.)

Aug. 9, 1827, Capt. Millet made a second voyage in the "Ann" to Zanzibar. This time he first visited other ports on the coast of Africa, for, Nov. 17th, he anchored in Lindy River, from thence sailed to a small port called Kissawaria, and arrived at Zanzibar on the 23d of November.

From Zanzibar he visited other places on the coast, — Montas, Hosee River, Lamo, and Brava. This was the first time the American flag had been seen at these ports. He arrived at Mocha Feb. 26, 1828.

Feb. 20, 1829, he sailed for home. Two days out the brig struck a hurricane. She lost her masts, and was otherwise disabled; and three men were washed overboard and lost. In this wrecked condition Capt. Millet proceeded on his way to Salem, where he arrived April 10, 1829, to the surprise of every one, even himself.

In the "Salem Gazette," issue of April 14, 1829, a full account of the disaster is given as follows: —

"Feb. 22, 1829, Brig Ann in lat. 38, long. 66.4, while lying to in a tremendous gale from the Westward, was struck by a sea, which swept overboard the 2d. mate and two men, carried away the mainmast &c. rendering the vessel a wreck.

About 9 A. M. was struck by another sea, in the stern, which stove in the dead lights, started the whole stern frame. In the afternoon of the 24th. the gale began to abate; 25th. being clear and pleasant secured the fore yard and set a fore sail, and the next day rigged the remains of the foretopmast, for a jury mainmast, and kept to the S. & W. as much as possible.

March 14th. spoke an English armed barque 5 days from Halifax, for Bermuda — had no means of supplying us with bread and water.

March 30th. spoke ship De Witt Clinton, of N. Y. and were supplied with water and small stores.

Spoke in the bay, schooners Salus, Gen. Jackson, and John George, 24 hours from Marblehead for Grand Bank. The humanity and liberality of Marblehead men cannot be too highly commended. The Salus insisted upon supplying us with small stores, of which we were destitute, and it was only by a determined refusal (having a fair wind and being near our port) that we were not more largely indebted to their liberality; both the other schrs. evinced their good feelings by offering to supply us.

She arrived at Salem 51 days after the disaster; when the wrecked and

shattered situation of the *Ann* attracted great crowds to view her on Saturday afternoon and Sunday.

Her preservation is deemed most remarkable and providential, and the skill and perseverance of Capt. Millet and his crew, in the means used for refitting and securing his vessel, and bringing her valuable cargo in safety to her destined port, are highly commended by all."

"The *Ann* was owned by Messrs. Henry Prince & Son — With them was associated as owners of the cargo Capt. Millet one twelfth part: Henry Ropes, one-third: Messrs. Silsbee, one-fourth; and one-third on acct. of Henry King and Michael Shepard."

The Insurance Companies of Salem, for the great skill and success of Capt. Millet and his crew, made what was then considered a very handsome acknowledgment to them, shown by the subjoined correspondence between a committee of the Insurance Companies, and Capt. Millet, and his clerk, Mr. Webster, of the brig "*Ann*," which letters appeared in the "*Salem Gazette*" of June 5, 1829, under heading of "Tribute of Perseverance" (in large type):

CAPT. CHARLES MILLET.

"SALEM, May 28, 1829.

Dear Sir, — Enclosed please find three hundred and thirty dollars, which you are requested to appropriate as follows: you will pay to Mr. Daniel Woodbury, the 1st. officer of brig *Ann*, the sum of \$60 — you will also pay to the following persons viz.: — Horace Tufts, William George Putnam, Widow of W^m Smith, seamen; Thomas Marberry, cook; James Smith, steward; the sum of \$30 each, which sum has been appropriated by the Insurance Companies in this place, as a small testimony of the regard which they deem due to the crew of the brig *Ann*, for their perseverance and indefatigable exertions in assisting the navigation of the said vessel into her port of destination, after she had been dismasted and otherwise seriously injured. As a committee appointed to communicate with you on this subject, we feel great pleasure in the duty incumbent on us, and beg leave to request that you should state to the persons above named, composing the crew of the brig *Ann*, that we do not consider the small sum of money appropriated for their benefit as a full compensation for their services, but as a stimulus for their future exertions when placed in a similar situation.

We remain very respectfully,

MR. TOWNSEND, JOHN WINN JR."

CAPT. CHARLES MILLET.

"SALEM, May 28, 1829.

Dear Sir — Accompanying this you will receive a service of Plate, tendered to you by the Insurance Companies of this place as a testimony of their regard due to you in consequence of your perseverance and successful exertions in navigating the brig *Ann* into this port, after having been dismasted and received other serious injuries.

The undersigned, a committee appointed by the Insurance Companies to carry into effect their appropriation for this purpose, have been instructed to say to you, that your conduct after the disaster alluded to merits their gratitude, which they freely confess — and we should embrace the present oppor-

tunity to state, while with pleasure we recollect the benefits which have accrued to the underwriters and owners of the *Ann*, in consequence of your perseverance, that we have great reason to regret the many instances that have occurred within the past year, where losses to a great amount have been sustained in consequence of the gross negligence and recklessness of some, and of the timidity of others — and we feel a double interest in favorably noticing the case of the *Ann*. In the first place, partially rewarding your successful experiment, and in the next place, hoping that others may be induced to follow your worthy example.

You will be pleased to accept the assurance of our mutual wishes for your welfare.

We remain, respectfully 'yours.'

"To MR. JOHN WEBSTER, late clerk of Brig *Ann* — Danvers.

SALEM, May 28, 1829.

Dear Sir — Accompanying this you will receive a silver Pitcher, tendered to you by the Insurance Companies in Salem, as a testimony of their regard for your exertions in assisting the navigation of the brig *Ann* into this port, after her very serious disaster. As a committee in behalf of the Insurance Companies, we would state that this duty assigned us is a very pleasant one, feeling that this favorable notice is richly merited by you.

Wishing you to accept the assurance of our mutual interest in your welfare,

We remain, very respectable yours."

This ends the account of Capt. Millet's most memorable voyage. The "service of plate" still remains in his family, sacredly kept and cherished by his daughters. It is not known that the "*Ann*" ever made another voyage; and in 1831 Capt. Millet is found in command of the brig "*Clay*," bound for the Feejee Islands. There he found that the brig "*Fawn*," James Briant, master, was lost; and that the captain and crew were waiting at these islands for a passage to some port. Capt. Millet took them all to Manilla, where they shipped for Salem.

Capt. Millet's second voyage, in which he opened first a foreign port to American trade, was made in 1832 in the "*Tybee*," of Salem, Mass.; and the port that of Australia.

On record is the following: "In 1832 by special order of the Council passed that year, the '*Tybee*,' Capt. Charles Millet, master, was allowed to enter the port of Australia."

In 1855 Capt. Millet retired from sea, and in 1856 received the appointment of Naval Officer of Salem, Mass., which he held till 1858; after which time he lived in retirement.

Children of **Capt. Charles and Ruth (Driver) Millet** were:

1. **RUTH DRIVER MILLET**^s, born in Salem, Mass., May 6, 1818; died there Sept. 2, 1856; buried in Harmony Grove, Salem. Her gravestone bears the following:—

"Each now asserts its claim
To what its sphere hath given
Take thou the faded flower, earth,
And thou its beauties, heaven."

Her mother's stone has : —

" All fierce disease with natures sharpest pangs, to spoil so fair a structure."

Ruth married Henry Elias Jenks, son of Elias and Lydia (Harvey) Jenks, of Salem; he born March 28, 1818; died Feb. 12, 1870. No issue. He md. second, April 29, 1858, Sarah F. Safford, who was living in 1885. Their children were:

- (a) ALICE MAUDE JENKS⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 26, 1859.
- (b) EDWARD JENKS⁹, born in Salem, Mass., July 18, 1860.
- (c) ALBERT JENKS⁹, born in Beverly, Mass., Oct. 31, 1861.
- (d) CHARLES HENRY JENKS⁹, born in Beverly, Mass., April 27, 1864; died in Somerville, Mass., Sept. 25, 1864.
- (e) MYRA JENKS⁹, born in Somerville, Mass., Sept. 22, 1865.
- (f) WILLIAM ARTHUR JENKS⁹, born in Somerville, Mass., July 5, 1868; died there Oct. 6, 1869.

All these children were living in 1885, unmarried.

Henry Elias Jenks was of the same family as the Jencks of Providence, R. I., to be found in the Ives Family, No. 31.

" Rev. William Jenks, D D., of Boston traces the line of descent of this family to Jenkyn Cambray of Wolverton, and through him to John ap Rees, Rees ap David, David ap Philip, Philip ap Lewelyn, and so on down to Athelstan, born in 927, the head of the fourth Royal Tribe of Wales. Athelstan was descended from Vortigern, who ruled the Britons from 454 to 485, A. D." — *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Register*, Vol. IX., p. 201.

The emigrant was Joseph Jenks, Sr., variously spelled Jencks, Jenckes, and Jenkes, who came from Hammersmith, England, supposed by Dr. Savage, as one of the workmen whom John Winthrop, Jr., engaged and brought over with him in 1643, in order to commence the iron works in Lynn, for Joseph is found in these works in 1645. These works were established on account of the great want of iron tools and ware, in the colony, which induced several persons to attempt the establishment of a forge, among whom were principally Thomas Dexter and Robert Bridges. In 1642 Mr. Bridges took some specimens of the ore, called bog iron, which had been found in large quantities in several places in Lynn, within a mile from the meeting-house, at a very early period to London, to see if he could form a company, to work it in New England. Many wealthy and enterprising gentlemen of London were induced to form a company, which was called the "Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works," for which they advanced one thousand pounds to commence the works. Mr. Bridges returned to Lynn, bought land on the west bank of Saugus River, and erected a foundry, which was the first established in America. These works yielded about seven tons per week. "The furnace runs eight tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish." So wrote Mr. Winthrop to his son in England, Sept. 30, 1649 (Lewis).

Joseph Jenks proved himself to be a machinist of great genius; he soon petitioned "for liberty to make experience of his abillities and Inventions for the making of engines for mills, to goe with water, for the more speedy despatch of worke than formerly, and mills for the making of sithes and other edge tooles, with a new Invented sawe-mill that things may be afforded cheaper than formerly, and that for fourteen yeeres without disturbance by any others setting up the like Invention, that so his study and costs may not be in wayne or lost, this peticon was graunted. so as power is still left to restrayne the exportation of such manufactures, and to moderate the prizes thereof if occacon so require." In 1654 the selectmen of Boston agreed with Mr. Joseph Jenks "for an Engine to carry water in case of fire." Thus he made the first fire-engine made in America; by his hands the first models

were made, and the first castings taken of many domestic implements and iron tools. Silver was found in the vicinity of Lynn, and a colonial mint was started to coin the "Pine Tree shillings," for which at the Iron Works Joseph Jenks made the die for the first impression in 1652. He petitioned the Government for the privilege to coin the money, but did not receive the appointment. In 1647 the agent for the works, Mr. Richard Leader, sold a privilege to Joseph Jenks to manufacture scythes.

Mr. Lewis in his "History of Lynn" says that "Joseph Jenks deserves to be held in perpetual remembrance in American history, as being the first founder, who worked in Brass and Iron on the western Continent."

When Mr. Jenks sailed for New England he was a widower, with one son, Joseph, whom he left in England with his grandmother, and where he remained until he was sixteen years old, when he arrived at Lynn, Mass., and went to live with his father. This was in 1648. Before 1649 his father married Elizabeth —. They had issue: 1. Sara, born in 1650; 2. Samuel, born in 1654; 3. Deborah, born in 1658; 4. John, born in 1660; 5. Daniel, born in 1663. The father died in Lynn, March, 1683, aged 81 years. The mother died July, 1679.

The son Joseph married in Lynn, Mass., Esther, daughter of William Ballard, a farmer. She, in 1652, was presented at the Quarterly Court for wearing silver lace, contrary to the following law, passed Oct. 14, 1651, by the General Court of Massachusetts, which "declared that intoreable excesses and bravery hath crept in upon us and especially among people of mean condition and their utter detestation and dislike that men of mean condition and callings should take upon them the garb of gentlemen by wearing gold or silver lace, or buttons, or points at their knees, to walk in great boots, or women of the same ranke, to wear silk or taffany hoods or scarfe, which though allowable to persons of greater estates, or more liberal education, they judge it intolerable in persons of such like condition; therefore with the exception of magistrates, or any publick officer of this jurisdiction, their wives and children, military officers or soldiers, or any other whose education or employment have been above the ordinary degree, or whose estates have been considerable, though now decayed, or who were not worth two hundred pounds, no person should transgress this law under penalty of ten shillings." What the decision was in the case of Esther Jenks does not appear, but it must have been of great moment at that date, for several authors make mention of it. Evidently the affair was distasteful to Joseph Jenks, Jr., for soon after he removed to Warwick, R. I., where laws were not so stringent, and where perhaps Esther could indulge her taste for finery. Subsequently he removed to Pawtucket, R. I., where he bought a large tract of land of the Indians. Here he built a forge, which was destroyed in King Philip's War; also a house, the first in that place. In 1681 he was one of the "Councillors" of the Government; he died in 1716, aged 84 years. From him all the Jenks, or Jencks, or Jenckes, of Rhode Island descended. His children were nine, — five daughters, and four sons. The eldest, Joseph, filled many important offices in the colony, and for five years was its Governor; he died June 15, 1740, aged 84. Another son, Nathaniel, was major of the militia, repeatedly representative for Providence, R. I.; he died in 1723, aged 61. Still another son, Ebenezer, was an elder in the Baptist Church of Providence, R. I.; he died May 14, 1726; and yet another son, William, was a judge, who died in 1765, aged 91.

The aforesaid Henry Elias Jenks, who married Ruth Driver Millet, descended from Joseph senior's second son, Major Nathaniel Jenks, who married Hannah Bosworth, and had Nathaniel, who married Lydia Arnold; they had Capt. Stephen Jenks, who lived at Pawtucket, R. I., where he married Sarah Hawkins, and died in 1800, aged 74. They had Nathaniel, born at Pawtucket, who married Content

Carpenter, and had Elias Jenks, father of the said Henry Elias. Elias was born at Pawtucket, R. I., Aug. 11, 1781, and when he was quite young his father removed to Brookfield, Mass., where he married for his second wife Phebe Hathaway, of that town. The children of his first marriage were Welcome, Nathaniel, *Elias*, John, Nancy, Content, and Catherine; by his second marriage were: Phebe, Tilley, Ira, Lyndon, and Otis. In 1795 he moved to Lyndon, Vt., where he resided till his death, November of 1830, aged 81. His son Elias from childhood showed a strong liking for mechanics. He spent his time making models, principally of boats. Thus the genius of his emigrant ancestor for making models appeared in this generation. He went to Salem (Lyndon, an inland town, not being suitable to develop his skill), date not known, and in 1807 he was laying the decks of the ship "Francis," as a ship carpenter; yet he never served a regular apprenticeship to the business, according to the fashion of the time. He rose steadily, and took a leading position among shipbuilders of Salem, continuing in that business till 1843, in which he was associated with Ichabod R. Hoyt.

He married in Salem, Mass., Sept. 8, 1811, Lydia Harvey, dau. of John and Lydia (Lander) Harvey; she died May 14, 1850, aged 69. Her father was born at Cowes, Isle of Wight, and came to Salem, Mass., about 1783; married there in 1788 Lydia Lander, and died in 1820.

Children of Elias and Lydia (Harvey) Jenks were: 1. Lydia; 2. Ann; 3. Catherine; 4. Louisa; 5. Henry Elias, the abovesaid, who married *Ruth Driver Millet*; 6. Maria; 7. Charles Augustus; 8. Sarah Ellen Harvey, who contributed this account of the Jenkses as found in the Essex Institute Collections for 1864; 9. George Franklin; 10. Emeline Augusta; 11. Ellen Lander; 12. Edward Harvey.

The name of Jenks originated with Robert Jenkes, of the manor of Wolverton, in the parish of Eaton-under-Eywood, Shropshire, Eng., as early as 1350, in the reign of Edward III.

This gentleman was the son of Jenkyn Cambrey, of that place, and of Dorothy, a daughter and co-heiress of Sir Walter Collyng, knight, of Church Stretton, in the same country.

(Some little of this account is to be found in the "Essex Institute Collections," Vol. XVIII. p. 246.)

2. CHARLES WILSON MILLET^s, born in Salem, Mass., June 28, 1820; died there, of water on the brain after measles, Dec. 8, 1821; buried in Howard Street Ground.

Children of second marriage were:—

3. SARAH ELIZABETH MILLETT^s (this second family added a second *t* to their name), born in Salem, Mass., April 14, 1825; died there, Dec. 19, 1847; buried in Harmony Grove, Salem; md. by Dr. Flint, March 6, 1845, to Elbridge Gerry Kimball, son of Nathaniel and Sarah Kimball; he born in Plaistow, N. H., Sept. 5, 1816; died in Salem, Mass., July 5, 1849. No issue.
4. MARY JANE MILLETT^s, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 12, 1826; living there in 1886, unmarried.
5. CAROLINE AUGUSTA MILLETT^s, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 1, 1830; died in Roxbury, Mass., Feb. 19, 1884; md. by Dr. Flint, Nov. 4, 1852, to Henry Johnson, son of Henry and Mehitabel (Putnam) Johnson; he born May 4, 1822. Children were:—

- (a) SARAH ELIZABETH JOHNSON^s, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 15, 1853; md. April 25, 1878, David Loring, Jr., son of David and Mary Hall (Stodder) Loring; he born in Boston April 7, 1852.

(b) CAROLINE LOUISA JOHNSON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 27, 1857; died June 6, 1857.

(c) CHARLES HENRY JOHNSON⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 29, 1859.

6. ELIZA ARCHER MILLETT⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 10, 1832; died at Saco Pool, N. H., Aug. 13, 1864; md. by Rev. Dexter Clapp, Dec. 30, 1856, to Simeon Peirce Folsom, son of Abraham and Abbey (Peirce) Folsom, of Dover, N. H. No issue.

7. REBECCA KING MILLETT⁸, born in Salem, Mass., April 18, 1838; md. by Rev. Dexter Clapp, Dec. 21, 1859, to Daniel Augustus Varney, son of Daniel and Louisa Jane (Hadley) Varney; he born in Salem, Mass., March 10, 1835.

Child was:—

(a) ANNA DANE VARNEY⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 19, 1860.

75. STEPHEN DRIVER⁷, 3d., born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 1, 1797; died at Beaver Brook, Danvers, Mass., Sept. 16, 1868; md. first, Jan. 14, 1821, Mary Beckford; md. second, Sept. 1, 1835, Susanna Payson Smith. (See Family XXII.)

76. THOMAS DRIVER⁷ (Rev.), born in Salem, Mass.; Sept. 5, 1799; died in Lynn, Mass., Jan. 2, 1873; md. May 20, 1822, Mehitable Luscomb. (See Family XXIII.)

77. JOSEPH METCALF DRIVER⁷ (Rev.), born in Salem, Mass., April 4, 1801; died in Windsor, Vt., Dec. 22, 1878; md. Nov. 29, 1828, Maria Antoinette Saunders. (See Family XXIV.)

78. WILLIAM DRIVER⁷ (Capt.), born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1803; died in Nashville, Tenn., March 2, 1886; md. first, Feb. 20, 1827, Martha Silsbee Babbage; md. second, Sept. 13, 1838, Mary Jane Parkes. (See Family XXV.)

79. GEORGE DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., May 7, 1805; died there, April 7, 1887; md. first, April 28, 1829, Mary Pitman; md. second, Aug. 12, 1835, Sophia Derby Field. (See Family XXVI.)

80. CATHERINE METCALF DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 4, 1807; died there, Aug. 15, 1861; named Metcalf by her brother Joseph, who claimed that if named for her grandmother she should bear the full name; buried in Harmony Grove, Salem; md. April 16, 1826, by Rev. John Brazier, to Ebenezer Buswell, son of Jacob and Betsey (Portle) Buswell, of Salisbury, Mass.; he born there Sept. 29, 1803, and died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 29, 1880. He md. second, Dec. 22, 1862, Mrs. Hannah Ward Hobart, widow of Capt. Charles Hobart, who died Aug. 27, 1852, aged 53. She was born Dec. 4, 1801, and died Dec. 1, 1876. No issue. (See Appendix, Babbage Family, No. 23.)

Ebenezer Buswell's emigrant ancestor was Isaac Buzzell, or Buzwell, which in course of time was changed to Buswell.

He settled in Salisbury, Mass., before 1648; for in that year "it was ordered that Isaac Buzwell, and George Carr shall have power to call upon Newbury to lay out the country way as far as belongs unto them from the island to Mr. Clark's farm."—*Salisbury Records*. Clark's farm was near Thurlow's bridge, so called.

He died July 8, 1683. His wife, Susan, died March 29, 1676. He had a son, John Walker Buzwell, who had a son Jacob, who had a son Jacob, father of the

abovesaid Ebenezer Buswell; hence, Ebenezer was of the fifth generation. There was a Jacob Buswell who first settled Bangor, Me., September of 1769, although a fort was there erected previous to 1756 by the French and called Norumbega, — a name meaning large or noble. To Jacob Buswell it was known as Kenduskeag, or Condeskeag, plantation; but Rev. Seth Noble, the first resident clergyman, was commissioned to apply to the Massachusetts General Court in 1791 for a town charter and a name. The contemplated name was Sunbury; but of his own accord he petitioned that the name be Bangor, after his favorite hymn-tune, and it accordingly was so named.

The said Ebenezer Buswell was known as Deacon Buswell, having for forty years occupied the position of deacon in the Old South Church of Salem, Mass.

From 1836 to 1880 Ebenezer Buswell was engaged in the boot and shoe business in Salem, Mass., having in 1836, together with his brother-in-law, George Driver, bought out the retail trade of Stephen Driver 3d., his brother-in-law, who at that date commenced the wholesale trade, as given under Family XXIII. This firm was Driver and Buswell, and the store was on Essex Street, above Washington Street, not far from the Essex House. George Driver withdrew in 1847 to assist his brother Stephen aforesaid in the wholesale business, and for thirteen years Ebenezer Buswell continued the business alone, till 1860, when Henry Morton entered into partnership with Mr. Buswell, under the firm name of Buswell & Morton, and so continued until 1867, when Mr. Morton withdrew, and Mr. William Leonard became associated with Mr. Buswell. This firm of Buswell & Leonard so continued till the death of Mr. Buswell in 1880. Mr. Leonard, in 1885, took his brother, James Leonard, in partnership with him, as W. & J. Leonard. They in 1887 are still together in the retail boot and shoe trade, in the same store where Mr. Buswell commenced in 1836, which is situated on Essex Street, No. 196.

As Mr. William Leonard married, second, the youngest daughter of Mr. Buswell, and continues his retail shoe business, it thus, after an unbroken succession of ninety-two years, remains in the Driver family, as Mrs. Leonard's grandfather was Stephen Driver, Jr., who commenced the business in 1794, as shown under Family XVII.

Children by **Ebenezer** and **Catherine Metcalf (Driver)**
Buswell were: —

1. CATHERINE BUSWELL⁸, born in Amsterdam, N. Y. (where her parents first lived after marriage), Jan. 29, 1827; died there Aug. 3, 1827.
2. HENRY BUSWELL⁸, born in Amsterdam, N. Y., Sept. 5, 1828; died there Nov. 19, 1828.
3. CATHERINE BUSWELL⁸, born in Andover, Mass., Feb. 12, 1831; died there May 14, 1831.
4. HARRIET D. BUSWELL⁸, born in Andover, Mass., Sept. 7, 1832; md. Oct. 23, 1854, Philip Munroe Fowler, son of Joseph⁷ (Philip⁶, Joseph⁵, Joseph⁴, Philip³, Joseph², Philip¹), and Melinda (Dexter) Fowler, he born in Thomaston, Me., July 23, 1832. No issue.

Philip M. Fowler in the Civil War was in the Union army as sergeant in the 23d Mass. Reg. This regiment in its organization included two Salem companies, — one under Capt. E. A. P. Brewster, Company A; and the other under Capt. Geo. M. Whipple, Company F. It participated in the battles of Newbern, Kingston, and saw active service in front of Petersburg.

In 1863 Philip M. Fowler was captain of the 4th Louisiana Colored Volunteers.

5. CATHERINE BUSWELL⁸, born in Salem, Mass., June 29, 1835; md. Jan. 8, 1867, Blaney L. Alley; both living in 1886 in Danvers, Mass.

Children were: —

- (a) LOUIS BUSWELL ALLEY⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 13, 1867.
- (b) KATE FLORENCE ALLEY⁹, born in Salem, Mass., April 8, 1870.
- (c) GRACE WARD ALLEY⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 28, 1872.

6. EBEN WATERS BUSWELL⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 18, 1838; died there unmarried Nov. 22, 1861.

7. JOHN HENRY BUSWELL⁸, born in Salem, Mass., March 21, 1841; md. Sept. 25, 1867, Martha N. Cole, of Troy, N. Y., where both are living in 1886. Children were: —

- (a) LILLIE COLE BUSWELL⁹, born Feb. 22, 1874; died July 28, 1874.
- (b) EBEN FRANKLIN BUSWELL⁹, born Sept. 17, 1876.

John H. Buswell enlisted in 1862 for the War of the Rebellion in the Union army as a private in the 2d Mass. Cavalry. In 1864 he was sergeant in the 61st Mass. Infantry.

8. CAROLINE TUCKER BUSWELL⁸, born in Salem, Mass., April 30, 1843; md. first, Jan. 11, 1866, John Clifton Merrill, son of Joseph and Elizabeth King (Clifton) Merrill; he born in Salem, Mass., May 31, 1836; died there Dec. 15, 1878. She md. second, Feb. 15, 1883, in the city of Brockton, Mass., by Rev. S. T. Chase, William Leonard, son of Thomas and Sarah (Wiswell) Leonard, and grandson of Joseph Wiswell, who was the first male child born in Halifax after its settlement by the English. His parents being Loyalists, they left the Massachusetts Bay Colony at the time of the Revolution. William Leonard was born at Halifax, N. S., Nov. 24, 1837; living at Salem, Mass., in 1887.

Children of first marriage were: —

- (a) HELEN METCALF MERRILL⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 6, 1868.
- (b) JOHN MERRILL⁹, born in Salem, Mass., March 23, 1875.

Child by second marriage was: —

- (c) WILLIAM EBEN LEONARD⁹, born in Salem, Mass., May 18, 1884.

The origin of the name of Buswell remains in obscurity, but it is to be found in England and New England variously spelled: Buzzell, Buzell, Buzwell, Buswell, Boswell, Bosewill, Boseville, Bosville, Bosevill, Roseville, Boissel, Burseil, Bussell, Bossell, Bosall, learned from the following records, — "History of Norfolk," by Blomefield, Vol. II. part 2d, p. 110: —

"Broughton — Leicestershire — The Conqueror bestowed a complete knights fee in Broughton, containing twelve plough lands, on Albert Bussell, by the service of paying annually 10s. as castle guard, and performing suit of court, from

three weeks to three weeks, to the honour of Lancaster. By this Albert six virgates of land in Broughton were granted to the priory of the Holy Trinity at Lenton in Nottinghamshire, on an annual rent of 30s. payable by them or their tenants at the feast of St. John the Baptist. The same Albert also enfeoffed the prior of St. John of Jerusalem in the bovates of land at Broughton. Broughton did not remain long in the family of Bussell, for after some descents it passed by a daughter to Ralph de la More. On the register it is stated that the township of Broughton was given by King Henry I. by the service of one knights fee, to Albert Bussell, who gave it, by the like tenure to Adam the son of Elias, and by Adam it was given to Agnes de la More his granddaughter who married Henry le Faukenor by whom she had Ralph de la More who marrying Margaret Paynere, sister of Lord Paulinus Paynere, had issue by her Peter de la More, who gave the township to Croxton abbey, on the service of one knights fee, and an annual rent of 10s. for castle guard of Lancaster." This donation was before 1241. "At the time of the general survey Leicestershire contained four wapentakes, or hundreds, and thus continued till 20 Edward III. (1347), when one of the hundreds was subdivided making six hundreds — then towns were subdivisions of these six hundreds" — "Abkettely was a vicarage, or town of Framland Hundred. Broughton a rectory and town of Framland Hundred — these towns had to pay rent under name of Palfry-silver; sherifs aid and Frank-pledge to Framland Hundred the different owners of — the first owner Roger Beler, Feb. 20, 1325 — received 12£: 10s.: 8d. per annum." — *BLOMEFIELD*. "A hundred consisted of ten tithings, and every tithing of ten households." — *Ibid*.

Roger Boissel, probably, was the ancestor of the family of Bussell, and the first of the name found in England; for it appears on the list of the followers of William the Conqueror into England in 1066, which is to be found in the Appendix, on the roll taken from the church at Dives, Normandy.

"Adam Bosville who was a patron of Shelfhanger rectory in 1362, also spelt Boseville."

"Robert De Bosevill or Bosville, had the manor in Shelfhanger in 1362. Adam Boseville being lord, and so to 1375." — *BLOMEFIELD, Norfolk*, Vol. I. pp. 115-118.

"The degrees of Honor existing in England were nine; of which four were noble, as Gentleman, Esquire, Knight, Baron, and Lord; and four were excellent, as Earl, Marquess, Duke and Prince." — *New Eng. Gen. Register*, Vol. I. p. 231.

"Aug. 11, 1533, Robert Bosall, rector of the church at Titshall, Norfolk, he resigned before Oct. 27, 1546." — *BLOMEFIELD*, Vol. I. p. 209.

Sir George Buswell, by his will bearing date March 18, 1677, founded a free school and hospital in Clipston, and settled lands in Clipston and Haselbich in trust for the support of this charity.

The hospital is for twelve poor persons, men or women, single and married. The twelve persons to receive each 25 shillings quarterly; 20 shillings yearly for coals, and a gown of blue cloth of 30 shillings value annually on St. Thomas's day. He also endowed a free grammar-school, the teacher of which must be a single person, orthodox, a graduate of Oxford or Cambridge, and instruct gratis, in reading, writing, grammar, and Latin, such children who are sent to him whose parents shall be inhabitants of Clipston, Kelmarsh, Oxendon-Magna, Marston, Trussell, Haselbich, and East Farndon. The schoolmaster received as pay out of what was left after the repairs and hospital people were provided for. To the poor of Clipston he left 10£. and to the other villages 3£ each. Clipston was a village of 120 families.

There was but one church there, dedicated to All Saints. Its register begins in

1667, — the older registers were burned. Within the Communion rails is a stone with this inscription: "Here lyeth the body of Elizabeth Buswell the wife of Geo Buswell Esq. who deceased the 2 day of January in the yeare of our Lord 1630." On a stone collateral to the last, "Here lyeth the body of Geo. Buswell of Clipston in the countie of Northampton Esq. who married Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Harold Kynnesiman of Broughton in the same county Gent. by whom he had 2 sons and 3 daughters."

Under an arch in the wall on the left hand of the Communion table is a half length figure of an old man leaning his hands upon a book, and the following inscription on a square brass tablet underneath:—

"Praestolans epiphaniam Domini nostri Jesu
Jacet hic GEORGIUS BOSWELL Armiger
Inclitai urbis Londonensis Senator qui
Feliciter obdormivit in Domino
Quinto die Maii Anno Ætatis
Suae 77, Salutis humanae
1642."

"A foot note says he appears to have been the Grand father of Sir Geo. Buswell Bart. who died March 6, 1667. He had a younger brother Sir Eusebius Buswell who held 200 acres at an innship of twenty-eight houses adjoining Clipston called Newbold. In Charles I.'s time it was in the possession of George Buswell Esq. This gentleman whose ancestor John Buswell had a manor in Newbold and in Clipston called Prudes manor in the reign of Philip and Mary, died in the 8th year of Charles I." (1633), "leaving issue two sons, George and John, who was buried in Clipston Church in 1659 — and four daughters. George his successor at the time of his fathers decease, was a minor under 17 years of age. In 1660, he was created by letters patent a baronet of the kingdom; and marrying Catherine daughter and co-heir of James Enyon of Flore baronet had issue George, a son, who lived but a few months. He died without any surviving children. On the floor of the church at Clipston, beneath the stone of the baronet is —

"Here also lies the body of Dame Katherine Garrard widow first of Sir Geo. Boswell Bart, and after of Sir John Garrard Bart. who in the 60th year of her age changed this mortal life for a better the 16th day of April 1702."

"In 1791 Sir Eusebius Buswell, bart, brother of George is the present owner of Newbold." — BRIDGES, *Northampton*, Vol. I. pp. 22, 23.

In New England, the oldest stone in the Burial Ground at Salisbury, Mass., is to Capt. William Buswell, at a date when titles were not complimentary, as follows:—

"Cap. WILLIAM BUSWELL
Died June 15, 1699
& in y^e 73 // year
of his age
This Worthy was In
Sailsbury
Always in Actes
of Hospetolity."

"Plantations begun at Salisbury in 1638." — HUBBARD, *N. England*, p. 242.

"Upon y^e 17th Sept. 1691 at a ch meeting voted yt Each Communicant pay 12 d. to Deco. Buswell to defray y^e chh charges & purchase the flaggon of Widow Severance." — *Essex Hist. Coll.*, Vol. 16, p. 294.

"Memorand, y^t y^e biggest chh flaggon was bought of Gordy Severance by Capt W^m Buswell then Deacon for which he paid Eleven shillings by y^e chh order, July

1691. July 7th. 1749. Mises Merrill, John Buswell & Nath^l Fitts were chosen Deacons." — *Ibid.*

"Records of the 1st church at Salisbury, Mass. 1687-1754.

The names of those y^t were of y^e ch. Salisbury when I was ordained.

Males.

Major Robt. Pike
Capt. Bradbury
Lieut. Buswell
John Gill.

Females.

Mrs. Pike
Mrs. Bradbury
Mrs. Buswell
Goodman Gill's wife.

Persons admitted into y^e church

Oct. 13, 1706, Samuel, son of Sam^l Buswell.

Feb. 1, 1707, Hannah, dau. of Isaac Buswell.

Oct. 25, 1719; Anna Buswell wido.

Nov. 26, 1727. Jno. Eaton & wife, Benony Silly & wife, Isaac Buswell & wife."

Thus the name in Salisbury, Mass., was Buswell on all the public and church records after 1700, but in Strafford, Vt., and Dover, N. H., it is spelled Buzzell, thus:—"Baptized in Dover N. H. Jan. 2, 1742, Ebenezer, Samuel, William, Ichabod, Tabitha and Mary, children of William Buzzell, Joseph, Palel and Elizabeth children of y^e Widow Eleaim Perkins, in y^e House of William Buzzell." "Aug. 25, 1743, baptized in Dover, N. H. At y^e West Part of y^e Town, Jane Buzzell dau. of Henry." "Sept. 20, 1739, Abraham Buzzel son of John, bapt. in Dover, N. H." "At Strafford, Vt., Elizabeth H. Buzzell married March 1, 1848, Lewis Hassam, and Oct. 20, 1844, his brother George, married Naomi Buzzell of Effingham, N. H." — *New Eng. Hist. Register*, Vol. XXIV. p. 421. These Buzzells may have descended from Samuel or Isaac Buzzell, or Buzwell, of Salisbury, where the name was thus spelled on the first records.

81. HENRY DRIVER^r, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 19, 1808; living in Nashville, Tenn., in 1886, where he married, about 1835, Elizabeth Carter Maclin (see Family XXVII.).

82. HARRIOT DRIVER^r (mother of the Compiler), born in Salem, Mass., April 24, 1810; living in New York city in 1887; md. in Salem, Mass., at the house of her sister, Mrs. Buswell, by her brother, Rev. Joseph Driver, Oct. 18, 1839, William Waters, son of Edward Timothy Waters, of Herefordshire, Eng., and second wife Mrs. Rachel (Renick) Ellis, of Newburyport, Mass., where he was born "July 15, 1813, Thursday half pass 5 evening." — *Family Bible*.

Edward Timothy Waters sailed from London, Eng., for New England, Nov. 5, 1799, on the ship "Merchant," with his daughter Ann, then his only child. He was a widower; his first wife was Martha King, of whom nothing is known in the family except that her brother, William King, some time in 1700, was the keeper of one of the gates of Queen Anne's palace, — whence the daughter's name.

Edward Timothy Waters landed at Boston, but immediately went down to Newburyport, Mass., where, Sept. 10, 1806, he was married by James Morss to Mrs. Rachel (Renick) Ellis, a widow with three children, — Matthew Ellis, Kelita Strickland Ellis, and Eliza Ellis. By this marriage he had three sons, — Edward Waters, who died unmarried, John Waters, who was a master mariner, and died at sea unmarried, and William Waters, the abovesaid. Of his

three stepchildren, **Matthew Ellis** was also a master-mariner; went to sea, and was lost with his ship on his first voyage as captain, unmarried. He took with him a large library of books belonging to his stepfather, **Edward Timothy Waters**, which went down with the ship, — a matter of deep regret, for those books would have given more information concerning **Mr. Waters**, who never talked of his home, hence doubt arises as to his birthplace, his daughter **Ann** having given it as **Monmouthshire**, while his son **William** gives **Herefordshire**. He stated he had one brother in orders, and that is all known of them. **Kelita Strickland Ellis** married **Abbey Williams**, of **Providence, R. I.**, settled in **New York city**, where he had a large book-bindery, his half-brother, **William Waters**, being associated with him the later part of his life; **Mr. Ellis** died in **New York city**; his wife died in **Buffalo**; and his children also died in the West. **Eliza Ellis** married **John Keyes**, by trade a painter, who died soon after marriage; they had **John**, who married, and in 1887 lives in **Newburyport, Mass.**, with his family. She died some years ago.

William Waters in 1887 resided in **New York city**, where in 1847 he removed from **Boston**. He is engaged in the book-binding business, together with his only son, **William Ellis Waters**, to both of whom the Compiler is indebted for the binding of her book as a gift. **William Waters** is greatly interested in the study of natural history, that part of it that treats on lepidoptera; also in the microscope and its wonders. He is a member of the **Brooklyn Entomological Society**.

Children of **William** and **Harriot (Driver) Waters** were:

1. **HARRIET RUTH WATERS**⁵ (the Compiler), born in **Andover, Mass.**, March 18, 1841; living in **New York city** in 1887; md. there, Sept. 6, 1864, by **Rev. Thomas Hastings**, **Henry Clarence Cooke**, son of **Charles Dexter** and **Mary Anne (King) Cooke**, and grandson of **Capt. Benoni** and **Amey (Brown) Cooke**, both of **Providence, R. I.**, and of **Gov. Samuel Ward** and **Catherine (Angell) King**, both of **Providence, R. I.**; thus being a descendant of three of the first six white persons who came to **Providence Plantations**, the three being **William Harris**, **John Smith** (the miller), and **Thomas Angell**; the other three of the six being **Roger Williams**, **Joshua Verin**, and **Francis Wickes**.

Henry C. Cooke's paternal grandmother, **Amey Brown**⁶, was the daughter of **Isaac**⁶ and **Amey (Dexter) Brown**, who was the son of **Elisha**⁴ and **Martha (Smith) Brown**, who was the tenth child of **Rev. James**³ and **Mary (Harris) Brown**, who was the son of **John**² and **Mary (Holmes) Brown**, who was the son of **Chad Brown**¹ and **Elizabeth**, who was the first elder of the **First Baptist Church of Providence, R. I.**, after **Roger Williams**, or before him, — a disputed point. This is the same family of **Browns of Providence** who by their munificence aided in promoting the interests of religion and philanthropy, and for whom the **University of Rhode Island** in 1804 was named, — principally through **Nicholas Brown**⁶, who married first, **Ann Carter**, and who gave to **Brown University** upwards of one hundred and sixty thousand dollars, also ten thousand dollars to **Providence Athenæum**, and large sums to the building of churches and the endowment of colleges in other States. He bequeathed thirty thousand dollars for the establishment of an asylum for the insane, and various sums to the **Northern Baptist Educational Society**, the **American Tract Society**, **American and Foreign Bible Society**, and many others. He (**Nicholas**⁶) was the son of **Nicholas**⁶ and **Rhoda (Jenckes) Brown**, who was the second child

Constable of Marshfield, Mass.
1688 to 1670, d. 1684.

Clement King = Susannah (?)
removed to Prov. | 1688.

John King = Elizabeth (she md. 2d. Thomas Barnes).
removed to Prov. | 1688.

John King = Elizabeth,
(second wife.)

Mosey Borden = Meribah,
Marcy | another acct.

Josiah King = Mary Borden,
(second wife.)

William Borden King. = Wethian Walton.

Gov. SAMUEL WARD KING.

CATHERINE LATHAM ANGELL.

Olney Angell. = Mary Waterman,
(first wife)

Daniel Angell = Phebe Olney.

Stephen Angell = Martha Olney.

John Angell = Epenetus Olney = Mary Williams.

John Angell = Ruth Field. Epenetus Olney = Mary Whipple. Daniel Williams = Rebecca (Rhodes) Power,
widow of Nicholas.

John Angell = Alice. Thomas Olney = Mary Small.
Prov. 1637. Salem 1637. Prov. 1638.

John Angell = Alice. Thomas Olney = Mary Small.
Salem 1631. Prov. 1636.

Dr. John Greene = Joan Tattemall. Samuel Gorton.
Surgeon, Boston 1636 | Prov. 1637. Boston 1637 | Prov. 1640.

Maj. John Greene = Ann Almey. Benj. Gorton = Sarah Carder.

Samuel Greene = Mary Gorton. Joshua Coggeshall.

Dr. Walton = Miriam Ward. Samuel Greene = Sarah Coggeshall.
of Scotland.

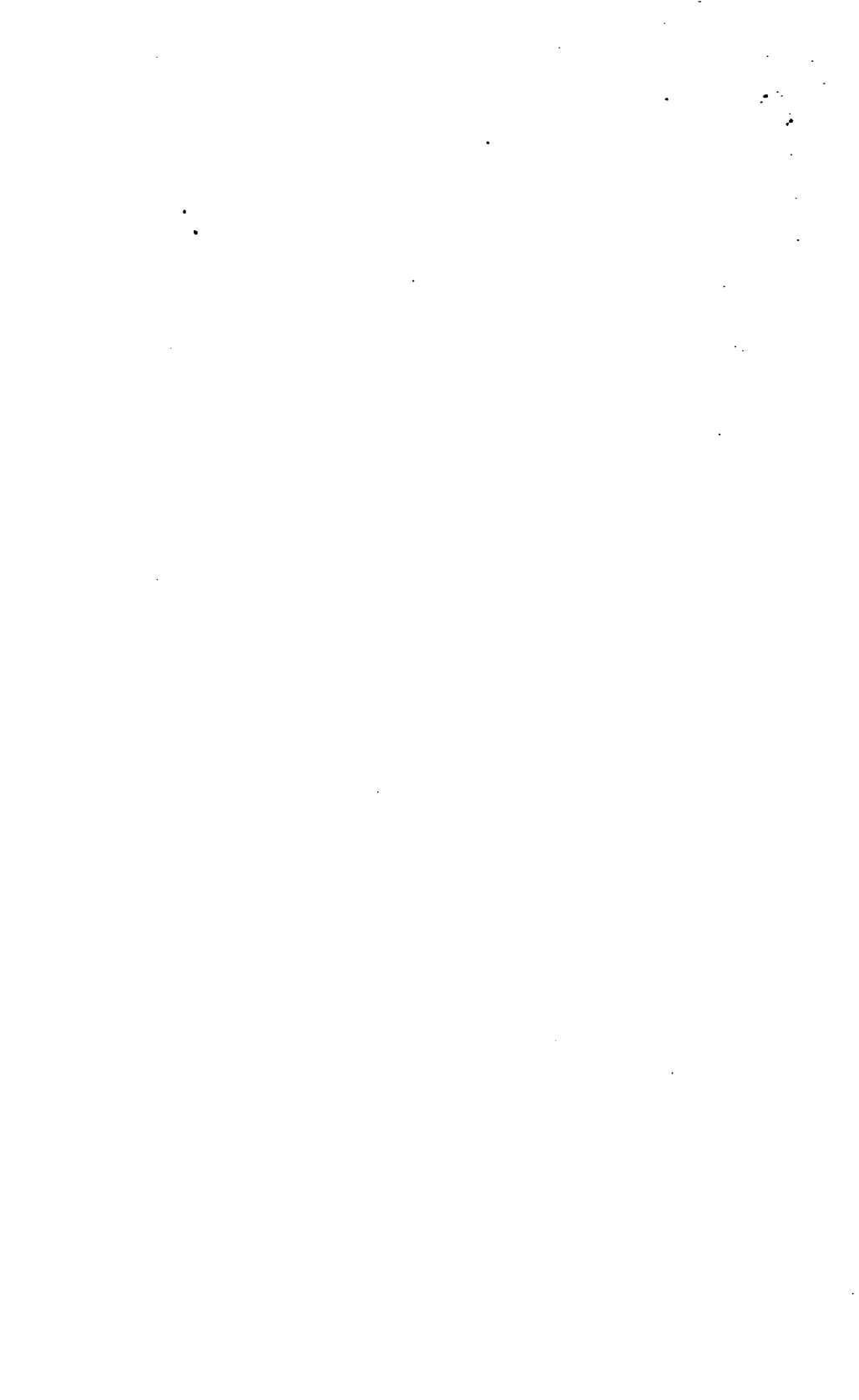
John Walton = Mercy Greene.

Nathl Waterman = Mary Olney.

Nathl Waterman = Susanna Carder.

Richard Waterman = Bethiah. Richard Carder = Mary.
Salem 1627. Prov. 1638. Boston 1638. Prov.

Richard Carder = Mary.



(the first dying aged 21, unmarried) of Rev. James² and Mary (Harris) Brown, who was the son of John² and Mary (Holmes) Brown, who was the son of Elder Chad Brown¹, the emigrant. Hence Nicholas Brown⁶ descended from the second child of Rev. James Brown², while Amey Brown⁶, abovesaid, descended from the tenth, and last child of Rev. James Brown², the grandson of Chad Brown¹ the emigrant, consequently all of one family.

Henry C. Cooke's maternal grandmother, Catherine Angell, was the daughter of Olney Angell⁶ and Mary (Waterman), who was the son of Daniel⁵ Angell and Phebe (Olney), who was the son of Stephen Angell⁴ and Martha (Olney), who was the son of John Angell³, who was the son of John Angell² and Ruth (Field), who was the son of Thomas Angell¹, the emigrant.

Amey Brown⁶, the paternal grandmother, descended from James Angell², brother of John², both sons of Thomas Angell¹ (for which see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 49). — hence relations.

His maternal grandfather, Gov. Samuel Ward⁷ King, was a descendant of William and Dorothy Kinge, who settled in Salem, Mass., in 1685, *when he was* *unstable that*.

Henry C. Cooke was born in Baltimore, Md., Sept. 6, 1843; living in New York city in 1887, a manufacturer of animal oils. He is an amateur photographer of *himself who re-* *moved to Prov. R. I., who had a son John who had Joseph, who* *had Wm. Boardman King father of Gov. King abovesaid.*

Children were: —

- (a) HENRY DEXTER COOKE⁹, born in New York city, Dec. 27, 1865; died there of scarlet fever July 1, 1868; buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn.
- (b) MAUDE ALINE COOKE (known as "Chip"), born in New York city, May 23, 1869; has the gift of music.

- 2 WILLIAM ELLIS WATERS⁸, born in Andover, Mass., Dec. 4, 1844; living at Highland Ave., Orange Valley, N. J., in 1887; md. in New York city, Oct. 4, 1865, by Rev. Samuel D. Burchard, Mary Demorest Albertson, dau. of William Henry and Margaret (Hemphill) Albertson, of New York city.

William E. Waters is a member of the Veteran Corps of Company D, Seventh Regiment, National Guards, S. N. Y. He is associated with his father in the book-binding business, under firm name of William Waters & Son. He is interested in astronomy, for the study of which he has a very large telescope in a revolving tower on his house, where nightly he studies the heavenly bodies, making observations and mathematical calculations for his own amusement and entertainment.

Children were: —

- (a) LINNIE MCKAY WATERS⁹, born in New York city Dec. 8, 1868; died the same day.
- (b) EDWIN WATERS⁹, born in New York city June 19, 1870; died Aug. 4, 1870.
- (c) MABEL WATERS⁹, born in New York city Feb. 9, 1872.
- (d) FLORENCE WATERS⁹, born in Orange, N. J., Sept. 27, 1877.
- (e) HAROLD WATERS⁹, born at Highland Ave., Orange Valley, N. J., Jan. 31, 1886.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XVIII.

SOLOMON DRIVER⁶ (No. 52), son of Capt. Solomon⁵ (SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Hannah (Allen) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., April 6, 1746; died July, 1831; md. Dec. 1, 1768, Miriam Hooper, dau. of Andrew and Miriam Hooper; she born Nov. 16, 1747; died Nov. 3, 1833.

Administration on the estate of Solomon Driver granted his son Solomon, Feb. 7, 1832. Dec. 12, 1832, John H., Joseph D., David, Rachel, Maria, Hannah, and Miriam Driver, heirs-at-law of Solomon Driver, acknowledged the receipt of their respective shares in his estate. His widow, Miriam, 84 years old, petitions the court concerning her inability, on account of extreme age, to perform any labor, and that she "must keep some person to take care of me."

The court decrees that beside her apparel, etc., she receive also \$200 out of the personal estate.

April 17, 1776, Solomon Driver enlisted in Company 2, Capt. Bradbury Saunders, for coast defence, at Gloucester, Mass. Served 1 mo. 14 d. Also re-enlisted June 11, 1776; served 3 mos. Served again 2 mos. 18 d., Sept. 1, following, in same company at Gloucester.

Children of **Solomon** and **Hannah (Allen) Driver**, all born in Manchester, Mass., were: —

83. **SOLOMON DRIVER**⁷, born Sept. 6, 1770; died Aug. 17, 1786, aged 17 years.
84. **MIRIAM DRIVER**⁷, born Aug. 25, 1772; died April 14, 1840, unmarried (Family Bible).
85. **ANDREW DRIVER**⁷, born Nov. 2, 1774; died Feb. 6, 1826; master-mariner; md. Sept. 30, 1795, Rachel Day. (See Family XXVIII.)
86. **HANNAH DRIVER**⁷, born March 7, 1776 (March 4, 1777, Family Bible); died Oct. 14, 1778.
87. **JOHN DRIVER**⁷, born April 21, 1782; died Jan. 20, 1810, unmarried; master-mariner; buried in Manchester Burial-ground, where his gravestone states that he died Jan. 19, 1811, aged 28 years and 9 mos. Then follows this inscription: —

"Friends and physicians cannot save my mortal body from the grave,
Nor can this grave confine me here, when Jesus calls me to appear."

Administration on his estate granted to David Colby, Esq., Feb. 6, 1811; inventory being \$1,224.00.

Among the items named are two acres tillage land on the Great Neck, lying

on the road leading to Lobster Cove, valued at \$80.00 per acre. Five acres woodland in Gloucester, being one-half of Lot 38 in the long range.

One French gun, \$4.00; one pair of pistols, \$2.00; one spy-glass, \$10.00; one English silver watch, \$12.00; one quadrant, \$12.00; sea-charts; American Pilot, West India Pilot; Guthrie's Geography; Rogers' Dictionary; American Coast Pilot; Practical Navigation; medicine chest, trunks, etc.

On the Probate Records he is called "John, Jr.," and Solomon Driver sole heir-at-law.

88. BETHIAH DRIVER¹, born Sept. 20, 1785; died July 14, 1833; md. Sept. 18, 1823, Richard Allen, of Manchester, Mass., for his second wife; he born March 8, 1774; died July 11, 1832 (Family Bible). Child was:

(a) SOLOMON DRIVER ALLEN², born April 1, 1826; living in 1843, when Solomon Driver, his uncle, left him by will two hundred dollars.

89. SAMUEL DRIVER¹, born Feb. 16, 1787; died June 22, 1822 (June 16, 1828, Family Bible), unmarried, having been drowned at Charleston, S. C. (First Church Records of Manchester, Mass.)

90. SOLOMON DRIVER (Capt.), born July 16, 1790; died May 27, 1843; buried in Manchester Burial-ground.

He was probably unmarried, for no wife is mentioned in his will, made May 15, 1843; proved June 6th, following.

Inventory of his estate, \$2,310.00.

"Will of Solomon Driver.

Commonwealth of Massachusetts. In the name of God, Amen. I Solomon Driver of Manchester in the county of Essex being of sound mind but knowing the uncertainty of this life, and the certainty of death, do ordain this writing wrote this fifteenth day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fourty three to be my last will and testament hereby revoking all others whatsoever.

1st. — I give and bequeath to John H. Driver, the son of my late brouther Andrew, deceased, two hundred dollars to be paid him in one year after my death.

2d. — I give and bequeath to Solomon D. Allen, son of my late sister Bethiah, \$200.00 to be paid him in one year after my death.

3d. — I give and bequeath to Anna Maria Sheppard one hundred dollars to be paid her in one year after my death.

4th. — I give and bequeath the whole rest and residue of my estate whether real or personal and all my stock and every thing I am possessed of or may hereafter possess at my demise whatsoever or wheresoever to be equally divided between the children of my late brother Andrew, deceased, viz.; David D. Driver; — Joseph D. Driver, — Rachel Brown, — John H. Driver, — and Maria Allen, — At the same time I do appoint John H. Driver executor of this last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this fifteenth day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fourty three

SOLOMON DRIVER

Signed sealed and declared
his last will and testament in
presence of us.

HIRAM AYERS	} Wit
ABRAM ROWE	
SOPHIA AYERS	

Approved June 6, 1843."

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XIX.

JOHN DRIVER⁶ (No. 53), son of Capt. John⁵ (SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Anna (Osment) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 12, 1746; seaman; md. Jan. 14, 1768, Elizabeth Leach, of whom nothing more is known.

Mass. State Archives, Vol. XLIV. :—

"Taken in y^e schooner Rainbow, on the Grand Bank, April 1758; Richard Leach, John Linnitt, John Day, Josiah Lee, John Lee, Samuel Morgan, John Driver, Samuel Downing."

Military Roll, Office of Secretary of State, Boston :—

"John Driver, aged 35; 5 ft. 8 in. high; light complexioned, belonging to Salem, named in the list of men belonging to the ship 'Salem Packet.'"

"John Driver, enlisted as a private, July 1, 1776, in 2nd Company, under Capt. Bradbury Saunders, and stationed at Gloucester, in defence of the sea coast; Time of service 2 months, for which he received £1 : 16^s per month."

"John Driver, seaman, named in 'A list of American prisoners sent in the cartel, "Silver Eel" from Halifax to Boston, Oct. 8th, 1778, to be exchanged for British subjects.'"

Children of **John** and **Elizabeth (Leach) Driver** were :—

91. **JOHN DRIVER**⁷, JR., born June 7, 1769; died Aug. 13, 1832; published April 15, 1791, to Elizabeth Day (see Family XXIX.).
92. **NEHEMIAH DRIVER**⁷, born May 23, 1770; died before 1805; md. July 4, 1793, Apphia Hilton (see Family XXX.).
93. **ELIZABETH DRIVER**⁷, born Jan. 25, 1772; died young.
94. **ELIZABETH DRIVER**⁷, born Aug. 5, 1773; published in marriage to James Collony, April 14, 1793, son of Thomas and Hannah Collony, he born Oct. 19, 1771.
95. **DANIEL DRIVER**⁷, born April 9, 1776.

SIXTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XX.

SAMUEL DRIVER ⁶ (No. 55), son of Capt. Solomon ⁵ (Solomon ⁴, SALMON ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Hannah (Allen) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., where he was baptized Feb. 25, 1749-50; died before December of 1800; md. Dec. 1, 1772, Bethiah Allen, dau. of Jacob and Sarah (Lee) Allen, of Manchester, Mass.; he baptized in the First Church of Manchester, Feb. 9, 1755; died July 11, 1832.

"Samuel Driver enlisted July 13, 1775, in Capt. Joseph Whipples Co. for coast defence; one-half the company stationed at Gloucester and the other half at Manchester; served 6 mo. 3 d. Re-enlisted Sept. 1, 1776, in Company 2. Capt. Bradbury Sanders, for coast defence at Gloucester; discharged Nov. 18, serving 2 mo. 18 d."

"Samuel Driver, private, enlisted April 17, 1776, in 2^d Co. Bradbury Sanders commander, and stationed at Gloucester for coast defence; served 1 mo. 14 days. Also enlisted June 1, 1776, in same Co. under same commander, at same place, serving 3 mos." — *Military Roll, State House, Boston.*

Children of **Samuel** and **Bethiah (Allen) Driver** were: —

96. **SAMUEL DRIVER** ⁷, JR., born Sept. 19, 1773; died at sea April, 1811; md. Dec. 9, 1800, Anna Allen. (See Family XXXI.)
 97. **JACOB DRIVER** ⁷, born April 22, 1776; died Nov. 2, 1796.

Mrs. Driver, after the death of Samuel, was published in marriage, as his second wife, to Aaron Lee, Dec. 8, 1800; he son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Lee, who was baptized Feb. 9, 1728-9; died June 19, 1806; thus being seventy-one years of age at his second marriage, and twenty-seven years older than Mrs. Driver. His first wife was Lydia —, who died Jan. 15, 1800, aged sixty-nine years, leaving children older than his second wife. No issue by second marriage. The aforesaid data were contributed by Mrs. Hilliard Morse (No. 156), dau. of Samuel Driver, Jr., and granddaughter of Mrs. Bethiah (Allen) (Driver) Lee, as taken from the Family Bible, printed in 1793, now possessed by Mrs. Morse, on the fly-leaf of which is the following: —

"Aaron Lee's Bible & I Leave this Bible To My Beloved wife Bethiah Lee as a Present."

"Aaron Lee the Owner of this Bible dep^d this Life on the 19th of June In year 1806. In hopes of a Bles^d Resurrection ag^d 77 yrs & 4 months."

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXI.

THOMAS DRIVER¹ (No. 62), son of Stephen⁶ (STEPHEN⁵, THOMAS⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Elizabeth (Lawrence) Driver, bapt. March 30, 1777; living in 1819; cordwainer; md. Feb. 19, 1804, Mrs. Mary (Daland) Archer, widow of William Archer, and ninth child of Benjamin and Hannah (Cook) Daland, and granddaughter of Joseph and Eunice (Pope) Cook; her mother, Hannah Daland, mentioned in her grandfather's will, together with her sister, Eunice Beckford; Inventory of his estate being £488:10:5½. William Archer was son of Samuel and Dorothy (Ropes) Archer, who was baptized April 15, 1767. Mrs. Mary Daland Archer, bapt. Jan. 14, 1770; died before 1819. No issue by this marriage.

By her first marriage she had five children, viz. : —

1. MARY ARCHER, bapt. in 1791; md. Jan. 24, 1811, George Palfray, sailmaker.
2. JOSEPH ARCHER, bapt. in 1792; mariner; md. Sept. 1, 1811, Mary M. Martin.
3. WILLIAM ARCHER, born in 1793, trader; md. Oct. 8, 1815, Betsey Daniels.
4. DOLLY ROPES ARCHER, born 1795; living in 1819, unmarried.
5. REBECCA ARCHER, bapt. in St. Peter's Church, Salem, Mass. (Epic.), June 5, 1796, after her father's decease. (See Appendix, Daland Family, No. 25.)

"July 21, 1812: — Thomas Driver and wife Mary, partly in the right of both one undivided 16th — Joseph Daland, truckman, Eunice Creamer, widow, for \$1500, deed to John Daland, merchant, certain real estate in Beckford St., bounded W. on Beckford St.; N. on land of Moses Smith; E. on Jacob Ashton; S. on land of Benjamin Shillaber, with all the buildings thereon.

AMOS CHOATE }
GEORGE D. DUNHAM } Wit."

"Essex SS. Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

To Richard Ward Esq. John Punchard Esq. and Daniel Jenks, Merchant, all of Salem in the County aforesaid, and Freeholders in the same Greeting.

Whereas Eunice Creamer of Salem, aforesaid, widow, Thomas Driver of said Salem, cordwainer, and Mary his wife; Hannah Cook Herrick, singlewoman; and Lydia Herrick; Benjamin Dunham Herrick; Sally Dennis Herrick; Eliza Archer Herrick, and Henry Herrick, all of said Salem, minors under the age of twenty one years children of William Herrick and Bethiah his dec'd wife, by their lawful Guardⁿ Barnabas Herrick, by the consideration of our Justices of our circuit court of Common Pleas for the middle circute holden at Newburyport within and for the county of Essex on the third Monday of Sept^r A. D. 1812, upon their petition shewing that they are seized in fee, to wit, the said Eunice of twenty four, ninety one parts; the said Thomas and Mary in her right of twenty four, ninety one

parts, and the said Benjamin, Lydia, Sally, Eliza, Henry and Hannah jointly, of twelve ninety one parts in common and undivided with one Joseph Daland of said Salem, Truckman, and Joseph Daland Jr., Hannah Daland, Benjamin Daland, George Daland and John Daland Junr. all of said Salem of two certain messuages with the land under and adjoining the same, the whole containing sixty-two poles and seven tenths of a pole, situated in said Salem, bounded as follows to wit; beginning at land of Capt. Tobias Davis at Summer street, thence running Southerly four poles and three links on said Summer street, thence Westerly ten poles and seven links on land of Capt. Jonathan Neal, Joseph Mackentire, D. Gregg, and the Proprietors of Dr. Hopkins meeting house; thence Northerly three poles & eighteen links on land of said Proprietors; thence Northerly on Cambridge street two poles and eleven links; thence East two and one half degrees Northerly seven poles and thirteen links, on land of Miss Lawrence; thence South two and a half degrees Easterly, on land of said Tobias Davis two poles and one link; and thence Easterly three degrees Southerly on land of said Davis seven poles and one link to said Summer street the first mentioned place of beginning; with all the dwelling-houses, Barn & buildings thereon, and all the privileges and appurtenances, and that while the same is in common and undivided they could not improve their several parts aforesaid, but in a great measure lose the profits thereof; and praying that their respective parts might be set off and assigned to them to hold in severalty, recovered judgment that their respective parts should be set off and assigned to them, and that partition of the premises aforesaid should be made according to the prayer of their said petition. And Thereupon the said Court did appoint you the said Richard Ward, John Punchard and Daniel Jenks a committee to perform said service and to make said partition accordingly you are therefore hereby authorized and impowered after being sworn according to law, and after giving due notice to all parties interested to make partition of said premises so far as relate to said petitioners by assigning and setting off to said petitioners their shares thereof by metes and bounds to hold them in severalty and of this warrant, and your doings herein you will make return into the clerks office of our said court, next to be held at Ipswich within and for said county on the third Monday of December next to the end the said Partition by you made as aforesaid may be allowed, accepted and recorded as the Law directs.

Witness, SAMUEL DANA Esq^r at Salem on this thirtieth day of September Anno Domini 1812.

Att^r ICHABOD TUCKER Clerk."

"Essex SS. October 7th 1812. Then John Punchard Esquire appeared and made oath that he would faithfully perform the Trust given him by the above warrant.

Before me BENJ. R. NICHOLS just. of Peace.

Essex SS. October 7, 1812. Then Richard Ward Esq^r and Daniel Jenks appeared and were duly sworn to the faithful discharge of the Trust reposed in them by the within warrent.

Before me JOHN PUNCHARD Jus. Peace.

Pursuant of the annexed Warrant we the Subscribers the committee therein named having been first sworn, and having given due notice to all persons interested and Joseph Daland and others, and Eunice Creamer, Thomas Driver and Hannah Cook Herrick in their own behalf and Barnabas Herrick, Guardian for Lydia Herrick and others minors under the age of twenty-one years, heirs of William and Bethiah his dec'd wife appeared in their behalf and after fully hearing the said parties in their partition and have set off the same as follows; to wit:—

To Hannah Cook Herrick, singlewoman, and Lydia Herrick, Benjamin Durnham Herrick, Sally Dennis Herrick, Eliza Archer Herrick and Henry Herrick all of said Salem, minors, under the age of twenty-one years (except Hannah Cook Herrick) and children of William Herrick and Bethiah his dec'd wife a piece of land bounded Westerly on Cambridge street, seventeen feet Northerly on land of the widow Lawrence until it comes to Tobias Davis' land; thence running Southerly bounding Easterly on land of said Davis seventeen feet. Thence running Westerly parallel with the northern line to Cambridge street aforesaid, with the chambers in the dwelling house thereon standing, and the stairs leading to the same, with the privilege of using the outer door and entry-way at all times with the Western half of the Garret and the Eastern half of the cellar and the Western half of the Barn as long as said Barn shall stand with liberty to use the necessary house and common passage way six feet wide on the South side of said house from the street aforesaid to the Barn to be kept open as long as the house shall stand. The Porch and the outer cellar doors to remain as long as the house stands for the common use and benefit of the owners thereof. To have and to hold the same to them and their heirs and assigns forever.

To Mary Driver, wife of Thomas Driver a piece of land bounded Westerly on Cambridge street about twenty four feet six inches Northerly on the lot set off as above to Hannah Cook Herrick and others to Davis' land, thence running South to land of Gregg, bounded Easterly, partly on land of Davis, and partly on land of Joseph Daland & others and land of Eunice Creamer, as the same is herein after set off to her, thence Westerly bounding Southerly on land of Gregg and partly on land of said Gregg and the proprietors of the South meeting house; thence Northerly bounding Westerly on land of said Proprietors thence Westerly to Cambridge street aforesaid, bounding Southerly again on land of said Proprietors with the lower part of the dwelling house standing on land set off to Hannah Cook Herrick and others with the privilege of using the Eastern half of the Garret over and the Western half of the cellar under the same and of using the stairs and passage ways to the cellar and Garret and the Eastern half of the Barn as long as the same shall stand subject to the incumbrance of keeping open a common passage way from Cambridge street six feet wide from the South side of said dwelling house to the Eastern end of said Barn and of the Porch and outer cellar door remaining as they now are for the common use of the occupiers of said house as long as the same shall stand. To have and to hold the same to the said Mary her heirs and assigns forever.

To Eunice Creamer, a certain piece of land bounded as follows; viz; beginning at land of Neal and running northerly thirty feet, bounding Easterly on Summer street, thence running South westerly through the house until it meets the Eastern line of the land set off to Mary Driver bounding northerly on land of Joseph Daland & others, thence running South to land of Gregg, bounding Westerly on land of Joseph Daland & others, thence running South to land of Gregg, bounding Westerly on land of said Mary Driver twenty feet; thence running Easterly bounding Southerly on land of said Gregg and of McIntire and Neal to Summer street aforesaid and the bounds begin at with the South easterly and south west lower rooms and the South west chamber and upper chamber over the same in the dwelling house standing partly on said land and partly on land of Joseph Daland and others with liberty to pass at all times through the front door and stairs to the cellar and the back stairs to the chamber and upper chamber aforesaid and the back door to and from the yard subject to the incumbrance of keeping open the passage way South of the house as it now is open and of the occupiers of the other

parts of said house, using the same and the well in common while said house stands. To have and to hold the same to the said Eunice her heirs and assigns forever and of this warrant annexed and our doings therein we make this seventh day of October A. D. 1812.

RICHARD WARD	} Comtee duly sworne " — <i>Deeds</i> , Vol. 200, p. 29.
JOHN PUNCHARD	
DANIEL JENKS	

The said Mrs. Eunice (Daland) Creamer was the wife of Dr. Edward Creamer, born in Ireland, in 1756, died at St. Ann, Island of Jamaica, July, 1810, who married Eunice Daland before 1790, and had son George, born Aug. 23, 1791, died at sea, April 1831, master-mariner, who married Jan. 23, 1822, Hannah Gardner, dau. of Samuel and Hannah (Stevens) Gardner, and had George Creamer, born May 2, 1825, married Elizabeth S. Walker, was a stationer and bookseller, and built the brick building on Essex Street, Salem, Mass., known as the "Creamer Block." Had second son, Benjamin Creamer, born at Boothbay, Me., May 11, 1794; died May 21, 1854 (*Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.*). — See Appendix, Daland Family, No. 19 —

"March 5, 1819: — George Palfrey, sail maker and wife Mary, Dolly Ropes Archer, single, and Joseph Archer, mariner, all of Salem, N. E. heirs-at-law of Mary Driver, dec'd, who was wife of Thomas Driver, for \$300, convey to W^m Archer, trader, a lot of land which was sett off to our mother Mary Driver, dec'd, out of the estate of her father Benjamin Daland, and which descended to us children of said Mary, bounded W. on Cambridge st; N. on Hannah C. Herrick; S. on Davis Gregg, and Prop'rs of South Meeting House — the lower part of the dwelling house butting on said Proprietors."

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXII.

STEPHEN DRIVER ⁷ 3d. (No. 75), son of Stephen ⁶, Jr. (Capt. MICHAEL ⁵, Capt. MICHAEL ⁴, WILLIAM ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 1, 1797; died at Beaver Brook, Danvers, Mass., Sept. 16, 1868; md. first, Jan. 14, 1821, by Rev. Henry W. Ducahet, then the Episcopalian minister, of Salem, Mass., to Mary Beckford, dau. of Joshua and Mary (Doggett) Beckford; she born in Salem in 1798; died there, of consumption, Nov. 27, 1834; md. second, Sept. 1, 1835, by Rev. George B. Cheever (Congregational), to Susanna Payson Smith, dau. of George Hibbert and Mary Nelson (Prime) Smith, of Salem, Mass., where she was born, Jan. —, 1805; living there in 1887.

Stephen Driver 3d, by trade a shoemaker, which he learned of his father, commenced business for himself in 1816, when only nineteen years of age,

under firm name of Stephen Driver & Son. He made boots and shoes only for gentlemen, but at the repeated requests of the ladies of Salem, in 1822 he made shoes for them also, and from 1845 to the last of his being in business he made for children and ladies only. In 1822 ladies required but four kinds of shoes, — the slipper, the buskin, high-laced shoe, and high congress gaiter. The widths were two. In 1886 the widths are eight, sizes sixteen, and styles about one hundred.

In 1836 Mr. Driver left the retail business to other members of the family, as has been shown in their respective places, and commenced the wholesale trade, in which he continued until his death.

His first partner in the wholesale trade was Abel Lawrence, with whom he made this rule, always to use the very best stock to be found, so that the work made was always of the first quality, to which he strictly adhered as long as he remained in business.

In 1837 Lawrence & Driver not having met the success that they anticipated, on account of the extreme pressure of the times, occasioned by the panic of 1835 and 1836, deemed it advisable to gain a Southern trade, and thus have an outlet for their accumulated work; accordingly, the last part of 1837 they opened a retail store at Nashville, Tenn., and Joseph Driver, brother of the said Stephen, at his request, went to Nashville to conduct the business there. At the same time another brother, Capt. William Driver, who had retired from sea, and about to make Nashville his permanent place of residence, was induced to enter this retail branch as silent partner, he to assist his brother Joseph in the charge of the Southern store.

This venture proved unsuccessful, and it was soon abandoned; Joseph returned to Salem, and William retired to a quiet life at Nashville, — a wiser man concerning trade on land.

In 1845 Abel Lawrence withdrew from the firm, when Capt. Joseph Winn furnished capital against the knowledge of Mr. Driver. The firm now became Stephen Driver & Co., making only ladies' and children's boots and shoes.

In 1848 the eldest son of Mr. Driver, Stephen Pierson Driver, entered the house as cutter and salesman, and to attend to the packing for the out-of-town trade, in which capacity he continued until 1862, when he became book-keeper for the house.

A salesroom soon after was opened in Boston, Mass., of which Stephen P. Driver took the entire charge.

In 1857 Capt. Joseph Winn withdrew from the firm, and Lucius Wells became the partner, the firm remaining Stephen Driver & Co. Mr. Wells took the entire charge of the books till 1862, when he withdrew, and Stephen P. Driver became bookkeeper, as abovesaid.

In 1863 George H. S. Driver, the second eldest son of Mr. Driver, entered the establishment as foreman of the shop, at the same time with the third son, Samuel Driver, who came as a cutter.

Mr. Driver continued in this manner the business with his three sons, until his death in 1867.

Since 1847 Mr. Driver's brother George was associated with him in the wholesale business in various positions, principally as cutter; to do which he

left his brother-in-law, Ebenezer Buswell, with whom he was associated in the retail trade, as shown under No. 80.

The business was conducted all these years in a building at the corner of Washington and Front Streets, Salem, Mass.; but after the death of Mr. Driver the sons removed the factory to Lynn, and the firm became Stephen P. Driver & Brothers, till 1868, when the firm name was changed to Driver Brothers.

All work to this date had been done by hand, and much of it out of the factory; all the work was of the finest kid or satin, and many of the ladies of Salem, young and old, did the binding and stitching at their own homes, the work being sent to them; but to compete with the times, machine-work had to be introduced in connection with hand-work, and all work must needs be done in the cutting-room of the factory; this stopped all home-work and hand-sewing, and introduced an entire new way of conducting the business, and revolutionized everything.

In 1871 the factory was moved back to Salem, at which date Samuel Driver withdrew, remaining in Lynn, where he opened for himself a shoe-factory for making children's shoes only, which he sold out in a short time.

Nov. 25, 1871, the two remaining brothers sold out the entire business, and dissolved partnership. Thus in 1887, after a business of seventy-five consecutive years, the name of Driver is not to be found connected with the shoe trade.

Children of **Stephen 3d** and **Mary (Beckford) Driver**, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

98. **STEPHEN BECKFORD DRIVER**⁸, born Dec. 18, 1821; died Jan. 22, 1822.

99. **MARY BECKFORD DRIVER**⁸, born Nov. 13, 1822; died in Salem, Mass., of consumption, July 27, 1854; md. in 1845, by Rev. Joel Mann, to William Phippen Fuller, son of Elijah and Mary (Phippen) Fuller; he born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 21, 1819; living there in 1886; tin-smith. He md., second, Oct. 4, 1859, Margaret C. Bott, dau. of James and Priscilla (Clark) Bott. No issue.

Children of first marriage were:—

1. **WILLIAM PHIPPEN FULLER**⁹, JR., born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 25, 1845; md., first, Sept. 23, 1870, Adelaide M. Merrill, who died without issue, Sept. 3, 1871. He md., second, Jan. 18, 1872, her cousin, Mary E. Merrill, and had issue—

(a) **ELIZA MERRILL FULLER**¹⁰, born April 29, 1877.

2. **HELEN ELIZABETH FULLER**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., July 11, 1848; md. Sept. 27, 1870, George Sargeant, and had issue—

(a) **EDWARD A. SARGEANT**¹⁰, born June 29, 1871.

100. **STEPHEN BECKFORD DRIVER**⁸, JR., born Aug. 10, 1824; died Aug. 16, 1824.

101. **ELIZABETH HELEN DRIVER**⁸, born March 13, 1828; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 6, 1882; buried in the family tomb, Broad Street Burial-

ground, Salem, Mass.; md. June 12, 1851, by the Rev. Dr. Brown Emerson, to David Brainard Brooks, son of John and Harriet (Manning) Brooks; he born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 9, 1824; died there, July 7, 1884. Children were:—

1. **STEPHEN DRIVER BROOKS**⁹ (Dr.), born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 23, 1853; living in Ohio in 1885, where he is an assistant-surgeon in the United States Marine Hospital; Sept., 1871, he entered Amherst College, aged 17, Class of 1875. He remained four years. In 1877 he went to Hackensack, N. J., as first assistant of its Academy; subsequently he was the principal of the same. Oct., 1880, he entered the Harvard Medical School at Boston, one year in advance of his class. He took a full course, receiving his degree, June, 1882. In 1883 he was appointed assistant-surgeon at the U. S. Marine Hospital, situated at Chelsea, Mass.; removed in 1885 to Marine Hospital in Ohio.
 2. **HELEN AMANDA BROOKS**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., March 7, 1857; living in Boston, in 1887; engaged in pianoforte instruction, being an accomplished pianist of high local reputation; unmarried.
 3. **JOHN BRAINARD BROOKS**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 31, 1861; died Feb. 3d same year.
 4. **MARY MANNING BROOKS**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 11, 1866; living with her sister in 1887; also possesses musical abilities, being proficient on the organ and pianoforte.
- 102. STEPHEN PIERSON DRIVER**⁸, born Dec. 20, 1829; living in 1887 in Lowell, Mass.; md. Feb. 1, 1855, in Salem, Mass., Mary Penniman Goodhue. (See Family XXXII.)

Children of **Stephen 3d.** and **Susanna Payson (Smith) Driver**, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

- 103. GEORGE HIBBERT SMITH DRIVER**⁸, born Oct. 1, 1836; died Sept. 16, 1839.
- 104. SUSAN SMITH DRIVER**⁸, born Oct. 1, 1839; living in Salem Mass., in 1887; unmarried. She graduated from Mt. Holyoke Seminary in 1857, where subsequently she became a teacher of mathematics and natural history; has the gift of song and poetry.
- 105. GEORGE HIBBERT SMITH DRIVER**⁸, born Feb. 4, 1842; living in 1887 in Lynn, Mass.; md. in Boston, Nov. 19, 1868, Lucretia Goddard Larkin. (See Family XXXIII.)
- 106. SAMUEL DRIVER**⁸, born Aug. 29, 1844; living in 1887 in Haverhill, Mass.; md. in Danvers, Mass., Oct. 22, 1868, Laura Marston Putnam. (See Family XXXIV.)

STEPHEN DRIVER 3d possessed a natural gift for drawing and painting, and indulged it to a wonderful degree, though uncultivated. His favorite subjects were birds, particularly those who sang sweetly. He sang sweetly himself to the last of his life, possessing a rare tenor voice. For years he sang in the choir of the Old South Church of Salem, where others of his family composed the choir at different times. His son, Stephen P., inherited his tenor voice, and his daughters, Helen and Susan, sang contralto; Helen's voice was par-

ticularly deep and fine; his nephew, John Saunders Driver, had a rich, deep, full bass voice; all of whom, save Susan, sang in the choir of the Old South Church with notable effect.

Mr. Driver was for many years the superintendent of the Sabbath-school connected with the Old South Church, where his wife and daughter Susan also instructed. Here his voice was very useful, and his instructions showed marked results; great sympathy existed between him and the school, which removal to Danvers severed. Here the later part of his life, at Beaver Brook, he bought a farm, and indulged his taste for agriculture, raising fine and rare fruits and flowers of all kinds for pleasure with remarkable success, at the same time attending to his shoe business at Salem. Here (Beaver Brook Farm) he died, and from here he was buried in the family tomb, in Salem, Mass.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXIII.

Rev. THOMAS DRIVER ⁷ (No. 76), son of Stephen ⁶, Jr. (Capt. MICHAEL ⁵, Capt. MICHAEL ⁴, WILLIAM ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, a Baptist minister, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 5, 1799, who at first was to have been named Paul, then Michael; but his mother, considering that enough of either name had been in the family, all of whom died young, insisted that the name should be Thomas, — much to the regret of his grandmother Driver, who was living at his father's at the time, and was desirous of naming the baby. He died in Lynn, Mass., Jan. —, 1873; md. at Salem, Mass., May 20, 1822, by Rev. Dr. Brown Emerson, to Mehitable Luscomb, dau. of William and Mehitable (Mansfield) Luscomb; she born in Salem, Mass., in 1798; bapt. there Jan. 16, 1800; died in Lynn, Mass., Feb. —, 1875 (see Appendix, Luscomb Family, No. 26).

Thomas Driver, as given under No. 51, learned the trade of making boots and shoes of his father, with whom he remained until 1822, when his brother Stephen, needing some one who could give his personal attention to the business, desired Thomas to buy out the father's interest, and form a co-partnership with him as Stephen and Thomas Driver. The offer was accepted, and together they continued to do business until 1827, when Thomas sold out his interest to his brother George, who at that date was conducting a retail trade in boots and shoes with his brother-in-law, Ebenezer Buswell, firm of Driver & Buswell, and Thomas with his family removed to Bangor, Me., where he opened a retail boot and shoe store, doing nothing but custom work.

Thomas of all the six brothers was the most desirous that one of their number should become a preacher, and being impatient of the progress Joseph was making in that direction, decided to preach himself; accordingly, while in Bangor engaged in the shoe business, he prepared himself to enter the Theological Seminary, and when twenty-eight years of age, the father of two sons, he sold out his business at Bangor, and removed with his family to Andover, Mass., and entered the Seminary there, Oct. 11, 1827, in the same class with his brother Joseph, they together occupying the same room.

Here Thomas remained only two years, when a position was offered him at the Baptist Church at South Boston, which he accepted May, 1829, preaching sixteen months there, when he removed to West Dedham, Mass. The Baptist Church there invited him to fill their vacant pulpit, which he continued to do for nine years, till 1838, when he received a recall from his old church at South Boston; he returned, and was installed Nov. 1, 1838. He remained there five years, till 1843, when he asked for a letter of dismissal, having accepted a call to the First Church of Lynn, Mass., Congregational, having at that date returned to his former belief and sect. Here he preached five years with great success, many being admitted to the church on profession of faith. His next call was to Stourbridge, Mass., where he preached seventeen months; at this place he was induced to write a book, called the "Slavery of the Pulpit," where he shows that as much slavery exists in the pulpit as ever existed in the Southern States; that a minister, to be acceptable, must be a slave to the ideas, views, and whims of his parishioners, or else he will no longer be considered useful in the pulpit, and his resignation called for, etc., etc. This book was not well received by his family and friends, and it was with great difficulty he could get it printed and bound. He issued but fifty copies at first, which many refused to receive even as a gift, considering his sentiments pernicious, dangerous, and condemnatory; others, who did receive a copy, hid it, reading it slyly, denying the possession if asked. One member of the family considered it so detestable that with the tongs he raised it out of its wrapper, and placed it on the coals to burn; consequently but one copy can now be found in the family, and the publisher who had the unbound sheets, after keeping them many years, sold them for waste-paper. The ungraciousness with which this book was received by the family may have been the reason why Mr. Driver did not publish the history of the Driver family, for which he had collected all papers extant in that family for that purpose, which the Compiler of this history deeply regrets, as those papers would have been of great value and assistance to her in her own efforts to a more complete account of the earlier families, and which he must have destroyed, as his sons never saw anything of them after his death.

Mr. Driver's next call was from West Randolph, and from there he was called to Rockport, Mass., where, on the record-books of the church, is the following: — "Rev. Thomas Driver supplies this pulpit from Dec. 14, 1852, to Aug. —, 1854, with good success; during his stay, the meetings were well attended; society increased; meeting house repaired inside; Thirty baptized and added to the church."

This was his last settlement; he bought a house at Lynn, Mass., where he lived till his death in 1873; and it is not known that he ever preached again, even an occasional sermon, in any pulpit temporarily vacant.

Mr. Driver was the tallest of the six sons, being about six feet high; his head was very large, forehead high, his eyes large, full, and piercing, in the corners of which there was always a twinkle of merriment; his mouth was in proportion to his face, which was large and round, his lips full, and his power of language abundant and expressive. His appearance in the pulpit was fine and commanding, and tradition states that his sermons were very able.

Children of Rev. **Thomas** and **Mehitable (Luscomb) Driver**, were:—

107. **WILLIAM LUSCOMB DRIVER**^s, born in Salem, Mass., in 1824; died in New Orleans, La., Feb. 2, 1868; md. Elizabeth — (see Family XXXV.).
108. **STEPHEN HENRY DRIVER**^s (known as "Henry"), born in Salem, Mass., May 20, 1826; living in 1887 with his brother Charles at Roxbury, Mass.; unmarried; one of the pioneers to California in 1849, having that year left the port of Boston, Mass., in the ship "New Jersey," and arrived at San Francisco, Cal., Oct. 11, 1849, where he remained, engaged in mining, till 1875, when he returned to Boston and its vicinity.
109. **CHARLES MILLET DRIVER**^s, born in South Boston, Mass., April 25, 1830; md. March 11, 1854, Mary Louise Bradley; both living in 1887 at Roxbury, Mass. (see Family XXXVI.).
110. **GEORGE WASHINGTON DRIVER**^s, born in West Dedham, Mass., April 28, 1832; living in 1886 in Augusta, Me.; md. in 1854 or 1855 Virginia C. Myerly, of Philadelphia, Pa. (see Family XXXVII.).
111. **JOSEPH GRAFTON DRIVER**^s, born in West Dedham, Mass., in 1836; living in 1885 in Ipswich, Mass.; unmarried.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXIV.

Rev. JOSEPH METCALF DRIVER^r (No. 77), son of Stephen^s, Jr. (Capt. MICHAEL^s, Capt. MICHAEL^s, WILLIAM^s, ROBERT^s, ROBERT^s), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, a Baptist minister; born in Salem, Mass., April 4, 1801; named for his grandfather, Joseph Metcalf, his mother omitting the Metcalf at his baptism, not caring for a middle name, but added by him when a young man; died in Windsor, Vt., at the house of his eldest son,

Joseph, Dec. 22, 1878; md. in Salem, Mass., Nov. 29, 1828, by Rev. Dr. Brown Emerson, to Maria Antoinette Saunders, dau. of John and Sarah (Crowninshield) Saunders, of Salem, Mass., and granddaughter of Capt. John and Eunice (Nutting) Crowninshield (see Appendix, Crowninshield Family, No. 15). She born in New York city, in 1799, to copy her own words, "in the month of May the 28th., in a house on the Bowery Road, about opposite Grand street. Attached to the house was a fine garden, full of rare fruits, and fine flowers; which house had been the home of a Scotch gentleman, who had brought over and planted the Scotch Broom. Several French Refugees living in the neighborhood begged that great grandmother Saunders call the child 'Maria Antoinette,' hence the name."

Maria's father formerly lived in Salem, Mass., where he removed his family in 1804; but in 1815 he returned to New York city, with his family, when he resided on the corner of Orchard and Rivington Streets, near what was then the Rutger estate. Subsequently they again removed to Salem, Mass., where they ever after remained. Her mother, Sarah Crowninshield, when a young lady, was a reigning belle, being very handsome and accomplished. When twenty-one years of age, she had the great honor of opening the ball with Gen. George Washington, given him by the citizens of Salem, Oct. 29, 1789, during his visit at that place. She wore a dress of highly flowered, white ground, satin brocade, white satin slippers, with very high pointed heels, and pointed toes, and diamond buckles: all of which are still retained in the family as precious relics, except the buckles, — those were long ago broken up and sold. A record of John Saunders's family was written by Mrs. Driver, and at her death in 1874 was given her youngest son, who kindly permitted its unlimited use in this history.

Joseph M. Driver entered Harvard College in 1823, Class of 1827, President Felton, William Brooks, John Dixwell, and Benjamin Varnum Crowninshield being his classmates.

By profession of faith at this date Mr. Driver was a Congregationalist, and consequently his conscience would not permit him to worship in the chapel of an Unitarian College; therefore he asked permission of the President of the College to be allowed to attend divine service on Sunday outside the College walls. This request was denied him, being an unheard of thing at that date, the answer being, "that all students *must* attend divine service in the chapel of the College;" the President adding, "that this was the first

request of the kind that had ever been made." This was about 1825; but now, in 1887, compulsory attendance at chapel service is no longer required; and in the Divinity School at Harvard no assent to the peculiar doctrines or practices of any denomination of Christians is required of instructors or students; and the Plummer Professor, Rev. F. G. Peabody, is at the head of the department of religious worship, assisted by five ministers of the Gospel, among whom are named the Rev. Drs. Brooks, Hale, and McKenzie, and Bishop Huntington of New York. For these assistant preachers a house will be provided and maintained by the college. All these divines will be selected from different religious denominations, and are to reside at the Cambridge residence during their six weeks' conduct of services in the Harvard chapel. They, with the resident professor, will have charge not only of the daily chapel service, but also of that on Sunday. All questions of attendance and of instruction in such matters are to be determined by them. Dr. Lyon, the Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard, says in a letter to the "Independent," that since the abolition of compulsory attendance at chapel service, "the attendance of faculty and of students has far exceeded the hopes of the most sanguine, while the chapel has become a real Bethel, a house of God, no longer a muster-ground for roll-call." He says: "Let me close this letter with the assurance that not one among us doubts the wisdom and, indeed, the necessity of the change."

No laxity was allowed in Mr. Driver's term; the rules were paramount, and consequently he had to attend the service in the chapel, which he found he was quite unable conscientiously to do, so was forced to leave the college in his Junior year, which no doubt was a great relief to the President, as Mr. Driver probably was considered a dangerous element in the college.

Oct. 12, 1826, he entered Andover Theological Seminary, in the class graduating in 1829, where, Oct. 11, 1827, he was joined by his brother Thomas Driver, as classmate and room mate.

He remained at this Seminary until 1828, during which time, while studying theology, he became a Baptist. From the Baptist Church at North Reading, Mass., he received a call, having several times supplied their pulpit according to the custom of the Seminary to have students practise as often as an opportunity occurred. He accepted, and was ordained Oct. 8, 1828, which prevented his graduating from the Seminary.

In a month after his ordination, Nov. 29, 1828, he was married in Salem, Mass., and in a chaise with wife and her baggage made his tour to North Reading to enter upon his first settlement.

Here he preached until Sept. 11, 1829, during which period he baptized two persons on profession of their faith. Feb. 23, 1830, he with his family, consisting of his wife and son, removed to Brookline, Mass., to be settled over the Baptist Church there. Here he was ordained March 25, 1830; the church not being ready for occupancy until that date, when the dedication took place at the same time as the ordination. Here he remained but six months, for Aug. 23, 1830, he asked for a letter of dismissal, although in that time sixteen persons had united with the church on profession of faith, and he seemed to be favorably received by the people.

October, 1831, he was settled over the Baptist Church at Randolph, Mass. Here he baptized thirty-three persons, and, at his own request, left October, 1832.

Sept. 16, 1832, he was called to Sharon, Mass., where he preached until 1834.

Some time in 1837 he went to Nashville to take charge of his brother Stephen's store, as given under No. 75; not being a success, he returned to Salem, and November, 1838, he accepted a call to Malden, Mass. Here he carried through an extensive work of church discipline. The previous pastor having changed his views and belief, the church became divided, some going over to the new belief with the pastor, others remaining where they had been baptized, as Baptists; consequently Mr. Driver had hard work, which for two years he faithfully performed with some success, as he baptized in that time seven persons.

Aug. 29, 1840, he took charge of the church at Plymouth, Mass. During this pastorate the church-membership was increased by twenty-eight, — two by letter, the others on profession. July 22, 1842, he was given a letter of dismissal, and October 3d of that year he received a call to Poultney, Vt. This church had its membership increased by one hundred and three persons while under the charge of Mr. Driver.

March 2, 1845, he preached his farewell sermon, obtained his letter of dismissal Sept. 7, 1845, and in October of that year he was settled over the Baptist Church at Charlotte, Vt.; here he baptized six, and left May of 1850.

Oct. 2, 1850, he was settled at Grafton, Vt., over the Baptist Church there. Here he baptized eleven, receiving three by letter. April 10, 1853, he left, and returned to Salem, Mass.

Sept. 25, 1853, Mr. Driver was called to take charge of the Baptist Church at Georgetown, Mass., where he remained till April 15, 1854, when he removed to Beaver Brook, Danvers, Mass., where his eldest brother resided on a large farm, as before stated. Here Mr. Driver assisted in the care of the farm, in this way resting from preaching two years, till 1856. December of that year he received a call from the Baptist Church at Rockport, Mass., which he accepted, remaining there until 1859, baptizing thirteen persons. At this church he raised enough money to remove the church to a new site, and put it in good repair, unencumbered by debt.

April, 1859, he left Rockport for Beverly, Mass., where he rested from his labors till 1862, when, a year after the breaking out of the War of the Rebellion, he received the position of Chaplain in the U. S. A., Columbia Hospital, Washington, D. C., which position he held two years and a half. Here his conscience again interfered with him, for he was unwilling to distribute the mail on Sunday, as he did not, with his Puritanic notions, consider it right to so do on that day. This made him unpopular, and he was superseded. Returning to his family at Salem, Mass., he remained till July, 1867, when he accepted a call from Hampton Falls, N. H. This was his final settlement, which he resigned October, 1868, and again returned to Salem. Here he lived till the death of his wife in 1874, when he removed to the home of his eldest son, in Windsor, Vt., where he died Dec. 22, 1878. He is buried at Beverly, Mass.,

in the Burial-ground there, together with his wife and son John. The spot is marked by a granite monument, which bears this inscription: —

"He shall doubtless come again with rejoicing bringing his sheaves."

Children of **Rev. Joseph Metcalf** and **Maria A. (Saunders)**

Driver were: —

- 112. **JOSEPH METCALF DRIVER** ^s, born at North Reading, Mass., Aug. 15, 1829; md. April 4, 1870, Ella J. Burnham, of Keene, N. H., both living in 1887 at Windsor, Vt. (See Family XXXVII.)
- 113. **JOHN SAUNDERS DRIVER** ^s, born in Randolph, Mass., July 28, 1831; died of typhoid fever at Beverly, Mass., Aug. 25, 1860; unmarried. He was admitted to the bar of Salem, Mass., June 25, 1859, at the June term of the Court of Common Pleas, — the only lawyer in a family which covers a period of two hundred and fifty years; but he did not live to practise his profession.
- 114. **STEPHEN WILLIAM DRIVER** ^s (M. D.), born in Sharon, Mass., April 17, 1833; md. Sept. 6, 1866, Martha Hamilton Clarence; both living in 1887, in Cambridge, Mass. (See Family XXXVIII.)
- 115. **THOMAS DRIVER** ^s, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 21, 1834; md., first, June 31, 1853, Frances Augusta Orvis, who died May 18, 1879; md., second, Nov. 9, 1881, Eline Dryhurst (Pierce) Cushman, widow of George H. N. Cushman; both living in 1887 in Chicago, Ill. (See Family XXXIX.)
- 116. **EDWARD AUGUSTUS HOLYOKE SAUNDERS DRIVER** ^s (named for his uncle, E. A. Saunders, No. 14, Saunders Family, Appendix, and Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, of Salem, Mass., the physician of his mother's family), born in Malden, Mass., July 19, 1840; md. June 12, 1866, Helen May Ives; both living in 1887 in Riverside, Cook co., Ill. (See Family XL.)

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXV.

Capt. WILLIAM DRIVER ^r (No. 78), master-mariner, son of Stephen, Jr. ^s (Capt. **MICHAEL** ^s, Capt. **MICHAEL** ^s, **WILLIAM** ^s, **ROBERT** ^s, **ROBERT** ¹), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver; born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1803; removed to Nashville, Tenn., in 1837, where he ever after lived till his death, March 2, 1886; md., first, at Salem, Mass., Feb. 20, 1827, by the Rev. Samuel Worcester, to Martha Silsbee Babbage, dau. of Capt. Christopher and Ruth (Randall) Babbage; she bapt. Dec. 26, 1802; died Sept. 5, 1837. (See Ap-

pendix, Babbidge Family, No. 49.) He md., second, at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 26, 1838, Sarah Jane Parks, dau. of Robert and Mary (Maclin) Parks, of Nashville, Tenn., and niece of his brother Henry's wife, a miss of fifteen years; born in 1823; died of yellow fever at Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 13, 1878. She being the niece of the wife of Henry Driver, like her, her maternal ancestors descended from John Rolfe and Pocahontas, — which Indian descent is quite marked in some of the descendants of the different generations.

William Driver attended the Hacker School, Salem, taught by Isaac Hacker, until he was thirteen years of age, when it was considered time that he should learn a trade; accordingly, he entered the blacksmith shop of Abner Goodhue, of Salem, Mass., for that purpose. Here he was put to blowing the bellows, to do which he had to stand on a candle-box to reach the handle, as he was very short in stature, for which the boys of his acquaintance continually made sport of, as also of his milking Mr. Goodhue's cow twice a day, which William did not consider a part of his trade, nor at all to his liking; neither did he like the smutty face he seemed unable to prevent, nor the bars of iron he must every day carry on his shoulder to the forge; so with many tears, and pleading words, at the end of the first year, he prevailed on his mother, who had a tender heart, to let him leave Mr. Goodhue and go to sea, which was most desired by William; therefore, when fourteen years of age he shipped as a sailor-boy on board the ship "China," owned by Tucker & Peabody, Hiram Putnam, master; which ship was bound for Leghorn, a voyage of sixteen months. William, before sailing, presented himself before Mr. Tucker to receive his orders, who after a few remarks, handed him five dollars, one month's wages in advance, less twenty cents, hospital money, with these parting words, "that all boys on their first voyage eat more than they earned." To which William replied not, nor smiled, but thought to himself, "I will show Mr. Tucker that there is one boy in the world who can earn all that he eats, and more too."

The voyage was made in safety; and again William presented himself to Mr. Tucker for the balance of his wages, and to see what he would this time say. Mr. Tucker received him with a smile and a hearty hand-shake. He handed him \$71.80, "for his father," he said, as all minors then had to give their earnings to their parents, keeping \$32.00 for himself, for the clothes he had furnished William for the voyage; then Mr. Tucker counted out twenty-eight Spanish silver dollars, and handing them to William, said, "This is for yourself, my boy, as a reward for being the first boy ever known to have earned on his first voyage what he eat." William with many thanks, and many smiles, ran home as fast as possible to show his silver dollars to his mother, who was as proud of them as William, charging him to always do the best he knew how all his life, which charge he never forgot, and which in his old age he often said made him. William's next two voyages were to Calcutta and back, in the ship "George," Endicott, master, which took twenty-six months.

His fourth voyage was in the brig "Jason," Endicott, master, as mate, to Gibraltar, through the Caribbean Sea to Havanna, and home to Salem.

On his fifth voyage he again was mate on the brig "Batavia," Chapman, master, for Antwerp, Gottenburg, and Liverpool.

The canvas of this brig was very old, but it was thought might hold till Antwerp was reached, when new would be procured; but long before that port was made it was entirely blown away, and both pumps were kept working day and night, of which William Driver took charge fourteen days, working one pump most of the time himself.

On this voyage Mr. Chapman, and Mr. Driver, master and mate, had a quarrel concerning some entries in the log-book made by the master, on which they were not of the same opinion. The mate at the first port left the brig, taking the log-book with him; shipped for Salem, on the ship "Perfect," arrived, reported himself to the owners of the "Batavia," showing them the log-book, at the same time explaining the quarrel. The owners were so much pleased with the act, and explanation, that they placed Mr. Driver as mate and trading officer, now called a purser, on board another of their ships, the "Clay," Benjamin Vanderford, master, bound for the Feejee Islands. This was his sixth voyage. At the Feejees they were to procure *bêche-de-mer*, a kind of sea slug, found there on reefs in shallow water, which being dried was taken to China, and the East Indies, sold for money, or given in exchange for any staple article.

While looking for the slug they found the crew of pirates from Manilla, who two years before had burned the brig "Conception," Beges, master, and murdered the officers.

After a quantity of *bêche-de-mer* was obtained, Capt. Vanderford knew nothing about curing it, so Mr. Driver thought out a way that it could be done if he had enough help; so he made friends with the natives and the pirates, hiring them for a stipulated amount to assist him in collecting and curing the slug. They soon cured 600 piculs (a weight of $133\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. is one picul), which Mr. Driver took to Manilla, then the largest town of the Philippine Islands, and sold at thirty-two dollars a quintal of one hundred pounds, while the natives and pirates continued the curing in his absence, as they had agreed. This money Mr. Driver shipped to the owners of the vessel, returned to the Feejee Islands, and cured six hundred more piculs, selling them at the same price. He then sailed for home, though quite unwilling to give up so good a trade; but having been away so long, the captain was desirous of returning to Salem.

On the homeward voyage they passed the brig "Quill," sent out to take the place of the "Clay," which Mr. Driver desired the captain to have lie to, so that he might board her and return to the Feejee Islands. As soon as the captain of the "Quill" learned from Mr. Driver about the good trade he had had, and that he could also speak the language of the island, which seemed so advantageous to the captain, he heeded Mr. Driver's desire and decided to take him with him to the Feejees in the capacity of trading-master only; so the "Clay" proceeded to Salem without him.

When the "Quill" reached the Islands and the natives saw Mr. Driver aboard, they received him with much joy, and many shouts.

In anticipation of his returning at some time they had gathered a quantity

of snails or slugs, which Mr. Driver immediately bought, and with their help cured 580 piculs; again he went with the snails to Manilla, this time selling them at twenty-nine dollars per quintal.

The natives, desirous of showing their great love for Mr. Driver, and that his return pleased them, on his return from Manilla took him to a place where they had hid a very large quantity of tortoise-shell, which they offered to him, but which he would not receive as a gift, but as trade. This he also sold at a large price, thus swelling the trade of his employers.

He remained on the Islands in all four years and one month, during which time he cured 1200 piculs of *bêche-de-mer*, being the first white man who had ever cured the snail or slug for market.

On his return to Salem, the owners were so well pleased with his success that they promoted him to master of their brig "Charles Doggett," in which as Capt. Driver he made his ninth voyage, and the most noted, again to the Feejee Islands to continue the trade in *bêche-de-mer*.

The "Charles Doggett" left the port of Salem on this voyage, Dec., 1831, in a most terrific snow-storm. Capt. Driver himself took the wheel, which till safely out of the storm he left but once, and that was to kick his only stove into the sea, which had overturned in one of the lurches of the ship, and thus was in danger of setting the ship on fire.

His mate, having on low shoes, complained of cold feet. Capt. Driver, considering he could not spare him long enough to go below for a pair of boots, kicked off his own boots for him to put on, thus standing himself at his post in his stocking feet.

Nothing of interest occurred until he neared Cape Brett, when he encountered a second storm; again Capt. Driver took the wheel, and was five days and five nights beating by the Cape. The gale was strong and the current southerly, and more, he was short of water.

On the sixth day, at about midnight, he decided to anchor at New Zealand, which island was inhabited by cannibals and runaway English convicts from Sydney, Australia.

All hands needed rest, particularly Capt. Driver; but he well knew with whom he had to deal, having been there before, — it being probable that as soon as they cast anchor the natives and convicts would steal on board for plunder and murder; but water must be had, and a risk must be taken.

The captain had the deck cleared of everything, such as lead, iron, and whatever might attract attention, and all guns placed below; but the cannon, a large one, was moved next the windlass, and loaded to the muzzle. The mate now went on watch, and was told to keep a sharp lookout on all sides of the brig, and not let even one canoe come alongside, even if he had to sweep the deck with the cannon. The captain went below to take his much-needed rest. The mate, never having been in that region before, must have looked only dead ahead of him, instead of all about, as ordered, for soon noiselessly about two hundred natives and Botany Bay men were aboard the brig; and the captain, as soon on deck as they were, rushed to the cannon, touched it off, sweeping the deck fore and aft with the shell.

The savages in great confusion dropped into the water, not stopping even

to take their mats and war-clubs with them; but their chief, Titirah, remained and faced the captain, showing fight.

The captain held him quiet under cover of his horse-pistols (to use his own words), one in each hand, and a dirk between his teeth; at which the chief only gleamed and smiled.

In his own language, which astonished the chief more than the weapons, Capt. Driver informed him he would give him just five minutes to clear the deck, or he could take the consequences.

To this Titirah only laughed aloud, and seated himself comfortably on the companion-way, showing that he had come to stay, and proposed so to do.

Capt. Driver in English then gave orders down the companion-way to uncollar a savage bulldog, who was chained right under where the chief sat.

The dog with a fearful bark and one bound seized the chief by the leg, tearing the flesh till the blood ran a stream. He begged that the dog be called and chained, and he would leave; accordingly Capt. Driver called the dog to him, and the chief instantly sprang into the sea, swimming to the canoes, which were full a mile ahead of the ship.

The savages were not again seen, and they never forgot Capt. Driver or his dog, which was learned by others who encountered them, for bad scars were carried by the chief to the end of his life.

Capt. Driver the next morning went to the missionary station, called Thepan, on the other side of the bay, a distance of sixteen miles, to get water. He told the missionaries his encounter and its result, which greatly surprised them, for they said that only a year before, in the very same place, an English ship had been boarded by this same war party, and all on board killed and eaten by them, in memory of which the place was called "Guo Rodica," or town of Hell. Here he obtained water and proceeded to Tahiti, where he found sixty-five persons, descendants of the mutineers of the English ship "Bounty," with their self-created teacher, George H. Nobbs, an Irishman, who once was a lieutenant of a Chilian Man of War.

These people at their own request had been taken from Pitcairn, an island in the southeast corner of the Polynesian Archipelago, a mile and a half square, and landed at Tahiti, where they all lived together as though one family in an old thatched shed which formerly had been used by the natives for their dances.

Here twelve had just died of ship-fever, and others convalescent were still weak and ill. Twelve had left in a French pearl-fisher, hoping to reach Pitcairn, their home, as they termed it.

The Queen of Tahiti, Pomare, came on board the "Charles Doggett," and entreated Capt. Driver to take the crying children home, as she termed them, as they all wanted to return to Pitcairn. Her appeal, together with the tears and lamentations of the people, so moved the tender heart of the captain that he consented to carry the sixty-five survivors back to Pitcairn, fourteen hundred miles out of his course, at the risk of losing the insurance on his vessel.

They did not reach Pitcairn till the end of the eighteenth day, where, on account of the surf and coral reefs, they could only be landed in small boats,

which with difficulty he did in safety, together with twelve boat-loads of baggage and their goods; for which humanity Capt. Driver received some old copper from the ship "Bounty," twelve blankets, one hundred and thirty-nine missionary drafts, and the following letter, the original of which was given the Compiler by Capt. Driver, after whose death she presented it to the Essex Institute of Salem, Mass., framed, where it can be seen at any time.

This letter was written by George H. Nobbs, their teacher, as he termed himself, but he was actually their Governor.

"PITCAIRN ISLAND, Sept. 3^d 1831.

This is to certify that Capt. Driver of the brig Chars. Doggett of Salem, carried sixty five of the inhabitants of Pitcairn Island from Tahiti back to their native land during which voyage Capt. Driver behaved with the greatest kindness and magnanimity becoming a man and a Christian; and we can never remunerate him for the kindness we have received. we sincerely hope that (through the blessing of the Almighty) he will reap that reward which infallibly attend the Christian

Signed

{ GEORGE H. NOBBS, Teacher
his
ARTHUR X QUINTAL
mark
JOHN BUFFETT
JOHN EVANS"

Capt. Driver's "kindness and humanity" were soon forgotten, as his name never appeared on their records, nor was it ever mentioned by any author in any work on the island. Capt. Driver always said "that it was recorded above, as every ship at that time in the Western Pacific ground, where his business called him, was lost in a terrible tornado, save his ship and crew, who rode out of it in safety."

In a book called "Sketch of Salem," published at Salem, a short account of this Tahiti adventure is to be found, on page 72.

To go to Pitcairn, part of the crew and some goods had to be left at Tahiti to accommodate the passengers to be removed, for which Capt. Driver had to return. He then set sail for the Feejee Islands, where he was as warmly received as before.

The chief, to show him that while absent he had been remembered, brought forth eight hundred pounds of tortoise-shell, which the natives had collected and saved for Capt. Driver, although many persons had offered very high prices for it, which at the time was scarce, and in great demand. But the chief refused all offers, saying, "Capt. Driver said he would return in thirteen months, and we shall wait, for he will keep his word."

At this date tortoise-shell was worth sixteen dollars a pound; therefore Capt. Driver thought it profitable to collect tortoise-shell and bêche-de-mer at the same time. Accordingly, with the help of the natives eight hundred pounds were collected, with which he filled his brig, together with a large quantity of cured bêche-de-mer. He sailed for the East Indies; made a good sale; loaded with sugar; sailed for home, — his last voyage to the Feejees.

The brig "Charles Doggett" during this voyage carried a flag, which in 1887 still exists, whose history is worthy of record.

Just before sailing, this flag was presented to Capt. Driver rolled up in the form of a triangle, with a little stop of thread round it, the halyards bent already, by a young man, a sailor, who stepped forward with lines in hand, and hat off, and amid deafening shouts said: "My countrymen! In ancient times when an ocean voyage was looked upon with superstitious dread, it was the custom on the eve of departure to roll the banner in a form like this (a triangle), when ready, and bent like this, a priest stepped forward and taking the banner in his hand, would sprinkle it with consecrated water, and dedicate it to 'God the Father,' 'God the Son,' and 'God the Holy Ghost,' turning the point of the triangle upwards as he named each person; thus calling on that Sacred Unity of Creator, Redeemer, and Sanctifier, to bless the national emblem, and prosper the voyagers and their friends. The flag thus consecrated was then hoisted to the mast-head, cables cast off, and the proud ship sailed out of port, leaving weeping multitudes behind."

This flag, called by Capt. Driver "Old Glory," has ever since been in his possession.

In 1861, at the breaking out of the War of the Rebellion, he resided at Nashville, Tenn.; and being a Union man, strong and steadfast, he with the skill of a sailor sewed it up inside the comfortable belonging to his bed, as all in Nashville knew that he possessed it, as he had been in the habit of hanging it from the windows of his house Washington's birthday, and his own, which came on St. Patrick's Day, also Fourth of July; consequently, the Confederates considered that it was their bounden duty to destroy it; therefore, many, many times his house and grounds were searched by the citizens of Nashville to find it, but always without success. Thus he kept it concealed, even from his own family, whose sympathies were all for the South, until Feb. 27, 1862, at which date the 25th Brigade, Gen. Nelson's wing of the Union Army, in fifteen transports, escorted by one gunboat, landed at Nashville, of which the Ohio 6th was the first regiment to land. They marched direct to the Capitol, tore down the Confederate flag, and in its place hoisted their regiment flag, which was small. Capt. Driver followed the regiment to the Capitol, and as soon as he saw this small flag, thought to himself, Now is the time to air "Old Glory." Consequently, he sought out the captain of the regiment, told him about his old flag, so long in hiding, and that if he would give him an escort of soldiers he would march with them to his house, and make them a present of "Old Glory," which was a very large flag, and which he did not dare carry through the streets alone, as he would be shot dead, and the flag taken from him. Accordingly the captain gave him the desired escort, who, as they marched along, heard from the old sea-captain the story of the flag.

On reaching his house he brought out his comfortable, ripped it open, raised up "Old Glory" out of its long hiding-place, which the soldiers immediately saluted with a hearty three times three, adding three cheers more for the old captain.

On returning to the Capitol, Capt. Driver asked permission to raise his flag with his own hands, which was granted him. Bare-headed, he climbed up on to the dome to so do, amid the heaven-shaking cheers of thousands, and with

the danger of being shot down by those who still clung to the Southern cause.

The wind was as high that night as the winds of March, so Capt. Driver stayed by all night to watch his old friend, for it was truly old, and thus easily torn. Soon it was evident that "Old Glory" would be in tatters if allowed to float; so the captain quickly returned to his home, and brought out another flag, larger and newer than "Old Glory," which also was in hiding, mounted the Capitol once more, took down the old flag, and replaced it with the newer one.

When the Ohio 6th left Nashville for their homes, Capt. Driver presented them with this second flag, which they placed in the rear of their baggage-wagon, and before reaching the end of their journey, their hungry mules, sad to relate, eat it up; and in 1882 Capt. Driver sent "Old Glory" to the Compiler as a present, with a letter "to make whatever disposition of it as she thought best, after his death." In 1886, therefore, she presented it to the Essex Institute at Salem, Mass., just as the wind left it after that eventful day; she adding a blue bunting label, the whole of its length, with "Old Glory," in large white bunting letters sewed on the face. Thus the old flag safely rests in the town from which it started in 1831, being fifty-eight years of age, to be seen by all who call on it.

Capt. Driver's last voyage was made in 1837; on returning from which he found his wife suffering from a cancer in the throat, from which she soon died; this, and on account of his three young children, he decided to quit the sea, and follow some pursuit on land.

His brother Henry resided in Nashville at this time, and his brother Stephen had just opened a retail shoe-store there, as an outlet for his accumulated goods at the North, to be conducted by their brother Joseph, accordingly Capt. Driver was induced to become a silent partner in this retail store, being about to settle in Nashville himself. The store was not a success, and soon was sold out; and as far as known, Capt. Driver did not attempt any other business venture.

During the Civil War he was Provost Marshal of Nashville, and did very active and energetic work in the hospitals there. He was a great friend of the negroes, among whom he had many warm friends. At any time he would rather give than receive; and for those afflicted or in distress, he had great sympathy.

Children of **Capt. William** and **Martha Silsbee (Babbage)**
Driver were: —

117. **WILLIAM CHRISTOPHER DRIVER**^s, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 12, 1827; died in New Orleans, La., July 2, 1874; md. there, about 1856, Anna Reece. (See Family XLI.)
118. **EBEN ROPES DRIVER**^s, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 7, 1833; baptized in the Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., soon after; named for his uncle, Capt. Ebenezer Ropes, brother-in-law to his mother. On the way to the church an objection being made by the ladies (his mother and aunt) to the *ezer* in the name, it was decided to call the child

Eben; removed to Nashville with his father in 1837; remained till 1884, when he settled in Boston, where in 1887 he resides, unmarried.

119. **MARTHA SILSBEE DRIVER** ³, born in Salem, Mass., July 11, 1836; living in 1887 in Chicago, Ill.; md. in Salem, Mass., at St. Peter's Church (Episcopalian), June 28, 1858, by Rev. Geo. Leeds, D.D., to William Henry Summers, son of Capt. William Summers, of Surrey, Eng., and Mary (Southard), widow of Edmond Upton, of Salem, Mass. *Mr.husb. d. April 18, 1835, see p. 120, line 3 for date of bur. in d. n. n.*
Children were:—

1. **MARTHA ELLEN SUMMERS** ³, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 17, 1859; living in Chicago, Ill., in 1887, unmarried.
2. **FREDERICK WILLIAM SUMMERS** ³, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 7, 1866; died there, Sept. 28th, following; buried in the Family Tomb, Broad Street Burial-ground.

Children of **Capt. William** and **Mary Jane (Parks) Driver**, all born in Nashville, Tenn., were:—

120. **MARY JANE DRIVER** ³, born Nov. 5, 1838; living in 1887 at Wells, Elko co., Nevada; md. in Nashville, Tenn., Feb. 1, 1865, Charles Hamilton Roland, son of Lucien Grammont and Irene R. (Davillier) Roland, of New Orleans, La., where Charles was born, May 16, 1832. No issue. Mr. Roland in a direct line is a descendant from Roland, the supposed nephew of Charlemagne, the hero of his court and the most famous of his twelve peers, who was accidentally but fatally wounded by his friend Oliver in the Pass of Roncesveaux in 778, who himself had received his death-wound, and was blinded by his own blood.

In the spring of 1868 Charles H. Roland removed from Nashville, Tenn., to Soda Springs, Idaho, where he opened a store dealing in general supplies, which in 1873 he sold out to Brigham Young and William Hooper, of Salt Lake City, Utah. Mr. Roland removed to Wells, Elko co., Nevada, where he engaged in the raising of stock, principally horses, and continues to so do in 1887.

121. **GEORGE WILLS DRIVER** ³, born Oct. 5, 1840; died in 1862 at Harodsburg, Ky., from wounds received at Perryville, Ky., in the War of the Rebellion, having at the breaking out of the war enlisted as a private in the Confederate Army, in the Rock City Guards, of the Tennessee First Regiment.

Throughout the war he had not a day's sickness, nor was he once absent from duty; but in the desperate battle at Perryville, where Gen. Bragg attacked Gen. Buell, assaulting him in front and flank, by the heavy cannonading of his infantry concealed in the adjacent woods and ravines, George W. Driver was wounded in the knee. He fell on his side, but repeatedly used his gun in that position; but as his comrades commenced to retreat, he handed his gun to one of them, who had lost his own, calling after him to be sure and make good use of it. Soon after he was taken from the field and carried in a wagon, a

distance of eight miles, to a private house in Harodsburg, where he received every possible attention; but the long ride and the loss of blood and the cold made his case hopeless. Thus he died among strangers, and by them buried at Harodsburg.

122. DELILAH ANN DRIVER⁸, born Sept. 2, 1842; died June 14, 1844.
 123. HENRY LYNCH DRIVER⁸, born March 23, 1845; md. June 18, 1878, Margaret Roxburgh, of Salt Lake City, Utah. (See Family XLII.)
 124. ROBERT PARKS DRIVER⁸, born June 21, 1847; removed to the Far West during the Civil War; living in 1885 in Oro Blanco, Arizona Territory; in 1887, in Bingham Canon, Utah, engaged in mining; unmarried.
 125. DELILAH ANN DRIVER⁸, born Sept. 7, 1849; living in Nashville, Tenn., in 1887; md. there, Feb. 17, 1870, Edward Reece, son of — —; he born May 12, 1844, in De Kalb co., Tenn.

Children were: —

1. WILLIAM REECE⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., June 22, 1871.
 2. GEORGE REECE⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., Aug. 7, 1873.
 3. ANNIE MASON REECE⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., Aug. 23, 1875.
 4. EDWARD REECE⁹, JR., born in Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 10, 1877.
126. ELIZABETH ROPES DRIVER⁸, born March 21, 1852; living in 1886, at Sundance, Dakota; md. at Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1872, Thomas Hiter Moore, son of James G. and Mary (Hiter) Moore, of Straband, Ireland, who emigrated to America in 1830, settled first at Pittsburg, Pa., afterwards at Nashville, Tenn.; by trade a saddler. During the late Civil War, he furnished the Southern Confederacy with seven thousand sets of artillery harness, and as many cavalry saddles and bridles; died of paralysis of the brain, June 15, 1878.

Mary (Hiter) Moore was the daughter of Thomas Hiter; she born in Franklin, Tenn., in 1822; her mother was the sister of Major McCrory. She had issue nine children, and died of cancer Feb. 2, 1874.

Thomas Hiter Moore was born at Nashville, Tenn., April 4, 1848; educated at Notre Dame, Md.; lived in Nashville until 1879, when he removed to Lead City, Dakota, where he was the manager of the mammoth store there; removed to Sundance, Dakota, in 1886, where he has a general store.

Children were: —

1. SADIE MAY MOORE⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., June 8, 1878.
 2. VAN DYKE MOORE⁹, born in Lead City, Dakota, May 25, 1881.
127. RUTH METCALF DRIVER⁸, born June 16, 1856; living in 1886 at Lead City, Dakota; md. in Nashville, Tenn., at Christ Church, Jan. 5, 1880, Lewis Drake, son of Jeremiah and Henrietta (Brokaw) Drake; he born in Lebanon, Ill., June 9, 1856.

Child was: —

1. ELZA HART DRAKE⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 2, 1881.
128. THOMAS PITCAIRN DRIVER⁸, born Sept. 10, 1858; died June 13, 1859.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXVI.

GEORGE DRIVER⁷ (No. 79), son of Stephen⁶, Jr. (Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., May 7, 1805, for whom there seemed no family name left, the mother objecting strongly to Michael or Paul. Two years he was unnamed; at the end of that time a neighbor came with her baby, named George, to spend the day with Mrs. Driver. This baby cried the whole day long, just with temper. The Driver baby watched and listened, learned the act, and the next day he cried all day long; William, his brother, then about four years of age, was repeatedly called on to rock the baby's cradle. At first he did so willingly; then he refused, saying, "Georgie cryie baby, no! no!" which he repeated ever after every time the baby cried. Hence the baby was called George.

He lived in Salem, Mass., and there died April 7, 1887; buried there in Harmony Grove.

He married first, April 28, 1829, Mary Pitman, dau. of Mark and Sophia (Francis) Pitman; she born in Salem, Mass., July 14, 1806; died there May 28, 1830. No issue.

He married second, Aug. 12, 1835, Sophia Derby Field, dau. of Thomas and Bridget (Lang) Field, and the widow of Kendall Flint (see Appendix, Derby Family, No. 20). She born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 8, 1805; died there March 21, 1870; buried in Harmony Grove there.

George Driver learned the cabinet trade of Mark Pitman, father of his first wife, but made use of it for a short time only, for in 1827, when twenty-two years of age, he entered the shoe house of Stephen Driver 3d, his eldest brother, as limited partner, — then a retail store, doing custom work only, in their own shop, 196 Essex Street, now W. & J. Leonard. In 1836 Stephen Driver 3d sold out his interest to Ebenezer Buswell, his brother-in-law, and Stephen commenced a wholesale business of boots and shoes, as given under Family XXII. This firm of George Driver and Ebenezer Buswell now became Driver & Buswell, and so continued until 1847, when George Driver withdrew to assist his brother Stephen in the wholesale trade. Here he remained till his brother's death, in 1867.

. The facts and dates of the boot and shoe accounts of this family were

voluntarily contributed by the said George Driver, who was desirous they should be used to show the rise and fall of a trade, once extensive, now unknown in the family, save as a memory.

Children of **George** and **Sophia Derby (Field) Driver** were: —

129. **SOPHIA OSGOOD DRIVER***, born in Salem, Mass., March 23, 1841; living there in 1887; is a teacher in the Normal School there; unmarried.
130. **RUTH HELEN DRIVER***, born in Salem, Mass., March 20, 1843; living in 1887 in Toronto, Canada; md. in Boston, Mass., for his second wife, April 12, 1882, Rev. Jasper Frederick Wightman, an Evangelist of the Catholic Apostolic Church, son of Jasper Wightman, of Framingham, Suffolk, Eng., and Mary (Matthew) of Woodbridge, Suffolk, Eng., who was born in London, Eng., Jan. 21, 1834; arrived in New York city May, 1846, to be an evangelist in the Catholic Apostolic Church there. He married, first, in New York city, Feb., 1859, Emily Smith, who died without issue, March 15, 1861. He was settled in Boston, Mass., Oct., 1874, as a pastor over the Catholic Apostolic Church there. In 1883 he was removed to Toronto, Canada, to the church there of the same denomination, where he again was an evangelist, and so continues in 1887.

The Catholic Apostolic Church is popularly believed to have been originated by Edward Irving, and its people therefore are often called Irvingites, which is erroneous. Edward Irving became a convert, and was one of their endowed men called "Apostles," but he was not the originator. "Twelve of these especially endowed men met and agreed upon a visitation to different lands, first forming, July 14, 1835, what is called the 'College of the Apostles.' They separated, examined the cultus of Christianity in all its different forms in different lands, and then culled from its universal life the very best of its ritual, and organized the present form of services." — (*Evening Telegram*, Toronto, issue of May 14, 1887.)

"The belief is that these 'Apostles,' God has been pleased to call supernaturally by the Holy Ghost to fill the office and discharge the functions of apostles. In most of the congregations there are, besides, an order of ministers known as prophets; others, both men and women, in whom are seen gifts of prophecy which are for exhortation and comfort (see Eph. iv. 9-13). The most distinctive feature of the teaching prevalent to this body is the interpretation given to the clause of the apostolic creed, — 'He cometh again to judge the quick and the dead.' While a greater part of the Christian Church has understood this to imply an advent of Christ to a final judgment at the end of all things, this body holds and teaches that the second advent of the creed interpreted by the New Testament prophecies declares a coming of Christ to some at an intermediate period before the final consummation. There is then to be another dispensation of grace for men, to be distinguished by the personal presence with His Church of the risen man Christ Jesus, who shall come again from His Father's right hand — and that the dispensation that will be introduced by His coming will be the kingdom of God upon earth; the coming of the Lord will be signalized by the first resurrection, — the resurrection of His saints who have fallen asleep, and the

change of the living Church, so far as it is found faithful to Him, and that then the risen and changed saints will be taken away to be forever with the Lord; while the world goes on under changed conditions, more favorable to its perfect development, and the nations of the earth are brought to the knowledge of the Lord." — *Boston Daily Globe*, issue of April 7, 1878.

"The greatest peculiarity of this belief is their belief in the presence of the Holy Ghost as a Person, and not merely as an influence, manifested in 'tongues and prophecy,' and other gifts of the Spirit, and in calling men to their office of Ministry in the Church." — MR. WIGHTMAN.

This church is supported by "tithes;" no collections are taken, but each member is expected to place in a box just within the church-door one tenth of what he earns during the week; if he can contribute more, it is to be placed in the box for the poor, or for "evangelistic work," or "building fund;" no pews are rented, and no assessment of any kind is levied. Next to these boxes is a bowl of water, into which every member dips his fingers, and touches his forehead with it, to remind him of his baptismal standing. The service in the church is entirely choral, and the responses given by the entire congregation. The confession is said while the bishop faces the altar, but he faces the people when he pronounces the absolution. The Epistle is read by a priest, and the Gospel is read by a minister. All recite the Nicene creed, and bow the head at "He was made man," making a long pause. Incense is sprinkled upon live coal, to symbolize intercession offered by Christ in His church, and while the white smoke spreads up and over the altar, the emblems are being placed upon it, as the Communion is administered every Sunday. Their faith in the sacrament is very strong, and they sometimes associate with its administration healing properties. All this ritual is used under authority of the "College of Apostles," whose headquarters are in Albury, England. This Communion differs from Adventists, Plymouth Brethren, and the various schools of Millenarians, in the belief of the necessity of a special preparation for the coming of the Lord, by the agency of a spiritual ministry raised up for that purpose. — *Abstract from the Boston Daily Globe*.

Child of **Rev. Jasper F. and Ruth Helen (Driver) Wightman** was: —

(a) **GEORGE JASPER WIGHTMAN**⁹, born in Boston, Mass., Sept. 27, 1883.

131. **SARAH ELLEN DRIVER**⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 17, 1849; living in Toronto, Canada in 1887; unmarried.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXVII.

HENRY DRIVER⁷ (No. 81), son of Stephen⁶, Jr. (Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 19, 1808; living in 1887 in Nashville, Tenn., where, in 1826, he removed from Salem, Mass.; md. there about 1835 Elizabeth Carter Maclin; she, born May 30, 1816, — a descendant, through the Carters, her maternal relations, of Pocahontas, daughter of King Powhatan, sachem of the Indians of Eastern Virginia, who married John Rolfe, as his second wife, April 5, 1614, and had an only child, a son, Thomas Rolfe, who married Jane Rogers, of Poythers, of England, and had an only daughter, Jane Rolfe, who married, in 1675, Col. Robert Bolling, of Kippax, in Virginia, and died in 1678. She had one son, Major John Bolling, of Cobbs, near Petersburg, Va., born in 1676, died 1729, who married Mary Kenyon, daughter of Capt. Richard Kenyon, of Honduras Neck, near Petersburg; a daughter of whom, Jane Bolling Kenyon, married Col. Richard Randolph, of Curles, in Virginia. The Randolphs were connected with the Carter family, relations of the said Elizabeth Carter Maclin, but the direct descent could not be ascertained, as a family history was not of any interest to Family Twenty-seven; hence facts and data had to be obtained outside of this family, and thus may be as inaccurate as it is incomplete.

The sons of Family Twenty-seven served in the War of the Rebellion in the Confederate Army; but how or where, was too vague and disconnected to be used.

Children of **Henry** and **Elizabeth Carter (Maclin) Driver** were: —

132. **JOHN MACLIN DRIVER**⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 9, 1837; md. Mary E. Traylor (see Family No. XLIV.).
133. **HENRY DRIVER**⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 30, 1839; died young.
134. **WILLIAM OLIVER DRIVER**⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., March 13, 1841; living there in 1887, unmarried.
135. **SALLY MACLIN DRIVER**⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 5, 1843; living there in 1887; md. in 1861 James Edmonson, son of William + Mary Edmonson, a descendant of the Carter family, and a descendant of the Driver family.

THE DRIVER FAMILY.

189

and Elizabeth (Whithorn) Edmonson, he born in Williamson co., Tenn.

Children were : —

- (a) HARRY EDMONSON⁹, born Nov. 27, 1863; married.
- (b) WILLIAM EDMONSON⁹, born July 16, 1866; married.
- (c) ELIZABETH EDMONSON⁹, born May 16, 1871.
- (d) MARY B. EDMONSON⁹, born Nov. 28, 1876.

- 136. CHRISTOPHER MACLIN DRIVER⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 3, 1845; living there in 1887; md. Clara McKinnie. No issue.
- 137. RUTH METCALF DRIVER⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 6, 1847; living in 1887 at Kansas City, Mo.; md. Adam Woolf, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Heighton of London, Eng.) Woolf, he born in Columbiana co., Ohio, Nov. 7, 1841. His father born in Pittsburgh, Pa.

Children were : —

- (a) RUTH METCALF WOOLF⁹, born Feb. 10, 1871.
- (b) ELIZABETH WOOLF⁹, born Oct. 14, 1873.
- (c) WILLIAM WOOLF⁹, born April 14, 1875.
- (d) ADAM HEIGHTON WOOLF⁹, born Feb. 6, 1879.
- (e) WEBBER WOOLF⁹, born Jan. 6, 1883.
- (f) BOB LEE WOOLF⁹ (a girl), born May 30, 1887.

- 138. STEPHEN DRIVER⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., Aug. 8, 1849; living there in 1887; md. Sarah Elizabeth Jonte. No issue. *she is dead*
- 139. ELIZABETH DRIVER⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., July 9, 1851; living there in 1887; md. May 12, 1882, William Webber. Child was: *she is dead*

- (a) ALICE WEBBER⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., May 23, 1883.

- 140. HARRIOT DRIVER⁸, born in Nashville, Tenn., May 7, 1852; died young.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXVIII.

Capt. ANDREW DRIVER⁷ (No. 85), son of Samuel⁶ (Capt. SOLOMON⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Miriam (Hooper) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., Nov. 2, 1774; master-mariner; died Feb. 6, 1826; md. Sept. 30, 1795, Rachel Day, dau. of Joseph and Rachel (Bear) Day; she born Dec. 13, 1771; died Sept. 6, 1857; both buried in grave-yard at Manchester, Mass.; have a tombstone with this inscription : —

"Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord."

Children of Capt. **Andrew** and **Rachel (Bear) Driver** were :

- 141. RACHEL DRIVER⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 15, 1796; died there Feb. 5, 1797.

142. **ANDREW DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 10, 1798; died at Savannah, Ga., Aug. 2, 1816.
143. **DAVID DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 30, 1802; master-mariner; died Sept., 1850; md. June 25, 1837, Emma Elizabeth Hammond. (See Family XLVI.)
144. **JOSEPH DAY DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Oct. 30, 1804; died in Rockport, Mass., Sept. 14, 1853; md. Nov. 6, 1834, Adelia Low. (See Family, XLV.)
145. **RACHEL DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Feb. 21, 1806; died Nov. 18, 1881; md. Nov. 28, 1833, Ivory Brown, son of Isaiah and Mary (Crediford) Brown; he born in Manchester, Mass., June 15, 1806; cabinet-maker; died at Manchester, Mass., Jan. 10, 1886. No issue.
146. **ABIGAIL DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., May 20, 1808; died Aug. 12, 1820.
147. **JOHN HOOPER DRIVER**⁸ (Capt.), born in Manchester, Mass., March 1, 1810; master-mariner; died Aug. 19, 1860; md. May 24, 1840, Joanna Annable, dau. of Daniel and Eunice (Andrews) Annable; she born in Manchester, Mass., April 11, 1811; living there in 1887. No issue.
148. **MARIA DRIVER**⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Oct. 27, 1811; died Oct. 2, 1858; md. Sept. 25, 1834, Israel Allen, son of Nathan and Elizabeth (Perry) Allen; he born in Manchester, Mass., Aug. 14, 1812; a pioneer of California, for which State he sailed from Gloucester, Mass., Dec. 11, 1849, and arrived at San Francisco June 16, 1850, — a voyage of 187 days; died there July 29, 1850, forty-five days after his arrival; by trade a brick-maker.

Children were:—

1. **MARIA PERRY ALLEN**⁹, born July 25, 1835; died Dec. 25, 1849.
2. **ISRAEL FOSTER ALLEN**⁹, born Dec. 24, 1836; died June 27, 1846.
3. **DAVID DRIVER ALLEN**⁹, born April 17, 1838; died Aug. 22, 1839.
4. **DAVID BRAINARD ALLEN**⁹, born June 3, 1842; living in 1887 in Everett, Mass.; md. first, June 15, 1864, at Bath, Me., Mary E. Edes; she born April 4, 1842; died in Charlestown, Mass., Jan. 3, 1869; md. second, Feb. 27, 1872, at Rockport, Mass., Esther G. Brooks; she born in Rockport, Mass., Aug. 28, 1847; living in 1885 in Everett, Mass. No issue.

Child of first marriage was:—

(a) **ERNEST DAVID ALLEN**¹⁰, born Dec. 28, 1868; living in 1885 at Everett, Mass.

5. **NATHAN ALLEN**⁹, born June 17, 1845; died Aug. 8, 1846.
6. **MARY BROWN ALLEN**⁹, born July 25, 1848; living in 1887 in Manchester, Mass., at the house of her uncle, Ivory Brown, unmarried. She contributed the data of the family of Capt. Andrew Driver, for which the Compiler is very much indebted, and desires to acknowledge the same.

149. **JACOB HOOPER DRIVER**⁸, born April 13, 1816; died August following.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXIX.

JOHN DRIVER⁷, Jr. (No. 91), son of John⁶ (Capt. JOHN⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Elizabeth (Leach) Driver; baptized at Manchester, Mass., Aug., 21, 1769; died Aug. 10, 1832; published April 15, 1791, to Elizabeth Day, dau. of Joseph and Rachel Day; she born Dec. 12, 1766.

Children of **John Driver, Jr.**, and **Elizabeth (Day) Driver** were:—

150. ELIZABETH DRIVER⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Aug. 5, 1793.
151. JAMES DRIVER⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Jan. 12, 1795; died at sea July, 1821, unmarried (First Church of Manchester Records).
152. DANIEL DRIVER⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., Jan. 18, 1799.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXX.

NEHEMIAH DRIVER⁷ (No. 92), son of John⁶ (Capt. JOHN⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Elizabeth (Leach) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., May 23, 1770; died before 1805; md. July 4, 1793, Apphia Hilton, dau. of Amos and Apphia (Brown) Hilton; she born in Manchester, Mass., May 24, 1775; died March 28, 1866, at the house of her son-in-law, Francis Haskell, at Essex, Mass.

She md. second, about 1805, as his second wife, Charles Adams, of Beverly, Mass., son of William and Mary (Porter) Adams, of Marblehead, Mass., mariner; he born in Manchester, Mass., Jan. 3, 1778; died at sea Oct. 4, 1828; his first wife was Lois Herrick, whom he married Aug. 8, 1797, and had three children; namely:

1. CHARLES ADAMS⁸, born Aug. 17, 1798.
2. ALFORD ADAMS⁸, born July 30, 1799.
3. THOMAS ADAMS⁸, born Dec. 5, 1801.

Children by wife Apphia (Hilton) Driver were:—

4. JOHN ADAMS⁸, born March 9, 1806.
5. EZEKIEL LEACH ADAMS⁸, born March 23, 1808.

6. LOUISA ADAMS⁸, born Feb. 4, 1810; md. Sept. 14, 1839, Alvah Woodbury.
7. CHARLOTTE ADAMS⁸, born July 3, 1812.
8. MARY KIMBALL ADAMS⁸, born Nov. 21, 1814; md. April 23, 1840, Francis Haskell, of Essex, Mass. (Beverly Town Record).

Child of **Nehemiah** and **Apphia (Hilton) Driver** was:—

153. APPHIA DRIVER⁸, born in Manchester, Mass., May 27, 1795; died at Beverly, Mass., May 27, 1831; md. Nov. 10, 1822, William Stone, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Hooper) Stone; he born in Manchester, Mass., Jan. 30, 1793; died at Beverly, Mass., Feb. 4, 1831. Children were:—

1. WILLIAM STONE⁹, born about 1824; died young.
2. SAMUEL HOOPER STONE⁹, born July 15, 1826; died Sept. 7, 1881; md. May 29, 1851, Caroline Augusta Dodge, dau. of Azor and Elizabeth (Foster) Dodge; she born Sept. 17, 1830; living in Beverly, Mass., in 1885, and had four children; namely:—

(a) SAMUEL HOOPER STONE¹⁰, born Jan. 26, 1852; md. April 28, 1875, Georgianna Maria Tebbets, dau. of Benjamin and Serepta (Keyes) Tebbets. No issue. The Compiler is indebted to the said Mr. Stone for the data of the family of Nehemiah Driver, and all information concerning the marriage of his widow,—a kindness ever to be acknowledged.

(b) WILLIAM STONE¹⁰, born Aug. 1, 1854; died Sept. 3, 1869.

(c) EDWARD FRANCIS STONE¹⁰, born May 23, 1857; living in 1885 in Charlestown, Mass.; md. Dec. 31, 1879, Ariadne Augusta Moreland, dau. of John W. and Mary Ann Moreland, of Salem, Mass.

(d) JOHN PERLEY STONE¹⁰, born July 6, 1862; living, unmarried, in Beverly, Mass., in 1885.

3. ELIZABETH HILTON STONE⁹, born Sept. 6, 1830; living in 1885 in Beverly, Mass.; md. Oct. 14, 1852, Azor Dodge, son of Azor and Elizabeth (Foster) Dodge, brother of her sister-in-law; he born Dec. 20, 1822; died May 14, 1882. (This lady contributed greatly to the compiling of this family, and aided Mr. Stone's information and collections.)

They had three children; namely:—

(a) ELIZABETH FOSTER DODGE¹⁰, born Aug. 15, 1853; md. Jan. 20, 1879, Alva H. Dodge, son of Uzial and Harriet Dodge, of Beverly, Mass.

(b) AZOR AUGUSTUS DODGE¹⁰, born June 13, 1858; living unmarried, in 1885, in Charlestown, Mass.

(c) MARY PROCTOR DODGE¹⁰, born June 23, 1863; died Sept. 7, 1879.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXI.

SAMUEL DRIVER¹ (No. 96), son of Samuel⁶ (Capt. SOLOMON⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹) and Bethiah (Allen) Driver; born in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 19, 1773; mariner; died at sea April, 1811; buried at Stonington, Conn., according to a tombstone erected in the Burial-ground of Manchester, Mass., to his wife Anna.

Administration granted his widow, Anna, May 7, 1811; md. Dec. 9, 1800, Anna Allen, dau. of William and Anna (Lee) Allen, of Gloucester, Mass.; she born July 10, 1779; died of lung-fever, Jan. 29, 1849.

Children of **Samuel and Anna (Allen) Driver** were:—

154. **SAMUEL DRIVER**², born Feb. 13, 1805; died May 9, 1806.
155. **SAMUEL DRIVER**², born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 16, 1806; md. March 3, 1836, Louisa Roberts. (See Family XLVII.)
156. **ANNA DRIVER**², born in Manchester, Mass., Aug. 2, 1811; living there in 1885; md. Aug. 19, 1829, Hilliard Morse, son of Samuel and Johanna (Babcock) Morse, of Beverly, Mass.; he born in Manchester, Mass., Oct. 18, 1807; mariner; lost with his vessel, in the great gale of September, 1843.

(All the data of this family of Samuel Driver was furnished by this lady, for which grateful acknowledgment is given.)

Children were:—

1. **CAROLINE MORSE**², born Nov. 10, 1829; died Aug. 17, 1847.
2. **HILLIARD ANDREW MORSE**², born Sept. 1, 1831.
3. **ANN ELIZABETH MORSE**², born Aug. 22, 1833.
4. **ALICE WILMINGTON MORSE**², born April 2, 1836.
5. **WILLIAM HENRY MORSE**², born Nov. 30, 1838; died Oct. 19, 1840.
6. **CHARLES HENRY MORSE**², born March 20, 1840; died March 16, 1882.
7. **LOUISA W. MORSE**², born Jan. 14, 1843; died April 25, 1884.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXII.

STEPHEN PIERSON DRIVER⁶ (No. 102), son of Stephen⁷, 3d (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁶, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mary (Beckford) Driver, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 20, 1829; living in 1885 in Lowell, Mass.; md. in Salem, Mass., Feb. 1, 1855, by Rev. Dr. Brown Emerson, Mary Palfrey Goodhue, dau. of William Penniman and Alice (Very) Goodhue, of Salem, Mass.; she born in Salem, Mass., May 10, 1833; living in Lowell, Mass., in 1885. (See Appendix, Palmer Family, No. 20.)

In the War of the Rebellion, Stephen P. Driver was Quartermaster Sergeant of the 23d Mass. Regiment, going with Burnside in 1862 to the coast of North Carolina.

March 14, 1862, he was in the battle at Newbern, N. C., in which Gen. Burnside defeated the Confederates, captured sixty-nine cannon and two steamboats, took five hundred prisoners, and occupied Newbern.

While at Newbern, Stephen P. Driver was the leader of a double quartet choir in the church there, composed only of male voices, he himself being a very fine singer, possessing a high, superior tenor voice. From his youth he has sung in church choirs and concerts, and for a long time has been a member of the Handel and Haydn Musical Society of Boston, Mass.

At Lowell, Mass., he formed a club, called the Amphions, composed entirely of male voices, of which he was the leader.

He also possessed the twin gift of poetry. His poems from time to time have been published in many periodicals and newspapers, particularly in the "Salem Gazette," the oldest newspaper of his native place; but no collection of them as a whole exists, nor has he copies of them all; the following therefore have been selected from what could be obtained, and while they may not be his best efforts, yet will serve as a specimen:—

LESSONS OF TWILIGHT.

The clouds, across the twilight's golden bar,
Have drawn their curtains round the drowsy sun,
While, from afar,
The glowing pencil of the evening star
Signs the full record of the day that's done.

But lo! far up the mountain's craggy steep,
And where yon forest lifts its towering crest,
Stray sunbeams creep

And, while the day is rapt in sudden sleep,
 Their clustered glories like a halo rest.

Farewell, sad day! grown rich in care alone!
 Hence! like a stingy miser to his cell,
 In haste begone!

Here, in this holy silence, all mine own,
 To formless shades my tale of grief I tell.

Farewell, sad day! and hail, sweet, ruthless night!
 Grief shall not haunt thy consecrated hours,
 And thou 'lt requite,
 If but with dreams, the sorrows of the light,
 And, for thy little span, change thorns to flowers.

Blest mountain tops of sleep! whose heights disclosed
 The sheeny radiance of a newer trust!
 Thrice blest repose!

Thy kindly angels smile away our woes,
 And cleanse our earthly garments of their dust.

Yet morn succeeds to night, and brings again,
 With the first shimmer of its fevered ray,
 The old, old pain.

And the gaunt tyrant care, with iron reign,
 Usurps the troubled kingdom of the Day.

When shall that Day begin, which brings no more
 The fiery struggle unto brain and limb?
 Where is the shore

Which echoes not the galley's labored oar?
 Where glows the sunlight, clouds may never dim?

Wait, soul of mine! and all thy task complete!
 Work, weary hands! the labor soon shall end!
 Plod on, oh feet!

Well finished toil shall make the Rest more sweet,
 And God proclaims Himself the toiler's Friend.

Then, why should I to senseless winds portray
 The shadowy troubles of my life's unrest!
 His ear alway

Is open to my calling, night or day;
 And He my all of need divineth best.

Salem Gazette.

YEARNINGS.

Tell us, kind Stars, with jewelled sandals pressing
 The radiant splendors of Night's mystic floor,
 Where are the dear ones, that to our caressing
 Respond no more?

We would but know, where we might run and find them
 In that bright world where all the Blessed are ;
 And so not mourn, to be thus left behind them,
 So lone and far.

We miss them from the old accustomed places,
 With Friendship's ivied memories entwined,
 Where Love has sanctified the faintest traces
 They left behind.

We call them fondly when the Night-Priest swingeth
 His silver censer in the Templed Sky ;
 But to our ear, each answering Echo bringeth
 But this — Good Bye !

And when the lark soars gaily, singing ever,
 Out through the golden gateway of the morn ;
 In their loved haunts, we seek them — but they never
 To us return.

With restless feet, we pace our narrow prison,
 We beat the casement bars that shut us in,
 Eager to rise, where they before have risen,
 From Sense and Sin.

Oh, Stars ! ye shine but coldly on our sorrow,
 Nor will ye heed Affection's earnest quest ;
 And we must wait, till God's sure coming morrow
 Give us, also, Rest.

Ibid.

Children of **Stephen Pierson** and **Mary (Goodhue) Driver**
 were : —

157. ALICE GOODHUE DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 15, 1856 ; living in Lowell, Mass., in 1886 ; md. June 6, 1877, George William Ely, son of Frederick and Elizabeth (Martin) Ely ; he born in Boston, Mass., Feb. 10, 1853 ; living in Lowell in 1886. Children were :
 (a) MARION LOUISE ELY ¹⁰, born April 20, 1878.
 (b) EDITH ELY ¹⁰, born Dec. 3, 1879.
158. GEORGE PIERSON DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., May 8, 1859 ; died young.
159. MARY BECKFORD DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 19, 1862.
160. MARGERY WATSON DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., May 27, 1864.
161. EDITH LOUISE DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., April 23, 1866 ; died young.
162. THEODORE GOODHUE DRIVER ⁹, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 15, 1870.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXIII.

GEORGE HIBBERT SMITH DRIVER ⁶ (No. 105), son of Stephen ⁷ 3d (STEPHEN ⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL ⁶, Capt. MICHAEL ⁴, WILLIAM ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Susanna Payson (Smith) Driver; born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 4, 1842; living in Lynn (Lynnfield), Mass., in 1887; md. in Boston, Mass., Nov. 19, 1868, by Rev. F. D. Huntington (Bishop of Central New Jersey in 1885), to Lucretia Goddard Larkin, dau. of Michael and Ellen M. (Rae) Larkin, of Boston; she born there, Dec. 23, 1842.

In the War of the Rebellion, George H. S. Driver enlisted in the 23d Mass. Infantry as a private, with about two hundred more men from Salem, his then place of residence. This regiment participated in the battles of Newbern, Kingston, and Goldsborough, in North Carolina, and saw active service in front of Petersburg, Va.

Mr. Driver has the gift of song, possessing a tenor voice of great power and sweetness. For many years he has been the first tenor in church choirs in Boston, Salem, and Lynn; successfully arranging and conducting concerts in these places. Five years he was a member of the Handel and Haydn Musical Society of Boston, Mass.

Children of **George Hibbert Smith** and **Lucretia Goddard (Larkin) Driver** were: —

- 163. **LUCRETIA LARKIN DRIVER** ⁹, born in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 14, 1870.
- 164. **ISABEL GODDARD DRIVER** ⁹, born in Boston, Mass., Nov. 25, 1872.
- 165. **GEORGE BENJAMIN DRIVER** ⁹, born in Boston, Mass., March 16, 1874; died young.
- 166. **HAROLD BURRILL DRIVER** ⁹, born in Lynn, Mass., Oct. 3, 1877.
- 167. **GEORGE HIBBERT DRIVER** ⁹, born in Lynn, Mass., May 6, 1879.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXIV.

SAMUEL DRIVER⁸ (No. 106), son of Stephen⁷ 3d (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Susanna Payson (Smith) Driver; born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 29, 1844; living in 1886 in Haverhill, Mass.; md. at Danvers, Mass., Oct. 22, 1868, Laura Marston Putnam, dau. of Israel Herbert and Sarah (Putnam) Putnam (cousins), of Danvers, Mass. Her emigrant ancestor was John Putnam, who arrived in New England in 1632 with his three sons, John, Nathaniel, and Thomas.

The father of Laura descended from son Nathaniel; while Gen. Israel Putnam, aide-de-camp to Gen. Washington, descended from son Thomas, — thus cousins, and of the same original family.

Samuel Driver possesses not the gifts of his brothers and sisters, those of poetry and song, but is "everybody's friend," as said the one who knows him best on being applied to for his gifts and talents.

Children of **Samuel and Laura Marston (Putnam) Driver** were:—

168. THEODORE PRESCOTT DRIVER⁹, born in Danvers, Mass., June 18, 1870.

169. HERBERT PUTNAM DRIVER⁹, born in Lynn, Mass., Jan. 4, 1872.

John Putnam, the ancestor, came from Haverhill, Eng.; his wife was Priscilla. They settled in Salem in 1640. He d. Dec. 30, 1662. Name formerly spelled Prittenham.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXV.

WILLIAM LUSCOMB DRIVER⁸ (No. 107), son of Rev. Thomas⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mehitable (Luscomb) Driver; born in Salem, Mass., in 1824; died in New Orleans, La., Feb. 2, 1868; md. there (date unknown to his family) Elizabeth —, of whom nothing is known.

Child of **William Luscomb and Elizabeth Driver** was:

170. BEULAH DRIVER⁹, born in New Orleans (?) 185—. (Further information solicited.)

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXVI.

CHARLES MILLET DRIVER⁸ (No. 109), son of Rev. Thomas⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mehitable (Luscomb) Driver; born in South Boston, Mass., April 25, 1830; living in Roxbury, Mass., in 1887; md. March 11, 1854, Mary Louisa Bradley, dau. of James Bradley, of England, and Catherine (Mulbary) of Londonderry, Vt.

Children of **Charles Millet** and **Mary L. (Bradley) Driver** were:—

171. **CHARLES DRIVER**⁹, born in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 22, 1855; living in 1886 in Leadville, Col., where, since 1878, he has been engaged as assayer in the Arkansas Smelting Company. He married, Nov. 12, 1884, Alice Plummer Dole, dau. of Mrs. M. A. Dole, of Boston, Mass.; she born about 1859; living in 1886 in Leadville, Col.
172. **JOHN DRIVER**⁹, born July 31, 1858; living in Boston, Mass., in 1886, where at some time he married (date and to whom not attainable), and had a son, born about 1885.
173. **MARY FLORENCE DRIVER**⁹, born Sept. 11, 1860; died Nov. 22, 1862. (The record of Nos. 171 and 172 may be as incorrect as it is incomplete).

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXVII.

GEORGE WASHINGTON DRIVER⁸ (No. 110), son of Rev. Thomas⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Mehitable (Luscomb) Driver; born in West Dedham, Mass., April 28, 1832; living in 1886 in Portland, Me., at the Soldiers' Home, being disabled for life by wounds received in the War of the Rebellion, for which he enlisted in the First New York Cavalry, as a private; was promoted to Orderly-Sergeant, which rank he held until he was mustered out in 1864.

He married in 1854, at Philadelphia, Pa., Virginia C. Myerly of that place, of whom nothing is known.

Children of **George Washington** and **Virginia C. (Myerly) Driver** were:—

- 174. HENRY BOYEE DRIVER⁹, born about 1856; living in 1886, unmarried.
- 175. EDWARD DRIVER⁹, born about 1858; living in Philadelphia, Pa., in 1886, unmarried.
- 176. WILLIAM DRIVER⁹, born about 1860; living in 1886, unmarried. All of these refused any data concerning themselves or theirs.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXVIII.

JOSEPH METCALF DRIVER⁸ (No. 112), son of Rev. Joseph⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver; born in North Reading, Mass., Aug. 15, 1829; living in 1887 in Windsor, Vt.; md. in Keene, N. H., April 4, 1870, Ella Lucia Burnham, dau. of John and Caroline Amanda (Churchill, of Plymouth, Mass.) Burnham; she born in Hartlant, Vt., Aug. 20, 1842.

Children of **Joseph Metcalf** and **Ella Lucia (Burnham) Driver** were:—

- 177. CAROLINE MARIA DRIVER⁹, born in Windsor, Vt., Sept. 25, 1871.
- 178. MARTHA THEODORA DRIVER⁹, born in Windsor, Vt., Feb. 22, 1873.
- 179. SUSAN EMMA DRIVER⁹, born in Windsor, Vt., Dec. 4, 1875.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XXXIX.

Dr. STEPHEN WILLIAM DRIVER⁸ (No. 114), son of Rev. Joseph⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁶, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver; born in Sharon, Mass., April 17, 1833; physician and surgeon. He md. Sept. 6, 1866, in Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass., Martha Hamilton Clarence, dau. of Andrew Wellock and Martha (Montgomery) Clarence (Martha Montgomery was of Ely, Eng.); she was born in Watertown, Mass., Feb. 12, 1833; both living in 1887 at Cambridge, Mass.

Stephen William Driver, Sept., 1856, entered Harvard College, class of 1860; graduated June, 1860. He studied medicine at the Harvard Medical School at Boston, Mass., receiving his degree July, 1863. He soon commenced practice in Cambridge, Mass., and still continues (1887) practising medicine and accidental surgery there.

In 1884 and 1885 he was president of the Cambridge Improvement Society; also honorary member of the Observation Society of Boston, Mass.; ex-chairman of the Board of Censors of Middlesex South District Medical Society, of which he was chosen, April 16, 1884, vice-president, being in 1883 the orator of the day. He is also a councillor of the Massachusetts Medical Society.

In the War of the Rebellion of 1862-65, Dr. Driver was a volunteer medical officer on the supply-steamer "Saxon" on her two trips from Boston to Ship Island, La., February and March of 1862.

From April to November of 1862 he was the contract surgeon to the engineer department at Ship Island, under Brevet Major-General John C. Palfrey, then lieutenant engineer constructing the fort. The second trip of the steamer "Saxon" to Ship Island, and the extensive work of the surgeons, Dr. Driver of the number, was occasioned by the severe and hazardous passage of Gen. Butler to that island, where, with the remainder of his forces, numbering 13,700 men, he arrived March 25, 1862.

The approach to Ship Island, between the mouth of the Mississippi River and Bay of Mobile, was commanded, at the bend in the river, by two strong forts, Jackson and St. Philip. April 17th, 1862, the Union fleet reached the vicinity of these forts and bombarded Fort Jackson till the 24th; then Fort St. Philip was attacked by eight gunboats, and did not capitulate till the 28th of April, — thus many were wounded, and needed the care of many surgeons.

Dr. Driver is the present owner (1887) of the original Family Bible, a

"breeches" edition of the Geneva Bible, printed in London in 1608, before mentioned under William Driver No. 6, once the owner, who no doubt inherited it from the emigrant Robert Driver¹. All data therein contained were fully given for this work by Dr. Driver, who also has rendered very material assistance in the compiling of the Drivers in England, having devoted much time and attention to the matter, doing a great deal of search-work, and translating all the antique abbreviated Norman-French Latin on the family, without which the earlier accounts would have been very blank and meagre, and which no one else could have done in this country. Mrs. Dr. Driver has also rendered much assistance and material aid, stimulating and encouraging the Compiler to progress and completion. All of which she gratefully acknowledges.

Dr. Driver's gifts are of music and poetry, both of which, on account of his very busy life, he is unable to indulge to any great degree; hence, could not furnish a poem especially for this history. But one, called "Tabitha," was found in a book of selected poems, many of which were by Longfellow:

"TABITHA.

The ripples gently break on Jaffa's shore;
 'Tis twilight on the western sea;
 No more is heard the hum of toil;
 A golden dim just gilds the top of distant Gerizim,
 Upon the dwelling tops; swift fades the light,
 The breeze is gentle, cool, soon cometh night.
 Thou art so hushed and still,
 Canst thou expectant be
 Of the great miracle
 Soon to be wrought in thee?
 And dost thou listening wait
 With scarce permitted breath,
 To hear his footsteps fall,
 The Conqueror of death?

Look there and in the deepening twilight, see
 Along the path from Lydda hastening three.
 And who are they that come at such a pace
 With girded loins, as if they ran a race?
 'Tis but a glance, the foremost one we know;
 The Fisherman Apostle, all his actions show;
 With just such eager step he walked the wave,
 And faithless, sinking, called on Christ to save;
 With just such hasty hand he drew his sword
 And smote the servant to defend his Lord.
 And so he hastened on the resurrection morn,
 When came the joyful news
 By loving Mary borne.
 Not this the coward face, which once denied
 His master, while the scoffing priests deride.
 His mien transformed betrays the rock-like soul
 Of him, who afterwards attained the goal

And crown of martyrdom, and humbly died
With downward head, like Jesus crucified.

At last ! at last he comes ; a mourning group
Of weeping women welcome him, some stoop
With age, and some are young ; but all lament
And wail their bitter loss, for she had spent
A life of sweetest charity, and now
With piteous pride, her fingers' work they show.

Who was she, in that upper chamber laid,
A staid, a sober, wrinkled, crabbed maid ?
Ah, no ! but one whom her own grief had taught
To feel another's woe, and so she sought
The sorrowing ones ; her busy fingers wrought
On many a garment for the lowly poor
Whom Christ has called his own, with promise sure.

Thus passed her life, until the tidings sweet
Of our Messiah's birth her glad ears greet.
The door is shut ; alone beside her bed
He kneels, the man of God, with bowed head ;
In agonizing prayer he wrestles, till
He feels a mighty faith his bosom fill ;
He takes her hand, she openeth her eyes,
And sitteth up. She stands. O, weeping, loving one,
Receive thy dead alive.

The wonder-work is done.

Ah ! can it be that God will grant the life
Of one we love to us ? O blessed strife,
To strive with Heaven, in time of our despair,
And gain, with mighty faith,

This blest reward of prayer.

CANTO II.

O thou who sittest on thy seven hills
In all thy grandeur ! thou whose power fills
The Earth, and binds its kings ; what aileth thee ?
Thy torment goeth up. Ah, can it be
Thou feel'st the Almighty's wrath, and scourge of ire ?
He laughs at thee, and sends the plague of fire ;
Far up thy palaced hills a billowy flood
It rolls ; thy Tiber flows a stream of blood
Beneath its lurid glare ; thy glory vanisheth
Toward heaven ; a whirlwind blast
Of ashes, flame and death.
O Rome, on thee this bitter woe is sent
Because Christ's church thou 'st driven to banishment
Beneath the earth, and now
Thou 'lt hear amid thy cries
Of woe, far down thy Christians' song of triumph rise.

But who are these upon thy Appian Way ?
 They hasten by the light that makes strange day
 Among the monuments ; they disappear
 Beneath a pillar's foot into the drear,
 And damp, and deep, and dark abode of tombs ;
 Here is the labyrinth of catacombs.
 And here the church of Christ a refuge found ;
 List, now you faintly hear far off the sound
 Of human voices ; ' tis the song of praise
 The persecuted ones in triumph raise ;
 See, now our wanderers have reached the band,
 And stand revealed ; they crowd on either hand
 To greet a noble lady, and her maidens fair ;
 Of Cæsar's household they, and in their hands they bear
 A generous store of robes and garments ; bread,
 And fruit, and wine ; so there among the dead
 They eat with thankful hearts what God has sent,
 Their perfect faith in Christ a sweet content ;
 Thus down below these humble ones
 A heaven share,
 While Claudius Nero makes a hell
 In upper air.
 Thus wondrously, by woman's faith and worth
 God saves his Church preserved beneath the earth."

Child of **Dr. Stephen William** and **Martha Hamilton**
(Clarence) Driver was : —

180. **MARTHA ELIZABETH DRIVER**⁹ (known as Bessie), born in Cambridge, Mass., July 8, 1870 ; has the gifts of song, drawing, and music.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XL.

THOMAS DRIVER⁸ (No. 115), son of Rev. Joseph⁷, (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver ; born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 21, 1834 ; living in 1887 at Chicago, Ill. ; md. first, at Arlington, Mass., June 30, 1855, Frances Augusta Orvis, dau. of Gad and Sarah (Kimball) Orvis ; she born at Weathersfield, Vt., Aug. 13, 1834 ; died of consumption in Chicago, Ill., May 18, 1878 ; he md. second, in Chicago, Ill., Nov. 9, 1881, Mrs. Eline Dryhurst (Pierce) Cushman, widow of George H.

N. Cushman and dau. of Richard and Sidney (Williams) Pierce, of England; she born in Helena, Sopra co., Wis., July 13, 1850; living in Chicago, Ill., in 1887. No issue. Child by her first marriage was:—Effie May Cushman, born about 1868; md. April 30, 1888, Frederick Rogers.

Thomas Driver enlisted as a private in the Union Army in the late Civil War, at East Cambridge, Mass., April 15, 1861, in Co. A, 16th Mass. Volunteers, Colonel Powell T. Wyman, commander. He served till mustered out at Washington, D. C., Dec. 31, 1862.

Children of **Thomas** and **Frances Augusta (Orvis) Driver** were:—

181. **FRANK WALLACE DRIVER** ⁹, born in Cambridge, Mass., April 5, 1856; died Feb. 5, 1880, at Minneapolis, Minn.; md. June 12, 1878, Caroline Roscoe (see Family XLVII.).
182. **EDWARD WINFIELD DRIVER** ⁹, born in Cambridge, Mass., March 12, 1861; died there Sept. 15, 1861.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLI.

EDWARD AUGUSTUS SAUNDERS HOLYOKE DRIVER ² (No. 116), son of Rev. Joseph ¹, (STEPHEN ⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL ⁵, Capt. MICHAEL ⁴, WILLIAM ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver; born in Malden, Mass., July 19, 1840; living in Riverside, Cook co., Ill., in 1887; grain and produce commission merchant; md. in Salem, Mass., June 12, 1866, in the North Church, Helen May Ives, dau. of William and Lucy (Gardner) Ives, of Salem, Mass., where she was born July 29, 1842 (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 62).

Children of **Edward Augustus S. H.** and **Helen May (Ives) Driver** were:—

183. **JOHN SAUNDERS DRIVER** ⁹, born in Chicago, Ill., March 25, 1869.
184. **HELEN MAY IVES DRIVER** ⁹, born in Chicago, Ill., June 15, 1872.
185. **EDWARD RAYMOND DRIVER** ⁹, born in Chicago, Ill., Dec. 12, 1873.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLII.

Major WILLIAM CHRISTOPHER DRIVER⁸ (No. 117), son of Capt. William⁷ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Martha Silsbee (Babbage) Driver; born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 12, 1827; removed to New Orleans, La., date not ascertained; entered the jewelry business with Mr. Zimmerman, under firm name of Zimmerman & Driver, where he remained till the War of the Rebellion, and to which place he returned after that war, and died of atrophy of the heart and congestion July 2, 1874; buried by the New Orleans Commandry, No. 3, of Masons, of which body he was Past Grand Master, and was interred in their new cemetery in New Orleans, La.

He was also Past Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Louisiana.

He was married in New Orleans, La., about 1856, by the Rev. Dr. William A. Scott, to Anna M. Reece, dau. of William H. and Adeline Reece, of New Orleans; she living there in 1885.

William Christopher Driver in the War of the Rebellion enlisted in the Confederate Army as Second Lieutenant, in the Washington Battery, 1st Louisiana Artillery, one of the first organized for the war, under the command of Col. Harry O. Hayes (afterwards General). William was soon promoted to First Lieutenant of the same regiment, but of Capt. S. H. Gilman's Company. He was in the first battle of Bull Run, where he showed so much bravery that he was immediately raised to the rank of Major, which he held till the end of the war. At the battle of Antietam, fought Sept. 16-17, 1862, between Gen. McClellan and Gen. Lee, he was wounded, being shot in the eyelid, and lost the entire sight of that eye. On the battle-field he would have died from the loss of blood if Arthur Waugh, his bosom friend, had not by his faithful and untiring efforts sought him out, carried him off to a place of safety, and by careful and tender nursing restored him to health. The sister of William furnished this information, and desired this tribute should be paid to the memory of his faithful friend, who was his friend till death; as after the war Major Driver returned to New Orleans, with his health broken and his fortune lost to him, resumed his connection with his old partner, Zimmerman, in the jewelry business, and lived at the house of his friend, where he died as abovesaid.

Major Driver served in the war to the very last, being on the staff of Gen. Buckuere, on the border of Texas, who was the last to surrender.

Child of Major **William Christopher** and **Anna M. (Reece) Driver** was:—

186. **IDA DRIVER**², born in New Orleans, La., Aug. 22, 1858; died in Jefferson, Tex. (where her parents were visiting), Oct. 25, 1868.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLIII.

HENRY LYNCH DRIVER² (No. 123), son of Capt. William¹ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and second wife, Sarah Jane (Parks) Driver; born in Nashville, Tenn., March 22, 1845; removed to the Far West Dec. 1, 1870, and after several changes, in 1887 is living in Bingham Canon, Utah, where he is engaged in mining, his family residing at Salt Lake City, Utah; md. in Salt Lake City, June 18, 1878, at St. Mark's Episcopal Church, Margaret Roxbury, dau. of John and Jean (Steel) Roxbury, of Galston, Ayrshire, Scotland; who was there born, Aug. 16, 1852; living with her parents in 1887 at Salt Lake City, Utah, Bingham being only a mining station.

Children of **Henry Lynch** and **Margaret (Roxbury) Driver** were:—

187. **HENRY WILLIAM DRIVER**², born in Salt Lake City, Utah, March 12, 1879.
188. **SARAH JANE DRIVER**², born in Salt Lake City, Utah, June 10, 1882.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLIV.

Dr. JOHN DRIVER² (No. 132), son of Henry¹ (STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹) and Elizabeth Carter (Maclin) Driver; born in Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 9, 1837; living there in 1887; md., date unknown, Mary Elizabeth Traylor.

Child of Dr. **John** and **Mary Elizabeth (Traylor) Driver** was:—

189. **HENRY DRIVER**⁹, born in Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 4, 1859; living there in 1887; md. about 1885, ~~Isabella~~ ^{Isabella} Harwood, and had issue, ~~Henry~~ ^{Henry} Hudson Driver¹⁰, born about Sept., 1887.

(This record may be incorrect, having been indirectly obtained. Corrections called for.)

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLV.

Capt. DAVID DRIVER⁸ (No. 143), son of Capt. Andrew⁷ (SOLOMON⁶, Capt. SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Rachel (Day) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 30, 1802; removed to Beverly, Mass., where he died Sept. 17, 1850, master-mariner; md. first, Dec. 25, 1830, Rebecca Raymond, dau. of William and his second wife, Rebecca (Berry) Raymond; she born in Beverly, Mass., Sept. 26, 1802, and there died Oct. 11, 1835. No issue; md. second, June 25, 1837, Emma Elizabeth Hammond, she born in Beverly, Mass., April 10, 1814; living in Beverly, Mass., in 1885.

Children of Capt. **David** and **Emma Elizabeth (Hammond) Driver** were:—

190. **WILLIAM RAYMOND DRIVER**⁹, born in Beverly, Mass., Jan. 2, 1839; living in Beverly, Mass., in 1885; md. Jan. 14, 1869, Ellen Salisbury Brown. (See Family XLVIII.)
191. **ANDREW BROWN DRIVER**⁹, born in Beverly, Mass., Nov. 27, 1842; living in Beverly, Mass., in 1885; md. April 18, 1868, Isabella E. McCulloch. (See Family XLIX.)

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLVI.

JOSEPH DAY DRIVER ⁸ (No. 144), son of Capt. Andrew ⁷ (SOLOMON ⁶, Capt. SOLOMON ⁵, SOLOMON ⁴, SALMON ³, ROBERT ², ROBERT ¹), and Rachel (Day) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., Oct. 30, 1805; died in Rockport, Mass., Sept. 14, 1853, where he went to live at an early age, became a seaman, but tiring of the sea, engaged in the fishing business at Rockport, Mass.

He md. Nov. 6, 1834, Adelia Low, dau. of Nathaniel and Margaret (Dee) Low; she born in Rockport, Mass., Oct. 6, 1815; adopted at two years of age by her uncle, Daniel Low, who was childless, her mother dying at that time from a cold contracted in her flight, during the War of 1812, to a remote part of the town, called the Commons, where with others she fled for safety. Adelia died July 14, 1883.

Soon after marriage Joseph Day Driver removed to Manchester, Mass., where his first child was born. His health began to fail, and he returned to Rockport, where Daniel Low made him a gift of a fine house on Main Street, next his own, where the family have ever since resided.

Children of **Joseph Day** and **Adelia (Low) Driver** were :

192. **NANCY BUTMAN DRIVER** ⁹, born in Manchester, Mass., July 11, 1836; died July 27, 1840.
193. **ADELIA LOW DRIVER** ⁹, born in Rockport, Mass., May 21, 1838; living in 1885 at the homestead, unmarried.
194. **NANCY BUTMAN DRIVER** ⁹, born in Rockport, Mass., May 23, 1841; died March 22, 1881; md. Nov. 14, 1861, Richard Warren Hill, son of Richard and Hannah Foster (Downing) Hill, he born in Andover, Mass., Oct. 6, 1840, living in 1885 in Rockport, Mass.; quarryman.

Children were :—

1. **FRANK FOSTER HILL** ¹⁰, born April 9, 1862; died Jan. 30, 1863.
2. **ELMER FOSTER HILL** ¹⁰, born Jan. 29, 1866.
3. **LEONORA BLATCHFORD HILL** ¹⁰, born Aug. 29, 1868.
4. **GRACE ESTELLA HILL** ¹⁰, born Dec. 15, 1870.
5. **BLANCHE RAYMOND HILL** ¹⁰, born Oct. 18, 1872.
6. **FRANK LINWARD HILL** ¹⁰, born Nov. 29, 1874.
7. **GEORGE OTIS HILL** ¹⁰, born Nov. 25, 1876.
8. **RALPH WARREN HILL** ¹⁰, born Sept. 29, 1878.
9. A son, born June 8, 1880; died Aug. 8th following.

195. DANIEL LOW DRIVER⁹, born in Rockport, Mass., July 23, 1844; living there in 1885, unmarried.
196. JOHN HOOPER DRIVER⁹, born in Rockport, Mass., April 2, 1850; living there in 1885; md. March 30, 1870, Minerva Sanborn, dau. of Daniel and Nancy E. (Sanborn) Sanborn; she born at Pigeon Cove, Rockport, Mass., Jan. 3, 1851. (See Family L.)
197. JOSEPH DAY DRIVER⁹, born in Rockport, Mass., Aug. 26, 1852; living at the homestead there in 1885, unmarried.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLVII.

SAMUEL DRIVER⁸ (No. 155), son of Samuel⁷ (SAMUEL⁶, Capt. SOLOMON⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Anna (Allen) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 16, 1806; living there in 1885, a farmer; md. March 3, 1836, Louisa Roberts, dau. of Andrew and Eunice (Leech) Roberts, she born in Manchester, Mass., March 1, 1814 (Family Record); died Feb. 15, 1856 (according to Town Record, she was born March 1, 1816, and died Feb. 15, 1855).

Children of **Samuel and Louisa (Roberts) Driver** were:

198. LOUISA DRIVER⁹, born in Manchester, Mass., July 13, 1837; died April 22, 1880.
199. SAMUEL DRIVER⁹, Jr., born in Manchester, Mass., Dec. 4, 1839; died Sept. 10, 1841.
200. SAMUEL DRIVER⁹, Jr., born in Manchester, Mass., July 3, 1842; md. Oct. 9, 1864, Isabella Purfit. (See Family LII.)
201. GEORGE NORTON DRIVER⁹, born in Manchester, Mass., June 7, 1845; md. July 9, 1865, Elizabeth A. Rutherford. (See Family LIII.)
202. ALLEN DRIVER⁹, born in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 20, 1853 (Town Record), Sept. 5, 1854 (Family Record), in Manchester, Mass., where in 1885 he is living; "of feeble mind."

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLVIII.

FRANK WALLACE DRIVER⁹, son of Thomas⁸ (Rev. JOSEPH⁷, STEPHEN⁶, Jr., Capt. MICHAEL⁵, Capt. MICHAEL⁴, WILLIAM³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Frances Augusta (Orvis) Driver, born in Cambridge, Mass., April 5, 1856; died of consumption, inherited from his mother, at Minneapolis, Minn., Feb. 5, 1880; buried at Rosehill, Chicago, Ill.; md. June 12, 1878, at Chicago, Ill., Caroline A. Roscoe, dau. of John Nealson and Eliza (Perry) Roscoe, she born at West Bend, Washington co., Wis., in 1858; living in 1885 in Chicago, Ill., where she married second, date not given, Herbert H. Pratt.

Child of **Frank Wallace** and **Caroline A. (Roscoe) Driver** was: —

203. **MARY LOUISA DRIVER**¹⁰ (known as Mamie), born in Minneapolis, Minn., Dec. 1, 1879; died in Chicago, Ill., June 9, 1880.

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY XLIX.

Col. WILLIAM RAYMOND DRIVER⁹ (No. 190), son of Capt. David⁸ (Capt. ANDREW⁷, SOLOMON⁶, Capt. SOLOMON⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Emma Elizabeth (Hammond) Driver, born in Beverly, Mass., Jan. 2, 1839; living there in 1885; treasurer of the Bell Telephone Company, Boston, Mass.; md. Jan. 14, 1869, Ellen Salisbury Brown, dau. of Enoch and Mary (Tyler) Brown, she born in Wrentham, Mass., June 16, 1840.

William R. Driver, July, 1861, enlisted as First Sergeant, Company H, 19th Mass. Regiment, in the late Civil War. Promoted subsequently to First Lieutenant, and in 1863 became Assistant Adjutant-General.

He was on Gen. Hancock's staff, first as Brevet-Major, and afterwards with the full rank of Major, until the close of the war, when

he was breveted Lieutenant-Colonel of Volunteers for gallant services.

He was in Grant's memorable campaign through the Wilderness.

Children of Col. **William Raymond** and **Ellen Salisbury (Brown) Driver** were : —

204. **ELEANOR SALISBURY DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in Beverly, Mass., June 23, 1870.

205. **WILLIAM RAYMOND DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in Beverly, Mass., Jan. 1, 1872.

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY L.

ANDREW BROWN DRIVER ⁹ (No. 191), son of Capt. David ⁸ (Capt. **ANDREW** ⁷, **SOLOMON** ⁶, Capt. **SOLOMON** ⁵, **SOLOMON** ⁴, **SALMON** ³, **ROBERT** ², **ROBERT** ¹), and Emma Elizabeth (Hammond) Driver, born in Beverly, Mass., Nov. 27, 1842; living in 1885 in the East Indies, at Assam, where for twenty years he has been engaged in conducting a tea-plantation, returning to New England but once in that time, when on the death of his wife he came to Beverly, Mass., with his children, placed them in a school there, and returned to the East Indies in 1885. He married, first, April 18, 1868, **Isabella E. McCullock**, she born in Kirkcudbright, Scotland, Oct. 14, 1843; died in Shillong, East Indies, Nov. 28, 1882; md., second, Dec. 17, 1885, **Susan Porter Dodge**, dau. of Charles W. and Nancy Conent (Porter) Dodge, she born Dec. 29, 1862, in Hamilton, Mass. Her mother married, second, James A. Masters.

Children of **Andrew Brown** and **Isabella E. (McCullock) Driver** were : —

206. **EMMA MCCULLOCK DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in the East Indies, April 9, 1869.

207. **WILLIAM MCCULLOCK DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in the East Indies, Aug. 24, 1870.

208. **MARY ADELAIDE DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in the East Indies, Dec. 4, 1872.

209. **EMILY FRANCES SINCLAIR DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in the East Indies, July 12, 1875.

210. **DAVID RAMSEY DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in the East Indies, Dec. 19, 1878.

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY LI.

JOHN HOOPER DRIVER ⁹ (No. 196), son of Joseph Day ⁸ (Capt. **ANDREW** ⁷, **SOLOMON** ⁶, Capt. **SOLOMON** ⁵, **SOLOMON** ⁴, **SALMON** ³, **ROBERT** ², **ROBERT** ¹), and Adelia (Low) Driver, born in Rockport, Mass., April 2, 1850; living there in 1885; a packer at Cape Ann Oil Clothing Company. He md. March 30, 1870, Minerva Sanborn, dau. of Daniel and Nancy E. (Sanborn) Sanborn; she born at Pigeon Cove, Rockport, Mass., Jan. 3, 1851.

Children of **John Hooper** and **Minerva (Sanborn) Driver** were: —

- 211. **ANNA EASTMAN DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in Rockport, Mass., Sept. 4, 1870; died there Jan. 14, 1884.
- 212. **BERTHA ADELIA DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in Rockport, Mass., March 30, 1873.
- 213. **HENRY DRIVER** ¹⁰, born in Rockport, Mass., June 27, 1875.

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY LII.

SAMUEL DRIVER ⁹, Jr. (No. 199), son of Samuel ⁸ (**SAMUEL** ⁷, **SAMUEL** ⁶, Capt. **SOLOMON** ⁵, **SOLOMON** ⁴, **SALMON** ³, **ROBERT** ², **ROBERT** ¹), and Louisa (Roberts) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., July 3, 1842; living in Beverly, Mass., in 1885; carpenter; md. Oct. 9, 1864, Isabella Purfit, dau. of William and Sarah (Green) Purfit, of Philadelphia, Pa., where she was born Nov. 10, 1844.

Children of **Samuel, Jr.**, and **Isabella (Purfit) Driver** were: —

- 214. A daughter, born March 2, 1866; died same day, aged 4 hours.
- 215. A daughter, still-born, May 18, 1867.
- 216. A son, still-born, June 20, 1869.
- 217. A daughter, still-born, Jan. 15, 1872.
- 218. A son, still-born, Jan. 16, 1873.
- 219. A son, still-born, Oct. 5, 1875.
- 220. A child, still-born, date not given.
- 221. **ISABELLA PURFIT DRIVER** ¹⁰, born July 30, 1882; living in 1885.

NINTH GENERATION.

FAMILY LIII.

GEORGE NORTON DRIVER⁹ (No. 201), son of Samuel⁸ (SAMUEL⁷, SAMUEL⁶, Capt. SOLOMON⁵, SOLOMON⁴, SALMON³, ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Louisa (Roberts) Driver, born in Manchester, Mass., June 7, 1845; living in 1885 in Clackamas, Clackamas co., Oregon; md. July 19, 1865, Elizabeth A. Rutherford, dau. of John W. and Mary Jane (Spiller) Rutherford; she born in Ipswich, Mass., July 28, 1845; died in Manchester, Mass., Sept. 16, 1871.

Children of **George Norton** and **Elizabeth A. (Rutherford) Driver** were:—

222. **GEORGE DRIVER**¹⁰, born Feb. 13, 1866.

223. **ELIZABETH A. DRIVER**¹⁰, born Feb. 6, 1871.

APPENDIX.

THIS Appendix contains twenty-three families, intermarriages with the Driver Family, which families are compiled from the first generation to the intermarriage, and no farther.

Some of the families intermarried more than once; these are continued to the last intermarriage.

These families, alphabetically placed, are arranged according to their generation only.

Fifteen of them have never before been published; these are indicated by the letter *N.* placed before each family, as found in the Table of Contents.

The figure at the left of each name denotes the consecutive number of that person in the genealogy.

The small figure at the right of the name denotes the generation.

When a person is mentioned a second time, it is indicated by his number in the margin enclosed in brackets, after each name.

The Roll in the church of Dives, Normandy, of the companions of William in the conquest of England, in 1066, ends the Appendix.

CONTENTS OF APPENDIX.

	Page		Page		Page
N. Archer	217	N. Flint	291	Neal	438
N. Babbidge . . .	229	Herrick	308	N. Palmer	455
N. Beckford . . .	245	N. Ives	320	N. Patterson . . .	460
Bray	251	Kimball	368	N. Saunders	464
N. Cash	265	N. Luscomb . . .	387	Silsbee	469
N. Crowninshield .	268	N. Metcalf, of Ips-		Webb	475
N. Daland	273	wich, Mass. . .	394	Webb, Continued	484
Derby	279	N. Moses	433	N. Wellman	491
Companions of William in the Conquest of England in 1066					
					497

APPENDIX.

THE ARCHER FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

SAMUEL ARCHER¹, or **ARCHARD**, as he was frequently called, was of Salem, Mass., as early as 1630, for at that date he took the freeman's oath. He was a member of its First Church before 1636; constable and marshal of Salem for several years; a carpenter by trade.

Feb. 20, 1636-7, he received sixty acres of land at Jeffries Creek (Manchester).

Nov. 26, 1638, he was granted "one neck of land lying out against the sea nere unto Jeffryes Creek Island conteyning about 20 acres, and some meadow to be laid him out in Kettle Island Cove."

The date of his birth cannot definitely be established; as in June, 1667, he gave a deposition aged 58 years, and in 1665 he stated that he was 50 years old, — making his birth-date respectively 1609 and 1615. He died in 1667. Inventory of his estate was presented to court by the administrators, widow Susanna and son Samuel Archer, June 30, 1668. Amount £176 3s. 6d.

He md. Susanna —, who married second, October, 1668, as his second wife, Richard Hutchinson, of Danvers, Mass., who was born in Arnold, Eng., in 1602. His will proved Nov. 27, 1683, after decease of Susanna.

Nov. 26, 1674, Mr. Hutchinson md. third, Sarah, widow of James Standish, who survived him. He was the ancestor of the musical "Hutchinson family," well known in their day, and much sought after.

July 5, 1669, "Susanna, late wife of Samuel Archard dec'd, & now wife of Richard Hutchinson," deeds to William Brown, Sr., Salem, "all my thirds of housing & lands that my late husband Archard, died seized of lying between Joshua Ward's & Samuel Archard's land,—a small piece lying over ye way against it,—& 8 acres upland & 5½ acres marsh in South fields.

Signed

SUSANNA HUTCHINSON.

RICHARD HUTCHINSON."

Children of **Samuel** and **Susanna Archard**, or **Archer**, were:—

2. **HANNAH ARCHER** ² born in Salem, Mass., in 1632, for in 1652 she was aged 20, when she gave her deposition in court. She md. Matthew Dove, and had nine children, viz. :—

(a) **HANNAH DOVE** ², born Oct. 23, 1652; died Dec. 7, 1659.

(b) **ELIZABETH DOVE** ², born Dec. 16, 1653.

(c) **DORCAS DOVE** ², born Oct. 16, 1656.

(d) **BETHIAH DOVE** ², born May 26, 165-.

(e) **SARAH DOVE** ², born July 3, 1660; died July 18 following.

(f) **DANIEL DOVE** ², born Sept. 10, 1663.

(g) **DEBORAH DOVE** ², born Dec. 10, 1665.

(h) **MATTHEW DOVE** ², born Dec. 3, 1667.

(i) **RUTH DOVE** ², born Oct. 15, 1673.

3. **SAMUEL ARCHER** ², born in Salem, Mass., in 1634-5; living in 1710.

4. **JOHN ARCHER** ², bapt. April 7, 1639 (born in 1638).

5. **BETHIAH ARCHER** ², bapt. July 13, 1642; living in 1673, unmarried.

SECOND GENERATION.

SAMUEL ARCHER ² (No. 3), son of *Samuel*¹ and Susanna Archer, or Archard, born in Salem, Mass., in 1634-5; was 71 years of age February, 1704-5, and aged 65 in 1700, when he gave depositions in those years; carpenter; no date of decease or settlement of estate; freeman April 29, 1668.

Sept. 27, 1687, he calls himself "eldest son & heir of Samuel Archard, formerly of Salem dec'd," when William Browne, Sr., administrator of his father's estate, sold land to William Brown, Jr., and to Joseph Phippen and William Flint.

May 25, 1717, Samuel Archard made a Deed of Gift to his daughter, Hannah Jeffords, and grandson, Nicholas Jeffords, "of all my homestead where I now dwell . . . dwelling house and

½ acre of land," in consideration "of the services they may perform for me in my old age, and during my natural life."

He married May 21, 1660, Hannah Osgood, dau. of John Osgood, the emigrant of 1638-9, of Andover, Mass., and wife Sarah; she bapt. in 1642, and aged twenty years in 1662.

Children of **Samuel** and **Hannah (Osgood) Archer** were :

6. **SAMUEL ARCHER** ², bapt. Nov. 29, 1668.
7. **JONATHAN ARCHER** ², born in Salem, Mass., about 1670; died July 16, 1746, aged 75.
8. **JOSEPH ARCHER** ², bapt. April 28, 1672; died young.
9. **JOSEPH ARCHER** ², bapt. Sept., 1673.
10. **STEPHEN ARCHER** ², bapt. March, 1677.
11. **HANNAH ARCHER** ², bapt. March, 1677; md. Aug. 30, 1697, Nicholas Jeffries, and had one child, viz.: —
(a) **NICHOLAS JEFFRIES** ⁴, born —; died unmarried.
12. **MARY ARCHER** ², bapt. Aug. 27, 1679.
13. **EBENEZER ARCHER** ², bapt. Oct. —, 1682.
14. **NATHANIEL ARCHER** ², bapt. July 26, 1685.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN ARCHER ² (No. 4), son of Samuel ¹ and Susanna Archard, or Archer, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., April 7, 1639; administration granted his sons, Benjamin and Thomas, Feb. 26, 1693-4; but they having died before completing their administration, the same is conferred upon his daughter, Mrs. Abigail Very, April 2, 1705.

He was a cooper, and resided in Salem, where he married Bethiah Weeks, dau. of Thomas and Alice Weeks; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Feb. 27, 1641-2.

William Place, or Plasse, is supposed to have been father-in-law of Thomas Weeks, who died April 4, 1646. In the Co. Ct. Records we find, "Inventory of estate at Thomas Weeks's house, of William Place, deceased, 14th 2^d mo. 1646. Also an inventory of tools in hands of Richard Waters" (also a son-in-law of Place), "returned 5th 6 mo. 1646; account of charges of Thomas Weeks against estate of William Place; incurred during his last sickness, amounting to £3."

"After Roger Conant's removal from Salem to his farm at the

head of Bass river, Beverly, the town (Salem) ordered that his house be bought as a residence for William Plaice, blacksmith, and his wife." — *Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.*, Vol. I. p. 103.

Thomas Weeks made his will Sept. 9, 1655, proved June, 1656, in which he names wife Alice, whom he appoints executrix; daughters Bethia and Hannah; and appoints his "loving cousin" (nephew?) "Robert Gray," and friends Edmond Batter and Elias Stileman, Jr., overseers. Inventory £192 10s. (What the true relationship was between Thomas Weeks and Robert Gray has not been learned; but Robert Gray mentions in his will, made Jan. 1, 1661, six years after Thomas Weeks' will, his "servant Elizabeth Wicks").

Thomas Weeks' widow, Alice, married second, for his second wife, Nicholas Potter (father of Robert, who md. Ruth Driver No. 7), and she died Jan. 26, 1658.

Children of **Thomas** and **Alice (Place?) Weeks** were:

(a) **BETHIA WEEKS**, bapt. Feb. 27, 1641-2; md. John Archer.

(b) **HANNAH WEEKS**, bapt. Jan. 5, 1644-5; md. Aug. 27, 1667, John Pitman (or perhaps Pickman?), son of Nath'l and Tabitha (perhaps second wife, widow of Anthony Dike) Pitman, or Pickman; she (Hannah) died Dec. 23, 1670.

"Dec. 10, 1677, John Gedney, ex'r of the will of Nicholas Potter" (who md. third, Mary, dau. of John Gedney), "John Pitman, and John Archer, convey to John Batchelder that parcel of land formerly of Thomas Weeks, dec'd, containing 10 acres, lying near Bass river head, in or near the bounds of Salem." — *Deeds*, Vol. IV. p. 181.

John Archer, Sr., cooper, to Thomas Maule, "a piece of land bounded with y^e house and land of Isaac Williams on the North — on land formerly John Gedney's Sr. on the East — main street on the South; and whereas Benjamin Pickman heir or executor to John Pickman, dec'd, who" (John) "married with my wife's sister, I say whereas Benjamin Pickman pretends a right to the half of said land, which I have sold to s^d Maule, I do by these presents engage to defend s^d Maule from s^d Pickman by a mortgage of 5 acres land in Southfields." Dec. 11, 1691.

(Nathaniel Pickman, the emigrant from Bristol, Eng., had a son John, born about 1642, and a son Benjamin, born in 1645; died December, 1708, — hence the reason for considering the name written Pitman should be Pickman.)

Children of **John and Bethiah (Weeks) Archer**, all baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., were : —

15. **JOHN ARCHER**³, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 13, 1664; bapt. May 10, 1668; died Dec., 1700; administration granted his brother Benjamin, Dec. 23, 1700; mariner; unmarried.
16. **BENJAMIN ARCHER**³, born in Salem, Mass., March 12, 1665-6; bapt. May 10, 1668; died before 1705; cooper; md. first, in Beverly, Mass., July 13, 1693, Sarah Neal, dau. of Jeremiah and Sarah (Hart) Neal; she born Nov. 1, 1671; living in 1728. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 13.) She md. second, in Beverly, Mass., by Rev. Robert Hale, Gilbert Tapley, son of Gilbert, Jr., and Tamosin Tapley; he born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 26, 1665, and died in 1710; she md. third, — Wilkins.

Children by Benjamin were : —

- (a) **JOHN ARCHER**⁴, born —.
- (b) **BENJAMIN ARCHER**⁴, born —; died before 1716; md. Jan. 15, 1710-11, Anna Bridges.
- (c) **SARAH ARCHER**⁴, born —.
- (d) **JOSIAH ARCHER**⁴, born —.

17. **ABIGAIL ARCHER**³, bapt. May 10, 1668; md. Samuel Very³, son of Samuel² (Bridget¹) and Alice (Woodice) Very; he born before 1659, and died after 1734; mariner.

May 9, 1685, John Archer made a Deed of Gift unto his son-in-law Samuel Very and dau. Abigail his wife, and upon their marriage together hath given "part of that ground where my dwelling house standeth." (The said Samuel Very³ was brother of Jonathan Very³, who md. Mary Symonds, whose dau. Bethiah md. Jonathan Archer⁵, No. 33.)

Children of **Samuel and Abigail (Archer) Very** were : —

- (a) **SAMUEL VERY**⁴, born in 1683.
- (b) **JOHN VERY**⁴, born —.

18. **BETHIAH ARCHER**³, bapt. Oct. 23, 1668; md. Jan. 1, 1694-5, Samuel Waters, son of Nathaniel Waters, he born May 10, 1674.
19. **THOMAS ARCHER**³, bapt. July 2, 1671; died before 1705, unmarried.
20. **JOSEPH ARCHER**³, bapt. Aug., 1675; died young.
21. **HANNAH ARCHER**³, bapt. June 22, 1679; died young.
22. **HANNAH ARCHER**³, bapt. Sept., 1682; md. — Bragg.
23. **SARAH ARCHER**³, born —; md. — Veren.

THIRD GENERATION.

JONATHAN ARCHER³ (No. 7), son of Samuel² (SAMUEL¹), and Hannah (Osgood) Archer, born in Salem, Mass., about 1670; died July 16, 1746, aged 75 years; lived in Salem, Mass.; styled truckman and cordwainer; md. Nov. 8, 1699, Abigail, widow of Hilliard Williams and dau. of John Massey and Sarah (Wells), she born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 26, 1671; died Oct. 8, 1738.

Children of **Jonathan** and **Abigail (Massey) Archer (Williams)** were:—

24. **ABIGAIL ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May, 1702; died young.
25. **JONATHAN ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Sept., 1703; administration granted his widow, Abigail, July 12, 1756; md. Jan. 30, 1728-9, Abigail Allen, dau. of Joseph and Abigail Allen; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 12, 1705; died Sept. 29, 1791.
26. **ABIGAIL ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., July 10, 1705; died Aug. 4 following.
27. **SAMUEL ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 2, 1707; died about 1765.
28. **NATHANIEL ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 17, 1710; died June 10, 1772.
29. **ABIGAIL ARCHER**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 17, 1711; died June 21, 1781, æt. 70 (gravestone); md. first, April 26, 1734, John Elkins, son of Thomas and Sarah (Miles) Elkins; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Nov. 10, 1706; died Dec., 1743. He was brother to Thomas Elkins (bapt. Aug. 19, 1712), who md. March 30, 1736, Martha Derby, dau. of Richard Derby² and Martha (Hasket), and granddaughter of Roger Derby¹; she born Sept. 12, 1714, and died Sept. 28, 1745, and had one child, Thomas Elkins, born in 1738, and died March 17, 1764, aged 26 (gravestone).

Abigail Archer md. second, Jan. 8, 1743-4, Capt. William Brown.

Children of **John** and **Abigail (Archer) Elkins** were:—

- (a) **JOHN ELKINS**⁵, bapt. Feb. 9, 1734-5; died Nov. 29, 1736, æt. 1 yr. 10 mos. (gravestone.)
- (b) **JOHN ELKINS**⁵, bapt. June 24, 1739.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JONATHAN ARCHER⁴ (No. 25), son of Jonathan³ (SAMUEL², SAMUEL¹), and Abigail (Massey) Archer (Williams), born in Salem, Mass., Sept., 1703; administration on his estate granted his widow, Abigail, July 12, 1756; md. Jan. 30, 1728-9, Abigail Allen, dau. of Joseph and Abigail Allen; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 12, 1705; died Sept. 29, 1791.

Children were:—

30. SAMUEL ARCHER⁵, bapt. Nov. 23, 1729; died young.
31. JONATHAN ARCHER⁵, bapt. Dec. 13, 1730; died young.
32. SAMUEL ARCHER⁵, bapt. Dec. 13, 1730.
33. JONATHAN ARCHER⁵, bapt. Oct. 22, 1732; died Aug. 28, 1797.
34. JOHN ARCHER⁵, bapt. March 31, 1734.
35. ABIGAIL ARCHER⁵, bapt. May 9, 1736.
36. SARAH ARCHER⁵, bapt. May 7, 1738.
37. BETHIAH ARCHER⁵, bapt. March 8, 1740-1: md. John Ward 3d.

FOURTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL ARCHER⁴ (No. 27), son of Jonathan³ (SAMUEL², SAMUEL¹), and Abigail (Massey) Archer (Williams), born Sept. 2, 1707; administration granted his widow, Dorothy, July 11, 1765; md. June 26, 1741, Dorothy Ropes, dau. of John and Dorothy (Bartlett) Ropes, she born Dec. 17, 1711; administration on her estate granted her son Samuel Archer April 11, 1794, who gave bonds with Samuel Archer, Jr., and William Archer.

Children of **Samuel and Dorothy (Ropes) Archer** were:

38. SAMUEL ARCHER⁵, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1742; died Oct. 19, 1825.
39. A son⁵, born Jan. 5, 1744.
40. ELIZABETH ARCHER⁵, born in Salem, Mass., July 4, 1748; died July 30 following.
41. JOHN ARCHER⁵, born in Salem, Mass., June 14, 1751.

FOURTH GENERATION.

NATHANIEL ARCHER⁴ (No. 28), son of Jonathan³ (SAMUEL², SAMUEL¹), and Abigail (Massey) Archer (Williams), born in Salem, Mass., April 17, 1710; died June 10, 1772; a cooper of great local reputation; md. Aug. 2, 1733, Hannah Cook, dau. of John and Hannah (Dean) Cook; a minor Dec. 13, 1731 (Probate Records); died May 21, 1767, æt. 53 y. 2 mo. (gravestone). She, with a brother and two sisters, was bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., April 29, 1722, after their father's decease.

Children were: —

42. **NATHANIEL ARCHER**⁵, bapt. March 21, 1735; md. March 30, 1760, Hannah Cheever, dau. of Peter Cheever and second wife, Sarah (Moses), born Osgood; she bapt. Sept. 13, 1741; died at Norway, Me., July 12, 1825.
43. **HANNAH ARCHER**⁵, bapt. Sept. 12, 1736; died in 1824; md. Dec. 16, 1755, Benjamin Brown, son of John and Lydia (Gerrish) Brown; he born April 15, 1733; died April 24, 1785.
44. **ELIZABETH ARCHER**⁵, bapt. Nov. 23, 1740.
45. **GEORGE ARCHER**⁵, bapt. Nov. 14, 1742; died abroad, mariner; md. Dec. 16, 1764, Martha Needham.
46. **ABIGAIL ARCHER**⁵, born —; md. June 15, 1769, Issachar Woodbury, son of Thomas and Lucy (Herrick) Woodbury; he born in Beverly, Mass., Oct. 27, 1745. No issue.
47. **STEPHEN ARCHER**⁵, born —; md. June 11, 1766, Sarah Pickering.
48. **BENJAMIN ARCHER**⁵, born in 1750; died July 4, 1787.
49. **JONATHAN ARCHER**⁵, born —.
50. **SARAH ARCHER**⁵, born —; md. Andrew Campbell.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JONATHAN ARCHER⁵ (No. 33), son of Jonathan⁴, Jr. (JONATHAN³, SAMUEL², SAMUEL¹), and Abigail (Allen) Archer; bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Oct. 22, 1732; died Aug. 28, 1797; md. first, in 1755, Bethiah Very, dau. of Jonathan³ (SAMUEL², Bridget¹) Very and Mary (Symonds); md. second, July 11, 1773, Elizabeth Silsbee, dau. of Joseph³ (Nath'l², Henry¹) Silsbee and first wife Mary (Pain); she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Nov. 28, 1736. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 27.)

Children of **Jonathan** and **Bethiah (Very) Archer** were:—

51. **JONATHAN ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. in Tabernacle Church (Baptist), Salem, Mass., Jan. 9, 1757; md. Rachel Woodman.
52. **BETHIAH ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., May 21, 1758.
53. **MARY ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Feb. 8, 1761.

FIFTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL ARCHER ⁵ (No. 38), son of Samuel ⁴ (**JONATHAN** ³, **SAMUEL** ², **SAMUEL** ¹), and Dorothy (Ropes) Archer, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1742; died Oct. 19, 1825; md. first, Aug. 31, 1762, Mary Woodwell, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Gillingham) Woodwell; she bapt. Jan. 8, 1743-4; died Aug. 31, 1812; md. second, May 13, 1813, Mary Buffington (Buffton, on the records); she born in 1759, and died May 29, 1846.

Children of **Samuel** and **Mary (Woodwell) Archer** were:—

54. **SAMUEL ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 25, 1763; died June 13, 1815; md. Sarah Woodbury.
55. **JOHN WOODWELL ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1765; died Feb. 7, 1782.
56. **WILLIAM ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., April 2, 1767; died Dec. 8, 1794; md. Dec. 13, 1788 (Feb. 5, 1789, Town Records), Mary Daland; she md. second, *Thomas Driver*.
57. **GEORGE ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., April 27, 1773; died Aug. 2, 1790.
58. **MARY ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1776; died Sept. 29, 1796.
59. **NATHANIEL ARCHER** ⁶, born March 1, 1779; died Aug. 8, 1780.
60. **ELIZABETH ARCHER** ⁶, born July 9, 1783; died Dec. 2, 1802.

FIFTH GENERATION.

GEORGE ARCHER ⁵ (No. 45), son of Nathaniel ⁴ (**JONATHAN** ³, **SAMUEL** ², **SAMUEL** ¹), and Hannah (Cook) Archer, bapt. Nov. 14, 1742; died abroad, mariner; administration on his estate granted his widow Sept. 7, 1772; md. Dec. 16, 1764, Martha Needham, dau. of Isaac and Margaret (Sheldon) Needham; she bapt. Jan. 6, 1744-5.

Children of **George and Martha (Needham) Archer** were :

61. **GEORGE ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., in 1765; died Dec., 1799, on his passage from Hamburg, aged 35 years; news received of his death Aug. 17, 1800; administration granted his widow, who gave bonds with Simon Forrester and John Hathorne, Jan. 6, 1801 (Dr. Bentley's Diary). He md. March 2, 1792, Judith Hathorne, dau. of Daniel and Rachel (Phelps) Hathorne, and aunt to Nathaniel Hawthorne, the author.

Children were :—

- (a) **GEORGE ARCHER** ⁷, bapt. in East Church, Salem, Mass., March 31, 1793.
 - (b) **SARAH ARCHER** ⁷, bapt. in East Church, Salem, Mass., Sept. 21, 1794.
 - (c) **JUDITH ARCHER** ⁷, bapt. in East Church, Salem, Mass., July 3, 1796; died March 14, 1801.
 - (d) **CAROLINE ARCHER** ⁷, bapt. in East Church, Salem, Mass., Nov. 18, 1798.
62. **JOHN ARCHER** ⁶, born in 1768.
63. **NATHANIEL ARCHER** ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., about March 1771; died May 17, 1833; md. Nov. 2, 1794, Sarah Beckford, dau. of Jonathan and Sarah (King) Beckford; she bapt. Aug. 10, 1766; died Oct. 25, 1844.

Children were :—

- (a) **SARAH ARCHER** ⁷, born July 6, 1797; died Feb. 18, 1877; md Charles Millet. See *Driver Family*, No. 74.
- (b) **MARY ARCHER** ⁷, born Jan. 13, 1801; md. June, 1826, Samuel Varney.
- (c) **GEORGE BARCLAY ARCHER** ⁷, born Feb. 18, 1804; died Jan. 31, 1832.

SIXTH GENERATION.

JONATHAN ARCHER ⁶ (No. 51), son of Jonathan ⁵ (JONATHAN ⁴, JONATHAN ³, SAMUEL ², SAMUEL ¹), and Bethiah (Very) Archer; bapt. in Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., Jan. 9, 1757; md. Rachel Woodman.

Children were :—

64. **RACHEL ARCHER** ⁷, born Nov. 20, 1782; died Sept. 8, 1870; md. Dec. 19, 1802, William Ropes, son of William and Mary (Brown) Ropes, he born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 25, 1781; died July 9, 1859. They had seven children; viz. :—
- (a) **RACHEL ROPES** ⁸, born May 21, 1803; died Jan. 25, 1838; md. Sept. 1, 1824, Tarrant Putnam Derby, son of John and Elizabeth (Putnam) Derby; he born Aug. 14, 1796; died March 6, 1850.
 - (b) **WILLIAM ARCHER ROPES** ⁸, born Nov. 23, 1804; died at Batavia, July, 1833.
 - (c) **MARY BROWN ROPES** ⁸, born May 12, 1807; died May 2, 1846.

- (d) JONATHAN ARCHER ROPES², born Dec. 10, 1806; died at Baltimore, Md., Oct. 2, 1855.
 (e) JOHN TITCOMB ROPES², born Dec. 6, 1810.
 (f) HENRY TIBBETTS ROPES², born June 12, 1812.
 (g) JOSEPH WHITE ROPES², born March 14, 1816.
65. MARY ARCHER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 18, 1787; md. March 21, 1813, John Ropes, son of William and Mary (Brown) Ropes, and brother to William abovesaid; born Dec. 26, 1783; died July 30, 1825; master-mariner.
66. SARAH ARCHER⁷, born —; md. Oct. 11, 1812, Robert Brookhouse.
67. ELIZA ARCHER⁷, born —; md. Nov. 3, 1816, Benjamin Foster.
68. LYDIA ARCHER⁷, born —; md. Dec. 10, 1821, Nathaniel Griffin.
-

SIXTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL ARCHER⁶ (No. 54), son of Samuel⁵ (SAMUEL⁴, JONATHAN³, SAMUEL², SAMUEL¹) and Mary (Woodwell) Archer; born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 25, 1763; died June 13, 1815; md. Nov. 16, 1788, Sarah Woodbury; she born about 1765; died Aug. 15, 1832; and had two children; viz.:—

69. JOHN WOODWELL ARCHER⁷, Jr., born —; removed West; md. Deborah H. Little.
70. SAMUEL H. ARCHER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., in 1798; died Dec. 27, 1838; md. Oct. 21, 1823, Zervia Fidelia Worcester, dau. of Rev. Samuel and Zervia (Fox) Worcester; she born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 4, 1804; her brother, Jonathan Fox Worcester, born Aug. 12, 1806; md. for his second wife, Nov. 1, 1837, Hannah Derby, dau. of John⁴ (Sam'l², Sam'l², Roger¹) and Elizabeth (Putnam) Derby; she born Jan. 25, 1808; died June 1, 1840, and had Anna Derby Worcester, born March 25, 1839.

Children by Zervia were:—

- (a) FIDELIA WORCESTER ARCHER⁸, born Aug. 27, 1824.
 (b) SARAH ELIZABETH ARCHER⁸, born Aug. 30, 1826; died in 1829.
 (c) MARY JANE ARCHER⁸, born Nov. 23, 1828; died in 1853.

SIXTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM ARCHER⁶ (No. 56), son of Samuel⁵ (**SAMUEL**⁴, **JONATHAN**³, **SAMUEL**², **SAMUEL**¹), and Mary (Woodwell) Archer, born in Salem, Mass., April 2, 1767; died Dec. 8, 1794; md. Dec. 13, 1788 (Feb. 5, 1789, Town Record), Mary Daland, dau. of Benjamin and Hannah (Cook) Daland; she bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Jan. 14, 1770 (see Appendix, Daland Family, No. 25); she md. second, Feb. 19, 1804, Thomas Driver, son of Stephen and Elizabeth (Lawrence) Driver. No issue. (No. 62, Driver Family.)

Children of **William** and **Mary (Daland) Archer** were:—

71. **MARY ARCHER**⁷, born Dec., 1789; md. Jan. 24, 1811, George Palfrey, sailor.
72. **WILLIAM ARCHER**⁷, born Aug. 13, 1791; died Dec. 27, 1864; md. Oct. 8, 1815, Elizabeth Daniels.
73. **DOLLY ROPES ARCHER**⁷, born March, 1793; died March 14, 1859, unmarried.
74. **JOSEPH ARCHER**⁷, born —
75. **REBECCA ARCHER**⁷, bapt. June 5, 1796, after her father's decease.

THE BABBIDGE FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE¹, the emigrant, son of Roger and Hester Babbidge, came from Totnes, Eng., in 1662, and settled in Salem, Mass. His parents had five children, — Christopher, Roger, Richard, John, and Jone, known by the following affidavits recorded on the Notarial Records, Vol. I. p. 61—. (Clerk of Court's office.)

"The affidavits of Nicholas Bartlett and Damaris Phippeny, the former aged about 86 years, the latter about fifty nine, Testifie and sayth they came from England forty four yeares agoe in the ship Nathaniel of Dartmouth, John Adams of said Dartmouth, commander, and that there came with them Christopher Babbidge of Tatness, in the countey of Devonshire, son of Roger and Hester Babbidge of Tatness aforesaid, and that the same Christopher Babbidge is now living in Salem in the county of Essex in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England; that the said Christopher Babbidge had three Brothers named Richard, Roger and John, and one sister called Jone; that the said Christopher served his time with one George Marks of Tatness aforesay'd, Taylor; that these deponents were next neighbors to them in Tatness aforesaid and well know the said Christopher Babbidge to be the reputed son of the said Roger and Hester Babbidge, and that he married one Agnes Triggs of Tatness aforesaid, and is now living and well at this day and is present at the giving this Deposition as Witness their hands the second day of September Anno Dom; 1706.

JONATHAN CORWIN

Justice of the Peace"

Christopher Babbidge was in 1665 made a freeman, and March 27, 1664, he was admitted to the First Church of Salem, Mass., as a member, with full communion. In 1668 he with many others petitioned against the imposing two per cent on all goods, provisions, and merchandise imported into the Colony. His name is on the list of those who in 1661-2 were proprietors of common and undivided lands in Salem, New England, and had cottages and dwelling places there.

It is not known when Mr. Babbidge died, and there is no settlement of his estate; but Mrs. Bradstreet, widow of Capt. Joseph

Gardner, made her will Sept. 29, 1711, in which, after numerous bequests, she gives "to my good friends Christopher Babbidge Sen^r & Simon Willard Twenty shillings apiece." This is the latest date on record concerning the aforesaid Christopher Babbidge.

Mrs. (Gardner) Bradstreet was Ann, daughter of Emanuel Downing and Lucy, daughter of Adam Winthrop, Esq., who was the sister of Gov. John Winthrop of Massachusetts Bay. Her brother was the celebrated Sir George Downing, after whom Downing Street, London, Eng., was named. Ann was born in London, Eng., in 1634, and died in Salem, Mass., April 19, 1713; buried in Charter Street Burial-ground of Salem, Mass. She married first Capt. Joseph Gardner, son of Thomas Gardner, the emigrant, who came over in 1624 from Dorsetshire, Eng. (near which the name had flourished for more than three centuries), and settled under the auspices of the Dorchester Company, with Rev. John White and thirteen others, at Gloucester, Cape Ann, under the grant of Lord Sheffield to Robert Cushman and Edward Winslow, made in January of that year, Mr. Gardner being the overseer of the plantation. Not realizing the success they anticipated in founding a colony, they removed, in 1626, to Naumkeag, now Salem, which continued to be the home of Mr. Gardner, and where his son Joseph married Ann Downing. This Joseph Gardner was a shipmaster. May 15, 1672, he was chosen lieutenant of a foot company of Salem, Mass., under Capt. Walter Rice. Oct. 20, 1674, he was chosen captain of the same company. Nov. 12, 1675, he was one of the six captains appointed for service against the Indians. Dec. 19th following, in a battle against the Narragansett Indians, led by King Philip, he, with five other officers and eight of his own men, was slain.

He made his will Dec. 6, 1665; proved Feb. 3, 1675-76; and having no issue, left all his goods and estate, real and personal, to his wife Ann, appointing her "to be my only and sole executrix;" she married second, June 6, 1676, Gov. Simon Bradstreet, who was born at Horbling, Lincolnshire, Eng., March, 1603, and died in Salem, Mass., March 27, 1697. He married first, about 1628, Ann Dudley, dau. of Gov. Thomas Dudley; she died in Andover, Mass., Sept. 16, 1672. She was the first American female poet, styled the "tenth Muse" (Abstract from N. Eng. Gen. Register, Vol. XXV. pp. 48, 49).

Christopher Babbidge was twice married, — first in Totnes, Eng., date unknown, to Agnes Triggs, who died in Salem, Mass., Nov. 17, 1667. He married second, Oct. 5, 1674, Hannah, widow of John Carlton, of Haverhill, Mass., and daughter of Joseph^s and Mary (Mallinson) Jewett, who was born June 15, 1641, and granddaughter of Edward Jewett¹, of Bradford, West Riding of Yorkshire, Eng., clothier, where he married, Oct. 1, 1604, Mary Taylor, dau. of William Taylor. His will, proved July 12, 1615,

by his widow, names wife Mary ex'x; sons William, Maximilian, Joseph; daughter Sarah, and father-in-law William Taylor.

John Carlton was the son of Edward and Ellen Carlton, then of Rowley, Mass.; he born in England about 1630, and died in Haverhill, Jan. 22, 1668. Edward Carlton, his father, was a free-man of Rowley, Mass., in 1642, and had the next year a three-acre house-lot. He subsequently returned with his family to England, and soon after sent his son John aforesaid back again to settle up his estate in Rowley, Mass., for him; but he evidently died before he was able to so do, for in the County Court Records is found the following petition relative to the settlement of the estate of Edward Carlton:—

"To the Honoured Court now sitting at Salem this 27 of November, Anno Dom. 1678. The humble request of Christopher Babbage & Hannah his wife that whereas Mr. Edward Carleton sometime of Rowley left an estate in New England when he went out of the country, part of which (hee sending his son John Carlton by virtue of a letter of Atturney did receive in his behalf), wee conceiving that there being some of his estate unreceived by his said son, desire this Honoured Court would appoynt some of our relations, Jeremiah Jewett or Nehemiah Jewett or both to be administrators to the estate of the sayd Mr. Edward Carleton, that if anything may be preserved, it may be forth coming to the children of the said Hannah relict of the said John Carlton deceased the only heirs to any such estate (as we can conceive), or as authority ahall dispose of it & in your soe doing your servants shall pray.

CHRISTOPHER BABBAGE
HANNAH BABBAGE"

"Jeremiah Jewett & Nehemiah Jewett have power of administration granted of the estate of Mr. Edw. Carleton deceased, who was formerly of Rowley & they are enjoined to bring in a true Inventory of what estate of his can be found at y^e next Court, held at Ipswich.

In Court at Salem 29:9:1678

Attest. HILLIARD VERIN, C^{rk}."

Children of **John Carlton** were:— *4 sons.*

- John* → (a) JOSEPH CARLTON, born in Haverhill, Mass., March 21, 1662-3.
(b) EDWARD CARLTON, born in Haverhill, Mass., March 22, 1664-5.
(c) THOMAS CARLTON, born in Haverhill, Mass., Nov. 1, 1667.

Children of **Christopher and Agnes (Triggs) Babbidge** were:—

2. RUTH BABBIDGE², born March 21, 1663. (Another account, May 8, 1664.).
3. JOHN BABBIDGE², born April 15, 1666.

Children of **Christopher and Hannah (Jewett) (Carlton) Babbidge** were:—

4. HANNAH BABBIDGE², born July 15, 1675.

5. MARY BABBIDGE² (Anne, First Church Records), born March 1, 1676-7.
6. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE², born Nov. 11, 1678 ; died Dec., 1755.
7. RICHARD BABBIDGE², born Oct. 1, 1680 ; died March, 1681.
8. RICHARD BABBIDGE² (Elizabeth, First Church Records), born July 14, 1682.
9. NEHEMIAH BABBIDGE², born March 25, 1684.

SECOND GENERATION.

CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE², Jr. (No. 6), son of Christopher¹ and second wife Hannah Babbidge, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 11, 1678 ; died — ; cordwainer ; administration granted his daughter Mehitable, Jan. 1, 1756. He married Dec. 6, 1705, Lydia Marston, dau. of Manhasseh² (John¹) and Mercy (Peirce) Marston ; she born Jan. 7, 1684, and probably died before her husband, as her daughter was appointed administratrix of her husband's estate, her sons being also deceased.

Aug. 26, 1717, Christopher Babbidge conveyed "to Capt. William Pickering, Joseph Andrew, Abraham Purchase, Josiah Willard, Malachi Foot, Jacob Manning and others, (a committee chosen by a considerable number of inhabitants, for y^e erecting and building of a meeting house for the Publick worship of God towards y^e lower or eastern end of y^e Town, and for y^e procuring and purchasing a Suitable peice of land to place it on), 19 rods of land, bounded Northerly with y^e Main St." (Essex) ; "Easterly with a lane called Grafton's lane" (now Hardy Street), "South by other lands of s^d Babbidge, West by a private way" (Bentley Street), "by y^e widow Dowry's."

The meeting-house referred to was known as the "East Parish meeting house," and stood on the corner of Essex and Bentley Streets ; and the East Parish began at the eastern corner of Washington Street, Salem, Mass., and extended on that side of Essex Street, down to Neck gate.

This church was ~~Unitarian~~ ^{dedicated at} in 1718, and the successive pastors were Robert Stanton, April 8, 1719 ; William Jennison, May 22, 1728 ; James Diman, May 11, 1737 ; William Bentley, Sept. 24, 1783 ; ^{when it became Unitarian} James Flint, Sept. 20, 1821, towards the close of whose ministry a new church of free stone was erected on Brown

Street, near the Common. The old church was torn down, and the vane, a gilded rooster, was transferred to the tower of the Bentley schoolhouse, and the site was purchased by J. Lovett Whipple, on which he built a dwelling-house.

All the Babbidge family lived in the East Parish, near this old church, which they all attended as long as it stood, and where all their children were baptized, and where all records of the family were recorded; but when the new church was built, the early church records, inclusive of Mr. Diman's pastorate, were lost; thus the records of seventy years can never be replaced, and their loss shows itself in this family of Christopher Babbidge aforesaid, who at first attended the First Church, which stood on the eastern corner of Washington Street; but Dec. 25, 1718, thirty-six members of this church were set off to form the East Church, of which number Christopher Babbidge was one.

"June 16, 1783; Mehitable Babbidge" (daughter of said Christopher), "single, for £10, conveys to Lydia Babbidge" (her sister), "spinster, one wall pew below at the western part of the meeting house, East parish, No. 17."

Children were: —

10. JAMES BABBIDGE³, born in Salem, Mass., in 1706; died before 1732; md. June 13, 1728, Elizabeth Knowlton.
 11. JOHN BABBIDGE³, born Sept. 7, 1707; died May 12, 1745; md. Jan. 11, 1732-3, Susanna Becket.
 12. LYDIA BABBIDGE³, born in Salem, Mass.; bapt. Jan. 22, 1709, in the First Church; living in 1783, unmarried.
 13. MEHITABLE BABBIDGE³, bapt. June 14, 1713; died Dec. 24, 1784, unmarried.
 14. BENJAMIN BABBIDGE³, bapt. Feb. 5, 1715; md. June 17, 1742, Abigail Mears, of Boston, Mass.
 15. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE³, born —; died in 1751; md. Sept. 27, 1749, Anstis Crowninshield, dau. of John and Anstis (Williams) Crowninshield.
 16. HANNAH BABBIDGE³, born —; died Sept. —, 1774; md. Oct. 6, 1745, Nathaniel Osgood, son of Nath'l and Hannah (Buttolph) Osgood, who was bapt. Sept. 5, 1714; died June 13, 1799; cordwainer.
- They had one child, Christopher Osgood⁴.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN BABBIDGE³ (No. 11), son of Christopher² (CHRISTOPHER¹) and Lydia (Marston) Babbidge, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 7, 1707; died May 12, 1745. He made his will May 2, 1745; proved June 14th following. He gives wife Susanna her thirds, the balance to be divided between his children, — Lydia, Susanna, John, Elizabeth, Benjamin; Christopher and William when they come of age. His father, father-in-law, and wife, executors.

He married Jan. 11, 1732-3, Susanna Becket, dau. of John and Susanna (Mason, dau. of Thomas) Becket, who was born April 15, 1714; died June 3, 1804, aged 90 years; buried in Charter Street Burial-ground, Salem, Mass.

Rev. Dr. Bentley, whose church she attended, kept a diary, wherein he made notes concerning his parishioners; of Mrs. Babbidge he writes, "while her house was being repaired, she was removed to the dwelling of Mr. Archer, where she was taken sick and died."

She lived on Walnut Street, Salem, Mass., where for fifty years after her husband's death she kept a select school, for which she became noted and highly respected, being called Madam Susanna Babbidge, — a rare title at that date, female teachers being termed "Dame" or "Marm," and generally were middle-aged persons in cap and spectacles. She was very corpulent, and thus unable to move about easily; therefore to be able to inflict a slight punishment on refractory pupils at a distance from her, she kept constantly at her side a long pole with a knob at one end, by the use of which she accomplished it.

She was assisted in her school by her daughter Lydia (No. 17), who taught the older pupils in a room apart from her mother.

Children were: —

17. **LYDIA BABBIDGE**⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 7, 1733; died July 9, 1800, unmarried; assistant in her mother's school.
18. **SUSANNA BABBIDGE**⁴, born Nov. 3, 1734; died June 4, 1800; md. Jan. 22, 1756, Capt. Jonathan Mason, master-mariner, who was born in 1733; died Nov. 10, 1799. "He commanded the private armed brig Lion, of sixteen guns, and fifty men." — *Essex Inst. Coll.*, Vol. III. p. 129.

They had a son Jonathan⁵, born March 30, 1757, and died July 27, 1808, who married first, Jan. 19, 1779, Elizabeth King, dau. of William

Sept. 30, 1757, and died July 27, 1808, who married first, Jan. 19, 1779, Elizabeth King, dau. of William King, and second, Mary, dau. of John King.

and Mary (Andrew) King (see second husband of the wife of No. 15) ; md. second, Jan. 8, 1794, her second cousin, Mary King, dau. of Benjamin and Sarah (Northey) King.

There were probably other children.

This son Jonathan had sons Jonathan, Thomas, and Henry, who died unmarried, and daughters Elizabeth, who, Nov. 17, 1805, married Archelaus Rea, and one who married Timothy Brooks.

19. JOHN BABBIDGE ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May 17, 1736 ; died Oct. 22, 1757, unmarried.

20. ELIZABETH BABBIDGE ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 27, 1737-8 ; died Oct. 17, 1797 ; md. Nov. 17, 1770, Benjamin Ward, Jr., son of Ebenezer and Rachel (Pickman) Ward, he born Sept. 18, 1739 ; died June 11, 1812 ; cabinet-maker. No issue. He commanded a company of infantry, who marched to New York in 1776.

He married second, May 24, 1781, Mary, widow of William Farmer and daughter of Paul Carleton ; she born in 1749, and died Dec. 29, 1810. No issue.

21. BENJAMIN BABBIDGE ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 30, 1739-40 ; died Oct. 18, 1774 ; md. Oct. 21, 1762, Elizabeth Woodwell.

22. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 24, 1741-2 ; died Aug. 26, 1792 ; md. first, Jan. 31, 1765, Mary Young ; md. second, July 28, 1768, Martha Silsbee, widow of William Emmerton.

23. WILLIAM BABBIDGE ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 21, 1744 ; died Sept. 14, 1753.

THIRD GENERATION.

CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE ⁸ (No. 15), son of Christopher ² (CHRISTOPHER ¹), and Lydia (Marston) Babbidge, born — ; died in 1751 ; administration granted his widow, Anstis, Jan. 4, 1752 ; mariner.

July 14, 1760, his widow returned £96 : 10 : 6, as the net amount of his estate to be distributed among the following heirs, viz. : —

£64 : 7 to his only daughter Anstis, and the remaining one third to the widow. She, however, petitioned that her dowry be given to her daughter, which was granted.

He married Sept. 27, 1749, Anstis Crowninshield, dau. of John and Anstis (Williams) Crowninshield, who was born April 27, 1727, and died Nov. 22, 1763. She married second, as his second wife, July 20, 1760, William King, son of Capt. Samuel and Elizabeth (Barton) King ; he bapt. May 4, 1729, and married first, April 25, 1753, Mary Andrew, dau. of Nathaniel and Mary (Higginson)

John Andrew was a grand-son of Christopher Babbidge and Lydia his first wife. He was born in 1729 and died in 1763. He married first, April 25, 1753, Mary Andrew, dau. of Nathaniel and Mary (Higginson) Andrew. He married second, July 20, 1760, William King, son of Capt. Samuel and Elizabeth (Barton) King. He died in 1763. His widow, Anstis, received £96 : 10 : 6 on July 14, 1760, as the net amount of his estate to be distributed among the following heirs, viz. : — £64 : 7 to his only daughter Anstis, and the remaining one third to the widow. She, however, petitioned that her dowry be given to her daughter, which was granted.

Andrew, who was born April 5, 1733, and died before 1760, and had three children, viz. : —

- (1) MARY KING, born —; md. Sept. 23, 1779, Benjamin Webb, son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Saunders) Webb, who was bapt. March 3, 1754. Children were eleven.
- (2) HANNAH KING, born —; md. Nov. 19, 1778, Capt. Benj. Hodges. Children were eight.
- (3) ELIZABETH KING; md. Nov. 19, 1778, Jonathan Mason (see Appendix, Crowninshield Family, No. 7), and he md. second Mary King, dau. of Benj. and Sarah (Northey) King. (See No. 18.)

William King's maternal grandparents were Dr. John and Lydia (Roberts) Barton. John Barton, father of Dr. John, lived in Huntington, England, where he died the latter part of 1694. His son took passage for England to settle up the estate, and on the way the vessel touched at Barbadoes, where his services professionally were immediately in demand for a case of yellow fever, which disease he himself contracted, and of which he there died the third day after his arrival, in December, 1694.

His widow received a letter "stating that her husband's funeral was conducted in a manner suitable to his standing in society, and that gloves and gold rings had been freely distributed," — thereby incurring a waste of several hundred dollars in specie, which the widow might have received (G. D. Phippen). He left seven children, of whom Lydia was the fifth child, and July 6, 1721, she married Capt. Samuel King, and had five children, viz. : —

- (1) ZACHEUS KING, bapt. Feb. 3, 1722-3.
- (2) LYDIA KING, bapt. July 26, 1724.
- (3) THOMAS KING, bapt. Jan. 27, 1725-6.
- (4) ELIZABETH KING, bapt. July 30, 1727.
- (5) WILLIAM KING, bapt. May 4, 1729, the abovesaid.

William King's maternal great-great-grandparents were John Roberts¹, the emigrant, in 1636, to New England from Wales, "bringing with him his aiged mother, wife & seven children : Thomas & Edward, sons : — Elizabeth, Margery, Joan, Alce, Lidea, Ruth, Deborah, daughters ; He was one of the first fruits of Wales yt came to N. E. called to Christ by the ministry of yt Revend & worthy instrument Mr. Wroth. His wife was Elizabeth —; and she, her husband & son Thomas joined the church early.

His aiged mother a Welch woman, who came with him was born 1543, and died Jan. 7. 1645-6, aged 103 years, having lived in this county 9 years." — REV. JOHN ELLIOT (pastor of Roxbury Church).

John¹ and Elizabeth Roberts's eldest son Thomas was the father of Lydia Roberts who married Dr. John Barton as abovesaid.

Child of **Christopher and Anstis (Crowninshield) Babbidge** was : —

24. ANSTIS BABBIDGE⁴, born in Salem, Mass., July 13, 1750; died Jan. 4, 1834; md. May 14, 1772, Capt. Robert Stone, son of Benjamin and

Elizabeth (Berry) Stone, who was born Sept. 14, 1744; died of apoplexy Aug. 25, 1817; master-mariner.

Children were:—

- (1) SALLY STONE⁶, born July 16, 1773; died Nov. 9, 1856; md. Sept. 18, 1793, James Dunlap, son of Andrew and Margaret (Lemon) Dunlap, who was born Nov. 14, 1767, and died April 22, 1800.
- (2) ROBERT STONE⁶, born —; died Sept. 21, 1860; md. Rebecca Osgood, dau. of Capt. John Osgood.
- (3) ANSTIS STONE⁶, born March 15, 1778; died April 24, 1807, unmarried.
- (4) BENJAMIN STONE⁶, born Sept. 6, 1781; died at Boston, Mass., July 30, 1798.
- (5) HANNAH STONE⁶, born Aug. 29, 1784; died Oct. 28, 1784.
- (6) ELIZABETH STONE⁶, born Feb. 13, 1787; died June 10, 1845.
- (7) HANNAH STONE⁶, born Aug. 3, 1789; died Feb. 25, 1815.

Children of William and Anstis (Crowninshield) King (Babbidge)

were:—

- (a) WILLIAM KING⁴, born about 1761; md. March 10, 1785, Rebecca Phippen, dau. of David and Priscilla (Beckford) Phippen, she born Dec. 19, 1759 (Priscilla Beckford was daughter of John Beckford and Rebecca (Pinsent), bapt. Sept. 7, 1718; her father removed to Reading, Mass., before 1757).
- (b) LYDIA KING⁴, born Feb. 28, 1763; died Feb. 7, 1854; md. Jan., 1785, George Smith, son of George and Mary (Beckford) Smith, born March 12, 1761; died Nov. 12, 1840.
- (c) NATHANIEL KING⁴, born —; died —.

FOURTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN BABBIDGE⁴ (No. 21), son of John³ (CHRISTOPHER², CHRISTOPHER¹), and Susanna (Becket) Babbidge, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 30, 1739–40; died Oct. 18, 1774; cordwainer. He married Oct. 21, 1762, Elizabeth Woodwell, probably dau. of John and Elizabeth (Gillingham) Woodwell.

Children were:—

25. ELIZABETH BABBIDGE⁵, born in 1763; died May 6, 1811; md. first, July 27, 1788, William Cotton, a mariner; news of whose death at Batavia, Java, at the age of 26 years, was received at Salem July 9, 1791.

She married second, Nov. 12, 1796, Thomas Williams, a mariner, who was born in England in 1769, and in 1776, when seven years of age, was brought to Salem, Mass., by Capt. Francis Boardman. No issue by this marriage, which was his third, as he married first, Aug. 17, 1788, Elizabeth, widow of Joseph Symmes (maiden name Swasey), who died June 29, 1793, aged 35; he married second, Sept. 7, 1794, Rebecca Smith, who died March 31, 1796, aged 25 years.

Child of **Elizabeth Babbidge** by first marriage was : —

- (1) **WILLIAM COTTON** ⁶, born Feb., 1789; died Aug. 31, 1790.
26. **BENJAMIN BABBIDGE** ⁵, born in 1765; died at sea in 1811, mariner; md. in 1790 **Mary Phippen**.
27. **JOHN BABBIDGE** ⁵, born June, 1767; died March 26, 1860; md. June 25, 1789, **Sarah Becket**.
28. **SUSANNA BABBIDGE** ⁵, born in 1769; died Nov. 25, 1807; md. June 23, 1789, Col. **Samuel Archer** ⁶, son of **Samuel** ⁶ (**Jonathan** ⁴, Jr., **Jonathan** ⁵, **Samuel** ², **Samuel** ¹), and **Bethia (Dood) Archer**, he born April 10, 1768; removed to Boston, Mass., and there died May 17, 1813, merchant. He married second, **Deborah McNutt**, dau. of **Martin** and **Rebecca (Stuart) McNutt**, of Nova Scotia, she born Oct. 27, 1779; died July 2, 1860.

Children of first marriage were : —

- (1) **LYDIA ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. Oct. 2, 1791.
- (2) **WILLIAM ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. June 16, 1793; died Oct. 1, 1795
- (3) **ELIZA COTTON ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. Dec. 30, 1795.
- (4) **MARIA ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. Oct. 1, 1797.
- (5) **HARRIET ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. April 14, 1799.
- (6) **WILLIAM ARCHER** ⁶, bapt. Dec. 2, 1800.
- (7) **ADELINE ARCHER** ⁶, born Aug. 19, 1802; died Jan. 8, 1803.
- (8) **SAMUEL ARCHER** ⁶, born —; died young. They were all baptized in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. CRISTOPHER BABBIDGE ⁴ (No. 22), son of **John** ⁸ (**CHRISTOPHER** ², **CHRISTOPHER** ¹), and **Susanna (Becket) Babbidge**, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 24, 1741-2; died at St. Sebastian, Spain, Aug. 26, 1792; master-mariner. He married first, Jan. 31, 1765, **Mary Young**, and had one son, namely : —

29. **CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE** ⁵, born May, 1770; died Nov. 22, 1836 (1837 another acct.); md. first, **Ruth Randall**; md. second, Dec. 1, 1822, **Eunice**, widow of **Capt. Michael Barnes**.

He married second, July 28, 1768, **Martha**, widow of **William Emmerton**, and dau. of **William** and **Joanna (Fowle) Silsbee**, she born in 1742, and died Jan. 31, 1804. She was a descendant of the emigrant, **Henry Silsbee** (first of Salem, Mass., in 1639, and afterwards of Ipswich, Mass., 1647, and Lynn about 1651), through **Nathaniel** ², **Nathaniel** ³, **William** ⁴ (see **Silsbee Pedigree**). Her first husband, **William Emmerton** ², son of **John** ¹ and **Mary (Foster)**

Emmerton, and was born Sept. 2, 1739, and died abroad about 1761-2. "He was published Sept. 19, 1761, to Martha, dau. of William Silsbee of Salem, Mass." "They were married that year, and William went to sea," having started on a voyage to the West Indies. "Martha resided at home with her father. The young wife was sleeping in the best chamber, with her sister Johanna," "when, one night, they were awakened by the crashing fall of the mirror to the floor, Martha exclaimed, there! something has happened to Emmerton."

"William never came back, although history is silent upon the interesting point whether his demise and the destruction of the mirror were really coincident in time." — *Emmerton Pedigree*.

Nov. 24, 1797, Martha Babbidge, widow; Christopher Babbidge, mariner (her son); and Mansfield Burrill, Jr., housewright; all of Salem (Mansfield Burrill, Sr., married Dec. 1, 1763, Joanna Silsbee, sister of said Martha Babbidge), "are now seized in fee as tenants in common of a certain dwelling house and land bounded North on Essex St., 47 feet, East, partly on land of Mary Rantal" (Randall), "and partly on land formerly Valpy's, South on H. Prince, West, on land of Widow Andrews; the land contained about 33 poles; it being the real estate of William Silsbee died seized of. The said Martha of $\frac{1}{4}$ part, Mansfield Burrill $\frac{2}{4}$, and Christopher Babbidge $\frac{1}{4}$ part of s^d premises." . . . "And we do hereby agree that after the present house that is now standing on said premises shall be worn out or down, and the parties cannot agree to rebuild on the said land that then said Mansfield Burrill and his heirs & assigns shall be obliged to receive of the said Christopher Babbidge or his heirs & assigns so much land as is his proportion of that which is now laid in common for a yard &c., out of said Christopher's lot. Also said Martha shall have her proportion set of to her & her heirs where it will be most convenient, leaving a passage way from Essex Street of 6 feet wide.

RICHARD MANNING }
WILLIAM NORTHEY } Wit."
EDWARD NORRIS }

Probate Deeds, Bk. 309, p. 135.

Children of **Christopher** and **Martha (Silsbee) (Emmerton) Babbidge** were: —

30. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE ^s, born —; died —, mariner.
31. SUSAN BABBIDGE ^s, born —.
32. WILLIAM BABBIDGE ^s, born —.
33. MARTHA BABBIDGE ^s, born in 1774; died April 16, 1821; md. Jan. 6, 1793, Andrew Ward, son of John and Bethiah (Archer) Ward, and grandson of Jonathan ^s and Abigail (Williams) Archer; he born Dec. 29, 1769; died Dec. 18, 1813.

Children were: —

THE BABBIDGE FAMILY.

- (1) ANDREW WARD⁶, born Oct. 29, 1793; died Aug. 2, 1860; md. July 4, 1819, Abigail R. Abbott, and had Abby R. Ward, who married George Spence.
- (2) JOHN WARD⁶, born Jan. 27, 1795; died Jan. 25, 1796.
- (3) JOHN WARD⁶, born Dec. 29, 1796; died Jan. 25, 1829; md. Dec. 17, 1823, Sarah Patterson (No. 9, Patterson Family, see Appendix), daughter of William and Sarah (Archer) Patterson; she bapt. March 2, 1799. They had two children, namely:—
- (a) MARY ANN WARD⁷, born Oct. 1, 1824; md. Elliott F. Smith.
- (b) SARAH ADELINE WARD⁷, born Aug. 10, 1826.
- (4) BETHIAH WARD⁶, born Aug. 23, 1796; died Dec. 3, 1872; md. Feb. 11, 1823, Thomas Wadleigh Taylor, who died Nov. 30, 1850.
- They had six children, namely:—
- (a) MARTHA A. TAYLOR⁷, born May 15, 1824.
- (b) MARGARET B. TAYLOR⁷, born Nov. 9, 1825.
- (c) SARAH N. TAYLOR⁷, born Nov. 23, 1829.
- (d) THOMAS A. TAYLOR⁷, born Dec. 18, 1833.
- (e) FRANCIS S. TAYLOR⁷, born Jan. 2, 1835.
- (f) JOHN TAYLOR⁷, born Oct. 4, 1837.
- (5) ISRAEL WARD⁶, born Jan. 22, 1800; died March 19, 1854; md. May 25, 1824, Hannah Goodhue.
- Children were:—
- (a) JOHN A. WARD⁷, born Sept. 10, 1828.
- (b) MARY G. WARD⁷, born June 15, 1830.
- (c) WILLIAM WARD⁷, born July 6, 1833.
- (d) LAWRENCE PIERSON WARD⁷, born Dec. 21, 1834.
- (e) ISRAEL WARD⁷, born April 6, 1836.
- (f) MARTHA B. WARD⁷, born Oct. 21, 1838; died Dec. 24, 1857.
- (g) JOHN A. WARD⁷, born May 1, 1840; died June 4, 1844.
- (6) HANNAH WARD⁶, born Dec. 4, 1801; died in Salem, Mass., Dec. 8, 1872; md. first, Dec. 14, 1823, Charles Hobart, who died in Calcutta, Aug. 27, 1852, aged 53 years.
- They had two sons, namely:—
- (a) JOHN H. HOBART⁷, born Jan. 9, 1827; died in Mocha, March 17, 1852, unmarried (gravestone).
- (b) CHARLES HOBART⁷, born Oct. 24, 1839; died in Salem, Mass., June 27, 1842 (gravestone).
- She married second, Dec. 22, 1862, as his second wife, Ebenezer Buswell, son of Jacob and Polly Buswell, who married first Catharine Metcalf Driver, daughter of Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver (No. 80, Driver Family).
- (7) ADELINE WARD⁶, born Oct. 5, 1803; living in 1886 in New York city; md. March 24, 1828, Benjamin Farless, who was born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 1, 1801; removed to New York city about 1852, where he died Nov. 3, 1858; a trader.
- He was admitted to the Essex Lodge of Freemasons, Salem, Mass., Jan. 9, 1827. — *Essex Inst. Coll.*, Vol. III, p. 257.
- Children were:—
- (a) BENJAMIN AUGUSTUS FARLESS⁷, born Jan. 9, 1829; living in 1886 in Washington, D. C.
- (b) ADELINE WARD FARLESS⁷, born Aug. 27, 1831; living in 1886 in New York city.
- (c) THOMAS FARLESS⁷, born Aug. 10, 1834; died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 16, 1842.

(d) WILLIAM HENRY FARLESS⁷, born March 10, 1836; died in New York city July 23, 1854.

(e) GEORGE ELLIOT FARLESS⁷, born April 30, 1839.

(f) THOMAS FARLESS⁷, born Dec. 2, 1842.

34. WILLIAM BABBIDGE⁶, born —; living in 1823; md. April 13, 1805, Mary Bateman, dau. of Michael and Mary (Batten) Bateman, who was bapt. in the East Church, Salem, Mass., Aug. 27, 1786. They had two children, and perhaps others.

(a) A daughter, born April, 1817; died Oct. 11, 1818.

(b) WILLIAM⁶, JR., born —; died Aug., 1827; a mariner.

Administration on his estate first granted his father, William Babbidge, who refused to accept, and July 1, 1828, Daniel Millett was appointed administrator (Probate Records, New Series, Vol. LVII. p. 285).

FIFTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN BABBIDGE⁵ (No. 26), son of Benjamin⁴ (JOHN³, CHRISTOPHER², CHRISTOPHER¹), and Elizabeth (Woodwell) Babbidge, born in 1765; died at sea in 1811, having sailed as master of a ship, and was never again heard from.

He married in 1790 Mary Phippen, dau. of Joshua and Hannah (Sibley) Phippen, who was born in 1771; died of consumption, March 17, 1812.

Children were: —

35. JOHN PHIPPEN BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. Feb. 22, 1795; died at City Point, Va., of yellow fever, Aug. 2, 1826, where he had gone to take charge of a vessel, being a master-mariner; md. Aug. 8, 1813, Sarah Pulsipher, or Pulsifer, dau. of Francis Pulsifer.

He was the fourth captain of the Washington Rangers, of Salem, Mass.

36. MARY ADELAIDE BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. April 20, 1801; died Nov. 30, 1803.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JOHN BABBIDGE⁶ (No. 27), son of Benjamin⁴ (JOHN³, CHRISTOPHER², CHRISTOPHER¹), and Elizabeth (Woodwell) Babbidge, ship-builder of the firm of Hawkes & Babbidge, born in Salem, Mass., June, 1767; died March 26, 1860, aged 93 years. He married June 25, 1789, Sarah Becket⁶, dau. of John⁵ (John⁴, John³,

William ², John ¹), and Sarah (Brown) Becket; she born in 1774, and died July 19, 1856. Her father was the son of John and Susanna (Babbidge) Becket, born in 1746, and died Aug. 9, 1804, and married March 16, 1769, Sarah Brown, who was drowned in Salem Harbor June 7, 1773, by the upsetting of the King's boat. He married second, March 9, 1775, Elizabeth Ingersoll, and third, Jan. 24, 1791, Sarah Dean (Essex Inst. Coll., Vol. III. p. 125).

John Babbidge admitted March 30, 1780, to the Essex Lodge of Freemasons, Salem, Mass., of which body he was chosen treasurer, Dec. 19, 1782.

Children were : —

37. JOHN BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. Oct. 18, 1789.
38. WILLIAM BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. July 17, 1791; died Aug. 27, 1815, unmarried. Member of the Salem Washington Rangers.
39. BENJAMIN BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. April 21, 1793.
40. SARAH BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. Feb. 22, 1795.
41. NANCY BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. April 30, 1797.
42. ELIZABETH BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. July 7, 1799.
43. CHARLES BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. Aug. 16, 1801; died Oct. 10, 1802.
44. LYDIA BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. March 27, 1803.
45. SUSANNA ARCHER BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. Feb. 4, 1809.
46. CHARLES BABBIDGE ⁶, bapt. —; a clergyman, and lived in Pepperell, Mass.

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE ⁶ (No. 29), son of Capt. Christopher ⁴ (JOHN ³, CHRISTOPHER ², CHRISTOPHER ¹), and Mary (Young) Babbidge, born in Salem, Mass., May, 1770; died Nov. 22, 1836; master-mariner. He became a member of the Salem Marine Society, May 28, 1801.

He married first, Ruth Randall, of York, Me., whose parentage is not known, but who for eleven years before her marriage lived as a member of the family of Capt. Edward Allen, who was a merchant, and came to America from Berwick on the Tweed, Eng., in 1757, and settled in Salem, Mass., where, June 18, 1759, he married first, Ruth, widow of Israel Gardner, and daughter of Gamaliel and Sarah (Williams) Hodges; and second, in 1778, Margaret Lockhart, of North Carolina, who was born in 1754, and died Aug. 13, 1803; Capt. Allen died July 27, 1803.

Ruth Randall was born in 1768, and died of consumption July 5, 1809. He md. second, Dec. 1, 1822, Eunice, widow of Capt. Michael Barnes, son of Maj. Thomas and Hannah (Driver) Barnes, and dau. of William and Elizabeth (Becket) Peele; she born July 10, 1781, and died in Salem, Mass., March 31, 1869. (See Driver Family, No. 46.)

Children of **Christopher and Ruth (Randall) Babbidge** were:

47. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 12, 1792; died, unmarried, in Dartmoor Prison, Eng., Jan. 19, 1814, aged 21 years, under the following circumstances: he was prize-master of a prize, of the ship "Polly," which was seized and carried to Halifax, thence sent to England, condemned, and master and crew confined in Dartmoor Prison; here they were allowed to exercise in the prison-yard, where, at the time of his death, they were playing a game of ball; their ball went over the prison wall, and being their only one, Christopher, with other prisoners, attempted to make a hole through the wall and thus reach it, which the guard seeing, and thinking they were attempting to escape, fired on them, and instantly killed Christopher.
48. ELIZABETH BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. May 22, 1796; died June 17, 1876; md. Aug. —, 1823, Capt. Ebenezer Ropes, son of David and Mary (Hutchinson) Ropes, he born Jan. 15, 1796; died from exposure and over-exertion, on board the ship "Lady Sarah," of which he was master, April 20, 1832, at Majunga, Island of Madagascar. (For whom No. 118 Driver Family was named.)

Child was:—

1. EBEN ROPES⁷, born and died April 20, 1827.

49. MARGARET LOCKHART BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. Oct. 21, 1798; died July, 1825, unmarried.
50. WILLIAM BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. Feb. 15, 1801; died at Batavia, Oct., 1818, unmarried.
51. MARTHA SILSBEE BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. Dec. 26, 1802; died Sept. 5, 1837; md. Feb. 20, 1827, *Capt. William Driver*, son of Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver (No. 78 Driver Family).
52. SUSANNA BECKET BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. March 17, 1805; died April 28, 1834; md. Feb. 19, 1831, Alfred R. Brooks; he died in Boston, Mass., Nov., 1884.
53. MARY RUTH BABBIDGE⁶, bapt. June 13, 1814; living in Salem, Mass., in 1886; md. first, Sept. 19, 1830, Henry Russell, master-builder, son of David and Catherine (Sutton) Russell; he died July 28, 1857. She married second, Oct. 10, 1860, Thorpe Fisher, son of Moses and Louise (Thorpe) Fisher; he born April 24, 1804, and died Dec. 9, 1885. No issue.

Children of **Henry and Mary Ruth (Babbidge) Russell** were:—

- (1) WILLIAM HENRY RUSSELL⁷, born Nov. 7, 1837; drowned, aged 20, June 8, 1858, in Boston Harbor, with seven others, all young men

of Salem, Mass., under thirty years of age, by the capsizing of a new schooner, "Prairie Flower," on her trial trip from Salem to Boston, being struck by a sudden gust of wind. A large party of young men were on board, invited by the owners to make the trip; the remainder of the party were rescued by vessels that chanced to be near the scene of accident. No such calamity had occurred in Salem since the seventeenth of June, 1773, when the King's boat, belonging to the custom-house, was capsized in Salem Harbor during a squall, and three men and seven women, all of Salem, were drowned. ("Sketch of Salem," p. 27.) Of that number was Sarah (Brown) Becket, mother of Sarah Becket, who married John Babbidge No. 27 of this family, as his first wife (which see).

- (2) ALBERT BABBIDGE RUSSELL⁷, born May 30, 1847; living in Salem, Mass., in 1886; md. Oct. 31, 1883, Clara Louise Sanborn, of Lewiston, Me.

Children of **Christopher and Eunice (Peele) Babbidge (Barnes)** were: —

54. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE⁶, born about 1822; died young.
 55. MARGARET BABBIDGE⁶, born about 1824; died young.

THE BECKFORD FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. GEORGE BECKFORD¹ lived in Marblehead, Mass., concerning whom but little is known. Administration on his estate was granted his widow, Christian, June 28, 1678; Inventory was £13:9:6; the estate to remain in her hands for the bringing up of their children. In 1666 she was seventeen years old (born 1649), when she gave a deposition in court; maiden name not known, nor are the names of their children mentioned, but by collateral evidence it is certain that William and John were two of them. He married in 1666 Christian —.

Children were: —

2. **WILLIAM BECKFORD**², born in Marblehead, Mass.
 3. **JOHN BECKFORD**², born in Marblehead, Mass., about 1674; died at Reading, Mass. (Perhaps others.)
-

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN BECKFORD² (No. 3), son of George¹ and Christian Beckford, born at Marblehead, Mass., about 1674; settled in Salem, Mass., where, Dec. 8, 1717, he and wife Rebecca were baptized and received to the First Church, with seven of their children. He married, May, 1699, Rebecca Pinsent, dau. of William and Rebecca (Greene) Pinsent. He removed to Reading Mass., where he died.

Children were: —

4. **GEORGE BECKFORD**², born July 5, 1700; died May 30, 1760; md. July 30, 1722, Elizabeth Batter, dau. of Edmund and Martha (Pickman) Batter.
5. **JOHN BECKFORD**², born Sept. 15, 1702; died at Reading, Mass., Jan. 13, 1788.
6. **REBECCA BECKFORD**², born Feb. 26, 1705; md. Feb. 6, 1722-3, John Archer; died March, 1763.
7. **WILLIAM BECKFORD**², born March 4, 1706.

8. BETHIAH BECKFORD², born Feb. 2, 1708.
9. BENJAMIN BECKFORD², born Aug. 30, 1711; died May, 1773; md. first, Dec. 6, 1733, Mary Collins, dau. of Adoniram; published, second, Sept. 8, 1750, to Lydia, widow of James Morris. By Mary he had a daughter Hannah, who md. in 1763 Robert Neal⁵, twin to Catherine Neal, whose granddaughter, Ruth Metcalf, md. *Stephen Driver* (No. 51, Driver Family).
10. EBENEZER BECKFORD², born May 18, 1715.
11. PRISCILLA BECKFORD², born Aug. 8, 1717; md. May 24, 1738, David Phippen.
12. MARY BECKFORD², born Nov. 22, 1719; md. May 3, 1738, Warwick Palfray, and died before 1747. He married, second, Nov. 2, 1747, *Widow Mary Ellis*, dau. of Capt. William Pickering.
13. SARAH BECKFORD², born Dec. 18, 1721.

THIRD GENERATION.

GEORGE BECKFORD³ (No. 4), son of John² (GEORGE¹), and Rebecca (Pinsent) Beckford, born July 5, 1700; died May 30, 1760; md. July 30, 1722, Elizabeth Batter, dau. of Edmund and Martha (Pickman) Batter; she bapt. Oct. 5, 1701.

Children were:—

14. GEORGE BECKFORD⁴, bapt. Feb. 7, 1724; died young.
15. MARTHA BECKFORD⁴, bapt. April 10, 1726.
16. EDMUND BECKFORD⁴, bapt. Oct. 1, 1727.
17. GEORGE BECKFORD⁴, bapt. July 13, 1729.
18. MARY BECKFORD⁴, bapt. April 18, 1731; md. April 13, 1748, John Fowler.
19. SARAH BECKFORD⁴, born about 1733; md. John Punchard, Jr.
20. SUSANNA BECKFORD⁴, bapt. Feb. 13, 1736; died Nov. 5, 1738.
21. JOHN BECKFORD⁴, bapt. July 9, 1738; md. July 29, 1760, Rebecca Ruck.
22. SUSANNA BECKFORD⁴, bapt. Aug. 24, 1740; md. April 16, 1762, Samuel Punchard.
23. JOSHUA BECKFORD⁴, bapt. April 11, 1742; died, —, 1777.
24. DANIEL BECKFORD⁴, bapt. Nov. 24, 1745.

JOHN BECKFORD² (Deacon), (No. 5), son of John², (GEORGE¹), and Rebecca (Pinsent) Beckford, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 15, 1702; died Jan. 13, 1788; md. Oct. 6, 1724, Elizabeth Hayward, dau. of Samuel Hayward; she baptized in Tabernacle Church (Baptist), Mass., Oct. 11, 1702; died Oct. 22, 1763.

25. JOHN BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 2, 1725 (1726, Town Records).
26. ELIZABETH BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 17, 1727; md. Dec. 19, 1745, Jonathan Very, Jr.
27. MARY BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 11, 1728; md. Nov. 1, 1750, William West.
28. SAMUEL BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 27, 1730.
29. BENJAMIN BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., June 4, 1732; died at Beverly, Mass., about Sept., 1811.
30. PINSENT BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., July 14, 1733; died before 1783; md. Dec. 9, 1756, Deborah Ward; she married, second, March 3, 1763, Warwick Palfray.
31. HANNAH BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 1, 1734; md. George Smith.
32. SARAH BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 11, 1735.
33. EBENEZER BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 8, 1737; died Feb., 1816,
34. REBECCA BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 17, 1738.
35. DAVID BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 5, 1740; md. Dec. 5, 1756, Sarah Frye, widow of James Odell.
36. EUNICE BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 10, 1741; md. April 10, 1759, Thomas Ropes.
37. JONATHAN BECKFORD⁴, born in Salem, Mass., June 6, 1743; md. Nov. 14, 1765, Sarah King, ~~probably~~ dau. of Charles and Sarah (Gerrish) King; she bapt. Aug. 14, 1744. *Sarah Gerrish b. Aug. 4, 1714, dau. of John & Sarah and Eli. Hingham, dau. of John & Sarah, born Nov. 17, 1714, at Hingham and married to Charles King.*

JOSHUA BECKFORD¹, (No. 23), son of George² (JOHN³; GEORGE¹), and Elizabeth (Batter), bapt. April 11, 1742; administration granted his widow Elizabeth, who gave bonds with Richard Pike and Benjamin Beckford, July 10, 1777; inventory £236:10:4, including dwelling-house and land, valued at £200. He was called mariner and fisherman.

(Deeds, Vol. 121, p. 236.) "March 20, 1765, John Cook, fisherman and wife Margaret, (one of the great grand daus. of Daniel Webb), Joshua Beckford, fisherman and wife Elizabeth, (great grand daughter of Daniel Webb), and Mehitable Webb, (also great grand dau. of Daniel Webb), all of Salem, constitute Daniel Cook of Mendon Mass. our Attorney, to sell all our right and title in 2 pieces of land, and one common right in Salem, that belonged to said Daniel Webb."

Joshua Beckford married first, Nov. 18, 1762, Rachel Hilliard, who died early without issue. He married second, Oct. 25, 1764, Elizabeth, widow of John Brown (married March 4, 1763), daughter of — Webb, and great-granddaughter of Daniel Webb. (Town Records give her name as Sarah. Intentions of marriage give her name as Elizabeth, which is correct.) No issue by Brown.

Children were: —

38. JOSHUA BECKFORD⁵, born 1775.

39. JOHN BECKFORD⁵, bapt. June 22, 1777, after his father's decease.

40. ELIZABETH BECKFORD⁵, bapt. June 22, 1777; md. — Doggett, probably of Boston.

"May 2, 1834, Elizabeth Doggett, now of Boston, widow, for \$150, sold to Miss Eunice P. Richardson, of Salem, estate on River St." (formerly owned by Stephen Driver No. 40) "which I held by inheritance from my father Joshua Beckford.

J. P. SAUNDERS
HARRIET BECKFORD } Wit."

FOURTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL BECKFORD⁴ (No. 28), son of John³ (JOHN², GEORGE¹), and Elizabeth (Hayward), born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 27, 1730; died before 1783; md. Nov. 16, 1752, Anna Gale, widow of Benjamin Allen and daughter of William and Elizabeth (Grant) Gale; she bapt. March 7, 1730-1. (She md. first, Sept. 7, 1749, Benjamin Allen, son of Benjamin and Abigail (Lowther) Allen; he bapt. April 2, 1727.)

Children were: —

41. ANNA BECKFORD⁵, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Sept. 23, 1753.

42. SAMUEL BECKFORD⁵, bapt. same place, Dec. 14, 1755.

43. SARAH BECKFORD⁵, born Aug. 27, 1759; died June 11, 1808; md. Jan. 27, 1780, Samuel Goodhue, son of William and Mary (Lord) Good-

hue; he born at Ipswich, Mass., Sept. 21, 1758; removed at fourteen years of age to Salem, Mass., where he died July 10, 1804; blacksmith.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

- (1) SAMUEL GOODHUE⁶, born April 26, 1781; died Nov. 14, 1782.
- (2) WILLIAM GOODHUE⁶, born Jan. 5, 1783; died April 22, 1862; md. first, Nov. 23, 1804, Abigail Ross, dau. of Daniel and Margaret Ross; she born in Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 14, 1781; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 1, 1809; md. second, Oct. 21, 1810, Elizabeth Brooks, dau. of Timothy and Abigail Brooks; she born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 1, 1778; died April 6, 1853.

Children by Abigail were:—

- (a) ABIGAIL GOODHUE⁷, born Oct. 28, 1805; died Oct. 30, 1872; md. Jan. 16, 1833, Lucius Wells, partner of Stephen Driver 3d in the shoe business, mentioned under No. 75, Driver Family.
- (b) WILLIAM PENNIMAN GOODHUE⁷ (Deacon), born July 5, 1807; grocer and ship chandler; md. Sept. 14, 1831, Alice Very, dau. of Samuel and Alice (Palmer) Very; she born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 26, 1806 (see Appendix, Palmer Family, No. 21).
- (c) SAMUEL GOODHUE⁷, born May 1, 1809; died at sea.
- (3) SALLY GOODHUE⁶, born March 2, 1785; died March 1, 1844; md. Nov. 17, 1808, Moses Kimball; removed to Newburg, N. Y., in 1812.
- (4) SAMUEL GOODHUE⁶, born Oct. 22, 1787; died Aug. 28, 1809, of yellow fever, at Havanna.
- (5) MOSES GOODHUE⁶, born March 23, 1790; died Oct. 7, 1795.
- (6) REBECCA GOODHUE⁶, born Oct. 4, 1792; died at Philadelphia, Pa., Jan. 16, 1870; md. Dec. 1, 1816, William Brown, who was lost at sea.
- (7) ABIGAIL GOODHUE⁶, born July 22, 1795; died at Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 4, 1834; md. Thomas S. Ross, who died from a fall from a tree; Aug. 27, 1838.
- (8) NANCY GOODHUE⁶, born Nov. 23, 1800; removed with her sister Sally to Newburg, N. Y., where she married Samuel Johnson.

44. JOHN BECKFORD⁵, bapt. in the First Church (Congregational), Salem, Mass., Jan. 10, 1762.
45. EBENEZER BECKFORD⁵, bapt. in Tabernacle Church (Baptist), Salem, Mass., Dec. 22, 1764.
46. A daughter, bapt. in First Church, Oct. 25, 1767.
47. REBECCA BECKFORD⁵, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 7, 1770.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JOSHUA BECKFORD⁵ (No. 38), son of Joshua⁴ (GEORGE³, JOHN², GEORGE¹), and Elizabeth (Webb), widow of John Brown, born 1775 (bapt. June 22, 1777, after her father's decease); died Oct. 1, 1820, æt. 45 (gravestone); shoemaker; md. Dec. 31, 1796, Mary (Polly) Jennings, of whom nothing is known.

Feb. 12, 1833, Stephen Driver 3d, having been empowered by General Court to dispose of a portion of the estate for George W. Sargent, one of the heirs, sold Sargent's share, $\frac{1}{3}$ part, to Leverett Sawyer, watchmaker, for \$312, and the other $\frac{2}{3}$ parts belonging to Louisa and George, minors, of said Joshua.

Dec. 2, 1829, Harriet, dau. and heir of Joshua Beckford, for \$250 sells her $\frac{1}{3}$ of land and brick building on Essex Street (near Sewall Street) to Eleazer Moses Dalton.

Nov. 3, 1832, Lucinda, a dau. and heir, sells her $\frac{1}{3}$ to Leverett Sawyer.

Feb. 19, 1822, Widow Beckford was appointed guardian of her minor children, having given bonds with her son Joshua Beckford and son-in-law Winthrop Sargent.

Children were : —

48. MARY BECKFORD⁶, born in 1798; died of consumption Nov. 27, 1834; md. Jan. 14, 1821, to *Stephen Driver 3d*, probably by Rev. Thos. Carlisle, although the family stated by Rev. Mr. Ducachet, for Rev. Thos. Carlisle officiated from 1814 till Oct., 1822; and Rev. Dr. Ducachet was not settled till Sept. 1, 1823, and resigned Dec. 4, 1825.

Stephen Driver 3d was baptized two months after his marriage, March 25, 1821, by Rev. Thos. Carlisle.

Children were : —

- (1) STEPHEN BECKFORD DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 18, 1821; died Jan. 22, 1822.
 - (2) MARY BECKFORD DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 13, 1822; died July 27, 1854.
 - (3) STEPHEN BECKFORD DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 10, 1824; died Aug. 16, 1824.
 - (4) ELIZABETH HELEN DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., March 13, 1828; died Aug. 6, 1882.
 - (5) STEPHEN PIERSON DRIVER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 20, 1829; living in 1887 in Lowell, Mass. (See Driver Family, No. 75.)
49. JOSHUA BECKFORD⁶, born about 1800; md. Sept. 8, 1822, Sarah Rust.
50. ELIZA BECKFORD⁶, born about 1802; md. May 4, 1823, Winthrop Sargent.
51. JOHN BECKFORD⁶, born in 1805.
52. HARRIET BECKFORD⁶, born in 1807; md. May 12, 1835, George Mugford.
53. EMELINE BECKFORD⁶, born in 1808; md. May 3, 1827, Hiram H. Bryant.
54. LUCINDA BECKFORD⁶, born in 1811; md. Aug. 2, 1833, John Howarth, of Andover, Mass.
55. LOUISA BECKFORD⁶, born in 1814; md. April 9, 1835, Humphrey Cook.
56. GEORGE BECKFORD⁶, born in 1817.

THE BRAY FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. ROBERT BRAY¹ was of Salem, Mass., in 1668, and settled at the lower end of the main street, called Essex, near the Neck. He was a captain of a ketch, and was lost at sea, with all on board, about 1692. His wife's name was Thomasine, of whom nothing further is known.

The name is as old as 1066, for on the Battle Abbey Roll, Sire de Bray is the thirty-fourth name. The term "Sire de" indicated him a Lord or owner of the town or castle from whence he took his denomination. "In the Conqueror's time there was a Sir Thomas de Bray, who purchased Stretton, super Dunsmore, Warwickshire, Eng. (the addition super Dunsmore being to distinguish it from the rest of the Strettons in the county), of Henry de Hastings, son and heir of Sir Henry de Hastings Kt., to whose posterity" (Bray's) "residing here it continued for divers descents and at length by Elene one of the daughters, and co-heirs of Richard Bray, wife of Edmund Starky Gent. in Henry VI. reign, (1422), devolved to that family; in which it rested till 4 Elizabeth, (1562), when William Starky sold it to the Lady Longville." — DUGDALE, *Warwickshire*, p. 28.

"Granborough, Warwickshire, Eng., which Richard Forestarius held in the Conqueror's time, descended to Walter Crok, whose sister and heir, Alice, held it in 20 Henry III. (1236). But from this Alice it came, ere long, unto Henry de Bray, who in 17, E. I. (1289), settled it upon Thomas de Farendone and Emma his wife; and in case of their departure without issue, that then the said Henry, (who it seems was a Priest), should hold it during his life; but after his decease to remain unto Thomas de Bray and Sarah his wife, and the heirs of their two bodies; by the service of a 'Clove Gillofer,' to be yearly payd at Easter for ever. From which family of Bray it came to Hastings." — DUGDALE, *Warwickshire*, p. 210.

In "Fuller's Worthies," Vol. I. p. 319, under head of memorable persons, is to be found one "John Bray, tenant to Master Richard Carew, (who wrote the Survey of the County of Cornwall), carried upon his back, about the year 1608, at one time by the space well near of a butt length, six bushels of wheaten meal, reckoning 15 gals. to the bushel, and upon them all the miller, a lubber of four and twenty years of age."

Radulph de Bray was sheriff of Oxfordshire, Eng., 2 Henry III. (1217), also 3d, 4th, 5th, and 6th years.

Thomas de Bray was sheriff of Bedford and Buckinghamshire, 1 Edw. I. (1272).

Edward Bray was sheriff of Bedfordshire, 6. Henry VIII. (1515).

"Nov. 5, 1578, Robert Braye of Ipswich, Eng., made his will; proved Dec. 5, 1578; mentions wife Alice, son Robert, brother Peter, children Alice, John, Christian, and Anne; to wife my lighter called the Alice; brother-in-law John Holland." — ~~H. F.~~ ^{E. F.} WATERS, *Gleanings from English Records*.

From whence Robert Bray, or Braye, the emigrant ancestor of the New England family, came, is a matter for future inquiry.

His children were: —

2. ROBERT BRAY², born —; died after 1693; md. Christiana Collins.
3. DANIEL BRAY², born Nov. 29, 1673; died Dec., 1717; md. Hannah Brown.
4. PRISCILLA BRAY², born —; md. Aug. 15, 1689, David Hillard, and had a son David³, born May 13, 1690, and died young.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. ROBERT BRAY² (No. 2), son of Robert¹ and Thomasine Bray, born in Salem, Mass., —; died after 1693; md. Nov. 5, 1685, Christiana Collins, dau. of Francis and Hannah (Cock-erill) Collins; she born April, 1665; died after 1724.

He was a master-mariner, and lived in 1693 in the vicinity of Salem Common (Bray Family, by E. F. Waters).

Children were: —

5. JOHN BRAY³, born Sept. 4, 1686; supposed to have been drowned from the ketch "Dragon," William Brown, captain, bound for Virginia, lost on Cape Cod, Dec. 23, 1705.
6. ROBERT BRAY³, born Dec. 22, 1688; died probably without issue; md. Feb. 6, 1712, Alice Gifford, of Marblehead, Mass., of which place he was an inhabitant in 1743.
7. PRISCILLA BRAY³, born March 11, 1689-90; died after Feb. 4, 1767; md. March 23, 1714, Jonathan Webb, a coaster, who died before 1765; deacon of the East Church, Salem.

They had nine children, namely: —

- (a) PRISCILLA WEBB⁴, bapt. March 4, 1715.
- (b) JONATHAN WEBB⁴, born Dec. 26, 1716.
- (c) JOHN WEBB⁴, bapt. Oct. 19, 1718.
- (d) STEPHEN WEBB⁴, born Feb. 13, 1722.
- (e) MARY WEBB⁴, born about 1724.
- (f) SUSANNA WEBB⁴, born about 1726.
- (g) HANNAH WEBB⁴, bapt. Sept. 24, 1727.
- (h) SAMUEL WEBB⁴, born Feb. 18, 1732.
- (i) JOHN WEBB⁴, born Aug. 10, 1733.

(See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 1.)

8. **BENJAMIN BRAY**⁸, born Sept. 27, 1692; md. Hannah Lander.
9. **CHRISTIANA BRAY**⁸, born March 19, 1694; died Feb., 1784; md. June 1, 1715-16, William Cash⁸, master-mariner, son of William² and Sarah (Flinder) Cash, and grandson of William¹ and Elizabeth (Lambert) Cash; he born Feb. 13, 1693-4; estate administered upon Sept. 8, 1728; inventory contained "a dwelling house, and 25 poles of land = £185; $\frac{1}{4}$ part in the Brigantine Good Intent, with her boat" (see Appendix, Cash Family, No. 9). She married second, as his second wife, Jan. 6, 1736, Capt. Clifford Crowninshield, son of Dr. John and Elizabeth (Allen) Von Kronenshelt; he born in Boston, Dec. 10, 1699; died in Salem, Mass., April 4, 1776. No issue by this marriage. He made his will in 1750; after bequeathing legacies to his two children by a former wife, and his daughter-in-law, Mary Cash, he gave all the rest of his estate to his widow; but he did not die for twenty-six years. She (Christiana) died in 1784, when she left all to her daughter and husband, Capt. Thomas Dean.

Clifford Crowninshield, the grandson, took measures to have, in 1777, the will and property investigated, considering that after the date of the will the widow had but one third of the accumulated property, he claiming that the said Christiana had not fully administered. It was finally settled by Capt. Dean keeping the personal estate, but deeding the real estate to the Crowninshield heirs (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. VII. p. 83).

Children of **Christiana (Bray)** and **William Cash** were: —

- (a) **WILLIAM CASH**⁴, born —; died young.
- (b) **MARY CASH**⁴, born about 1726; died Feb. 20, 1794; md. April 9, 1754, as his second wife, Capt. Thomas Dean, son of Thomas and Martha (Gillingham) Dean, he born about 1722; died July 8, 1802. They had ten children, several of whom were born in Barbadoes, West Indies, whither they went to reside during the Revolutionary War. (See Appendix, Cash Family, No. 15, IV. child.)

SECOND GENERATION.

DANIEL BRAY² (No. 3), son of Robert¹ and Thomasine Bray, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 29, 1673; died Dec., 1717; mariner; md. Aug. 24, 1701, Hannah Brown, dau. of James and Hannah (Bartholomew) Brown; she born March 9, 1672-3.

Children were: —

10. **HANNAH BRAY**⁸, born Dec. 20, 1702; died about July, 1762; md. Nov. 2, 1721, William Mansfield, son of Paul and Sarah (Carter) Mansfield; he perhaps born Jan. 2, 1696-7. He was brother to Paul Mansfield, who married second, Sarah Gray, widow of Capt. Michael Driver (No. 20, Driver Family), whose daughter, Sarah Driver, married Benjamin

Bray (No. 16), and whose daughter, Elizabeth Driver, married John Bray (No. 17), and whose son, Michael Driver, married Sarah Bray (No. 19, Bray Family).

William Mansfield and Hannah (Bray) had children: 1. William⁴, who died before June 1, 1762, leaving children William and Ruth; 2. Paul⁴, who also was dead at that date, leaving a son Paul; 3. Daniel Bray⁴; 4. John⁴; 5. Hannah⁴, who married — Bagley; 6. Susanna⁴.

11. MARY BRAY³, born Dec. 31, 1704; died before 1757; md. Feb. 27, 1728, Thomas Lisbell.
12. EUNICE BRAY³, born March 9, 1706-7; died —; md. March 13, 1728, Thomas Stevens, who died before 1757.
13. ELIZABETH BRAY³, born Oct. 10, 1710; died Aug. 5, 1768; buried in Charter Street Burying-ground, Salem, Mass.; her gravestone bears the following:—

“Happy the Virtuous & the Just
They from their sins and Labor rest,
Their holy works do follow them
To the bright mansions of the blest.”

She married Nov. 27, 1740, John Ingersoll, son of Samuel and Sarah (Haskett) Ingersoll, first Inkersall. The first of the name in New England emigrated from Bedfordshire, Eng., in 1629, and settled in Salem. He was granted a farm of 80 acres at Riall Side (Beverly), which descended to his sons, John and Nathaniel. In 1637 he was authorized to establish a ferry over the North River in Salem, and charge one penny for every passenger. He died about 1644 (*Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.*, Vol. I. p. 12).

Children of John and Sarah (Bray) Ingersoll were: 1. John⁴, and 2. Samuel⁴, who married at Hampton, Oct. 19, 1772, Susanna Hathorne, dau. of John and Susanna (Tousel) Hathorne, — he died of fever at sea, on his passage from Guadeloupe, July 15, 1804, aged 60, leaving a son, Ebenezer, who died on board the same vessel a week after, aged 23; 3. Susanna⁴, who died unmarried.

14. PRISCILLA BRAY³, born May 11, 1713; died Sept., 1768, unmarried.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. BENJAMIN BRAY³ (No. 8), son of Capt. Benjamin² (Capt. ROBERT¹), and Christiana (Collins) Bray, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 27, 1692; md. Nov. 8, 1716-17, Hannah Lander, dau. of John, who was born about 1694; died Oct. 12, 1785.

Her father owned the estate running from Essex Street to Bath Street, Salem, which estate was divided into four portions, of

which his daughter Hannah aforesaid had the easternmost; two other portions came into the possession of her husband, Benjamin Bray, by purchase from Jane and Mary, sisters of his wife, Nov. 9, 1752. Here he probably lived till his death, of which event there is no record, or of an administration upon his estate (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. VIII. p. 82).

Children were : —

15. HANNAH BRAY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 26, 1718, old style; died there Aug. 1, 1811, aged 93 years; md. Sept. 8, 1743, Capt. Thomas Poynton, who was born in England about 1712; died in Shrewsbury, Eng., July 13, 1781; buried in the Parish Church of Fritz, in the county of Salop, Eng. No issue.

He sailed in one of his own vessels for England in 1775, — the last one which left Boston before actual hostilities commenced, — and never returned. He probably remained in England during the Revolutionary War, during which time he received no communication from his wife; and on making his will in 1781, he stated that he did not know whether she was still living or not.

Will of Capt. Thomas Poynton, made June 30, 1781, as found on Probate Records of Salem, Mass., Vol. 62, p. 94, as follows : —

"To all and singular the faithful in Christ to whom these our present Letters Testimonial shall come or whom the matters herein written do or may hereafter in any wise concern.

John, by divine Providence, Archbishop of Canterbury Primate of all England, and Metropolitan, send Greeting in our Lord God everlasting and wilt that undoubted faith be given to these presents and do make known and will that it be hereby made known to you that on searching the Registry of our Prerogative Court of Canterbury in the archives thereof there well and faithfully preserved & kept, we have found & plainly discovered among other things in the same, That on the thirtieth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety two administration with the will annexed of all and singular the Goods Chattles, and Credits of Thomas Poynton formerly of Massachusetts Bay in North America but late of the Town of Shrewsbury in the County of Salop, deceased, having whilst living and at the time of his death Goods, Chattels or Credits in divers dioceses or Jurisdictions sufficient to found the Jurisdiction of our prerogative Court of Canterbury aforesaid was granted to Lewis Deblois the lawful attorney of Hannah Poynton, by mistake in the will called Margaret Pointon, widow, the Relict of the said deceased & residuary Legatee named in the said Will for the use and Benefit of the said Hannah, otherwise Margaret Poynton, now residing at Salem, in the County of Essex, and Commonwealth of Massachusetts Bay in North America aforesaid, he having been already sworn well and faithfully to administer the same & to make a true and perfect Inventory of all, and singular the said Goods, Chattels and Credits and to exhibit the same in to the Registry of our said Court on or before the last Day of September next ensuing and also to render a just and true account thereof. Thomas Lloyd, anwyl, and John Maddorf the Executors named in the said Will having first renounced the Execution thereof, which said Will follows in these Words" —

"This is the last Will and Testament of me Thomas Pointon of the town of Shrewsbury in the County of Salop.

First — my will is that I may be decently interred in the Parish Church of Fritz in the said County of Salop, at the discretion of my Executors herein after named, and that

my debts, and funeral Expenses may be paid and satisfied as soon as possible after my decease.

I give, devise and bequeath to my dear wife Margaret Pointon of Massachusetts Bay north America all my messuages, Tenements, Lands, and all other my real Estate in America or else where that I shall die possessed of Interested in or intituled unto and also all my personal Estate of what Nature or kind soever or wheresoever. To hold to my said wife Margaret Pointon her heirs, Executors administrators & assigns forever in case she shall be living at my decease: but in case she shall happen to depart this Life before me, that then I do hereby empower my said Executors or the Survivor of them, or the Executors or Administrators of such Survivor to dispose of all my said real Estate, and also all my personal Estate of what Nature or kind soever, or wheresoever, and out of the money arising from such sale or disposition after Payment of my debts, funeral Expenses and all other Expenses that they may be put unto in the Execution of the Trust hereby in them reposed to divide the same among all and every of my next of kin share and share alike. And Lastly I nominate, constitute and appoint Thomas Lloyd, anwyle, and John Maddorf of Shrewsbury aforesaid Gentlemen, Executors of this my last Will and Testament; hereby revoking all former & other Will or Wills by me at any time heretofore made.

In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and seal this thirtieth day of June in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & eighty one

THOMAS POYNTON LARGE
SEAL

Signed, sealed published &
declared by the Testator
Thomas Pointon as & for his
last Will & Testament in
the presence of us, who at his Request
and in the presence of each other have
signed our names as witnesses.

The word "also" being first interlined,
and the word "of her" being first erased.

RICHARD PICKSLOCK } THOS. BISHOP."
GEORGE BELTON }

"In Faith and Testimony of all and singular which Premises we have caused these our present Letters Testimonial to issue forth and to be corroborated and confirmed by affixing thereto the seal of our prerogative Court of Canterbury which we use in this behalf. Given at London as to the time of the aforesaid search & sealing of these presents this thirtieth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & ninety two & in the ninth year of our Translation.

Extracted by John Pott
in Doctors Commons
W. H.

GEO. GORTLING } Deputy
JAMES TOWNLY } Registers
R^t DODWELL }

Examined by G. Bucton
in Doctors Commons
Exam^d Pr. Daniel Noyes Reg^r

L. Sworn under £100 "
seal

In 1793 this will was presented to be filed and recorded in the Probate Office of Salem, county of Essex, Mass. No one appearing to show cause against the filing and recording, "Administration with the will annexed of all the Estate of Thomas Poynton, late of Salem in said County, deceased, which lays within the State of Massachusetts was granted to Hannah Poynton, who gave bonds with Ed. Pulling Esq. and John Bray as sureties to

exhibit an Inventory by the third day of Dec. next and to render an acct. by the third day of Sept. 1793.

Attest. DANIEL NOYES Regt."

On the inventory Thomas Poynton's house, known as the "Pine Apple" House, from a large gilded pineapple directly over the front door, with the adjoining land, and a barn and store standing thereon, were valued at £550.

A lot of land north of the garden, bounded westerly on Church Street and northerly on the North River, £60. One acre of land in South Fields, £15.

Capt. Poynton and his wife Hannah lived in the abovesaid "Pine Apple" House from 1743 to 1775, and Hannah for twenty-nine years afterwards. She did not live alone, though she never married again. About 1804 she became feeble, being about eighty-six years of age. Jan. 30th of that year a nurse was engaged, thus recorded:—

"Polly Phipps is engaged to come to Aunt Poynton's House at 7/6 $\frac{1}{2}$ week to take care of her."

"March, 1808, Polly Phipps received one hundred dollars on account of her demand."

For account of this Pine Apple House, see Ives Family, No. 30, her grand-niece, to whose son she left it by her will, to the exclusion of her sister, Mrs. Sarah Driver, wife of Capt. Michael Driver, and her brothers Daniel Bray, Benjamin Bray, and John Bray.

Jan. 19, 1801;—Mrs. Poynton, then aged eighty-three, made her will, as follows:—

"In the name of God Amen, I Hannah Poynton of Salem, in the county of Essex and commonwealth of Massachusetts, widow, being weak in body but of a sound and disposing mind and memory for which I thank God, and calling to mind the mortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make this my last will and Testament; that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my Soul to the hands of God who gave it, and my body to the Earth to be buried in a decent and Christian manner at the discretion of my Executors herein named.

And as to such temporal Estate with which it hath pleased God to bless me, I give and dispose thereof in the following manner, to wit:

Imprimis, — I give and bequeath to my brother John Bray and to his heirs forever three hundred and thirty three dollars and thirty three cents, to be paid by my Executors in one year after my decease.

Item: — I give and bequeath to the children of my brother Daniel Bray, deceased, and to their heirs forever, three hundred and thirty three dollars and thirty-three cents to be paid by my Executors in one year after my decease.

Item: — I give and bequeath to my sister, the widow Sarah Driver, and to her heirs forever, three hundred and thirty-three dollars and thirty three cents, to be paid by my Executors in one year after my decease.

Item: — I give and devise to the three children of my brother John Bray: viz: — Hannah, the wife of Benjamin Webb, Robert Bray, and Daniel Bray, and to their heirs and assigns equally to be divided between them, all my Land in South Fields so called in Salem.

Item; — I give and bequeath to Thomas Poynton Ives, son of Robert Hale Ives, late of Beverly deceased, and to his heirs forever, three hundred and thirty three dollars and thirty three cents to be paid by my Executors in one year after my decease.

Item; — I give and bequeath unto Saint Peter's Church so called in said Salem, fifty dollars, to be paid in one year after my decease by my Executors.

Item; — I give and bequeath to Benjamin Bray and to his heirs forever, one hundred and

thirty-three dollars and thirty three cents to be paid him by my Executors in one year after my decease.

Item:—If any or either of the persons to whom I have herein before devised or bequeathed real estate or a pecuniary legacy should die before me, my will is that the heirs at law of such persons respectively should have to them and their heirs forever the same real estate or pecuniary legacy which is herein devised or bequeathed to such deceased person or persons.

Item:—I give and devise to Thomas Poynton Bancroft, only child of Elizabeth Bancroft, deceased, daughter of Robert Hale Ives, late of Beverly, deceased, and late wife of Thomas Bancroft Esq^r of said Salem, and to the heirs and assigns of the said Thomas Poynton Bancroft, my dwelling House, situate on Browne Street in said Salem, and the Land under and adjoining, including the Field bounding on the North River, together with the Flats thereto adjoining and belonging and also my piece of land extending from St Peter's Street to said Field. To have and to hold the same to him the said Thomas Poynton Bancroft, his heirs and assigns forever. Provided however, if the said Thomas Poynton Bancroft should die before he attains the age of fourteen years then, and in that case my will is that said Thomas Bancroft, his Father should have, and I do in that case devise to him his heirs and assigns from and after the decease of his said son under the age of fourteen years, one undivided half part of said House and land, and that the children of said Thomas Poynton Ives should have, and I do in that case devise to them their heirs and assigns from & after the decease of said Thomas Poynton Bancroft under the age of fourteen years the other undivided half part of said House & land.

Item:—All the residue and remainder of my Estate real and personal, wherever situate or found, I give devise and dispose of as follows, to wit, one equal half part thereof to the said Thomas Poynton Bancroft, his heirs and assigns, and the other equal half part thereof to the children of said Thomas Poynton Ives, their heirs and assigns equally to be divided between them, and if said Thomas Poynton Bancroft should die in my life time, then I give the whole of said residue and remainder of my real and personal Estate to the children of said Thomas Poynton Ives, their heirs and assigns.

Lastly:—I do hereby revoke all former Wills by me made, declare this only to be my last Will & Testament and do constitute and appoint said Thomas Bancroft Esq. and Thomas Poynton Ives sole Executors thereof. In testimony whereof I the said Hannah Poynton have hereto set my hand & seal this nineteenth day of January in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred & one.

H POYNTON [Seal]

Signed sealed published &
declared by said Hannah
Poynton as & for her last
will & Testament in the
presence of each other at her
request have subscribed our
names as witnesses thereto

WM. PRESCOTT }
STEPHEN WEBB }
JNO OSGOOD " }

Mrs. Poynton lived eleven years after she made this will, during which time Thomas Bancroft, one of the executors, died, and also William Prescott, one of the witnesses; hence, Feb. 3, 1812, Thomas Poynton Ives alone presented the will for probate, Samuel Holton being at that date judge of probate for the county of Essex. Thomas P. Ives gave a bond of two thousand dollars, with Samuel Putnam, Esq., and Capt. John Osgood as sureties. He exhibited an inventory May 3, 1813, at which time Thomas Poynton

Bancroft, aged twenty-two years, was alive and inherited the estate of his grand-aunt according to her will, he being the great-grandson of her brother Benjamin Bray.

According to Bardsley in his work on English Surnames, p. 348, "Our Poynters" "manufactured the tagged lace which fastened the hose and doublet together." "An act passed in the first year of Ed. IV.; mentions among others the Keper of oure Armour in the Toure of London, maker of Poyntes, Constable of oure Castel." "John le Poyntour, Robert le Poynter are found in the records of the 13th. & 14th. centuries."

16. BENJAMIN BRAY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 21, 1720; died a few years after his marriage, which was July 11, 1746, to *Sarah Driver*, No. 30, Driver Family. She married second, John Webb.
17. JOHN BRAY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 29, 1723; died Nov. 19, 1803; md. April 8, 1750, *Elizabeth Driver*, sister of Sarah abovesaid.
18. ROBERT BRAY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 3, 1726; died in 1748-9; unmarried, and a mariner; known from the following:—

"Know all men by these presents, that I Benjamin Bray of Salem in the county of Essex & province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, mariner, Hereby constitute & appoint Thomas Poynton, of Salem mariner, my attorney to collect such sums of money as shall appear to be due for the wages of my son Robert Bray, late of Salem, aforesaid, mariner, who was impressed for his Majesty's service & Did Duty on board his Majesty's ship the 'Elizabeth,' & sailed in said ship from Jamaica on a cruze in 1748 or 1749, and died there.

WILLIAM LANDER } Wit. June 15, 1751."
JOHN Llach JR.

19. SARAH BRAY⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., July 6, 1729; died in Salem in 1823 odd, aged 94 (some of her grandchildren disputed this statement; insisting that she was older); living in 1822, when her sister, Mrs. Hannah Poynton, sent for her to visit her on her death-bed; published Dec. 8, 1753, to *Capt. Michael Driver*, No. 31, Driver Family, and brother to Sarah and Elizabeth Driver aforesaid; he born in Salem, Mass., July 29, 1726; died there Aug. 28, 1785.

Children were:—

- (a) MICHAEL DRIVER⁵, born Dec. 28, 1754.
- (b) HANNAH DRIVER⁵, born Feb. 25, 1757.
- (c) BENJAMIN DRIVER⁵, born Feb. 6, 1760.
- (d) PAUL MANSFIELD DRIVER⁵, born July 9, 1762.
- (e) THOMAS POYNTON DRIVER⁵, born March 22, 1766.
- (f) SARAH DRIVER⁵, born Jan. 23, 1768.
- (g) STEPHEN DRIVER⁵, JR., born March 17, 1772; grandfather of the Compiler.

20. DANIEL BRAY⁴, born July 17, 1735; died June 24, 1798; md. Mary Ingalls.

FOURTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN BRAY⁴ (No. 16), son of Benjamin³ (Capt. ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Hannah (Lander) Bray, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 21, 1720; died a few years after his marriage; md. July 11, 1746, *Sarah Driver*, dau. of Capt. Michael and Sarah (Gray) Driver, No. 30, Driver Family; she bapt. July 5, 1724; died before 1801 (about 1778, another account); she md. second, as his second wife, John (Phippen) Webb, son of John and Elizabeth (Phippen) Webb, and had four children. (See Appendix, Webb Family, Continued, No. 11.)

Child was : —

21. SARAH BRAY⁵, bapt. Oct. 9, 1748; died in Beverly, Mass., Sept. 27, 1782; md. March 20, 1766, Robert Hale Ives, son of Capt. Benjamin and Elizabeth (Hale) Ives, No. 22, Ives Family. See Appendix.

Children were : —

- (a) ELIZABETH IVES⁶, born Dec. 15, 1767; md. Thomas Bancroft, whose son, Thomas Poynton Bancroft, inherited the estate of Mrs. Hannah Poynton (Bray), No. 15.
- (b) THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁶, born April 9, 1769; executor of the will of Hannah Poynton (Bray). No. 31, Ives Family. See Appendix.
- (c) CHARLOTTE IVES⁶, bapt. Jan. 27, 1771. No. 32, Ives Family.
- (d) ROBERT HALE IVES⁶, bapt. April 4, 1773. No. 33, Ives Family.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOHN BRAY⁴ (No. 17), son of Benjamin³ (Capt. ROBERT², ROBERT¹), and Hannah (Lander) Bray, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 29, 1723; died Nov. 19, 1803; md. April 8, 1750, *Elizabeth Driver*, sister of Sarah, who married his brother Benjamin, also sister of Michael Driver, who married Sarah Bray (No. 32, Driver Family).

Children were : —

- 22. JOHN BRAY⁵, bapt. June 2, 1751; probably married Eunice Becket, who was born Jan. 5, 1756; he died June, 1801; she md. second, Thorndike Deland.
- 23. ROBERT BRAY⁵, bapt. Dec. 22, 1751; died young.
- 24. BENJAMIN BRAY⁵, bapt. July 28, 1754; died young.
- 25. HANNAH BRAY⁵, bapt. Jan. 23, 1759; died Sept. 25, 1838; md. Capt. Benjamin Webb. (See No. 28, Webb Family, Appendix.)

26. ROBERT BRAY⁵, bapt. Nov. 16, 1760; md. March 25, 1772, Sarah Ropes, dau. of David and Ruth (Hathorne) Ropes, who was bapt. Feb. 15, 1767.

Children were: —

- (a) RUTH BRAY⁶; died unmarried.
- (b) SARAH BRAY⁶; md. — Parnell, of Andover, Mass.
- (c) ROBERT BRAY⁶; died unmarried.
- (d) ELIZABETH BRAY⁶; died unmarried.

Oct. 7, 1801, Sarah Ropes received, on the settlement of her parents' estate, the south end of a house on Brown Street, bought by her father for \$900.00; the north end having been bequeathed him by his aunt, Elizabeth Felt. This house is still standing, and was the residence of the late Stephen Shepard (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. VII. p. 204).

Her father, David Ropes, was killed, May 28, 1782, on board the Privateer "Jack," of which he was the commander, in an action with the Sloop-of-war "Observer," near Halifax; he was son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Purchase) Ropes (Ibid., p. 156).

- 27. ELIZABETH BRAY⁵, bapt. June 12, 1763.
- 28. THOMAS POYNTON BRAY⁵, bapt. Sept. 20, 1764; betrothed to his cousin Charlotte Ives, and for the consummation of which he purchased in China an elegant dinner-service, and had each piece initialled; but which Charlotte never received, as she died before the event, aged seventeen years. At present date this service is sacredly kept by his family as a memento. He probably died unmarried.
- 29. BENJAMIN BRAY⁵, bapt. June 14, 1767.
- 30. DANIEL BRAY⁵, bapt. Oct. 12, 1769; died Nov. 30, 1849, unmarried.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. DANIEL BRAY⁴ (No. 20), son of Benjamin³ (Capt. BENJAMIN², ROBERT¹), and Hannah (Lander) Bray, born July 13, 1735; died June 24, 1798; master-mariner; md. May 15, 1760, Mary Ingalls, dau. of Ephraim and Hannah (Manning) Ingalls; she bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Jan. 28, 1737; died Sept. 28, 1805.

He lived in Salem, Mass., on Brown Street, near the corner of Newbury Street, in a house built there by himself; "Benj Bray & wife Hannah for £13: 6: to them paid by son Daniel, mariner, convey to him a piece of land of 6½ poles, bounded N. on a way leading from the church to the Training Field, 1 p. 18 links: Easterly by land of Jona. Gardner, 4 p. 3 links: South by said Gardner 1 p.

10 links; West on their own land 4 p. 1 link, on which he hath by my consent built a dwelling house, with all claim for rent."

After the death of Capt. Daniel his descendants inhabited the same house for many years, it being called the Bray homestead.

Children were:—

31. MARY BRAY⁵, born June 25, 1763; died Sept. 25, 1853; md. June 12, 1785, Capt. Benjamin Henderson, son of Benjamin and Sarah (Needham) Henderson; she born Dec. 3, 1761; bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 2, 1764; died June 28, 1836; grandson of Joseph and Elizabeth (Cook) Henderson, and great-grandson of Peter and Elizabeth (Beadle) Henderson.

Capt. Benjamin Henderson made his will Nov. 12, 1832; proved Aug. 15, 1836, in which he gives wife Mary "the use and improvement and income of all my estate which shall remain after the payment of my just debts and funeral charges, the residue to be given to such of my children as shall be living.

DANIEL BRAY	} Wil."
BENJ WEBB	
JAMES ARCHER JR	

He was a master-mariner, and a soldier in the Revolutionary War. He was a proprietor of the North Church, Salem, Mass.

Their children were seven, as found in the Family Bible, now in the possession of their daughter, Mrs. Mary Snell, to whom the Compiler is deeply indebted for this copy.

- I. BENJAMIN HENDERSON⁶, born April 15, 1787; died unmarried.
- II. DANIEL HENDERSON⁶, born Sept. 13, 1789; died June 1, 1827, unmarried.
- III. JOSEPH HENDERSON⁶, born Oct. 29, 1793; died Feb. 23, 1856; md. Mary Glazier.
- IV. EPHRAIM HENDERSON⁶, born July 15, 1796; died June, 1832, at Hamburg, Germany, unmarried.
- V. JAMES HENDERSON⁶, born Jan. 31, 1799; died Oct. 8, 1800.
- VI. HANNAH HENDERSON⁶, born July 24, 1804; living in 1885, unmarried.
- VII. MARY HENDERSON⁶, born Sept. 8, 1806; died April 26, 1886; md. Sept. 21, 1835, Capt. Nicholas Tillinghast Snell, son of John and Nancy (Gifford) Snell; he born in Westport, Mass., April 12, 1810; died in Salem, Mass., July 5, 1880; master-mariner. They had four children, namely:—
 - (a) MARY TILLINGHAST SNELL⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 22, 1836; md. Jan. 2, 1856, John Chadwick, son of John C. and Eliza (Williams) Chadwick, of Salem, and had Marianna⁸, born June 1, 1857, and Josephine T.⁸ born Oct. 6, 1866.
 - (b) ANNE ELIZA SNELL⁷, born Nov. 18, 1839; unmarried in 1885.
 - (c) NICHOLAS TILLINGHAST SNELL⁷, born Dec. 1, 1843; died June 11, 1864, from wounds received in the War of the Rebellion.
 - (d) ALLEN SNELL⁷, born April 6, 1850; died Aug. 15, 1853.

32. ELIZABETH (BETSEY) BRAY⁶, born Nov., 1766; died March 20, 1859; md. John Willis.

33. HANNAH BRAY⁶, born May, 1769; bapt. Nov. 12, 1769; died June 7,

1804; md. Aug. 18, 1791, Robert Barr, son of James and Mary (Ropes) Barr. His father was born in Tottenham, Eng., Oct. 29, 1721; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 5, 1803. He was a strong adherent and active supporter of St. Peter's (Episcopal) Church, Salem, Mass., and in his will bequeathed to the wardens of that church the sum of \$33.33, "the Interest of which to be for the support of the minister of sd Church, or for repairing the same, within one year after my decease."

Robert and Hannah (Bray) Barr had three children, namely:

- (a) **ROBERT BARR**⁶, born June, 1792; died Jan. 15, 1859; md. Sept. 20, 1818, Mary Ropes, dau. of William and Mary (Brown) Ropes; he born May 18, 1797. Children, four.
- (b) **JAMES BARR**⁶, bapt. Jan. 11, 1795; died June 17, 1843, unmarried.
- (c) **JOHN BARR**⁶, bapt. April 29, 1798; died unmarried.

- 34. **SALLY BRAY**⁵, born Nov., 1772; died March 5, 1859; md. William Batchelder.
- 35. **ABIGAIL (NABY) BRAY**⁵, born April, 1774; md. Josiah Richardson.
- 36. **DANIEL BRAY**⁵, born Nov., 1776; died Feb. 24, 1850; md. Mary Hodgdon.
- 37. **BENJAMIN BRAY**⁵, born Nov., 1780.

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. DANIEL BRAY⁵ (No. 36), son of Capt. Daniel⁴ (BENJAMIN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², ROBERT¹), and Mary (Ingalls) Bray, born in Salem, Mass., Nov., 1776; died Feb. 24, 1850; master-mariner; md. Oct. 30, 1802, Mary (Polly) Hodgdon, dau. of Samuel and Elizabeth Gibbs (Banepo) Hodgdon, she born in Salem, 1781; died there Oct. 9, 1852.

He was a member of the North Church, Salem, Mass., where he was chosen deacon March 28, 1848.

Children were:—

- 38. **MARY BRAY**⁶, born in Salem, Mass., July 27, 1804; living in 1885 in South Salem, Mass.; md. July 2, 1827, George C. Chase, son of Henry and Betsey (Abbot) Chase; he born May 2, 1803; died in Salem, Mass., May 14, 1881. They had five children, viz.:—
 - I. **GEORGE CHASE**⁷, born in Newmarket, N. H., May 9, 1828; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; md. Dec., 1856, Charlotte Augusta Fabens, dau. of William and Sarah (Brown) Fabens, she born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 29, 1828. They had two children.
 - II. **BENJAMIN BRAY CHASE**⁷, born in Newmarket, N. H., Jan. 25, 1830; died in Central America, May 15, 1856, being murdered by Indians; unmarried.

III. MARTHA WEBB CHASE⁷, born in Newmarket, N. H., June 17, 1832; died in Paris, France, April 18, 1876; md. Sept. 20, 1855, Fred Manley Creamer, son of Benjamin and Ann Manley (Brace) Creamer, and grandson of Dr. Edward and Eunice (Daland) Creamer (see Appendix, Daland Family, No. 19). He born Aug., 1830; died in Salem, Mass., March, 1869. They had one child, viz.:—

(a) MARY MANLEY CREAMER⁸, born Nov. 8, 1856; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; md. April 10, 1879, George Burnham Ives, son of Stephen Bradshaw, Jr., and Mary Eliza (Burnham) Ives; he born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 18, 1856; lawyer. They had two children (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 100).

IV. CHARLES HENRY CHASE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1835; died June 1, 1881.

V. THORNDIKE CHASE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 8, 1838; living in 1886 in Philadelphia, Pa.; md. April 6, 1863, Sarah Eliza Dalton, dau. of Joseph A. and Mary (Fairfield) Dalton; she born in Salem, Mass., May 22, 1839. They had one child, namely:—

(a) FRANK THORNDIKE CHASE⁸, born May 15, 1864; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass., where he is a clerk in the Salem Post-Office.

39. BENJAMIN BRAY⁶, born —; died at sea.

40. DANIEL BRAY⁶, born —; lost at sea.

FIRST GENERATION.

9. WILLIAM CASH^s, born Feb. 13, 1698; died Aug., 1727.
10. ELIZABETH CASH^s, born July 19, 1696.
11. JOHN CASH^s, born Sept. 7, 1699; md. Oct. 18, 1723, Sarah Neal.
12. SARAH CASH^s, born Aug. 5, 1702.
13. RICHARD CASH^s, born May 23, 1706.

THIRD GENERATION.

WILLIAM CASH³ (No. 9), son of William² (WILLIAM¹), and Sarah (Flinder) Cash, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 13, 1693-4; administration on his estate granted his widow, Christiana, Sept. 8, 1727; md. June 1, 1716, Christiana Bray, dau. of Robert and Christiana (Collins) Bray, she born March 19, 1694; died Feb., 1784. She md. second, Jan. 6, 1736-7, for his second wife, Clifford Crowninshield, he born Dec. 10, 1699; died April 4, 1776. Children by second marriage were: 1. John; 2. Mary; 3. Elizabeth; 4. Mary; and 5. Richard. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 9, and Crowninshield Family, No. 2.)

Thus Christiana was aunt to Hannah Bray, who md. Thomas Poynton, and Benjamin Bray, who md. *Sarah Driver*, and John Bray, who md. *Elizabeth Driver*, and Sarah Bray, who md. *Michael Driver*.

Children by first marriage were:—

14. WILLIAM CASH⁴, born —; died young.
 15. MARY CASH⁴, born about 1726; died Feb. 20, 1794.
-

FOURTH GENERATION.

MARY CASH⁴ (No. 15), daughter of William³ (WILLIAM², WILLIAM¹), and Christiana (Bray) Cash, who was born about 1726; died Feb. 20, 1794; md. April 9, 1754, as his second wife, Capt. Thomas Dean, son of Thomas and Martha (Billingham) Dean, who was born about 1722; died July 8, 1802. His first wife was Sarah Phippen, daughter of Joseph and Susanna (Hathorne) Phippen, whom he married July 31, 1751. She was born June 25, 1726; died without issue, March 18, 1752.

Children were:—

- I. MARY DEAN⁵, born May 22, 1756; died Oct. 16, 1757.
- II. MARTHA DEAN⁵, born April 9, 1757; died at Barbadoes, March 11, 1776.
- III. THOMAS DEAN⁵, born March 9, 1759; died at Wilmington, N. C., Oct. 3, 1790; md. Jan. 11, 1784, Lydia Waters, dau. of Benjamin and Esther (Gilbert) Waters.

IV. MARY DEAN⁶, born Aug. 31, 1760; died Oct. 31, 1798; md. July 2, 1782, Joseph Waters, son of Benjamin and Esther (Gilbert) Waters, and brother to Lydia Waters, who married Thomas Dean (No. III.).

Joseph Waters was born Feb. 19, 1756; died Feb. 7, 1833. They had 9 children, viz.:—

(a) MARY WATERS⁶, b. —.

(b) ESTHER WATERS⁶, b. —.

(c) MARTHA WATERS⁶, b. —.

(d) SARAH WATERS⁶, born Jan., 1789; died Sept. 11, 1789.

(e) SARAH WATERS⁶, b. —.

(f) CHARLOTTE WATERS⁶, b. —.

(g) CAROLINE WATERS⁶, b. —.

(h) JOSEPH GILBERT WATERS⁶, born July 5, 1796; died July 12, 1878; Judge of the Police Court, Salem, Mass.; md. Dec. 8, 1825, Elizabeth Greenleaf Townsend, dau. of Penn and Mary (Richardson) Townsend; she born Jan. 17, 1798; living in 1885. They had 5 Children, all born in Salem, Mass., viz.:—

1. JOSEPH LINTON WATERS⁷, b. Oct. 4, 1826; living in 1886, unmarried.

2. PENN TOWNSEND WATERS⁷, b. March 28, 1829; died at sea, 1852.

3. EDWARD STANLEY WATERS⁷, b. March 22, 1831; md. March 5, 1858, Marietta Barney; she born Oct. 8, 1834.

4. HENRY FITZGILBERT WATERS⁷, b. March 29, 1833; living in 1886 in London, Eng., unmarried. The Genealogist.

5. CHARLES RICHARDSON WATERS⁷, b. Sept. 17, 1835; unmarried in 1886.

(i) WILLIAM DEAN WATERS⁶, born *Oct 31* Nov. 1, 1798; died *April 20, 1880* March 4, 1879; md. Feb. 19, 1827, Abigail Devereux, dau. of James and Sarah (Crowninshield) Devereux, she born April 12, 1803; died March 4, 1879. They had 6 children, viz.:—

1. WILLIAM CROWNINSHIELD WATERS⁷, b. April 10, 1830; md.

Susan Louise Whitredge, who was b. Jan. 15, 1833.

2. SUSAN DEVEREUX WATERS⁷, b. April 7, 1837. The Compiler.

3. CLIFFORD CROWNINSHIELD WATERS⁷, b. Nov. 19, 1840.

4. JOSEPH WATERS⁷, b. Jan. 2, 1835, d. y.

5. MARY DEVEREUX WATERS⁷, b. 1840, died young. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 17.)

2 James Devereux Waters, b. Oct. 28, 1832.

V. WILLIAM DEAN⁶ } twins, b. Dec. 28, 1761; { d. Jan. 8, 1762.

and

VI. GEORGE DEAN⁶, } d. Jan. 10, 1762.

VII. WILLIAM DEAN⁶, born Jan. 10, 176—; died March 20, 1791; cast away on the ship "Texel."

VIII. GEORGE DEAN⁶, born Jan. 5, 17—; died young.

IX. CHRISTIANA DEAN⁶, born Jan. 5, 17—; died —; md. Feb. 25, 1796, John Ward, son of John and Bethiah Ward.

X. GEORGE DEAN⁶, born April 16, 1770; died Feb. 13, 1792, at Port au Prince; md. July 26, 1791, Sarah Phippen, dau. of Joshua Phippen, who died July 28, 1801, aged 28 years.

THE CROWNINSHIELD FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. Dr. JOHN KASPAR RICHTER VON KRONEN-SHELT, the emigrant of the family, was of a family of Upper Saxony, in the German Empire, and the account given of him by his descendants, and which of course is traditional, is that while a student in the College of Leipsic, Saxony, he had a quarrel with some student, which resulted in his being obliged to flee his country. He arrived at Boston, Mass., in 1688, where he commenced the profession of physic, and in which profession he ended his days (Abstract from the MSS. of Anstiss J. (Dunlap) Barstow).

His reputation as a physician extended to the neighboring towns of Boston, for tradition states that he was professionally called to Lynn, Mass., to attend Miss Elizabeth Allen, of that place, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth (Clifford) Allen, who resided near what was then known as Lynn Mineral Spring. His skill restored her to health; and the result of his visits was an offer of marriage, which was accepted, and Dec. 5, 1694, they were married, at which date he was believed to have been about fifty years of age.

They resided for a brief period at Lynn, with the wife's parents, but subsequently removed to Boston, where the doctor died, Dec. 19, 1711 (Abstract from Crowninshield Record, by E. S. Waters).

Children were: —

2. **JOHN CROWNINSHIELD**², born Jan. 19, 1696; died May 25, 1761; md. Anstiss Williams.
3. **CLIFFORD CROWNINSHIELD**², born Dec. 10, 1699; died April 4, 1776; md. first, May 15, 1721, Martha Hillard; md. second, Jan. 6, 1736-7, Christiana Bray, widow of William Cash and dau. of Robert and Christiana (Collins) Bray. (No. 9, Cash Family.)
4. **ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD**², born June 3, 1704.
5. **MARY CROWNINSHIELD**², born July 2, 1706.
6. **RICHARD CROWNINSHIELD**², born Dec. 28, 1708; removed to Attleboro', Vt.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN CROWNINSHIELD² (No. 2), son of Dr. John¹ and Elizabeth (Allen) Von Kronenshelt, born Jan. 19, 1696; died May 25, 1761; md. Sept. 27, 1722, Anstis Williams, dau. of John and Sarah (Manning) Williams, who was born Dec. 25, 1700; died Sept. 10, 1773. Her mother, Sarah Manning, was daughter of Richard and Anstis Manning, of St. Petrox Parish, Eng., and their youngest child, born Aug. 28, 1667.

"The name of y^e passengers that came in y^e shipe Hannah & Elizabeth M^r Lott Goarding Commander. Capt. Nicholas Manning undertaker of y^e said shipe.

MRS. ANSTIST MANNING SEN^r
ANSTIST MANNING JUN^r
MARGARET MANNING
JACOB MANNING
THOMAS MANNING."

This was in the year 1679. Capt. Nicholas Manning was no doubt Mrs. Anstis's oldest son, who was born June 23, 1644. His father, Richard Manning, died in England, and his mother was a widow in 1679.

Children of **John and Anstis (Williams) Crowninshield** were:—

7. **ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD**³ } twins b. April { d. June 30, 1727.
8. **ANSTIS CROWNINSHIELD**³ } 27, 1727. { d. Nov. 22, 1768; md.
Sept. 27, 1749, Christopher Babbidge, son of Christopher and Lydia (Marston) Babbidge (see Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 15). She married second, July 20, 1760, William King, son of William and Elizabeth (Barton) King.
9. **JOHN CROWNINSHIELD**³, born Dec. 21, 1728; died June 24, 1766; md. Eunice Nutting.
10. **SARAH CROWNINSHIELD**³, born April 30, 1730; died Oct. 8, 1793; md. June 15, 1758, Edward Gibaut, a native of Guernsey, Eng., born Nov. 1, 1728; died Nov. 1, 1803; removed to Gloucester, Mass., where he was appointed Collector under Jefferson's administration. He married second, Abigail, widow of James Whittemore, and daughter of — Yell. By this marriage there were three children,—Sarah, Edward, and John, who died unmarried at Gloucester, Mass., Aug. 11, 1805; graduated at Harvard in 1786.

SECOND GENERATION.

CLIFFORD CROWNINSHIELD² (No. 3), son of Dr. John and Elizabeth (Allen) Von Kronenshelt, born Dec. 10, 1699; died April 4, 1776; md. first, May 15, 1721, Martha, dau. of Joseph and Rachel (Allen) Hillard; she born April 4, 1704; died Aug. 30, 1736; md. second, Jan. 6, 1736-7, Christiana, widow of William Cash, and daughter of Robert Bray, Jr.

Children by her first marriage were: —

(a) **WILLIAM CASH**, born —; d. young.

(b) **MARY CASH**, born about 1726; d. Feb. 20, 1794.

(See Appendix, Bray Family No. 9, and Cash Family No. 9.)

11. **JOHN CROWNINSHIELD**³, born —; died June, 1777; md. July 12, 1750, Mary Ives, dau. of Benjamin and Anna (Derby) Ives; she born about 1728; died June 4, 1794 (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 17).

12. **MARY CROWNINSHIELD**³, born —; md. Dec. 25, 1746, John Byrne, and had two children, viz.: —

(a) **CLIFFORD BYRNE**⁴, bapt. Oct. 18, 1747; died April 4, 1815; master-mariner; md. March 19, 1769, Margaret Whitefoot, or Whitford, and had two children, viz.: —

I. **MARGARET BYRNE**⁵, born July 1, 1769; died Sept., 1773, of small-pox.

II. **CLIFFORD CROWNINSHIELD BYRNE**⁵, born July 31, 1772; died Dec. 13, 1826; master-mariner; md. Dec. 27, 1795, Mehitable Patterson, dau. of William and Mehitable (Smith) Patterson; she bapt. April 25, 1773; died Nov. 25, 1808 (see Appendix, Patterson Family, No. 4).

(b) **MARY BYRNE**⁴, bapt. March 26, 1749.

13. **ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD**, born June 3, 1704.

14. A daughter, born July 2, 1706.

15. **RICHARD CROWNINSHIELD**³, born Dec. 28, 1708; removed to Attleuton.

He died on Feb. 6, 1760, at Attleuton.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. JOHN CROWNINSHIELD³ (No. 9), son of John² (Dr. JOHN¹), and Anstis (Williams), born Dec. 21, 1728; died June 24, 1766: master-mariner; md. Feb. 6, 1753, Eunice Nutting, dau. of John and Ruth (Gardner) Nutting, and granddaughter of Habakkuk and Ruth (Gedney) Gardner, of Salem, Mass.; she baptized June 7, 1730; died Aug. 25, 1790. She married second, as

his second wife, William Vans, Esq. Mrs. Nutting, her mother, died Nov. 22, 1736, leaving three children; and her husband, John Nutting, married second, Sept. 12, 1740, Elizabeth Pickman.

Children were: —

16. ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Nov. 22, 1753; died Feb. 9th following.
17. ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Aug. 5, 1758; died May 6, 1830; md. April 5, 1777, Joshua Dodge, son of George and Lydia (Herrick) Dodge; he born in Salem, Mass., March 29, 1752; died Jan. 13, 1814.
Children were: —
 - I. EUNICE DODGE⁵, b. Feb. 13, 1778; d. Oct. 20, 1812; md. Jesse J. P. Richardson.
 - II. ELIZABETH DODGE⁵, b. Oct. 3, 1782; d. Oct. 1, 1809.
 - III. JOHN DODGE⁵, b. March 1, 1784; d. June 12, 1820; merchant and captain of the Salem Cadets.
 - IV. LYDIA DODGE⁵, b. May, 1785; md. John Cabot.
 - V. ISRAEL DODGE⁵, b. Oct. 11, 1790; d. Nov. 2 following.
 - VI. JOSHUA DODGE⁵, b. —; United States consul in France for some years.
 - VII. ANNA THORNDIKE DODGE⁵, b. Jan. 7, 1797; died Oct. 22, 1849; md. Dr. Samuel Johnson.
18. EUNICE CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Jan. 10, 1762.
19. SARAH CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Feb. 20, 1763; bapt. Feb. 27, 1763; died Nov. 8, 1831; md. Sept. 27, 1783 (Sept. 15, 1784, another account), John Saunders.
20. RUTH CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Jan. 22, 1765.

FOURTH GENERATION.

SARAH CROWNINSHIELD⁴ (No. 19), dau. of John³ (JOHN², Dr. JOHN¹), and Eunice (Nutting), born Feb. 21, 1764 (Feb. 20, 1763, another account); died Nov. 8, 1831; md. Sept. 27, 1783 (Sept. 15, 1784, another account), John Saunders (Maj.), son of John and Susanna (Barrett) (Palmer) Saunders (see Appendix, Palmer Family, No. 11); he born Sept. 15, 1760; died June 9, 1845; graduate of Harvard College, 1781; merchant and importer of dry-goods in Salem, Mass., and New York city; cashier of the Merchants' Bank, Salem, Mass.; afterwards Surveyor of the port of Salem, and later town clerk.

Dec. 21, 1786, he was First Lieutenant of the Salem Cadets, which corps was organized that year, hence an original member; subsequently he was captain of the corps.

In 1805, when the Salem Light Infantry was formed, he became its commander; hence the first commander of the Salem Light Infantry; yet, according to the late Dr. Browne, in his biography, "Capt. Saunders' heart always warmed to the Cadets till the last."

Children were :—

- I. MICHAEL SAUNDERS⁵, born Sept. 7, 1786; died in New York city Aug. 3, 1821; md. Feb. 12, 1809, Judith Woodbury, of Beverly, Mass., who died Feb. 27, 1814, aged 27 years.
- II. SALLY SAUNDERS⁵, born June 1, 1788; died in 1846.
- III. EUNICE SAUNDERS⁵, born Oct. 4, 1790; died March 13, 1878; md. Dec. 17, 1810, James F. Harrison, who died June 3, 1817, aged 29 years.
- IV. EDWARD AUGUSTUS HOLYOKE SAUNDERS⁵, born July 25, 1792; died Oct. 30, 1815, unmarried.
- V. SUSANNA BARRETT SAUNDERS⁵, born May 25, 1794; md. Aaron Osborn. No issue.
- VI. ELIZA SAUNDERS⁵, born Nov. 12, 1796; died in 1797.
- VII. ELIZA CROWNINSHIELD SAUNDERS⁵, born March 1, 1798; died May 21, 1881; md. John Peterson. No issue.
- VIII. MARIA ANTOINETTE SAUNDERS⁵, born in New York city May 28, 1799; died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 8, 1874; md. Nov. 24, 1828, Rev. *Joseph Metcalf Driver*, son of Stephen and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, No. 75, Driver Family.
- IX. JOHN SAUNDERS⁵, born Oct. 2, 1800; died Sept. 3, 1801.

THE DALAND (DEALAND OR DELAND) FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1 BENJAMIN DALAND, or DEALAND¹, born — in Beverly, Mass.; died before Nov. 23, 1691; md. Dec. 7, 1681, by John Dawes, Esq., of Boston, to Catherine Hodges, dau. of George and Mary (Huston) Hodges, of Salem, Mass., who was born Aug. 20, 1664, she being the only child of wife Mary, who died Nov. 20, 1665. Mr. Hodges married second, Sept. 24, 1669, Sarah Phippen, dau. of Joseph Phippen, by whom he had eight children.

Nov. 7, 1683, Mr. Thomas Rootes, of Salem, Mass., made his will, proved the 27th of same month, in which, "after the decease of his wife Sarah," he bequeaths "to Katherine, daughter of George Hodges, the now wife of Benjamin Dalen of Beverly, my dwelling-house and land in Salem."

In 1636 Mr. Rootes had a grant of 20 acres of land from the town of Salem.

(The relationship between Thomas Rootes and Katherine, wife of Benjamin Daland, is not known.)

Nov. 23, 1691, inventory of the estate of Benjamin Daland taken; amount £6:11:00; his widow Catherine appointed his administratrix; Feb. 15, 1691-2, she renounced that trust, to whom it is not known.

May 6, 1700, Catherine Daland deeds to John Masury, of Salem, Mass., a "dwelling-house, and one quarter of an acre of land, bounded South on the street, East on Richard Roberts' house and land, North on y^e creek or town common, and West on land, formerly William Cash, now Samuel Lambert's."

Children, according to the Town Record of Beverly, Mass., were: —

2. MARY DALAND², born Nov. 27, 1683.

3. BENJAMIN DALAND², born May 31, 1686.

4. JOHN DALAND², born Sept. 14, 1688.

5. **GEORGE DALAND**², born Feb. 16, 1690-1; died —; md. May 10, 1711, Bethiah Peters.
6. **ELIZABETH DALAND**², bapt. Nov. 25, 1716, when about 26 years of age; died unmarried.

SECOND GENERATION.

GEORGE DALAND² (No. 5), son of Benjamin¹ and Catharine (Hodges) Daland, born in Beverly, Mass., Feb. 16, 1690-1; died —; md. May 10, 1711, Bethiah Peters, dau. of Richard and Bethiah Peters, who was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept., 1686. She was granddaughter of Gilbert Peters, the first of the name in Salem, Mass., and Elizabeth (dau. of Edward) Hilliard, whom he married Sept. 14, 1669. Her father, Richard Peters, was their first child, born Jan. 12, 1670-1 (Town Records). Gilbert Peters was born about 1645; died before 1697. No deeds or probate concerning him except the following, — Book 12, p. 38: "Edward Hilliard, Salem, mariner, to William Peters, mariner, a dwelling house and land, as it was formerly given by me to his father, Gilbert Peters, dec'd, and of him bought again Oct. 23, 1684, bordering on Salem harbor. — Aug. 13, 1697."

Children, as found on the records of the First Church, Salem, Mass., were: —

7. **BETHIAH DALAND**³, bapt. Jan. 4, 1712.
8. **MARY DALAND**³, bapt. Jan. 2, 1714.
9. **LYDIA DALAND**³, bapt. April 14, 1717.
10. **CATHERINE DALAND**³, bapt. March 6, 1720; died —; md. Feb. 5, 1738-9, Robert Neal, Jr., son of Robert and Hannah (Elsey) Neal; he born Aug. 11, 1718, and died before 1744. They had 3 children, namely: —

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. ROBERT NEAL ⁴ 3d | } born March
15, 1739-40; |
| and | |
| 2. CATHARINE NEAL ⁴ | |

{ Drowned at Alexandria, Va., Feb., 1789 ("Salem Gazette"); md. 1763, Hannah Beckford.
 { Died about 1773-4; md. March 3, 1767, Joseph Metcalf. Their only child, Ruth, md. *Stephen Driver, Jr.*, No. 51, Driver Family.

3. **HANNAH NEAL**⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 29, 1744. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 47.)
11. **GEORGE DALAND**³, bapt. June 18, 1721.
12. **SAMUEL DALAND**³, bapt. Dec. 9, 1722; md. July 2, 1744, Hannah Blaney.
13. **SARAH DALAND**³, bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., July 12, 1724; died Aug., 1796; md. May 6, 1741, Nathaniel Foster, son of Abra-

ham^s (Jacob², Reginald¹), and Abigail Foster, who was born in Ipswich, Mass., Aug. 9, 1719; removed to Salem, Mass., where he died Oct., 1808; a tailor. (Rebecca, widow of Samuel Metcalf, married Jeremiah Foster, brother of said Nathaniel.) (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 14.)

Children baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., were: —

1. NATHANIEL FOSTER⁴, bapt. Nov. 7, 1712; died April 29, 1773; md. Nov. 22, 1764, Elizabeth Yell, dau. of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Yell, who was bapt. Sept. 9, 1745. They had four children, namely: —

(a) ELIZABETH FOSTER⁵, born in 1766; bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., May 1, 1768; died in North Yarmouth, Me., April 1, 1826; md. Sept. 28, 1785, Nathan Safford, who was born in 1760, and died in North Yarmouth, Me., Dec. 27, 1823. They had one child, and probably others, Nathaniel Safford⁶, born in North Yarmouth, Me., June 13, 1786; removed to Salem, Mass., in 1806, and there died Nov. 20, 1847; merchant.

He married, first, at Salem, Mass., Aug. 8 (Dec. 8, Town Records), 1808, Sally Smith, adopted daughter of George K. (perhaps Knight), and Sally (*Driver*) Smith; she born in Salem, Mass., July 11, 1791, and died there March 16, 1810. He married, second, Oct. 14, 1813, Hannah Woodbury. (See *Driver Family*, No. 50; also Appendix, Ives Family, No. 62.)

(b) NATHANIEL FOSTER⁵, bapt. July 31, 1768.

(c) SARAH FOSTER⁵, bapt. July 22, 1770.

(d) ABIGAIL FOSTER⁵, bapt. May 10, 1772.

2. SARAH FOSTER⁴, bapt. Jan. 13, 1744-5.

3. ABRAHAM FOSTER⁴, bapt. March 1, 1746-7.

4. ABIGAIL FOSTER⁴, bapt. March 28, 1749.

5. GEORGE FOSTER⁴, bapt. Jan. 13, 1750.

6. JOSEPH FOSTER⁴, bapt. Nov. 11, 1753.

7. SAMUEL FOSTER⁴, bapt. Nov. 6, 1757.

8. JOHN FOSTER⁴, bapt. June 15, 1760; died young.

9. JOHN FOSTER⁴, bapt. May 2, 1762.

10. A daughter, bapt. April, 1764.

14. HANNAH DALAND³, bapt. Aug. 27, 1727; died —; md. Thomas Benson, son of Francis and Susanna (Masury) Benson, master-mariner, who during the Revolutionary War commanded several vessels.

He married, second, Abigail Foster.

15. BENJAMIN DALAND³, bapt. Sept. 28, 1729; died —; md. Sept. 20, 1752, Hannah Cook.

16. JOSEPH DALAND³, bapt. June 6, 1731.

THIRD GENERATION.

BENJAMIN DALAND³ (No. 15), son of George² (BENJAMIN¹), and Bethiah (Peters) Daland, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 28, 1729; died Oct. 15, 1810 (gravestone); md. Sept. 20, 1752, Hannah Cook, daughter of Joseph⁴, Jr. (John³,

John ², Henry ¹), and Eunice (Pope) Cook, who was born June 19, 1732; died Sept. 24, 1811 (gravestone).

Aug., 1778, Benjamin Daland was a volunteer from Salem, Mass., for the Rhode Island Expedition.

Children, all baptized in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., were: —

17. JOSEPH DALAND ⁴, bapt. March 30, 1755; died —; a truckman.

He was married first, by Rev. Daniel Hopkins, April 3, 1779, to Eunice Bacon, probably daughter of Benjamin and Eunice (Neale) Bacon; she born in 1759, and died May 2, 1792. They had one son, Joseph, who was living in 1812.

Joseph Daland married second, April 6, 1794, Elizabeth Whittick, who was born in 1754, and died Jan. 29, 1816.

18. HANNAH DALAND ⁴, bapt. March 30, 1755; died young.

19. EUNICE DALAND ⁴, bapt. Oct., 1759; died —; md. before 1790, Dr. Edward Creamer, who was born in Ireland in 1756; died at St. Ann, Island of Jamaica, July 18, 1810; a physician. He was admitted to the Essex Lodge of Freemasons May 16, 1782.

Two of their children were: —

1. GEORGE CREAMER ⁵, born Aug. 23, 1791; died at sea, April, 1831; master-mariner.

He married Jan. 23, 1822, Hannah Gardner, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Stevens) Gardner, and had George ⁶, born May 2, 1825, who married Elizabeth S. Walker.

He was a stationer and bookseller in Salem, Mass., where he built a brick edifice on Essex Street, known as the "Creamer Block."

2. BENJAMIN CREAMER ⁵, born in Boothby, Me., May 11, 1794; died May 21, 1854; merchant.

He married, May 1, 1821, Ann Manley Brace, dau. of Capt. James and Mary (Doyle) Brace, by whom he had seven children, namely:

(a) JAMES BRACE CREAMER ⁶, born —.

(b) FREDERICK MANLEY CREAMER ⁶, born —; md. Martha Chase, and had May Manley Creamer ⁷, who was born Nov. 8, 1856, and married April 10, 1879, George Burnham Ives, son of Stephen Bradshaw, Jr., and Mary Elizabeth (Burnham) Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 98.)

(c) HENRY CREAMER ⁶, born —.

(d) MARY JANE CREAMER ⁶, born —.

(e) HENRY CREAMER ⁶, born —.

(f) CAROLINE CREAMER ⁶, born —.

(g) ANN CREAMER ⁶ born —.

(This family refused all genealogical information; hence its unfinished condition.)

20. HANNAH DALAND ⁴, bapt. June 7, 1761; living in 1819, unmarried.

21. BENJAMIN DALAND ⁴, bapt. Jan. 23, 1763; was of Beverly, Mass., where he married, Nov. 16, 1788, widow Sally West of that town, she living in 1819.

22. BETHIAH DALAND ⁴, bapt. Aug. 26, 1764; died young.

23. BETHIAH DALAND ⁴, bapt. March 23, 1766; died before Oct. 7, 1812; md. Jan. 31, 1788, Rev. William Herrick, a Baptist minister, son of Barnabas and Lydia (Murray) Herrick, of Salem, Mass., who died in Charlestown, Mass., in 1838.

Children were:—

1. WILLIAM HERRICK ⁵, born —.
2. HANNAH COOK HERRICK ⁵, born —; md. — Blake, of Charlestown, Mass.
3. LYDIA HERRICK ⁵, born —; md. Henry Nichols.
4. SALLY DENNIS HERRICK ⁵, born —; died unmarried.
5. BENJAMIN DUNHAM HERRICK ⁵, born —.
6. ELIZABETH ARCHER HERRICK ⁵, born —; md. — Studly.
7. HENRY HERRICK ⁵, born —. (Herrick Family, by Dr. L. C. Herrick.)

24. JOHN DALAND ⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 28, 1768; died Oct. 28, 1842; master-mariner; md. first, Hannah Dove; md. second, Elizabeth Tucker; md. third, Mary Fowler.

25. MARY DALAND ⁴, bapt. Jan. 14, 1770; died before 1819; md. first, by the Rev. Daniel Hopkins, Dec. 13, 1788 (Feb. 5, 1789, another account), to William Archer. She married second, Feb. 19, 1804, Thomas Driver, son of Stephen ⁶ (Stephen ⁵, Thomas ⁴, William ³, Robert ², Robert ¹), and Elizabeth (Lawrence) Driver, No. 62 Driver Family, he bapt. March 30, 1777; living in 1819. No issue by this marriage.

Children of William and Mary (Daland) Archer were:—

1. MARY ARCHER ⁵, born Dec., 1789; living in 1819; md. Jan. 24, 1811, George Palfray, a sailmaker.
2. WILLIAM ARCHER ⁵, born Aug. 13, 1791; died Dec. 27, 1864; a member of the Washington Rangers of Salem, Mass.; md. Oct. 8, 1815, Betsey Daniels.
3. DOLLY ROPES ARCHER ⁵, born March, 1793; died March 14, 1859, unmarried.
4. JOSEPH ARCHER ⁵, born in 1794; md. Sept. 1, 1811, Mary M. Martin.
5. REBECCA ARCHER ⁵, bapt. in St. Peter's Church (Episcopalian) Salem, Mass., June 5, 1796, after her father's decease. (See Appendix, Archer Family, No. 56.)

26. GEORGE DALAND ⁴ (Capt.), bapt. Sept. 22, 1771; living in 1819; master-mariner. He md. first, March 2, 1792, Judith Hathorne, dau. of Daniel and Rachel (Phelps) Hathorne; she born April 17, 1770, and died before 1802. She was sister to Sarah Hathorne, who, May 11, 1763, married John Crowninshield, and aunt to Nathaniel Hathorne the writer, who changed his name to Hawthorne.

Capt. Geo. Daland, married, second, Oct. 24, 1802, Mary Osgood.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. JOHN DALAND⁴ (No. 24), son of Benjamin³ (GEORGE², BENJAMIN¹), and Hannah (Cook) Daland, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 28, 1768; died Oct. 28, 1842; master-mariner. He married, first, Jan. 27, 1788, Hannah Dove; he married, second, Dec. 14, 1794, Elizabeth Tucker; he married, third, Oct. 25, 1807, Mary Fowler, dau. of Nathaniel and Anne (Stevens) Fowler, who was born in Danvers, Mass., July 6, 1780, and died in Salem, Mass., Dec. 30, 1836.

Child by this last marriage was:—

27. **MARY ANN DALAND**⁵, born March 4, 1809; living in Salem, Mass., in 1868; md. April 28, 1828, Daniel Hobbs Johnson, Sr., of Salem, Mass., son of Daniel and Rebecca (Billings) Johnson, who was born in Boston, Mass., Jan. 12, 1804; died in Salem, Mass., Feb. 14, 1868.

Children were:—

1. **HARRIET STICKNEY JOHNSON**⁶, born Aug. 31, 1829; died May, 1846.
2. **HENRY DALAND JOHNSON**⁶, born Aug. 24, 1831; living in Salem, Mass., in 1883; md. June 7, 1865, Lucretia O. S. Stevens, and had 2 sons and 2 daughters.
3. **MARY ANN DALAND JOHNSON**⁶, born Dec. 21, 1833; died Oct. 21, 1849.
4. **DANIEL HOBBS JOHNSON**⁶, born Oct. 27, 1835; md. April 13, 1864, Susan E. Ward, and had one daughter.
5. **ELIZA DALAND JOHNSON**⁶, born May 20, 1838; unmarried.
6. **REBECCA BILLINGS JOHNSON**⁶, born Aug. 8, 1844; died Aug., 1845.
7. **CHARLES THOMAS JOHNSON**⁶, born June 23, 1853; living in Salem, Mass., in 1883; md. Oct. 12, 1882, Florence M. Burke.

THE DERBY FAMILY.

The name of Derby is derived from the shire of England of that name, — “from *doire*, a forest; a woody, hilly country, abounding in deer; or it may be Deerby, the town of deer.” — ARTHUR, *Derivation of Names*, p. 111. “Names ending in *by*, such as Bixby, Derby, are of Lincolnshire, Eng.” — *New Eng. Gen. Register*, Vol. XXII. p. 30.

1. ROGER DERBY¹, the first emigrant, was born in Topsham, co. Devon, Eng., in 1643; emigrated to New England, arriving at Boston July 18, 1671, with wife Lucretia and son Charles. They removed to Ipswich, Mass., where, Jan. 4, 1672-3, he bought of Philip Fowler a farm of two acres, with a dwelling-house, learned from the following deed:—

“Jan 2, 1672-3;— for £100, to Roger Darby sope boyler, of same town, his dwelling house, and ground about it with a house thereon, and orchyards, yards & gardens, in all containe two acres, be it more or less, with the comonage, and all and every . . . , which say^d house and land is cittuate & lyeing in Ipswich, afore-say^d, on the same syde of the streete, commonly called Hill street, bounded or lyeing on the west syde of Thomas Lovell’s pasture land, and in the north syde of Samuel Graves, his pasture, and on the east syde of John Browne’s house lott together with four acres of land out of my lott at Muddy River, on the Northwest syde of Richard Shatwell’s pasture.

Subscribed, sealed & dⁱ in the presents of us

WILLIAM NORTON

ANDREW PEETERS

PHILLIP FOWLER (seale) ”

“Phillip Fowler acknowledged the above written to be his act & deed and Mary Fowler did surrender her right in the house and land herein conveyed before me Feb. 14, 1676-7.

DANIELL DENISON, Recorded Feb. 14, 1676-7.”

Essex Deeds, Bk. IV. 74.

Roger Derby married first, in England, Aug. 23, 1668, Lucretia Hilman, or Kilman; she born in Topsfield, Eng., in 1643; died in Salem, Mass., May 25, 1689.

They were Nonconformists, and affiliated with the Quakers, who at that time were terribly persecuted. Felt, in his "History of Ipswich," Mass., p. 256, says, that "March 30, 1675, Roger & Lucretia Derby are fined for absence from meeting on the Sabbath;" and "Nov. 6, 1677, they were fined 40s. for a like offence, and stand committed to prison till pay^d." This and similar persecutions they endured till 1681, when they removed to Salem, Mass., where they met with more liberality. Here he bought of John Darland, seaman, for £27 in silver, a piece of land to the westward side of his house. This is believed to have been on or near the corner of Munroe and Essex Streets, and where he lived till his death, Sept. 26, 1698, aged 55 years.

By trade he was a chandler. He also kept a retail store of dry-goods. By his will he settled his real estate on his sons Samuel and Richard. The inventory mentions a house, wharf, and warehouse, a stock of goods, some specie, and a silver tankard.

He married second, in 1691, Elizabeth, widow of William Dynn, and daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth Haskett; she born in England, and died in Salem, Mass., about March, 1740.

Notarial Records, Vol. I.

"Mrs. Elizabeth Haskitt, widow, formerly the wife of Stephen Haskitt of Salem, personally appeared (before me) y^e subscriber & made Oath that she hath six children living (viz:) one sonne whose name is Elias Haskitt aged about twenty-eight yeares & five Daughters, Elizabeth, Mary, Sarah, Hannah & Martha, all which she had by her husband y^e aforesaid Mr. Stephen Haskitt & were his children by him begotten by her body in lawfull wedlock being married to him by Doctor Clawell in Exiter in y^e Kingdom of England & whose s^d husband served his time with one M^r Thomas Oburne a chandler & sope boyler in s^d place & was y^e reputed sonne of — Haskitt of Henstredge (so called) in Summersetshire in s^d Kingdome of England & have often heard my s^d husband say that he had but one brother whose name was Elias Hasket & that he lived in said towne of Henstridge.

ELIZABETH HASKITT.

Sworne Salem, May y^e 30th 1698 before me John Hathorne One of y^e Councill & Justice pe & Q. in y^e county of Essex in his Maj^{ties} province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England."

Stephen Haskett was of Henstredge, Ireland, by trade a soap boiler and chandler; married at Exeter, Eng., Elizabeth —, and came to New England with his seven children, who were:—

(a) STEPHEN HASKETT, born March, 1668-9; died the 14th day following.

(b) ELIAS HASKETT, born April 25, 1670; removed to Boston in 1702; captain and colonel. At one time Governor of Providence, West Indies.

- (c) MARY HASKETT, born March 13, 1671-2.
- (d) SARAH HASKETT, born Feb. 5, 1673.
- (e) *Elizabeth Haskett*, born — ; died in Salem, Mass., in 1740; md. first, William Dynn; md. second, Roger Derby.
- (f) HANNAH HASKETT, born Aug. 2, 1675; died June 24, 1744; md. May 11, 1704, Richard Symmes.
- (g) MARTHA HASKETT, born — ; md. Feb. 25, 1702-3, Richard Derby² (No. 7), son of Roger¹ and Lucretia Derby, who was born Oct. 8, 1679, and died July 25, 1715. Hence the father and son married sisters. Richard Derby was a shipmaster, and father of the great merchant, Elias Haskett Derby. They had a daughter, Martha Derby, who md. March 30, 1736, Thomas Elkins (see Archer Family, No. 29).

William Dynn, the first husband of Elizabeth Haskett (e), was the son of John Dynn; he born at Kingsale, Ir., about 1660; came to New England in 1678, with Capt. Daniel Webb, as a tailor apprentice. He settled in Salem, Mass., and June 6, 1684, married Elizabeth Haskett. He died in 1689-90, and she married second, in 1691, Roger Derby, who died Sept. 26, 1698. She died — ; administration on her estate granted her son-in-law, Joshua Hicks, April 8, 1740.

Notarial Record, Vol. 1.

"Evidences for Eliz: Comer, alias Eliz: Dynn,
recorded June 18, 1716.
Anno Regni Regis Georgii nunc
Magna Britanniae, etc. Secundo.

The depositions of Daniel Webb of Salem in ye county of Essex, marriner, aged sixty four yeares & Daniel Caten formerly of Bandonbridge in Ireland now of Salem aforesaid in y^e Countey & province afores^d Taylor, aged about sixty one yeares on their solemn Oathes doe testify & say that they formerly well knew & were acquainted with M^r John Dyn of Kingsale in y^e Kingdom of Ireland Merchant or shopkeeper dec'd who dwelt nigh y^e water gate & that Elizabeth Comer wife of Richard Comer of Providence within his Maj^{ties} Colony of Rhode Island Taylor is y^e reputed Daughter of y^e aforementioned John Dyn of Kingsale afores^d Deceased who has been Dead thirty odd yeares: — Y^e Deponent Webb further adds that being Master of y^e Ketch Tryall of Salem, brought over y^e aforementioned Elizabeth Comer, whose maiden name was then Elizabeth Dynn in or about y^e year 1679, a passenger to New England from Kingsale & that y^e year before viz: in y^e year 1678 this Deponent tooke William Dynn, son of John Dynn an apprentice & brought him to New England as such & both y^e Deponents on y^e Oathes say that y^e said Elizabeth Comer alias Dynn is y^e very person alive & well at y^e taking these affidavets being present at y^e caption.

They further add that William Dynn before named is departed this life severall yeares since & that he hath no survyving Issue to y^e best of these deponents knowledge being next neighbours: & that he had Two sons viz: John Dynn & William Dynn, who are both departed this life before they were married which was all y^e children y^e said William Dynn left as these deponents knew of. Daniel Webb & Daniel Caten personally appeared before me y^e subscribers one of His Maj^{ties} Jus-

tices of y^e peace for y^e Countey of Essex & made oath to y^e truth of y^e foregoing affidavit.

Sworne Coram STEPHEN SEWALL

Salem, June 18, 1716.

Justice as afores^d."

Children of **William** and **Elizabeth (Haskett) Dynn** were : —

- (a) **JOHN DYN**, born May 23, 1686; died unmarried before 1716; mentioned in the will of Roger Derby, his stepfather.
- (b) **WILLIAM DYN**, born Aug. 1, 1689; died unmarried before 1716; mentioned in will of Roger Derby, his stepfather.

Children of **Roger** and first wife **Lucretia (Hilman or Kilman) Derby** were nine, namely : —

- 2. **CHARLES DERBY**², born in Topsham, Eng., July 27, 1669; died on an expedition to Canada, Oct. 8, 1690.
- 3. **EXPERIENCE DERBY**², born in Ipswich, Mass., Dec. 18, 1671: died Jan., 1714-15; md. June 22, 1698, Capt. Joseph Flint, son of Ensign Edward² (William¹), and Elizabeth (Hart) Flint; he born in Salem, Mass., about 1671, and died in 1711 (see Appendix, Flint Family, No. 12).
- 4. **SAMUEL DERBY**², born in Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 24, 1673; died at sea before 1728; mariner; md. at Southold, L. I., about 1699, Hannah Young.
- 5. **ROGER DERBY**², born in Ipswich, Mass., Jan. 1; died before 1698, unmarried.
- 6. **JOHN DERBY**², born in Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 25, 1677; died, unmarried, in 1708; mariner.
- 7. **RICHARD DERBY**², born in Ipswich, Mass., Oct. 8, 1679 (July 25, another account); died Feb. 25, 1716; father of Elias Hasket Derby, who first established in New England the East India trade; ancestor to many eminent merchants and shipmasters. He married, Feb. 25, 1702-3, Martha Hasket, dau. of Stephen and Elizabeth Hasket, of Salem, sister of his father's second wife, and had issue four sons and four daughters; the sons were: — Elias Hasket³, John C.³, E. Hersey³, and Richard³, who married Mary Hodges, dau. of Gamaliel Hodges and Sarah (Williams), and sister to Hannah, who md. first Samuel Ives, second Nathaniel Archer.

This Richard Derby² had a son John⁴, born in Salem, Mass., June 7, 1741; died in Boston, Dec. 5, 1812; a master-mariner. After the battle of Lexington had been fought, the Committee of Safety engaged Mr. Richard Derby, the father, to fit out one of his vessels as a packet, and directed Capt. John Derby, the son, to its command, placing in his hands a sealed package containing the news of the fight, which he was to convey to London with care and all possible despatch, and deliver into the hands of the authorities there. The intelligence threw the whole kingdom into confusion, which led to instant preparations for a prolonged warfare. Capt. John's eldest brother,

Elias Hasket Derby, born Aug. 16, 1739, died Sept. 8, 1799; md. April 23, 1761, Elizabeth Crowninshield, dau. of John and Anstis (Williams); she sister to Anstis Crowninshield, who md. Sept. 27, 1749, Christopher Babbidge; also sister to John Crowninshield, who md. Eunice Nutting, and were the parents of Sarah, who md. Major John Saunders, the father of Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver, wife of *Rev. Joseph Driver*. Capt. John Derby⁴ married first Hannah Clark, dau. of John Clark and Ann (Furneaux), who died May 24, 1786; he md. second, Elizabeth Cheever, dau. of William Downes Cheever and Elizabeth (Edwards), Oct. 9, 1787; she then the widow of Nathaniel Pierce of Boston. She a descendant of Richard Cheever of Boston, a cordwainer, and wife Abigail. He (Richard) was in King Philip's War, and died about July, 1709. His son Daniel md. Mary Downes, dau. of William Downes; and their son William Downes Cheever, a sugar refiner, was the father of Elizabeth above-said. This family of Cheevers has no apparent connection with the Salem family who intermarried with the Ives family.

8. LUCRETIA DERBY³, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 17, 1681; published to Joseph Bolles, of Ipswich, Mass., March 29, 1707.
9. EBENEZER DERBY², born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 9, 1683; died Jan. 20, 1687-8.

Children of Roger and second wife Elizabeth (Haskett) Derby (Dynn) were:—

10. ELIZABETH DERBY¹ (Darby on record), born in Salem, Mass., March 10, 1692; her will proved Dec. 29, 1721; md. April 17, 1718, Thomas Palfrey, son of Walter and Mary (Manning) Palfrey; he bapt. June 24, 1689; died July, 1720; they had one child, Elizabeth Palfrey², bapt. Oct. 11, 1719; died young.
11. MARGARET DERBY¹, born Aug. 14, 1693; died Sept. 29, 1771 (July 11, 1765, another acct.); md. Feb. 8, 1710, William Osborn, son of William and Hannah (Burton) Osborn; he born May 3, 1682; died Sept. 29, 1771; will proved Oct. 7, 1771; inventory was £788 4s. 10d. They had eight children.
12. ANNE DERBY¹, born Dec. 10, 1695; md. Jan. 2, 1717-18, Benjamin Ives, son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Metcalf) Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 8; also Metcalf Family, No. 3.)
13. MARTHA DERBY¹, born Sept. 30, 1697; died Sept., 1757; md. Oct. 22, 1719, Joshua Hicks, merchant. According to Felt he had been coroner and selectman of Salem, Mass., and his estate was valued at £3,916 15s. 4d. Children were: Joshua, John, Joshua, Elizabeth, Martha, Ruth, Mary, and Zachariah.

SECOND GENERATION.

SAMUEL DERBY² (No. 4), son of Roger¹ and Lucretia (Helman) Derby, who was born in Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 24, 1673; died probably at sea, being a mariner, before 1728; md. at Southold, L. I., about 1699 or 1700, Hannah Young, dau. of Christopher Young, of that place; she died before 1765, and married second, Jan. 7, 1728, Daniel Clark, of Topsfield, Mass., a farmer. No issue.

Children of **Samuel and Hannah (Young) Derby** were:

14. **ROGER DERBY**², born in Southold, L. I., Oct. 13, 1703; died in Danvers, Mass., Jan., 1768; md. May —, 1726, Lydia Buxton, dau. of John² (Anthony¹), and Elizabeth (Holten) Buxton; she born Oct. 16, 1692. They had a daughter, Sarah Derby, who married, July 28, 1753, Joseph Aborn, son of Samuel and Jane (Pickering) Aborn; he born April 10, 1726; died at South Danvers, Mass., Sept. 5, 1800; had issue five children, — Lydia, Lucretia, Hannah, Jane, and Joseph.
15. **HANNAH DERBY**², born in Southold, L. I., in 1705; died in Salem, Mass., Oct. 28, 1796; md. first, May 25, 1727, Benjamin Hathorne, youngest son of Col. John² (William¹), and Ruth (Gardner) Hathorne; he bapt. April 27, 1701; died —. His father, Col. John Hathorne, was a very important man in the colony, for he was Assistant; Judge in Witchcraft Cases; Representative; Judge of the Supreme Court in 1702 to 15; also Colonel. He died May 10, 1717; his wife was the daughter of Lieut. George Gardner.

Hannah Derby² married second, Oct. 10, 1737, as his second wife, Miles Ward, Jr., son of Miles and Sarah (Massey) Ward, grandson of Joshua and Hannah (Flint) Ward; he born April 18, 1704; died June —, 1792. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 7, III. child.) He was a widower, with eight children, having md. first, Jan. 3, 1727, Elizabeth Webb. (See Appendix, Webb Family continued, No. 10.)

Children of her first marriage were: —

- (a) **BENJAMIN HATHORNE**⁴, bapt. Jan. 13, 1728.
- (b) **HANNAH HATHORNE**⁴, bapt. April 5, 1730.

Children of her second marriage were: —

- (c) **ELIZABETH WARD**⁴, born July 9, 1738; died Jan. 20, 1806; md. William Poole, of Danvers, Mass.
- (d) **SAMUEL WARD**⁴, born April 30, 1740; died July 31, 1812; md. Jan. 2, 1768, Priscilla Hodges, dau. of Gamaliel and Priscilla (Webb) Hodges; she born Feb. 14, 1750; died June 2, 1822. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 2.) Their son Gamaliel Hodges Ward, born in 1782; died March 6, 1836; md. April 16, 1808, Priscilla L. Townsend, dau. of Moses and Lydia (Lambert) Townsend, whose father in the Revolutionary War was a prisoner in Mill prison, England (Essex Inst. Coll., Vol. III.).

- (e) MEHITABLE WARD⁴, born March 18, 1742; died Oct. 24, 1755.
- (f) ANNE WARD⁴, born May 11, 1744; died Jan. 8, 1832; md. first, Oct. 27, 1762, Jonathan Mansfield, son of Jonathan and Dorcas (Ramsdell) Mansfield; administration on his estate granted his widow, Anne, Feb. 7, 1780; she md. second, Feb. 20, 1780, Joseph Henfield. Twelve children by first marriage.
- (g) NATHANIEL WARD⁴, born July 29, 1746; graduate of Harvard, 1765; died at Cambridge, Mass., Oct. 13, 1768.
- (h) LUCRETIA WARD⁴, born Aug. 26, 1748; died Sept., 1809; md. June 14, 1777, Dr. Joseph Osgood; he born in 1746; died June —, 1812; their dau. Lucy married Samuel G. Derby, son of Richard and Lydia (Gardner) Derby.
- (i) MARY WARD⁴, born Sept. 30, 1750; died Sept. 30, 1755.
- (j) JOSHUA WARD⁴, born Oct. 25, 1752; died Sept. 14, 1825; merchant and owned a distillery; he md. first, Sarah Lander, who was the mother of his children; md. second, Susan McGee, of Boston. His son Joshua married Susannah, dau. of Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, who lived to be one hundred and one years of age, vigorous and strong until the close of his life.
- Joshua Ward, in 1789, entertained in his own house, on Washington Street, Salem, Mass., President George Washington, during his visit in that year to Salem. This house in 1879 was still standing and occupied.

Children of Miles, Jr., and first wife Elizabeth (Webb) Ward were:—

- (k) SARAH WARD⁴, born Oct. 19, 1728; died Aug. 10, 1729.
- (l) ELIZABETH WARD⁴, born —, 1730; died April 11, 1737.
- (m) ABIGAIL WARD⁴, born April 16, 1731; died May 22, 1731.
- (n) ABIGAIL WARD⁴, born March 17, 1732; md. first, Dec. 7, 1752-3, Samuel Griffin, of Portsmouth, N. H. She md. second, John Bass.
- (o) MILES WARD⁴ 3d, born July 25, 1733; died Aug. 10, 1796; md. Experience Goodale, dau. of Joshua and Experience (Judd) Goodale; she bapt. in the First Church of Danvers, Mass., Dec. 17, 1738.

Children were:—

- I. HANNAH WARD⁵, born in 1775; died Jan. 26, 1814; md. May 29, 1791, for his second wife, Jonathan Neal, son of David and Hannah (Webb) Neal. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 8.) Jonathan Neal married first, Jan. 11, 1784, Mehitable Eden, dau. of Capt. Thomas Eden; she born in 1761; died Sept. 29, 1788.
- II. MARY WARD⁵, born in 1770; died June, 1835; md. Dec. 25, 1796, Henry Osborn.
- III. NATHAN WARD⁵, born —; died at Wilmington, N. C., Oct. —, 1790; md. Jane Walker.
- IV. NATHANIEL WARD⁵, born 1775; died at Wilmington, N. C., Aug., 6, 1792.

Joshua Goodale, the grandfather, married second, Anne Derby (No. 16), dau. of Samuel and Hannah (Young) Derby, and sister of Hannah (Derby) Hathorne (No. 15), who married, second, the father of the said Miles Ward; hence the father and father-in-law of the said Miles Ward married sisters as second wives.

- (p) SARAH WARD⁴, born March 1, 1734; died Oct. 18, 1801; md. March 13, 1754-5, her second cousin, John Ives, son of Capt. Benjamin and Anne (Derby) Ives; he born about 1732. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 15.)

(q) ANNE WARD⁴, born March 20, 1735; died May 1, 1737.

(r) EBENEZER WARD⁴, born April 12, 1737; died the next day with his mother.

Thus the whole family consisted of eighteen children.

16. ANNE DERBY³, born in Salem, Mass., in 1711; died in Danvers, Mass., Nov. 11, 1789; md. Sept. 10, 1749, as his second wife, Joshua Goodale, son of Abraham and Hannah (Rodes) Goodale; grandson of Zechariah and Elizabeth (Beacham) Goodale; he born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 19, 1708; died in Danvers, Mass., May 18, 1798; blacksmith; he md. first, May 21, 1734, Experience Judd; she died Aug. 14, 1748, and had issue, —

(a) JOSHUA GOODALE⁴, born Feb. 20, 1734; died young.

(b) HANNAH GOODALE⁴, bapt. May 22, 1737.

(c) EXPERIENCE GOODALE⁴ bapt. Dec. 17, 1738; md. Miles Ward, fifteenth child of No. 15.

(d) NATHAN GOODALE⁴, born Dec. 4, 1740; died at Newton, Mass., Aug. —, 1806; Harvard graduate 1759; merchant.

Children of Anne Derby and Joshua Goodale were: —

(e) MARY GOODALE⁴, bapt. June 24, 1751; died July 20, 1821.

(f) JOSHUA GOODALE⁴, bapt. June 17, 1753; died Aug. —, 1795; md. Jan. 28, 1775, Mary Henfield.

(g) THANKFUL GOODALE⁴, bapt. March 21, 1756; died May 4, 1785; md. Dec. 25, 1779, William Safford; he born in 1759; died Feb. 27, 1847; he md. second, June 6, 1792, Abigail Swasey, dau. of Stephen and Abigail Swasey.

(h) ANNE GOODALE⁴, bapt. Oct. 15, 1759.

17. TEMPERANCE DERBY³, bapt. July 1, 1716; died in Andover, Mass., Oct. 13, 1779; md. Aug. 24, 1738, Capt. Richard Downing, Jr., son of Richard and Anstis (Palfray) Downing; he born in 1716; died Oct. —, 1793; his uncle, Thomas Palfray, married Elizabeth Derby No. 10, aunt to Temperance abovesaid. Children were nine.

18. SAMUEL DERBY³ bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Feb. 14, 1719; died April 22, 1783; md. first, Aug. 13, 1745, Bridget Newhall; md. second, May 7, 1751, Ann Williams.

THIRD GENERATION.

SAMUEL DERBY³ (No. 18), son of Samuel ²(ROGER¹), and Hannah (Young) Derby, bapt. in Salem, Mass., Feb. 14, 1719; died there April 22, 1783; removed to Danvers, Mass., thence to Lynn, Mass., where he resided till about 1766; removed to Salem, Mass., June 5, 1780. He married first, Aug. 13, 1745, Bridget Newhall, dau. of Benjamin ⁴(Joseph³, Thomas³, Thomas¹), and Elizabeth (Fowler) Newhall, of Lynn, Mass.; she born Nov.

30, 1722; died March 14, 1750. He married second, May 7, 1751, Ann Williams, of Lynn, Mass.; she born in 1727; died in Salem, Mass., Jan. 19, 1811. He admitted to Essex Lodge of Freemasons June 5, 1780.

Child by first marriage was:—

19. HANNAH DERBY⁴, born April 28, 1748; died in Lynn, Mass., Aug., 1834; md. Sept. 15, 1773, Michael Atkinson, and had issue, Hannah⁵, Jacob A.⁵, Mary⁵, Joseph⁵, and Timothy.⁵

Children by second marriage were:—

20. BRIDGET DERBY⁴, born March 13, 1752; died in Salem, Mass., Oct. 12, 1842; md. Nov. 10, 1771, William Lang, son of Jeffry and Hannah (Symmes) Lang, of Salem, Mass., where he was born Jan. 15, 1750; died Aug. 11, 1827; auctioneer.

"Hanna Simes Juner was b. y^e 27 of Aug. Anodomy 1707."

"Jeffry Lang b. Jan y^e 16 anodomy 1707 of a Friday."

"Hanna d. Oct. 1748, aged 41"—"he d. May 14, 1758."—*Bible of Jeffry Lang.*

Children were twelve, namely:—

- (a) WILLIAM LANG⁵, born Sept. 8, 1772; died Jan. 31, 1817; md. Sept. 4, 1796, Fanny Dutch, dau. of John and Mary (Jones) Dutch; she born Aug., 1776; died in Lynn, Mass., Aug. 5, 1870, aged 92 years.
(b) BRIDGET LANG⁵, born June 3, 1774; died at Bangor, Me., Nov. 12, 1855; md. first, Aug. 14, 1793, Kendall Flint, son of Joseph and Mary (Putnam) Flint, of Danvers, Mass. They removed to Easton, Md., where he died Dec. 14, 1800; saddler.
She md. second, Oct. 31, 1802, Thomas Field, who was born in 1765; died June 1, 1841.

Children of first marriage were:—

- I. PHEBE FLINT⁵, born Nov. 5, 1795; died in Virginia, July 29, 1850; unmarried.

- II. SALLY FLINT⁵, born Jan. 2, 1796; died Oct. 3, 1857; md. Nov. 24, 1818, John Winn⁵, Jr., son of Joseph⁴ and Mary (Hunt) Winn, through Timothy³, Joseph³, Edward¹, the emigrant, who in 1640 was one of the 32 signers of the town of Woburn, where Joseph⁴ was born Sept. 24, 1761, and died in Salem, Mass., Nov. 3, 1839.

Joseph⁴ had four children,—the abovesaid John⁵, who was born in 1796, and died April 12, 1858; and Joseph⁵, who died unmarried; and two daughters: one md. — Fisk; the other md. Dr. Frederick Parker (Essex Inst. Collect., Vol. IV. p. 137).

Children of second marriage were:—

- III. LUCY LANG FIELD⁵, bapt. Nov. 7, 1824; died in 1875; md. Aug., 1830, Alfred G. Greenleaf, son of Abner and Mary Greenleaf; he born in 1805; died Dec. 24, 1873.
IV. SOPHIA DERBY FIELD⁵, born Sept. 8, 1825; died March 21, 1870; md. Aug. 12, 1835, as his second wife, George Driver, son of Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver (No. 77, Driver Family). He born in Salem, Mass., May 7, 1805; died there April 7, 1887.

- (c) **NANCY LANG** ⁵, born July 2, 1776; died June 11, 1863; md. Sept. 1, 1796, William Osborne, son of Stephen and Mary Osborne; he born Feb. 28, 1770; died May 29, 1858.
 - (d) **SAMUEL LANG** ⁵, born July 20, 1778; publishment of marriage, Sept. 10, 1803, to Elizabeth Tucker, of Danvers, Mass.
 - (e) **ESTHER LANG** ⁵, born June 8, 1780; died Feb. 3, 1867; md. May 27, 1804, ~~Jonathan~~ Norris, Jr., son of Edward and Sarah (Lee) Norris; he born April 12, 1780; master-mariner.
 - (f) **LUCY LANG** ⁵, born July 22, 1782; died March 21, 1865; md. June 27, 1804, Jeremiah Lee Page, son of Samuel and Lois (Lee) Page.
 - (g) **PRISCILLA LANG** ⁵, born Aug. 1, 1784; died Dec. 21, 1876; md. June 28, 1807, Samuel Goodridge, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Page) Goodridge, of Beverly, Mass.; he born Sept. 19, 1786; died Feb. 3, 1837.
 - (h) **HASKET DERBY LANG** ⁵, born Dec. 17, 1786; died in Egwog, Norway, on board the brig "Monticello," April 24, 1827; md. June 27, 1819, Eliza Sewall Sleeper, of Exeter, N. H. No issue. She married second, — Jewell. She married third, Theodore Jewell, of Berwick, Me., her second husband's brother.
 - (i) **MARTHA LANG** ⁵, born Jan. 15, 1789; died April 6, 1864; md. Nov. 14, 1816, Capt. Joseph Mosely, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Crowninshield) Mosely; master-mariner (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 15, child 4); he born at Niscon, N. C., Oct. 8, 1787; died July 17, 1825.
 - (j) **ELIZABETH LANG** ⁵, born May 8, 1791; died —, unmarried.
 - (k) **SARAH LANG** ⁵, born March 8, 1793; died June 28, 1864, unmarried.
 - (l) **HARRIET LANG** ⁵, born Aug. 1, 1795; died July 5, 1863, md. Nov. 9, 1817, Benjamin Howard, son of John and Jane (Ashby) Howard; he born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 1, 1795; died in Boston, Mass., Aug. 20, 1860. They had ten children.
21. **LYDIA DERBY** ⁴, born April 6, 1754; died in Salem, Mass., May 24, 1837; md. July 23, 1774, Joshua Cross; he born in 1752; died May 24, 1837. A soldier in the Revolution.
- Children were eleven: Moses ⁵, Joshua ⁵, Lydia ⁵, Nancy ⁵, Betsey ⁵, Mary ⁵, Rachel ⁵, Bridget ⁵, Lucy ⁵, Daniel ⁵, and Samuel ⁵.
- The fifth child, Betsey, was born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 11, 1784; died Sept. 9, 1862; md. first, July 6, 1809, John Ives ⁵, son of John ⁴ and Elizabeth (Newhall) Ives; he born Dec. 27, 1785; died at sea in 1809; she md. second, April 15, 1816, Oliver Parsons; he born in 1785; died Aug. 25, 1845. No issue. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 39.)
22. **LUCRETIA DERBY** ⁴, born April 15, 1759; died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 12, 1854; md. May 17, 1783, Joseph Mansfield, latter; he born March 8, 1758; died Oct. 23, 1827. They had ten children, of whom John married Lucy Boden, dau. of William, Sr., and Experience (Downing) Boden. (See Driver Family, No. 46, first child.)
23. **ANNA DERBY** ⁴, born Aug. 27, 1761; died in Lynn, Mass., Feb. 22, 1843; md. Sept. 23, 1779, Samuel Batchelder; he born Nov. 1, 1757; died Feb. 20, 1832. Children were nine.
24. **SAMUEL DERBY** ⁴, born April 15, 1764; died in Salem, Mass., Dec. 9, 1826; md. Nov. 11, 1783, Bethiah Watts, dau. of Robert and Hannah (Daland) Watts; she born Nov. 15, 1767; died July 5, 1861.
25. **JOHN DERBY** ⁴, born May 28, 1770; died March 1, 1834; md. Aug. 24, 1794, Elizabeth Putnam, dau. of Tarrant and Sarah (Page) Putnam, of Danvers, Mass.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOHN DERBY⁴ (No. 25), son of Samuel³ (SAMUEL², ROGER¹), and Ann (Williams) Derby, born in Salem, Mass., May 28, 1770; died March 1, 1834; a tailor; md. Aug. 24, 1794, Elizabeth Putnam, dau. of Tarrant and Sarah (Page) Putnam; she born in Danvers, Mass., Aug. 19, 1770; died Nov. 17, 1842.

Her mother married second, as his second wife, Capt. Robert Foster, of Salem, Mass., who thus became her stepfather. The captain somewhat distinguished himself in 1775 by secreting from the British the cannon loaned to the Provincial Congress, which were piled up on the wharf at North Salem, just as they were landed from merchant ships. They were owned by several persons, one of whom was Richard Derby, of this same Derby family.

Salem was connected with North Salem by a drawbridge, which must be crossed to enter either place. Sunday afternoon, Feb. 28, 1775, three hundred British soldiers, under Col. Leslie, landed at Marblehead from Boston, and marched through the town on their way to North Salem to seize these cannon. In some way Capt. Robert Foster learned that they were coming, and for what; so to gain time to hide the cannon in his cellar, he ran to the drawbridge and ordered it to be raised, and then ran to the North Church near by, and putting his head in at the door, shouted, "The British are coming!" The people rushed out instantly, even to the minister in his robes, seized the cannon, and dragged them out of sight. Leslie and his men arrived at the bridge, found it raised, demanded of Richard Derby that he exert himself to have the cannon surrendered, who replied, "Find them if you can; take them if you can; they will never be surrendered."

On top of the draw some of the bravest men had climbed, who continually called to the soldiers to return the way they had come. Rev. Thomas Barnard, yet in his robes, as he came from his church to assist, also addressed them, suggesting that they compromise, "saving their honor, and his people their guns." To this Leslie agreed if the bridge should be lowered and he allowed to lead his men thirty rods beyond; then he would countermarch, and leave the town. The bridge was accordingly lowered. The cannon now being out of sight, the British marched into Salem as far as Mason Street, turned and marched back, going to Marblehead the way they had come, and so on to Boston, but without the cannon.

A flag-staff was raised to mark the spot where these brave and determined people stood that eventful Sabbath-day, who, but for the caution of Col. Leslie, would have left but few to return to Boston.¹ This account was rendered the Compiler unasked by one of the grandsons of Capt. Robert Foster, whose aid she acknowledges, with many thanks.

John Derby⁴ in 1821 was elected a member of the Convention to amend the State Constitution. For several years he was a Representative from Salem to the General Court.

Children were:—

26. **JOHN DERBY**⁵, JR., born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 21, 1795; died in East Saginaw, Mich., Aug. 7, 1874.
27. **TARRANT PUTNAM DERBY**⁵, born Aug. 14, 1796; died March 6, 1850.

¹ At this North Bridge, in 1887, a memorial granite column, with a bronze tablet giving an account of the event, was erected by the city of Salem, Mass., and unveiled October 25th of that year.

28. CHARLES DERBY⁴, born July 20, 1798; died Sept. 23, 1868; md. Feb. 4, 1820, Nancy Pulling.
29. PERLEY DERBY⁴, born May 9, 1800; drowned at sea, Dec. 2, 1821, in an attempt to save the life of a fellow-sailor.
30. SARAH PAGE DERBY⁴, born July 2, 1802; died in Boston, Mass., July 16, 1861, unmarried.
31. ELIZABETH DERBY⁴, born July 6, 1804; died in Boston, Mass., Dec. 16, 1870; md. April 7, 1825, Ferdinand Andrews, son of Ephraim and Lucy (Lane) Andrews, of Hingham, Mass.; he born May 20, 1802.
32. MARY ANN DERBY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., May 6, 1806; died in Boston, Mass., March 24, 1887.
33. HANNAH DERBY⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 25, 1808; died June 1, 1840; md. Nov. 1, 1837, as his second wife, Jonathan Fox Worcester, son of Rev. Samuel and Zervia (Fox) Worcester; he born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 12, 1806; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1827. His first wife was Mary Heard, daughter of William Punchard, of Francestown, N. H.

FIFTH GENERATION.

CHARLES DERBY⁵ (No. 28), son of John⁴ (SAMUEL³, SAMUEL², ROGER¹), and Elizabeth (Putnam) Derby (Foster), born in Salem, Mass., July 20, 1798; died Sept. 23, 1868; watchmaker; md. at Nashville, Tenn., Feb. 4, 1820, Nancy Pulling; she born near Norfolk, Va., Oct. 11, 1804; died in Salem, Mass., Nov. 19, 1878.

Children were:—

34. PERLEY DERBY⁵, born in Murfreesboro, Tenn., Oct. 26, 1823; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.; genealogist and copyist; md. at Salem, Mass., Dec. 1, 1850, Harriet Knight, dau. of William and Abigail (Punchard) Knight; she born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 1, 1827.
Mr. Derby for two years was engaged by the Compiler of this history to search town, church, and probate records for material herein contained, particularly on the earlier families; whose diligence and thoroughness has made this history reliable and attractive.
35. JOHN HENRY DERBY⁵, born in Lynn, Mass., May 26, 1826; died in Salem, Mass., May 15, 1830.
36. CHARLES WASHINGTON DERBY⁵, born in Derry, N. H., Nov. 8, 1827; md. April 12, 1852, Emeline J. O'Hare, dau. of Stephen O'Hare; she born in Salem, Mass., May 2, 1834.
37. SARAH PUTNAM DERBY⁵, born in South Danvers, Mass. (now Peabody), Jan. 28, 1832; died March 14, 1832.

THE FLINT FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

WILLIAM, THOMAS, and EDWARD FLINT were brothers, and came to Salem, Mass., in 1638. According to Mr. Shattuck, in his History of Concord, N. H., their father was Hon. Thomas Flint, who came from Matlock, Derbyshire, Eng., to Concord, N. H., whose uncle was William Wood, author of "New England Prospect," and one of the twelve petitioners who visited Concord in 1633, and returned to England, and two years afterwards was active in promoting the settlement in Concord, N. H.

The same author states that Hon. Thomas Flint was possessed "of wealth, talents, and a Christian character." "He is said to have brought £4,000 sterling with him, which was liberally parted with for the benefit of the colony." He married a daughter of President Oakes, of Harvard College, by whom he had John and Ephraim, who lived in Concord with him. He died Oct. 8, 1653. His brother, Rev. Henry Flint, of Braintree, and his uncle, William Wood, were executors of his will, — the first on record in the Middlesex Probate Records. It was made in 1651, just before his sailing on a voyage to England, a portion of which is : —

"If God calls my wife to alter her condition I desire my Elder children may endeavour to keepe the younger together with themselves . . . or if my wife should dye, my younger children being small ; my mind is they shall continue under the care of y^e Elder."

Johnson, in his "Wonder Working Providence," thus describes Thomas Flint, in what he terms short metre —

"At Christ's commands, thou leav'st thy lands, and native habitation
His folke to aid, in desert straid, for gospels' exaltation,

Flint, hardy thou wilt not allow, the undermining fox,

With subtle skill, Christ's vines to spoil, thy sword shall give them knocks,

Yet thou base dust, and all thou hast is Christ's, and by him thou

Art made to be such as we see ; hold fast for ever now."

The brothers William and Thomas Flint were of Salem, Mass., in 1638. The former settled in Salem proper, and the latter in Salem Village, — now since 1752 called Danvers; then included what is now Danvers Centre, Danversport, Tapleville, Putnamville, and a part of Danvers Plains. Thomas Flint died April 15, 1663; md. Ann Sutherick; she died March 20, 1673. They had five children. "Mr. Thomas Flint took the Freeman's Oath, March 1637-8" — as found on record in the office of the Secretary of State, Boston, Mass., Vol. I. p. 195. In King Philip's War of 1675 Thomas Flint was in Capt. Joseph Gardiner's company, and was wounded Dec. 16, 1675.

1. WILLIAM FLINT¹, whose line of descent pertains to this history, was born somewhere in England in 1603, and if Mr. Shattuck is correct, his mother was his father's first wife, who was without doubt an English lady. He died in Salem, Mass., April 2, 1672, aged seventy, according to the Town Record. He married — date unknown — Alice Williams, who survived him twenty-six years, dying Oct. 5, 1700. He made his will Sept. 15, 1671; proved June 26, 1673; inventory taken April 22, 1673; amount, £911:15s. He mentions wife Alice, sons Thomas and Edward, my son John Pickering.

"To my son Joshua Ward I give one 10-acre lot in the South Field, which I bought of Capt. James Smith." To son Thomas he gave about one half of his estate in South fields, Goldthwaite's field, brick-kilnfield, lands on Forrest river brook, near Lynn bounds, besides at Clay brooke. To son Edward he gave the other half of the above mentioned lands. It was his intention to have given some part of his estate to his son(-in-law) Pickering, but company coming in, it is stated, interrupted his so doing, and the next day he was not well enough to be even spoken to, and so son Pickering received nothing. His daughters Elizabeth, Margaret, Alice, and Hannah were excluded entirely, on the plea that he had already given them enough, which led to a litigation, the plaintiffs succeeding in setting the will aside till 1694, when the whole estate was equitably divided among the heirs, twenty-one years after their father's death.

William Flint, by a plan now extant, was shown to have owned in Salem, Mass., the land from the corner of Flint and Essex Streets, running through to Broad Street, and from thence easterly

nearly or quite to Pickering Street, thence to Essex Street. Flint Street, in the same city, is said to be over land he once owned, and near to where his dwelling-house stood.

In 1668 William and Edward Flint were petitioners against the imposing two per cent on all goods imported into the colony, and five shillings a piece for cattle.

Children of **William** and **Alice (Williams) Flint** were :

2. **ALICE FLINT**², born in Salem, Mass., about 1636; died there in 1713; made her will March 4, 1712-13, as follows:—

"To all People to whom this present deed of Gift shall come know y^{ee} that I Alice Pickering of Salem, in y^e County of Essex in New England, widow, for & upon mature considerations & other Good causes me hereunto justly moving have Given Granted & do by these presents Give Grant aliene set over & confirme unto, Jane King, Hannah Beadle, Lydia & Mary Palmer, all y^e children of my Daughter Hannah Palmer, late of Salem, dec'd, my five acres of land lying & being in y^e Town of Salem, in y^e South field so called, to be equally divided between them as they shall arrive at y^e age of Eighteen yeares or marriage to be to them & their heirs forever, and y^t my son-in-law Richard Palmer shall have the use of said land Till y^e said children come to age as aforesaid, it being part of that land given me by my mother, a Deed of Gift may appeare.

Item — I give unto my Daughter Elizabeth Browne wife of James Browne, my Two silver cupps & one Silver spoone.

Item — I give unto y^e children of my Daughter Browne & y^e children of my Daughter Palmer all my moveables to be equally divided between them.

Item — I give unto Hannah Osgood, wife of Nathaniel Osgood, one peece of sheets which she hath of mine.

in witness hereof I have hereunto set my hand & seale this 4th. day of March 1712-13.

mark
ALICE G. PICKERING
of

Signed sealed & D. D.

in presence of us

THOMAS BREWER

FRANCIS WILLOUGHBY

"ESSEX ss. att an Inferiour Court of pleas holden at Salem, December 29, 1713, then M^r Francis Willoughby & Thomas Brewer, y^e Two witnesses to this Deed or Instrument, made oath that they were present & saw M^{rs} Alice Pickering, Dec'd sign, seal & Declare this Instrument as her will & deed, and the s^d deponents at the same time subscribed as witnesses thereto."

"May 13, 1713, John Pickering yeo., Benj. Williams, mariner, sons of John & Alice Pickering, both dec'd, — release all their right in the above said 5 acres, to the Children of their sister Hannah Palmer, late dec'd." — *Deeds*, Vol. XXV. p. 225.

Alice Flint married first Henry Bullock, Jr., son of Henry Bullock, the emigrant, and first wife Susan, who came with his parents, when eight years old, in 1635, from the county of Essex, Eng., in the ship "Abigail," accompanied by his sister Mary, aged six, and his brother Thomas, aged two, all settling at first in Charlestown, New England. In 1638 they all removed to Salem, where in 1643 his father received a grant of land; and Oct. 13, 1649, one of forty acres; and still another Dec. 2, 1663 (Savage). His mother died Nov. 2, 1644, aged fifty-one years, and his father married second, date

not known, Elizabeth —. He made his will Dec. 21, 1663, proved June 29, 1664, in which he names "wife Elizabeth ex'x; son Thomas; grandson John, son of my son Henry, dec'd; William Flint & Nath'l Felton, overseers." He resided in what was then called Northfields, Salem, Mass., near Henry Cook, Sr. His inventory was £99:15s. Dec. 14, 1657, Henry Cook having bought the land formerly in possession of Henry Bullock, Jr., dec'd, he agrees with Henry Bullock to maintain the partition fence belonging to the land purchased of Alice, late wife of said Henry Bullock, Jr., dec'd, said Bullock also agreeing to take care of his part of said fence (Essex Co. Deeds, Vol. II. p. 66).

Aug. 6, 1656, after the death of Henry Bullock, Jr., his widow, Alice, with the consent of her father, William Flint, for £20, to be paid yearly, sold Henry Cook her dwelling-house, out-houses, and about twenty acres of land; the said house "standing neere unto the Generale fence on the North Neck, having Henry Bullock on the one side, and W^m Robinson on the other side running thence to Jno. Southwick, also all the land lying in Northfield formerly Henry Bullock Jr's, dec'd, Also 6 acres in the broad meadow near John Hathorne's old house." — *Essex Co. Deeds*, Vol. I. p. 39.

From the above statement it is reasonable to suppose that Mrs. Alice Bullock was preparing for her second marriage, which event took place in 1656-7, when she was married to John Pickering, styled Lieutenant, son of John and Elizabeth Pickering, who was born in Salem, Mass., in 1637, and died there May 5, 1694.

His father came from England in 1630, and from 1634 to 1637 lived in Ipswich, Mass., when he removed to Salem, remaining there till his death in 1657. Lieut. John Pickering built, on Broad Street, Salem, Mass., a large house of red brick and oak, which after more than two hundred years still stands (1886), owned and occupied by the Pickering family, ^{known as the mansion}.

Alice (Flint) (Bullock) Pickering in 1652 was presented at court for wearing a silk hood, but proving that she was worth £200, was acquitted (Essex Inst. Hist. Collect., Vol. II. p. 207), — the law against which is to be found under Henry Elias Jenks, Driver Family, No. 17.

Children of **Henry, Jr., and Alice (Flint) Bullock** were: —

- I. **JOHN BULLOCK**³, born —; died in 1693; administration granted Edward Flint (brother to his mother) and Stephen Sewall, Jan. 7, 1693-4. The widow was granted administration, but refused to serve; md. Aug. 3, 1681, Eliza Maverick, dau. of Moses Maverick, the noted magistrate of Marblehead, and second wife Eunice, widow of Thomas² (John¹), Roberts; she bapt. Sept. 6, 1657. They had two children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, born June 22, 1683; 2. John⁴, born April 5, 1686; md. July 20, 1710, Mary Carrill.

Mr. Moses Maverick abovesaid came to New England in the "Mayflower," and was the fifth to sign the compact in Cape Cod Harbor, Nov. 11, 1620. John Roberts¹, grandfather to the said children, according to the Roxbury Church Record, of which church Rev. John Elliot was pastor, came to New England from Wales in 1636, "bringing with him his aged mother, wife & 7 children," one of whom was Thomas abovesaid. The aged mother died Jan. 7, 1645, aged 103 years (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. II.).

- II. **ELIZABETH BULLOCK**³, born —.

Children of **Lieut. John and Alice (Flint) (Bullock) Pickering** were eight, all born in Salem, Mass., viz. : —

III. **JOHN PICKERING**³, born Sept. 10, 1658; died June 19, 1722; md. June 14, 1683, Sarah Burrill, dau. of John² and Lois (Ivory) Burrill, and granddaughter of George Burrill, the emigrant, and wife Mary, who was one of the richest of the planters, Lois Ivory, her grandmother, being the daughter of Thomas, the emigrant of 1638. *L. May 16, 1661.*

Sarah Burrill was ~~born~~ *died* in Lynn, Mass., Dec. 27, 1747. They had ten children, — Lois, Sarah, John, Mary, Joseph, Ruth, Lydia, Theophilus, Timothy, and Eunice Pickering, who was baptized Nov., 1705; md. Dec. 10, 1724, Joseph Neal², son of Joseph² (John¹), and Judith (Croad); he born in 1689, and died before Jan. 19, 1732 (see Appendix, Neal Family, No. 10); she married second, April 6, 1738, her cousin William Pickering, son of Benjamin and Jane (Hobby) Pickering.

IV. **JONATHAN PICKERING**³, born Sept. 27, 1660; died before 1694.

V. **JOSEPH PICKERING**³, born Sept. 9, 1663; died before 1694.

VI. **BENJAMIN PICKERING**³, born Jan. 25, 1665; adm^r granted his widow Jane, Nov. 12, 1718; md. Jane Hobby, of Plymouth, Mass.; her will proved Feb. 25, 1750.

Children were: —

(a) **JANE PICKERING**⁴, b. —; md. July 17, 1723, Samuel Aborn, and had two children, namely: —

(1) **SAMUEL ABORN**⁵, bapt. June 23, 1728, with his brother Joseph.

(2) **JOSEPH ABORN**⁵, born April 10, 1728; died at S. Danvers, Mass., Sept. 5, 1800; md. July 28, 1753, Sarah Derby, dau. of Roger² (Samuel², Roger¹), and Lydia Buxton, and had five children.

(b) **ALICE PICKERING**⁴, born —; md. — Gaskill.

(c) **WILLIAM PICKERING**⁴, born —; md. April 6, 1738, his cousin Eunice Pickering, widow of Joseph Neal, youngest child of No. III.

(d) **EDWARD PICKERING**⁴, born —; md. March 12, 1724, Hannah Going, or Gowing, of Lynn, and removed to Norfolk Co., Mass.

(e) **JOSEPH PICKERING**⁴, born —; md. June 4, 1733, Sarah Symonds.

(f) **MARY PICKERING**⁴, born —; md. Jan. 16, 1734, William Reeves.

VII. **SARAH PICKERING**³, born Sept. 7, 1668; died before 1698; md. John Buttolph, who is said to have been the son of John and Hannah (Gardner) Buttolph. He married second, Priscilla —, to whom, July 2, 1713, was granted administration on her husband's estate, he dying May 10, 1713, aged 51 (gravestone).

Priscilla, widow of John Buttolph, married second, July 25, 1722, Deacon Simon Willard; she died June 21, 1731. Her children by first marriage were: Priscilla Buttolph, Sarah Buttolph, and William Buttolph.

John Pickering, father of Sarah, made his will May 3, 1694, in which he names "my grandchildren John and Hannah Buttolph," to whom he gives £10 each in money. The said Hannah, daughter of John Buttolph and first wife, Sarah Pickering, married March 27, 1710, Nathaniel Osgood, son of John and Hannah (Abbot) Osgood, who was born in Andover, Mass., Jan. 6, 1687, removed to Salem, Mass., where he married, and died in 1756.

VIII. **WILLIAM PICKERING**³, born Nov. 11, 1670; administration granted his widow Hannah, April 3, 1723; "being bound to sea," a master-mariner, he made his will Sept. 18, 1701; proved July 18, 1723. He married June 19, 1695,

Hannah Browne, dau. of James and Hannah (Bartholomew) Browne; she born in Salem, Mass., March 9, 1672; died before June, 1735.

In 1709 and 1711 Capt. William Pickering commanded the Province Galley for protecting the fisheries against the French and Indians.

They had eight children, namely:—

- (a) HANNAH PICKERING⁴, born Jan. 26, 1697; died Feb. following.
- (b) HANNAH PICKERING⁴, born July 6, 1699; died aged 6 mos.
- (c) WILLIAM PICKERING⁴, born Aug. 8, 1700.
- (d) JAMES PICKERING⁴, born Feb. 4, 1701; md. Thankful Hill, and died soon after. She married second, Rev. Joseph Champney, of Beverly, Mass.
- (e) SARAH PICKERING⁴, born Jan. 23, 1703; died May 3, 1711.
- (f) HANNAH PICKERING⁴, born July 8, 1708; md. Adoniram Collins, son of Adoniram and Mary (Ward) Collins.
- (g) ELIZABETH PICKERING⁴, born Jan. 5, 1712; died Oct. 11, 1797; md. Abraham Watson.
- (h) MARY PICKERING⁴, born Dec. 18, 1715; died Feb. 20, 1804; md. first, — Ellis; md. second, Nov. 2, 1747, Warwick Palfray, son of Warwick and Elizabeth (Hunlock) Palfray; she md. second, for his third wife, Nov. 17, 1757, Capt. Jonathan Gardner, son of Abel and Sarah Gardner.

IX. ELIZABETH PICKERING³, born July 7, 1674; md. first, Samuel Nichols; she md. second, Feb. 22, 1698, James Browne, brother of the wife of her brother William.

Child by Nichols was:—

- (a) ELIZABETH NICHOLS⁴, born —; md. Dec. 8, 1715, Thomas Brewer.

Children by Browne were:—

- (b) JOHN BROWNE⁴, b. —; md. April 2, 1728, Susanna Masury, and had eleven children, of whom Sally married Dec. 3, 1761, for his second wife, Chantrell Collins, whose daughter, Sally Collins, married, July 9, 1785, for his first wife, Abner Goodhue, who by his second wife, Frances Bott, had a son Abner, born Jan. 6, 1800, who married June 30, 1828, Lucy Osgood (Luscomb). (See Appendix, Luscomb Family, No. 34.)
- (c) WILLIAM BROWNE⁴, born —; killed by a shark while attempting to escape by swimming from a French vessel, where, during the French war, he was held a prisoner. He married Dec. 13, 1733, Mary Frost, dau. of William and Elizabeth (Searl) Frost; she born Dec. 2, 1713, and died April 11, 1794. They had four children, of whom William, born Oct. 27, 1733, died Sept. 3, 1812; md. first, March 16, 1755, Mercy White; md. second widow Phebe Carlton (Ganson), of Andover, Mass.; md. third, Jan. 13, 1807, Mary Orne Collins, dau. of Adoniram and Hannah (Pickering) Collins, and granddaughter of Capt. William Pickering (No. 6); hence second cousin.

X. HANNAH PICKERING³, born July 2, 1677; died —; md. first Daniel King, son of Ralph and Elizabeth (Walker) King; he born in Lynn, Mass., Oct. 1, 1669; md. second, June, 1701, Nathaniel Beadle, son of Samuel and Hannah (Lemon) Beadle; he born March 29, 1669; died before 1705; md. third, Oct. 29, 1706, Richard Palmer, son of Richard and Mary (Gilbert) Palmer; he born Dec. 6, 1675.

Children by King were:—

- (a) RALPH KING⁴, born Dec. 9, 1695; died before 1712.

He was at Raleigh in 1712, and was killed by a shark while attempting to escape by swimming from a French vessel, where, during the French war, he was held a prisoner. He married Dec. 13, 1733, Mary Frost, dau. of William and Elizabeth (Searl) Frost; she born Dec. 2, 1713, and died April 11, 1794. They had four children, of whom William, born Oct. 27, 1733, died Sept. 3, 1812; md. first, March 16, 1755, Mercy White; md. second widow Phebe Carlton (Ganson), of Andover, Mass.; md. third, Jan. 13, 1807, Mary Orne Collins, dau. of Adoniram and Hannah (Pickering) Collins, and granddaughter of Capt. William Pickering (No. 6); hence second cousin.

- (b) JANE KING^s, born April 14, 1698; md. Benjamin Tout, of Boston, a mariner. "Nov. 29, 1722, Benjamin Tout, Boston, mariner and wife Jane, late Jane King, one of the daus. of Daniel King, late of Lynn, dec'd, convey to Ebenezer Burrill, all our right in estate of s^d Daniel King, lying near the dwelling house of s^d Burrill known as Smith hill." — *Essex Deeds*, Vol. 42, p. 109.

Child by **Beadle** was: —

- (c) HANNAH BEADLE^s, bapt. July 5, 1702.

Children by **Palmer** were: —

- (d) MARY PALMER^s, bapt. Oct. 5, 1707.

- (e) SARAH PALMER^s, bapt. July 2, 1710; died young.

- (f) LYDIA PALMER^s, bapt. May 4, 1729, in adult age.

"Jan. 28, 1707, Hannah, a minor, daughter of the late Nathaniel Beadie & Hannah, (which Nathaniel was son of Samuel Beadle), aged 5 years, guardianship granted Richard Palmer, (whose wife Hannah was formerly the wife of s^d Nathaniel.)" — *Probate Rec.*, Vol. 9, p. 118.

Hannah, widow of Samuel Beadle, and mother of Nathaniel, made her will March 29, 1729, proved July 25, 1736, in which she bequeaths to Hannah, daughter of her son Nathaniel, 5s., besides what she formerly gave to her father, Nathaniel Beadle.

3. EDWARD FLINT^s, born about 1638; died May 23, 1711; md. Oct. 20, 1659, Elizabeth Hart.
4. ELIZABETH FLINT^s, born about 1640; md. — Woodis, and resided in England.
5. MARGARET FLINT^s, born about 1642; md. — Goodwin.
6. THOMAS FLINT^s, born about 1644–5; died May 24, 1721; md. June 12, 1677, Elizabeth Johnson, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Maverick) Johnson.
7. HANNAH FLINT^s, born about 1647; md. Jan. 18, 1668–9, Joshua Ward, son of Miles Ward, the emigrant, and wife Margaret (Uggs) dau. of William Uggs, of Pokethorp, near Norwich, Eng.

Miles Ward, the emigrant, came from Erith, in Kent, Eng., a few miles below London, with said wife Margaret; he died in Virginia, March 3, 1650, at which date his wife was living.

Joshua Ward was born April 25, 1641; he was one of the crew of the ketch "Providence," John Grafton, master, which was cast away on a rock in the West Indies. He escaped a watery grave then, but found it about 1677 or 1678, being lost in a shallop while fishing. (*Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.*, Vol. II. p. 207.)

Children were: —

- I. JOSHUA WARD^s, born Jan. 16, 1669; administration on his estate granted his mother Hannah, then a widow, Nov. 30, 1680.
- II. HANNAH WARD^s, born in 1671; died before 1727; md. June 24, 1697, Eleazer Moses, son of Henry and Remember (Giles) Moses; he born March 23, 1672–3; died in 1718. They had five children (see Appendix, Moses Family, No. 7).
- III. MILES WARD^s, born March 11, 1673–4; died Aug. 20, 1764; md. first, Sept. 16, 1697, Sarah Massey, dau. of John and Sarah (Wells) Massey; she born July 25, 1669, and died Nov. 20, 1728; md. second, Sarah Ropes, dau. of

William and Sarah (Ingersoll) Ropes; she born Jan. 9, 1683; died Feb. 7, 1768. Her brother, John Ropes, married the daughter of Elizabeth Flint, No. 13.

Children by first wife were:—

- (a) JOSHUA WARD⁴, born Aug. 15, 1699; died Dec. 29, 1779; md. first, April 27, 1722, Sarah Trevett, of Marblehead, Mass., and had four sons and three daughters; md. second, widow Lydia Hawkes (Burrill), and had one son; md. third, Ruth Woodward, of Gloucester, Mass., who died June 5, 1787, aged 73. No issue.
- (b) JOHN WARD⁴, born Nov. 27, 1701; died Sept. 4, 1703.
- (c) MILES WARD⁴, born April 18, 1704; died June, 1792; md. first, Jan. 3, 1728, Elizabeth Webb, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Phippen) Webb; she bapt. Dec., 1709; died April 13, 1737, and had eight children (see Appendix, Webb Family, continued, No. 10); md. second, Oct. 10, 1737, Hannah Hathorne (Derby), widow of Benjamin Hathorne, and daughter of Samuel³ and Hannah (Young) Derby; she born in 1705; died Oct. 28, 1796.
By this marriage there were eight children, and Mr. Ward had eight by his first marriage, and she had two by her former marriage; hence eighteen children in the whole family. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 15.)
- (d) JOHN WARD⁴, born July 7, 1707; md. first, Sept. 17, 1734, Hannah Higginson, dau. of Nathaniel and Hannah (Gerrish) Higginson; she born Nov. 8, 1712. They had five children.
He md. second, Sept. 14, 1758, Martha Batter, dau. of Edmund and Martha (Pickman) Batter; she born Sept. 21, 1712; died Oct. 12, 1787. No issue.
- (e) EBENEZER WARD⁴, born April 10, 1710; died March 3, 1791; md. Oct. 23, 1735, Rachel Pickman, dau. of Benjamin and Abigail (Lindall) Pickman; she born July 20, 1717; died Jan. 7, 1789. They had ten children.

IV. MARY WARD³, born —; md. Nov. 20, 1701, Adoniram Collins, son of James Collins, of Salem, Mass., and first wife, name unknown; he born about 1675; administration on his estate granted his widow, Mary, April 3, 1721. James Collins, his father, sailed in 1685 from Salem for Barbadoes, and never returned.

Children were five, all baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., namely:—

- (a) HANNAH COLLINS⁴, bapt. May 7, 1704; died young.
- (b) ADONIRAM COLLINS⁴, bapt. June 16, 1706; md. Hannah Pickering, dau. of William and Hannah (Browne) Pickering (see No. 2, 6th child).
- (c) JAMES COLLINS⁴, bapt. April 18, 1708; md. Mary Becket, dan. of John and Susan (Mason) Becket; she born July 23, 1712; died June 13, 1790; she was sister to Susanna Becket, who married John Babbidge. (See Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 11.)
- (d) JOHN COLLINS⁴, bapt. July 2, 1710.
- (e) MARY COLLINS⁴, bapt. Nov. 8, 1713.

V. A daughter³, born —; md. — Pitman.

SECOND GENERATION.

Ensign EDWARD FLINT² (No. 3), son of William¹ and Alice (Williams) Flint, born about 1638; made his will May 3, or 23, 1711; proved July 31, 1711, in which he names wife Elizabeth, sons David and Benjamin, to all of whom he gives his real estate in Brickkilnfield, Claybrook, and on Forest River Creek, etc. To his daughters Elizabeth Dean, Hannah Orring, Sarah Willard, Deborah Lee, Abigail Holloway; and grandsons Joseph, Edward, and Samuel Flint, to each of them he gives forty poles land in Goldthwaith field.

To his kinsman, John Bullock, he gives four acres in South Field, "being in y^e hands of my sister Alice Pickering."

He married, Oct. 20, 1659, Elizabeth Hart, dau. of John and Mary Hart, of Marblehead, Mass.

Children were:—

8. **JOHN FLINT**², born March 26, 1660; April 18, 1690, took the freeman's oath; in 1670 received a legacy of forty shillings from John Kenney.
9. **WILLIAM FLINT**², born Aug. 12, 1661.
10. **THOMAS FLINT**² (Ensign), born Feb. 1, 1662; took the freeman's oath April 18, 1690.
11. **DEBORAH FLINT**², born in 1672; died April 3, 1763; md. Thomas Lee, of Boston, who was born in 1673, and died July 16, 1766. Both are buried in Copps Hill Burial-ground, Boston, Mass., in a tomb erected by Mr. Lee, which bears the following inscriptions:—

"Here Lies

Mr. THOMAS LEE

The Founder of this Tomb, who after a long and useful life,
died on the 16th of July

1766

Anno Ætatis 93.

Give up his Body to death his Soul to Immortality.

Also

The Body of his wife **DEBORAH LEE**

Daughter of **EDWARD FLINT** of Salem,

who departed this life the 3^d of April

A. D. 1763

Anno Ætatis 91."

12. **BENJAMIN FLINT**², born in 1669; died Dec. 28, 1732, aged fifty-three years; administration on his estate granted to Thomas Lee, of Boston (husband of his sister Deborah), and Benjamin Gerrish (husband of his sister Abigail), Jan. 2, 1732. Value of his estate was £1,682. He was probably unmarried.

13. JOSEPH FLINT³, born about 1671; died in 1711; md. June 22, 1698, Experience Derby.

14. ELIZABETH FLINT³, born about 1673; md. March 16, 1696, Joseph Dean, son of George and Elizabeth Dean, of Salem, Mass., where he was born about 1671, and died in 1709.

She united with the First Church of Salem, Mass., July 12, 1702, when she was baptized as his wife.

Children were:—

(a) DESIRE DEAN⁴, bapt. June 13, 1703; md. Dec. 8, 1720, Thomas Blaney.

(b) MARY DEAN ⁴	} twins,	{ md. Dec. 13, 1723, John Ropes, son of William and Sarah (Ingersoll) Ropes; died Sept. 14, 1763.
and		
(c) ELIZABETH DEAN ⁴	} born Sept. 5, 1705;	{ md. Feb. 6, 1729, Samuel Field.

(John Ropes born Jan. 24, 1694; died Jan. 21, 1792.)

(d) JOSEPH DEAN⁴, bapt. May 22, 1709.

15. DAVID FLINT³, born about 1675; died in 1736; md. Jan. 4, 1696, his cousin, Ruth Flint, No. 19.

16. HANNAH FLINT³, born —; md. Robert Orange, of Boston, and was a widow in 1740.

17. ABIGAIL FLINT³, born —; md. first, June 9, 1704, Edward Holloway; md. second, Benjamin Gerrish, son of Benjamin, who was born Jan. 17, 1683, was appointed governor of Bermuda, and died in 1755.

18. SARAH FLINT³, born —; md. Jacob Willard.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. THOMAS FLINT² (No. 6), son of William¹ and Alice (Williams) Flint, born about 1644–5; died May 24, 1721 (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.). Administration on his estate was granted his eldest son, Joseph, Oct. 22, 1719. The estate was divided between the widow, whose one third equalled £209 real, and £47:16:8: personal property; Joseph, eldest son, £119:18 real, £23:18:4: personal property; daughters Ruth, Rebecca, Mary, Elizabeth, Sarah, Abigail, £5:14: real, and £11:19:2: personal property, each. Daughter Sarah Grafton received no real estate, but £11:19:3: personal property. In the inventory is mentioned 3½ acres in Goldthwaith field; 2½ acres in Brick-kiln-field; 20 acres at Jeggles Spring; 809 acres in the middle of Southfield; 4 acres at Forest River; 3 acres at Claybrooke, etc. He married, June 12, 1677, Elizabeth Johnson, dau. of Lieut.

John and Elizabeth (Maverick) Johnson, of Charlestown, Mass.; she born Nov. 16, 1659; died before Feb. 16, 1711.

Her grandfather was William Johnson, the emigrant, who was born in England a little after 1600, and died in Charlestown, Mass., Dec. 9, 1677, to which colony he came in 1633 with his wife, Elizabeth Jefts, of Boston, she carrying John Johnson, Elizabeth's father, in her arms to Charlestown, Mass., where he resided until his twenty-sixth year, and where he was made a free-man, and received from the town an allotment of land, and married his first wife, and where his first child was born. In the autumn of 1658 he removed with his family to Haverhill, Mass., where he became an early proprietor, deacon, tithingman, selectman, juror, lieutenant, and moderator. In 1691 he was the representative to the Provincial Legislature. He married three times: first, Oct. 15, 1656, Elizabeth Maverick, dau. of Elias and Anne Maverick, of Charlestown, Mass.; second, March 3, 1674-5, Sarah, widow of John Gillow; third, Sept. 8, 1680, Catherine (Skipper) Maverick, his sister-in-law, widow of John Maverick, his first wife's brother. By wife Elizabeth he had issue eight children, of whom Elizabeth was the second child; by wife Sarah he had issue two children,—twins; by wife Catherine he had issue one child,—a son.

On the same day that he married his third wife his son Thomas, brother to the said Elizabeth, married his first wife, Ruth,—thus a double wedding.

Aug. 29, 1708, when he was seventy-six years old, he, together with his third wife, his daughter-in-law Ruth, and with many others, was slain by the Algonquin and St. Francis Indians from Canada, under command of French officers; for at that date a war was waging between France and England and their respective colonies.

Ruth Johnson in her girlhood had been a captive among the Indians, who, March 15, 1696-7, murdered her father and mother, and her two sisters. Twelve years afterwards, Aug. 29, 1708, when she herself was slain, she held in her arms her only child, Lydia, aged six years and six months, born in the second year of her marriage. Strange to say, the child escaped the tomahawk of the Indians, and grew up to womanhood, and in her twenty-fifth year married Ebenezer Gile, whom she long survived, dying in Enfield, N. H., at the age of seventy-four, leaving issue. Her mother lies buried in Haverhill, Mass., in the old cemetery called Pentucket. The headstone bears the following inscription:—

"Ruth y^e wife | of Thomas Johnson | died Aug. y^e | 29 1708 & in y^e | 21 year of her | age | Once w^t y^e Indians | In Captivity | After twas her lot | In their hands to dy | ."—*New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Register*, Vol. 33, p. 87.

Capt. Thomas Flint was wounded in the swamp-fight, Dec. 19, 1675. His children, by Elizabeth (Johnson) were nine, all born in Salem, Mass., namely:—

19. RUTH FLINT^s, born May 11, 1679; died before 1736; md. Jan. 4, 1699, her cousin, David Flint, No. 14, son of Ensign Edward and Alice Flint.

20. TIMOTHY FLINT², born Sept. 30, 1680.
 21. JOHN FLINT², born June 21, 1684.
 22. WILLIAM FLINT², born July 17, 1685; lived in Reading, Mass.; died Oct. 2, 1736.
 23. JOSEPH FLINT², born Aug. 11, 1687; living in 1731; md. Nov. 16, 1710, Rachel Sibley.
 24. ELIZABETH FLINT², bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass. Oct., 1689, and probably married Peter King.
 25. ABIGAIL FLINT², born Aug. 8, 1692.
 26. MARY FLINT², bapt. Sept., 1694; died between 1721 and 1724; md. Sept. 5, 1717, Nathaniel Ropes, son of John and Lydia (Wells) Ropes, brother to Samuel Ropes, who married Lydia Neal (see Appendix, Neal Family, No. 27). He married second, Oct. 8, 1724, Abigail Pickman, dau. of Benjamin and Abigail (Lindall) Pickman; she born Feb. 9, 1706; died in 1775.
 27. REBECCA FLINT², bapt. Jan. 29, 1698; died ^{Nov. 5, 1760.} about 1725; md. Sept. 23, 1720, John White, son of John White and Elizabeth (Metcalf) Ives, widow of Thomas Ives (see Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 2); he ^{and d. Aug. 1, 1783.} born Dec. 24, 1696. ^{John White married second, Nov. 4, 1726, Desire Shallote. They had 8 children, last b. June 28, 1779.}
 28. SARAH FLINT², bapt. Feb. 2, 1700-1; md. Sept. 23, 1720, William Grafton, on the same day that her sister Rebecca was married to John White.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. JOSEPH FLINT³ (No. 12), son of Ensign Edward² (WILLIAM¹), and Elizabeth (Hart) Flint; born about 1671; died in 1711; administration on his estate was granted his widow, Experience, Jan. 5, 1712; inventory being £1,268:13:3.

His estate consisted of a dwelling-house, a warehouse, a stable, lands, one half of another warehouse, and a wharf; an Indian maid-servant named Betty; 98½ oz. of plate; 3 silver tankards, and provincial bills. He was a master-mariner of great repute, and very wealthy for those days. He became a freeman April 18, 1690, when his name was recorded as Joseph flint.

(The colonists never wrote F as a capital, but always two small letters, thus: ff.)

March 12, 1705, he sold to Jonathan Raymond, of Beverly, Mass., his Spanish boy, Pito, ten years of age, for a slave. He married, June 22, 1698, Experience Derby, dau. of Roger Derby, and his first wife, Lucretia; she born in Ipswich, Mass., Dec. 18, 1671; died Jan. 1, 1714 (see Appendix, Derby Family, No. 3);

she made her will Dec. 10, 1714, in which she gave her son Joseph, in consideration that he had a double portion of her estate, £40, her son Edward £250.

"To my servant, John Berry, as a testimony of my regard to him, £30."

"To Rev. Nicholas Noyce, and Rev. Geo. Corwin £5, each."

"To such widows of this town as my good friend, Mr. Geo. Corwin, shall judge most necessary, £10."

"I give towards the building and supporting the Alms House £10."

"To my daughter Mary the residue of my estate."

John Higginson, Francis Willoughby, and brother-in-law, Benjamin Flint, executors.

Children were :—

29. JOSEPH FLINT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 7, 1699; died in 1746.

30. JONATHAN FLINT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 3, 1702; died Feb. 17th following.

31. MARY FLINT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., April 4, 1703.

32. EDWARD FLINT⁴, born in Salem, Mass., in 1705.

THIRD GENERATION.

DAVID FLINT³ (No. 15), son of Ensign Edward² (WILLIAM¹), and Elizabeth (Hart) Flint; born about 1675; died in 1736; a feltmouger. He married Jan. 4, 1696, his cousin, Ruth Flint (No. 19), dau. of Thomas and Elizabeth (Johnson) Flint; she born May 11, 1679; baptized as his wife, Aug. 2, 1702; died before 1736.

He made his will July 26, 1736; proved Nov. 3, 1736, in which he mentions daughters Ruth Metcalf (the Compiler's great-grand-mother), Huldah Holman, Hannah Crafts, and grandson John Flint, giving to each one seventh of his estate; sons William and David were executors.

Children were :—

33. RUTH FLINT⁴, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 2, 1702; died young.

This First Church of Salem, where so many of the members of the different families of this history were baptized, and attended divine service every Sunday, was Congregational, and was a single room, 20

feet long, 17 wide, and 12 feet in the height of its posts, with a gallery over the front door. Its frame of oak was brought from England about 1634, and erected near Witch Hill; subsequently it was removed to the grounds in the rear of Plummer Hall, Essex Institute, Salem, where in 1886 it still remains.

34. RUTH FLINT⁴, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., May 28, 1703; died in 1766; md. Oct. 31, 1728, Thomas Metcalf, son of Joseph and Ruth (Smith) Metcalf, of Ipswich, Mass.; he born in Ipswich, Mass., about 1705; died Sept., 1749 (great-grandparents of the Compiler; see Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 12).

They had five children, namely:—

- (a) HANNAH METCALF⁵, born about 1730-1; died July 20, 1758; md. March 20, 1750, Capt. Israel Davis, her first cousin, son of Nathan and Mary (Davis) Davis; Mary Davis, the mother, being the dau. of Elder James and Abigail (Metcalf) Davis.
- (b) RUTH METCALF⁵, born about 1732; died —; md. Nov. 12, 1788, Capt. John Symonds, who in the Revolutionary War was captain of a company of foot soldiers; in this capacity he contracted the small-pox, and died July, 1778. They had seven children. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 19.)
- (c) ABIGAIL METCALF⁵, born about 1734; died before 1787; md. first, May 20, 1756, Capt. William Tozzer; and second, April 6, 1770, published in marriage to James Cutler. No issue. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 20.)
- (d) DESIRE METCALF⁵, born about 1736; md. March 10, 1769, her first cousin, John Holman, son of John and Huldah (Flint) Holman; apparently no issue (5th child of No. 34, Flint Family).
- (e) JOSEPH METCALF⁵ (great-grandfather of the Compiler; born in Salem, Mass., in 1743; died there Feb. 11, 1806, æt. sixty-three (Salem Gazette); yeoman. He married first, March 3, 1767, Catherine Neal, dau. of Robert and Catherine (Daland) Neal; she baptized, together with her twin brother Robert, in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 15, 1740-1; died in Salem, Mass., in 1773-4. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 44.)

They had one child, Ruth Metcalf, born Nov. 6, 1770; died Aug. 24, 1837; md. June 27, 1795, *Stephen Driver, Jr.*, No. 51, Driver Family; and Family XVII. Joseph Metcalf md. second, Jan. 30, 1779, Jane Brisco (Salem Gazette), of whom nothing is known. No issue. He md. third, Feb. 29, 1797, Deliverance Pendrick (Town Record), she living in 1798. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 22.) No issue.

35. HULDAH FLINT⁴, bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 27, 1706; died —; md. Jan. 27, 1704, John Holman, son of Samuel and Sarah Holman, of Marblehead, Mass.; he bapt. in the First Church there, March 11, 1703-4, where his wife, Huldah, was admitted as a member March 3, 1727-8. His parents came from Barnstable, Eng., and settled in Marblehead, Mass.

Children were:—

- (a) HULDAH HOLMAN⁵, bapt. March 6, 1725-6; died young.
- (b) SARAH HOLMAN⁵, bapt. Nov. 3, 1728.
- (c) HULDAH HOLMAN⁵, bapt. Oct. 15, 1732, in the First Church of Salem, Mass.

(d) HANNAH HOLMAN⁵, bapt. Feb. 27, 1786-7, in the First Church, of Marblehead, Mass.

(e) JOHN HOLMAN⁵, bapt. Feb. 4, 1788; md. March 10, 1769, his cousin, Desire Metcalf, dau. of Thomas and Ruth (Flint) Metcalf. Apparently no issue.

June 11, 1737, Thomas Blaney bought of John Holman of Marblehead, and wife Huldah, 116½ poles, east southerly on a way to y^e great pasture, north on David Flint's division (Deeds, Vol. 13, p. 108).

36. HANNAH FLINT⁴, born about 1708; bapt. and admitted to the First Church of Marblehead, Mass., July 14, 1723; md. Oct. 4, 1722, Thomas Crafts, son probably of John and Eleanor Crafts, of Marblehead, Mass. They removed to Salem after 1727.

Children were:—

(a) THOMAS CRAFTS⁵, bapt. Sept. 22, 1723, in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass.

A Colonel Thomas Crafts commanded the regiment of artillery called the "Massachusetts State Train," raised for the defence of the town of Boston, from June, 1777, to Dec., 1778, whom the Compiler failed to learn was one and the same person as the abovesaid Thomas Crafts.

(b) SAMUEL CRAFTS⁵, bapt. May 8, 1726, in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass.

(c) JOHN CRAFTS⁵, bapt. July 27, 1729, in the First Church of Salem, Mass.; died young.

(d) JOHN CRAFTS⁵, bapt. Aug. 28, 1733, in the First Church of Salem, Mass.

37. WILLIAM FLINT⁴,

and

{ twins, bapt.
Dec. 7, 1712

38. JOHN FLINT⁴,

md. July 25, 1734, Lydia Hayward, dau. of Samuel; she bapt. Aug. 16, 1713.

died about 1736; md. June 2, 1734, Jane Silsbee, dau. of Nathaniel and second wife Elizabeth (Pickering).

39. DAVID FLINT⁴, bapt. March 27, 1715; md. Hannah —.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOSEPH FLINT³ (No. 23), son of Thomas² (WILLIAM¹), and Elizabeth (Johnson) Flint; born Aug. 11, 1687; living in 1731; md. Nov. 16, 1710, Rachel Sibley.

Children were:—

40. JOSEPH FLINT⁴, bapt. July 15, 1716.

41. MERCY FLINT⁴, bapt. July 15, 1716.

42. ELIZABETH FLINT⁴, bapt. July 14, 1717.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOHN FLINT⁴ (No. 38), son of David³ (THOMAS², WILLIAM¹), and Ruth (Flint) Flint; bapt. Dec. 7, 1712; died about 1736; md. Jan. 2, 1734-5, Jane Silsbee, dau. of Nathaniel² (Henry¹), Silsbee and second wife Elizabeth (Pickering). (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 22), and granddaughter of Jonathan and Jane (Cromwell) Pickering.)

Child was:—

43. JOHN FLINT⁵, bapt. Oct. 10, 1736, after his father's death; died before Feb. 4, 1767; md. Sept. 29, 1756, Susanna Webb, dau. of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb; she born about 1726; died after 1768.
-

FOURTH GENERATION.

DAVID FLINT⁴ (No. 39), son of David³ (THOMAS², WILLIAM¹), and Ruth (Flint) Flint; bapt. March 27, 1715. He removed to Marblehead, Mass., where he married, date not ascertained, Hannah —, who was admitted to the covenant of the First Church there, Aug. 10, 1735.

Child was:—

44. HANNAH FLINT⁵, bapt. Sept. 7, 1735.

"May 19, 1737, William Flint, Salem, Mass., brickmaker, of the first part; David Flint, Marblehead, fisherman, of the second part; Thomas Crafts, Salem, fisherman, and wife Hannah, of the third part; Thomas Metcalf, Salem, fisherman, and wife Ruth, of the fourth part; John Holman, Marblehead, fisherman, and wife Huldah, of the fifth part; and Jane Flint, a minor, of the sixth part, . . . stand seized as tenants in common, in a tract of land in Salem, called the Brickkiln, set out to them as heirs of Ruth Flint, as her part of that part of the estate of Thomas Flint, deceased, which was set out to the widow of said Thomas Flint as her dowry. . . .

"June 4, 1737, Thomas Blaney bought of David Flint, of Marblehead, and wife Hannah, eight to nine poles north of John Flint's division east on John Metcalf's." — *Deeds*, Vol. 13. p 92.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JOHN FLINT⁴ (No. 43), son of John⁴ (DAVID³, THOMAS², WILLIAM¹), and Jane Silsbee, bapt. Oct. 10, 1736, after his father's death; died before 1767; md. Sept. 29, 1756, Susanna Webb, dau. of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb; she born about 1726; died after 1728. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 7.)

Children were: —

45. **JOHN FLINT**⁵, born Jan. 1, 1757; died Dec. 28, 1813 (gravestone); md. Margaret Cheever, dau. of Peter and Margaret (Ives) Cheever; she born Nov. 5, 1761; died — (see Appendix, Ives Family, No. 17).

Children were: —

- (a) **ABIGAIL FLINT**⁷, born —; md. Nov. 8, 1807, Timothy Harraden.
- (b) **JONATHAN FLINT**⁷, born Aug. 12, 1788; died at sea, Nov. 27, 1825, unmarried.
- (c) **JOSEPH FLINT**⁷, born in 1790; died Oct. 28, 1817.
- (d) **SUSANNA FLINT**⁷, born —.
- (e) **MARY FLINT**⁷, born —.
- (f) **SALLY FLINT**⁷, born —.
- (g) **PRISCILLA FLINT**⁷, born —.

46. **SUSANNAH FLINT**⁵, born in 1759; died Nov. 19, 1848; md. Josiah Parsons, of Newmarket, N. H.

47. **JONATHAN FLINT**⁵, born —; died at sea.

48. **JOSEPH FLINT**⁵, born —; died at sea.

THE HERRICK FAMILY.

THIS very ancient family of the Ericks ("Einric signifieth ever rich and powerful"), according to John Nichols, in his "History of Leicestershire," derive their lineage, according to tradition, from Erick the Forester, a great commander, who raised an army to oppose the invasion of William the Conqueror, by whom he was vanquished; but afterwards employed to command that prince's forces; and in his old age returned to his house in Leicestershire, where his family were free tenants of their own land, two virgates (about fifty acres, — a fourth part of a hide), which they held on the payment of an annual quit-rent to the king of a pound of pepper.

THE HERRICKS IN ENGLAND.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. **EYRICK**¹, of Great Stretton, time of Henry III. (1216), and of Houghton, co. Leicester, Eng., in the reign of Henry III. (1216-1272).

He was a lineal descendant of Eric the Forester.

Children were:—

2. **ALAN EYRICK**²; md. —, and had Robert Eyrick.
3. **HENRY EYRICK**²; md. —.

SECOND GENERATION.

HENRY EYRICK² (No. 3), son of — Eyrick¹, of Great Stretton, Eng.; md. —.

Child was:—

4. **JOHN EYRICK**³; md. —.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN EYRICK³ (No. 4), of Stretton, son of Henry² (— Eyrick¹); md. —.

Children were:—

5. ROBERT EYRICK⁴, born —; died March 28, 1385, at an advanced age.
6. ADELENA EYRICK⁴.

FOURTH GENERATION.

ROBERT EYRICK⁴ (No. 5), son of John³ (HENRY², — EYRICK¹), of Stretton, Eng.; md. Joanna —.

Children were:—

7. WILLIAM EYRICK⁵, knight, from whom descended the Eyricks of Houghton.
8. ROBERT EYRICK⁵ (commonly called Robert de Stretton), LL.D., and chaplain to Edward the Black Prince; consecrated Bishop of Lichfield Sept. 26, 1330; * sometimes called Bishop of Chester; founded a charity at Great Stretton, Eng., 1378; died March 28, 1385, at Haywoode; buried in St. Andrew's Chapel, in Lichfield Cathedral; will dated March 19, 1384; proved April 10, 1385 (Nichols, *Hist. of Leicestershire*, Vol. II. p. 580).
9. JOHN EYRICK⁵, of Stretton.
10. ADELENA EYRICK⁵.

FIFTH GENERATION.

Sir WILLIAM EYRICK⁵ (No. 7), son of Robert⁴ (JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and wife Joanna, Knight of Stretton, was commissioned to attend the Prince of Wales on his expedition into Gascony, 1355. From him descended:—

11. ROBERT EYRICK⁶, of Houghton Hill, about 1450; had wife Agnes.

* "It was not unusual in that age to find a deficiency of literature among ecclesiastics in the highest stations, and we learn from Godwin that this objection was made against Robert de Stretton, that a special mandate being issued from the pope to prevent his consecration, he had to go to Rome to be examined of the pope, who referred him to the archbishop of Canterbury, who refused to consecrate him. His royal master, however, still continued his support and protection, and at length he was consecrated, Sept. 26, 1330. The bishop's want of learning was in a great degree atoned for by gratitude and munificence." — NICHOLS, *Hist. of Leicestershire*.

SIXTH GENERATION.

ROBERT EYRICK⁶ (No. 11), son of Sir William⁵ (ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), md. Agnes —; he was of Houghton about 1450.

Children were ten, two of whom were: —

12. ROBERT EYRICK⁷, died without issue.
 13. THOMAS EYRICK⁷, died 1517; lived in Houghton, Eng.
-

SEVENTH GENERATION.

THOMAS EYRICK⁷ (No. 13), son of Robert⁶ (Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and Agnes Eyrick; settled in Leicester, and is the first of the name on the books of the corporation, being recorded as a member of that body in 1511. He died in 1518; will made Aug. 25, 1517; proved at Leicester, in which he mentions three children and wife; buried in St. Martin's Church, Leicester.

Children were eleven, three of whom were: —

14. NICHOLAS EYRICK⁸, buried April 8, 1562, at St. Martin's Church, Leicester; Mayor of Leicester in 1552. Freeman there in 1535. He married, and had John and Thomas, probably more; Thomas living in 1580.
 15. JOHN EYRICK⁸, born in 1513; died April 2, 1589.
 16. ELIZABETH EYRICK⁸, named in her father's will.
-

EIGHTH GENERATION.

JOHN EYRICKE⁸, or **HEYRICK** (No. 15), son of Thomas⁷ (ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), born in 1513; died in Leicester, Eng., April 2, 1589; md. Mary Bond, dau. of John Bond, Esq., of Little Bromwich, in Warwickshire; both buried in St. Martin's Church, Leicester, in that part called "Heyrick's Chancel," where the following epitaph is to be found on their tombstone: —

"Here lieth the body of JOHN HERRICK, late of the Parish, who departed this life 2^d of April, 1589, being about the age of 76. He did marry Marie, daughter of John Bond of Wardende in the countie of Warwicke, Esquire, and did live with the said Mary, in one house, full fifty-two years; and in all time, never buried man, woman, or child though they were some times twenty in household. He had issue by said Marie, 5 sonnes, and 7 daughters. The said John was Mayor of this Town in anno 1559, and again in anno 1572. The said Marie departed this life y^e 8th day of December, 1611, being of the age of 97 years. She did see before her departure, of her children, and her children's children, and their children, to the number of 142." (The H, it was stated by Mr. Nichols, from whose history of Leicestershire this account was taken, was prefixed to the name by the engraver of the stone.)

They had twelve children, all born in a house standing in the Market Place, at the corner of Cheapside, Leicester, Eng., where Mr. Eyricke carried on the business of ironmonger, namely:—

17. **URSULA EYRICKE** ⁹, born in Leicester, 1532; died in 1614; buried at St. Vedast; md. Laurence Hawes, of London, a merchant. They had seven children.
18. **AGNES EYRICKE** ⁹, born —; md. William Davie. They had two children.
19. **ROBERT EYRICKE** ⁹, born in 1540; died in Leicester, Eng., June 14, 1618; buried in St. Martin's Church, Leicester; thrice mayor—in 1584, 1593, and 1603—of his native place; and its representative in Parliament in 1588. He was by trade an ironmonger, and successor of his father in business. He prefixed H to his name. He married, in 1567, Elizabeth Manby, who was buried in St. Martin's Church, Leicester, Sept. 5, 1626. They had eleven children, namely: 1. a son ¹⁰; 2. Tobias ¹⁰; 3. Elizabeth ¹⁰; 4. Mary ¹⁰; 5. a dau. ¹⁰; 6. a dau. ¹⁰; 7. Ruth ¹¹; 8. Frances ¹¹; 9. Martha ¹¹; 10. Dorcas ¹⁰; 11. Hester. ¹⁰
20. **MARY EYRICKE** ⁹; born —; md. 1603, Sir Thomas Bonnet, knt., Lord Mayor of London in 1603.
21. **NICHOLAS HERRICK** ⁹, of London, a goldsmith at a house in West Cheap; born Eyricke in 1542; md. in 1582, Juliana Stone, dau. of William Stone, Esq., of Segenhoe, Bedfordshire, Eng. They had seven children, namely: 1. William ¹¹; 2. Mercie ¹⁰; 3. Thomas ¹⁰; 4. Nicholas ¹⁰; 5. Anne ¹⁰; 6. Robert ¹⁰; 7. William ¹⁰.
22. **ELIZABETH EYRICKE** ⁹, born —; md. John Stanford, Esq., Recorder of Leicester, and Member of Parliament for same, 1593 and 1596. They had seven children.
23. **HELEN EYRICKE** ⁹, born —; md. — Holden, or Holldin, or Houldin. They had five children.
24. **THOMAS EYRICKE** ⁹, born —; died in 1623, without issue; md. —.
25. **CHRISTIANA EYRICKE** ⁹, born —; md. George Brookes, Esq. They had seven children.
26. **JOHN EYRICKE** ⁹, bapt. Dec. 5, 1559; alderman; md. Susanna —, of Leicester, Eng., who died in 1613. They had two children,—Thomas, and Susanna, who md. — Nurse.
27. **WILLIAM EYRICKE** ⁹, born in 1557; bapt. Dec. 9, 1562; died March 2, 1652–3.
28. **ALICE EYRICKE**, bapt. July 19, 1564; md. — Hinde. They had eight children.

NINTH GENERATION.

Sir WILLIAM HEYRICKE (No. 27), as he changed his name on removing to London, in 1574, son of John⁸ (THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICKE¹), and Mary (Bond) Eyricke, born in 1557 or 1558; died, according to his tombstone in the floor of the church of St. Martin, Leicester, "8th, March, 1652, aged 96," Knight of Beaumanor, co. of Leicester, Eng., in the history of which county it is stated that "He went to London to reside with his brother Nicholas, a considerable goldsmith and banker in Cheapside;" that in 1590 he became a goldsmith and banker (or money-lender) himself, his address being "gooldsmyth at the Rose in Cheapside." In 1613 he purchased a spacious house in Wood Street, and he had also a house in Richmond, and another in Westminster, and "resided considerably at Court," says the same work, compiled by John Nichols. In 1595 he bought the estate of Beaumanor from the agents of Robert, Earl of Essex. In 1621 Sir William paid £34 : 14 : 9 fee-farm rent for Beaumanor, being parcel of the Queen's jointure. From 1601 to 1630 he was a Member of Parliament; knighted by James I. in 1605; and was attached to the court of Queen Elizabeth, by whom he was sent on an embassy to the Ottoman Porte; and on his return was rewarded with a lucrative appointment in the Exchequer. He married at the Church of St. Thomas the Apostle, London, Eng., May 6, 1596, Joan May, dau. of Richard May, Esq., of Mayfield, Sussex, and Mary (Hilderson), of Devonshire, who was born in 1558; died March 2, 1652, aged ninety-five years. Her brother, Hew May, Esq., was one of the grooms of the privy chamber of King James I.

Sir William Heyricke* was the father of Henry Herrick, the emigrant, who was the sixth child, there being twelve in all, namely:—

29. WILLIAM HEYRICKE¹⁰, born Aug. 18, 1597; "entered in 1613, under the tuition of Mr. Christopher Wren, a gentleman commoner of St.

* "It appears by a decree in the Court of Exchequer, dated May 11, 1650, that Sir William Heyricke had been greatly plundered in the years 1644 and 1645, and that many of his papers and evidences had then been stolen. His fortune was also much impaired during that calamitous period, particularly by a purchase which he made during the time of the Commonwealth, which he was never able to get completed." — NICHOLS, *Leicestershire*, Vol. III. p. 155.

John's College, Oxford. On quitting Oxford he presented to his college a fine picture of the Holy Lamb (not now to be found there), with this inscription:—

ECCE AGNUS DEI,
Ex dono Gulielmi Herrick, filii Gulielmi Herrick,
Equitis, de Beaumanor, in Comitatu Leicestriae.

He was afterwards of the society of Lincoln's Inn. In 1623 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Humphrey Fox, of the city of London, esq. In 1633, he was appointed by King Charles I. to repair the castle of Leicester, and place it in a proper state of defence. He succeeded to the patrimonial estate of Beaumanor, where, Feb. 9, 1661, he obtained a license from Archbishop Juxon for himself, his wife and children, and four other invalids, to eat meat during Lent, with this proviso, that 6s. 8d. be paid to the poor's box of the parish."

He died Feb. 14, 1671. She died Oct. 27, 1683, aged 84. They had issue one son, William. — NICHOLS, *Hist. of Leicestershire*, Vol. III. p. 157.

30. ROBERT HEYRICKE¹⁰, born Feb. 7, 1598; died April 12, 1639; entered at Christ Church, Oxford, Eng.; intended for the bar, but preferring the army, was afterwards a lieutenant, and died at Wesel.
31. RICHARD HEYRICKE¹⁰, born May 25, 1600; entered at Oxford in 1617, a commoner of Christ Church, where, Oct. 19, 1619, he took the degree of B. A., and June 26, 1622, of M. A. Jan. 14, 1624, was admitted to a fellowship of All Souls on the especial recommendation of King James. In 1626 he obtained the reversion of the wardenship of Christ's College in Manchester, then worth £700 a year, on the recommendation of Archbishop Laud, and in consideration of his father's faithful services, and relinquishing a pension of £100. He continued warden till his death, Aug. 6, 1667. He married, first, Helen Corbet, dau. of Thomas, of Spranston, co. Norfolk, Esq., and had children, Thomas, Mary, and Elizabeth. He married, second, Anna Maria Hale, of London, widow, daughter of Erasmus Bretton, merchant, at Hamburgh, by whom he had a son John, who died young, and a daughter Helena. His widow died in 1675, aged fifty-seven years (*Ibid.*, Vol. III. p. 159).
32. THOMAS HEYRICKE¹⁰, born May 3, 1602; died at the age of one year.
33. ELIZABETH HEYRICKE¹⁰, born May 6, 1608; died young.
34. HENRY HEYRICKE, born at Beaumanor, Eng., Aug. 16, 1604; the emigrant to America. He made his will Nov. 24, 1670; proved in Salem, Mass., March 28, 1671; md. Editha Laskin, of Salem, Mass., before 1632.
35. ROGER HEYRICKE¹⁰, born —; 1624 and 1625 was at Christ Church, Oxford, Eng., under the tutorage of Thomas Case. In 1630 he addressed a letter to his father. The rest of his life is not known.
36. MARY HEYRICKE¹⁰, born in 1608; died Sept. 20, 1628, aged 20 years.
37. MARTHA HEYRICKE¹⁰, born —; md. in 1634, John Holmstead, Esq., of Lynn, Norfolk, Eng.
38. JOHN HEYRICKE¹⁰, born in 1612; living in 1653.

39. DOROTHY HEYRICKE ¹⁰, born —; md. in 1628 Rev. James Lancashire, and had a child, baptized June 18, 1629.

40. ELIZABETH HEYRICKE ¹⁰, born April 15, 1615; md. June 25, 1633, Beaumont Ficht, Esq., of Beaumanor, Eng. They had a child, Elizabeth, baptized the last of May, 1634.

(This family, as above given, is to be found in the "History of Leicestershire," Vol. III., by John Nichols.)

THE HERRICKS IN AMERICA.

TENTH GENERATION.

HENRY HERICKE ¹⁰, or **HERRICKE**, or **HERRICK** (No. 34), son of Sir William⁹ (JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICKE¹), and Joan (May) Heyricke, born at Beaumanor, Eng., Aug. 16, 1604; named Henry by command of Prince Henry, eldest son of James I. of England; died in Beverly, Mass., in 1671; husbandman. He emigrated first to Virginia, where his father was long interested in trade; thence he removed to Salem, Mass., where in 1636 he had forty acres of land granted him. He was made a freeman Oct. 19, 1630.

"25th. of the 11th. moneth, 1635, mem. the lymits of a fearme of ground granted to Henry Herick between two & three acres of ground lying on the North side of Jeffry Macyes Cove, bounded by the Rock on one side and Woolyton's River on the other (now Porter's river). In 1636 he had 40 acres granted him at Jeffrye's Creek, now Manchester." — *Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.*, Vol. IV. p. 91. The Rock referred to is an immense bowlder still standing.

June 28, 1653, he addressed a letter to his brother John in England, stating that his crops had been poor, "and next the warres between England and Holland make us be debarr'd of the Dutch Trayd & our Goods brought in by the English very deere." He mentions having buried one of his servants, — a great loss to him; and requests to have a sermon book sent him, as there was "not a Preacher in near twenty mille of us." This letter was accompanied by a present of "a small Rowll of Tobac," "I was forced to borrow it my own was all gone." — *Herrick Family*.

July 4, 1667, Henry Herrick, Ephraim, Joseph, and Elizabeth Herrick are dismissed from the First Church of Salem, Mass., to

church at Bass River, at which place Henry Herrick purchased several farms at Birch Plains and Cherry Hill.

He married Editha Laskin, dau. of Hugh and Alice Laskin, of Salem, Mass., who was born in 1614; living in 1674. He and wife Editha were among the thirty who founded the First Church of Salem, Mass., in 1629; and also among the first to found the First Church in Beverly, Mass., in 1667.

"It is agreed with Henery Hereck that he is to keep Richard Lambarts Daughter from y^e first of y^e 10th m^o 1657, to the first of the 2^d m^o 1658 and he is to haue allowed him in clothes and other waies the Just sume of fve pound A year : : pd. him 5£ : 16^s 3^d rest to him this 4th 2^{mo} : 1659, 17th 1^d." — *Essex Inst. Hist. Collects.*, Vol. IX. p. 208.

Henry Herrick made his will Nov. 24, 1670; proved March 28, 1671. His children were nine, all baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., namely:—

41. THOMAS HERRICK¹¹, born —; died without issue; md. Hannah Ordway. A farmer. He was mentioned in his father's will by the gift of all his "wearing apparell except my best coat, and that 20 acres of land where his house standeth."
42. ZACHARIE HERRICK¹¹, bapt. Dec. 25, 1636; died in Beverly, Mass., May 20, 1695; a farmer; md. in 1653 Mary, dau. of Richard Dodge, of Beverly, Mass., who was born in 1632, and died Aug. 18, 1718. They had eight children. By the will of his father he received one hundred acres of land in Birch Plains.
43. JAMES HERRICK¹¹, bapt. Dec. 11, 1637 (*Essex Inst. Hist. Collects.*, Vol. VI. p. 228).
44. EPHRAIM HERRICK¹¹, bapt. Feb. 11, 1638; died in Beverly, Mass., Sept. 18, 1693; md. July 3, 1661, by Major Denison to Mary Cross, of Salem, Mass. By the will of his father received a part of the Cherry Hill farm, and his best coat. They had eight children.
45. HENRY HERRICK¹¹, bapt. Jan. 16, 1640; died June, 1702; md. first before 1665, Lydia Woodbury, and had five children; md. second, in 1690, Sarah, widow of John Goddins, of Gloucester, Mass. No issue. He received from his father, by his will, "my dwelling house, out-houseing, orchard & tillage land meadows pasture & wood land with my stock." This son was sole executor.
46. JOSEPH HERRICK¹¹, bapt. Aug. 6, 1645; died in Salem, Mass., Feb. 4, 1717-18; md. first, Feb. 7, 1666-67, Sarah, dau. of Richard Leach, of Salem, Mass., and had four children; md. second, about 1677, Mary Endicott, of Salem, Mass., and had nine children; md. third, June 28, 1707, Mary, widow of Capt. George March, of Newbury, Mass.

He was constable of Salem during the witchcraft delusion, under which influence he for a while continued; but "his strong and enlightened mind led him out of it," says Upham, in his "Salem Witch-

craft;" "then he became a leader in the party that rose against the fanaticism." He received by the will of his father a part of his Cherry Hill farm.

47. ELIZABETH HERRICK¹¹, bapt. July 4, 1646-7; died May 6, 1727; md. Jan. 20, 1672-3, Philip Fowler, son of Joseph and Martha (Kimball) Fowler. (See Appendix, Kimball Family, No. 7.) They had nine children, namely:—

1. PHILIP FOWLER¹², born Nov. 16, 1675; died June 1, 1676.
2. ELIZABETH FOWLER¹², born Feb. 11, 1677.
3. MARY FOWLER¹², born about 1680; md. John, son of Thomas Treadwell and Sarah (Titcomb), of Ipswich, Mass.
4. MARTHA FOWLER¹², born May 15, 1681; died young.
5. JOSEPH FOWLER¹², born Aug. 7, 1683; md. first, Sarah, dau. of John and Mary (Rush) Bartlett, of Newbury, Mass.; md. second, in Salem, Mass., Aug. 22, 1722, Widow Mary Trask; md. third, in Boxford, Mass., Dec. 31, 1728, Abigail, widow of Samuel Perley; md. fourth, in Wenham, Mass., Oct. 31, 1730, Hannah, widow of Samuel Sedden, who survived him and married third, in Ipswich, Mass. (intention of), Dec. 13, 1746, to Jabez Blackledge, of Sheepscot, Me.
6. JOHN FOWLER¹², born Jan. 12, 1684; publishment of marriage to Mercy Jacob, April 20, 1713, dau. of Ensign Thomas and Mary (Whipple) Jacob.
7. BENJAMIN FOWLER¹², born April 19, 1687; md. Jan. 24, 1709-10, Mary Briar; md. second, in Rowley, Mass., Aug. 5, 1717, Sarah Warner; md. third, in Newbury, Mass., May 26, 1731, Mary Thoria; md. fourth, in Ipswich, Mass. (intention of), July 23, 1756, Anna, widow of James Foster, of Ipswich, Mass.
8. MARTHA FOWLER¹², born April, 1690; intention of marriage, Aug. 19, 1710, to Lieut. John March, of Salisbury, Mass., son of Col. John and Jemima (True) March, of Newbury, Mass.
9. PHILIP FOWLER¹², born Oct., 1691; md. July 5, 1716, Susanna Jacob, dau. of Joseph and Susanna (Symonds) Jacob. ("Fowler Family," by M. A. Stickney.)

48. JOHN HERRICK¹¹, bapt. May 26, 1650; died in Beverly, Mass., in 1680; md. March 25, 1674, Mary Redington. He received by his father's will part of the Cherry Hill farm.

49. BENJAMIN HERRICK¹¹, bapt. —; died about 1677, without issue.

All the grandchildren of this family can be found in the "Herrick Genealogy," by Dr. L. C. Herrick.

ELEVENTH GENERATION.

JOHN HERRICK¹¹ (No. 48), son of Henry¹⁰ (Sir WILLIAM⁹, JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and Editha (Laskin) Herrick, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., May 25, 1650; died in Beverly, Mass., in 1680; a farmer; md. March 25, 1674, Mary, dau. of John and Mary (Gould) Redington, of Topsfield, Mass.,

who was born May 4, 1651. She married second, March 13, 1682, Robert Cue, of Salem, Mass.

Children were : —

50. JOHN HERRICK¹², born April, 1675; died Jan. 29, 1722-3.

51. MARY HERRICK¹², bapt. in First Church of Beverly, Mass., Sept. 23, 1677.

52. DANIEL HERRICK¹², born March, 1679; died Oct., 1679.

TWELFTH GENERATION.

JOHN HERRICK¹² (No. 50), son of John¹¹ (HENRY¹⁰, Sir WILLIAM⁹, JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹) and Mary (Redington) Herrick, born April, 1675; died in Beverly, Mass., June 29, 1722-3; md. Jan. 15, 1696-7, Sarah, dau. of Samuel and Mary (Witt) Kimball, who was born Sept. 6, 1678. (See Appendix, Kimball Family, No. 28, 2d child.)

Children were : —

53. JOHN HERRICK¹³, born March 2, 1698-9; died in Beverly, Mass., in 1777; md. in 1720 Mehitabel Tarbox, whose children were: 1. Mary¹⁴; 2. John¹⁴; 3. Sarah¹⁴; 4. John¹⁴; 5. Samuel¹⁴; 6. Benjamin¹⁴; 7. Robert¹⁴. (See Herrick Genealogy, p. 306.)

54. ROBERT HERRICK¹³, born May 2, 1701; md. Sept., 1722, Mary Edwards.

55. DANIEL HERRICK¹³, born Aug. 17, 1706.

56. JONATHAN HERRICK¹³, born Aug. 10, 1710.

THIRTEENTH GENERATION.

ROBERT HERRICK¹³ (No. 54), son of John¹² (JOHN¹¹, HENRY¹⁰, Sir WILLIAM⁹, JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and Sarah (Kimball) Herrick, born in Beverly, Mass.; removed in 1725 to Manchester, Mass.; re-removed to Canterbury, Conn., May of 1751, where he is believed to have died, date unknown; published in Wenham, Mass., Sept. 15, 1722, to Mary Edwards, of Wenham, Mass., certificate of which was given Oct. 8, 1722; she daughter of John, Jr., and Sarah Edwards (?), who was baptized in 1702 by Rev. Robert Ward, at whose house they were married Oct. 16, 1722.

Robert Herrick admitted to full communion in the church at Wenham, Mass., Aug. 11, 1723. They had one child, and probably more, namely: —

57. JOHN HERRICK¹⁴, born in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 7, 1723; bapt. by Rev. Robert Ward there, Sept. 29, 1723.

FOURTEENTH GENERATION.

JOHN HERRICK¹⁴ (No. 57), son of Robert¹³ (JOHN¹², JOHN¹¹, HENRY¹⁰, Sir WILLIAM⁹, JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and Mary (Edwards) Herrick, born in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 7, 1723; removed with his father to Manchester, Mass., in 1725, thence in 1751 to Canterbury, Conn. He married first, "at his father's house," in Wenham, Mass., Nov. 20, 1744, by the Rev. John Warren, *Rachel Driver*, dau. of Solomon and Rachel (Bishop) *Driver*, both of Manchester, Mass. (Town Records). She born in Gloucester, Mass., June 23, 1719, and died in Canterbury, Conn., July 18, 1752 (Canterbury Records). See Driver Family, No. 33. He married second, in Canterbury, Conn., March 28, 1753, Elizabeth Smith, sister of Sarah (Smith), wife of his cousin, John Herrick, who settled in Canterbury, Conn., in 1765.

Children by **Rachel** were: —

58. ROBERT HERRICK¹⁵, bapt. in First Church, Manchester, Mass., April 20, 1746; died young.
 59. RACHEL HERRICK¹⁵, bapt. in First Church, Manchester, April 12, 1747; died young.
 60. MARY HERRICK¹⁵, bapt. in First Church Manchester, April 17, 1748.
 61. JOHN HERRICK¹⁵, bapt. Feb. 10, 1750; md. March 28, 1771, Mary Butts.

Children by **Elizabeth** were: —

62. ROBERT HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., Oct. 17, 1754; md. there Alice Bond.

They had five children, namely: —

- I. AMASA HERRICK¹⁶, born —; md. — Worth, and settled in Pa.
- II. ELIZABETH HERRICK¹⁶, born —.
- III. ABIGAIL HERRICK¹⁶, born —; md. Elijah Town, and settled in Ill.
- IV. JONAS HERRICK¹⁶, born Aug. 2, 1790; died March 16, 1869; settled in McDonough, Chenango Co., N. Y.; md. Nov. 12, 1818, Melinda Whipple, and had eight children.
 - (a) NANCY W.¹⁷, b. Oct. 18, 1819.
 - (b) BERTHIER¹⁷, b. June 6, 1822.

- (c) HARRIET ATWOOD¹⁷, b. July 11, 1824.
 - (d) HERBERT PIERRE¹⁷, b. Dec. 6, 1827; md. Julia Bushnell; left as a missionary to the Gaboon Mission, Africa, Nov. 10, 1853, where he died of fever Dec. 20, 1857.
 - (e) MARTHA MELISSA¹⁷, b. April 1, 1830.
 - (f) HESTER LOUISA¹⁷, b. Feb. 14, 1836.
 - (g) MARY LUCETTA¹⁷, b. Sept. 30, 1836 (Herrick Genealogy, p. 310).
63. DANIEL HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., Dec. 5, 1755; md. there Olive Fiske, dau. of Nathan and Olive Fiske. They had two children, namely: —
- I. DANIEL HERRICK¹⁶, b. —; md. Olive Adams.
 - II. ORRA HERRICK¹⁶, b. —; md. Calvin Barstow, and had six children: John¹⁷; Olive¹⁷; Luther¹⁷; Harriet¹⁷; Adeline¹⁷; Susanna¹⁷ (Herrick Genealogy).
64. MARY HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., April 18, 1757; md. James Adams, and had Amos¹⁶ and John¹⁶.
65. ELIJAH HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., July 10, 1761.
66. JOSEPH HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., June 27, 1763.
67. ANNA HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., April 28, 1765.
68. RUTH HERRICK¹⁵, born in Canterbury, Conn., July 12, 1767.

FIFTEENTH GENERATION.

JOHN HERRICK¹⁵, Jr. (No. 61), son of John¹⁴ (ROBERT¹³, JOHN¹², JOHN¹¹, HENRY¹⁰, Sir WILLIAM⁹, JOHN⁸, THOMAS⁷, ROBERT⁶, Sir WILLIAM⁵, ROBERT⁴, JOHN³, HENRY², — EYRICK¹), and Rachel (*Driver*) Herrick, bapt. in the First Church of Manchester, Mass., Feb. 10, 1750–1; md. in Canterbury, Conn., March 28, 1771, Mary Butts, dau. of Josiah and Elizabeth Butts, who was born July 31, 1751 (Canterbury Records).

Children were: —

69. RACHEL HERRICK¹⁶, born —; md. Samuel Dyer, and had two children, namely: —
- I. HERMAN DYER¹⁷ (Rev.), born —; md. Mary Ann Isaam, and had two children, Mary Eliza, and Samuel Henry. (Rev. H. Dyer was addressed concerning his record without success.)
 - II. ELIZA MARY DYER¹⁷, born —.
70. CALVIN HERRICK¹⁶, born in Canterbury, Conn., 1775; md. Sophia Barber, and had four children, namely: —
- I. SUSANNA HERRICK¹⁷; md. Welcome E. Tinkham.
 - II. ANNA HERRICK¹⁷, born —.
 - III. PAMELIA HERRICK¹⁷, born —.
 - IV. JOHN HERRICK¹⁷, born —; md. Alathea Cary. No issue.

THE IVES FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

THE family of **EVE** or **IVE**, according to Lyson in his "Environs of London," were of great antiquity in the Parish of Pancras, "which parish extended to the foot of Gray's Inn Lane, and included part of a house in Queen's Square; being bounded on the north by Islington, Hornsey, and Finchley; on the west by Hampstead; on the south by St. Giles-in-the-Fields; on the east by St. James, Clerkenwell."

"In the year 1252, King Henry III. granted leave to Thomas Ives to enclose a portion of the highway adjoining to his mansion at Kenteffetonne. In the church is the tomb of Robert Eve, and Laurentia, his sister, daughter of Francis, son of Thomas Eve, clerk of the crown." There is no date. (Environs of London, Vol. III. p. 351.)

In the Index of Tenants in the time of William the Conqueror, who held their lands immediately from the king, ordinarily styled Tenants in Capite, is to be found "Iveri, Rogerus de." "This Roger was the son of Walerande Ivery, who held one knight's fee in the bailewic of Tenechebrai in Normandy, by the service of cup-bearer to the Duke, and three other fees within the said liberty, as also eight fees and a half of the town and castle of Ivery. He enjoyed the same honour of cup-bearer to William, king of England, which his father had done to him while Duke of Normandy.

He married Adeline, eldest daughter of Hugh de Grentemaisnil, one of the great men who attended William Duke of Normandy in his expedition into England, and fought bravely by him; and was rewarded by the Conqueror with many honorable employments, and large possessions, receiving upwards of 100 manors, principally in Leicestershire and Northamptonshire.

Within two years after the Conquest he was appointed one of the assistants, with Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, and William Fitz-

Osbern, in the general administration of justice throughout the realm. In the year following he was made sheriff of the county of Northamptonshire. His name is to be found on the Roll of the church of Dives." (See Appendix.)

"In the seventh year of William Rufus, being grown old and infirm, he took upon him a religious habit, and died within six days after, leaving five sons and six daughters, — the said Adeline being the eldest, as aforesaid. She died second of Henry I., at Fencotl, Co. Oxon, Eng.

His fourth son was named Ivo, to whom his father's possessions descended, on account of the three eldest sons dying without issue.

This Ivo, in the third year of the reign of Henry I. took up arms in defence of the title of Robert, Duke of Normandy, and laid waste the country wherever he had power. For this misdemeanor being fined a considerable sum, he applied for protection to Robert, Earl of Mellent, one of the King's chief counsellors. But despairing of the royal favor, he resolved, by the advice of the Earl, upon a pilgrimage to Jerusalem; and borrowing of him 500 marks, he mortgaged to him his possessions in England, by way of security, for fifteen years, on condition that his young son should marry the daughter of the Earl of Warwick, who was brother to the Earl of Mellent, and that then his lands should be restored to him.

To these conditions the Earl procured the assent of the King, and confirmed the agreement by an oath. But Ivo dying while pursuing his journey, his son was disappointed of both his wife and inheritance. But a great part of his lands are said to have been given back to his successor, Hugh de Grentesmainil, whose sole daughter married the Earl of Millent's grandson." — BRIDGES, *History of Northamptonshire*.

"Rogerus de Ivery's family descended from one Rudolph, half-brother to Richard, the first Duke of Normandy, who killed a monstrous bear when hunting with his brother the Duke, was by him for that service rewarded with the castle of Ivery, on the river l'Evre, and from thence the title comes of de Ivreio." — KENNETT, *Parochial Antiquities*, Vol. I. p. 79.

"Iver or Ives means a chief or leader (Gaelic and Welsh). Ives, (Danish,) zeal, fervor. Ives from a town named St. Ives, in the co. of Huntingdon, England." — ARTHUR, *Derivation of Names*.

"Ivar or Iver familiar to Scotchmen in Mac Iver, came to the

Normans from the northern lands whence they were sprung, and with them into England."

"Ivo de Usegate was Bailiff of York, 1271. Now we have the simple Ive or Ives, and the more patronymic Iverson, Iveson, Ivison and Ison." — BRADSLY, *English Surnames*, p. 34.

"John Ives, of Saham Tonye, was seized of a manor called Woohhows Manor, with its appurtenances in Ovington, Saham Tonye, Braddenham, Carbrooke, Tottington, Traxton, and Stanforde in the county of Norfolk, and after his death the premises descended to Thomas Ives as son and next heir.

The said John died Oct. 23, 10th Elizabeth" (1568), "at Saham, and the said Thomas Ives was nineteen years and nine months old and no more." — HENRY F. WATERS, *Gleanings from English Records about New England Families*.

"Thomas Ives, yeoman, has livery &c. Fryers Thornes, Swaffham, co. Norfolk, formerly belonging to John Ives his father." — *Ibid*.

"Thomas Ives, yeoman, Ickford, Bucks, 30 Oct. 1653, proved 21 Feb. 1653; wife Joane, sons Thomas, John, Robert, daughter Joane Coales, niece, Joane Lee, dau. of Lettice Lee; John, Thomas, William, Zachary, and Anne Ives, Richard and Thomas Coles, my seven g—ch'n; Richard Coles, and John Phillips, overseers." — *Ibid*.

"W^m Ive, 27 July, 14, Charles I." (1639), "by deed gave £4, to buy 8 black cloth gowns to be given the first week in Lent to 8 poor widows dwelling in said burough of St. Leonard's. Mr. W^m Ives, July 27, 1638, by deed gives to 12 poor persons in two-penny bread every Friday in Lent annually — taken from the returns made to Parliament for the county of Leicester, pursuant to an act passed in the 28th. year of the reign of Geo. III. for the procuring all returns of all charitable donations for the benefit of poor persons in the parishes within that part of Great Britain called England." — BLOMEFIELD, *Norfolk*.

The emigrant to America of the name of Ives connected with this history was **THOMAS IVES**, who in 1668 was an inhabitant of Salem, Mass.; for in that year he was in court in Salem, Mass., when he gave his age as twenty years; hence he was born in 1648, somewhere in England, as yet unknown, and died in Salem, Mass., in 1695, as administration on his estate was granted his widow, Elizabeth, who was his second wife, Aug. 5, 1695. He was a "Slaughterer," as found in the settlement of his estate. He married first, in New England, April 1, 1671, aged 23 years, Martha Withe, concerning whom nothing more is at present known. He married second, about 1679, Elizabeth Metcalf, dau. of Thomas and Abigail Metcalf; she born in Ipswich, Mass., about 1645.

She married second, six months after the death of her husband, Jan. 16, 1696, John White. (See Appendix, No. 2, Metcalf Family.)

Thomas Ives was baptized and received to the full communion of the First Church of Salem, Mass., Nov. 7, 1682.

Probate } "Aug. 5th, 1695: Administration of all & singular, the goods, chattels, rights
V-39 } and credits of Thomas Ives, late of Salem, dec'd. Granted unto Elizabeth Ives,
Relict of the dec'd, she having given bond with sureties for her administration, according

to Law, to exhibit an Inventory, at or before the first Munday in October, and to Render an account of her administraction at or before the first Munday in October 1696."

Probate } "An Inventory of the Estate of Thomas Ives late of Salem, dec'd, as it was
V-39 } apprizd by vs whose names are vnder written this 26th Septemb^r 1695.

Impr^e — A house and land mortgaged to M^r Turner £95
£ s.
It. — in y^e northern room below, a bed & furniture 2 : 5:
It. — a press for clothing: a little trunk & a square trunk: all old 14.
It. — 8 old chears 8^s/ — 2 small guns or carbines 16^s: a looking glass 1 : 10.
It. — a pr. brass hand Irons — warming pan — Iron dodgs & candlestick 1 : 14.
It. — 14 books, most of them small — & erthern ware 1 :
It. — in the chamber of the northern end — a bed & trundle bed with bed steads 1 : 10
It. — a cupboard 8^s in y^e Southern Chamber, 7 chears 10^s 18.
It. — a chest of drawers & Lining in it: a chest & round table 6 : 00.
It. — a bed & coverlet, bolsters and pillows 1 : 15.
It. — his wearing apparel 2 : 10.
It. — in y^e Southern lower room: old wheels, old cradle & other old things 10.
It. — a powdering tubb & other old barels & things 04.
It. — in the kitchen chamber — a Sadle & pillion, kneading troughs & Iron things 1 : 15
It. — in the kitchen — a Jack, 2 spits a pr. of Dogs & hand irons & fender 1 : 10.
It. — 2 hakes, a smoothing Iron & bellows: brass kettle & 2 Iron pots 1 : 15.
It. — pewter 45^s: mortar & pestle & some erthern ware 4^s 2 : 09
It. — tooles in the shop & old pails 6^s: a mair 25^s 1 : 11
It. — 3 swine & 5 small pigs 1 : 15.
It. — 2 old seves — 2 bushels, a pr cards, a Jug, erthern pott 6.
It. — Mony 42^s 2 : 2
£33 : 3

Apprizd by VS. this 26th Sept. 1695.

JOHN RUCK
SAM'L PHILLIPS."

"Essex SS : Before the Hon^{ble} Barth^o Gedney Esq^r Judge of Probate of wills &c. for s^d county, September the 30th 1695, Elizabeth Ives, administx made oath that the above is a true & perfect Inventory of the Estate of Thomas Ives, late of Salem dec'd to the best of her knowledge and if more comes to her knowledge she will also ad the same — sworne.

Attest. STEPH. SEWALL Reg^r."

Probate } "Sept. 7, 1696. Elizabeth Ives, alias White, Adm^x. of the Estate of Thomas
V. 100 } Ives late of Salem. dec'd, praying further time for Rendring the Acc't of her
admincōn alledging that their are many debts yet outstanding & other matters that cannot yet be effected & a further time is granted her til the first Munday in February next."

"SALEM, Feb. 1, 1696. 7.

(On File) "To the Hon^d Bartholomew Gedney Esq^r Judge of the Probate of Wills & granting letters of Administration for Essex.

The Humble Request & petition of Eliz. White Administratrix to the estate of Tho: Ives late of Salem, Essex. Dec^d & late wife to s^d Ives, sheweth —

That whereas she s^d Eliza. White hath made dilligant Inquiry into s^d Estate, both of what it oweth & what is owing to s^d Estate, that may be gotten & finds that s^d estate is insolvent & not sufficient to sattisfie the just claymes that is due from it.

She doth pray your Hon to grant out a Commission of Insolvance to some meet persons to take knowledge of all honest claymes to s^d estate that so a due proportion may be made of s^d estate to all lawfull creditors so y^{or} petition^r will be obliged to your Hon^r & will ever pray &c.

ELIZ. WHITE."

Probate } "By vertue of a commission Directed to vs. the vnder subscribers. By y^e
 VI. 12 } Hon^{ble} Barth^o Gedney Esq^r Judge of county probate and granting Administra-
 cons within y^e county of Essex, for Receiving & examining the claimes of the severall
 creditors to the estate of Mr. Thomas Ives slaughterer, late of Salem, dec'd, whose estate
 is represented Insolvent By Elizabeth Ives Administratrix thereto, wee therefore having
 appointed our place & times of meeting, have received the following claims, viz. :—

William Browne Esq. by Book & acct.

Signed	£20 : 4 : 4	wh ^h proportion is	1 : 11 : 4
Benj. Browne Esq.	17 : 10 : 2	" " "	1 : 6 : 4
Geo. Pordage as p ^r acct upon oath Before Justice Broomfield	9 : 4 : 11	" " "	14 : 4.
Maj ^r John Higginson	2 : 19 : 0	" " "	4 : 6
Mr. William Hirst	6 : 8 : 0	" " "	10 : 10.
Mrs. Swinerton, wid ^o of			
Dr. Swinerton p ^r book	14 : 19 : 3	" " "	1 : 18 : 3.
Capt Anthony Chickley p ^r acct signed	7 : 2 : 0	" " "	10 : 11.
Zacheus Newmash, in mony	7 : 2 : 0	" " "	11 : 00
William Harris, in mony	1 : 5 : 0	" " "	1 : 2.
Jeremy Dowe, in mony	2 : 6 : 0	" " "	3 : 6.
John Browne, in mony	3 : 18 : 0	" " "	6 : 0
Joseph Quitler, in mony	15 : 0	" " "	1 : 2.
William Curtis Sen ^r as mony	5 : 8 : 5	" " "	8 : 4
John Gold	13 : 0	" " "	1 : 0
Capt Sam ^l Gardner	2 : 0 : 9	" " "	3 : 3
Philip English	4 : 11 : 11	" " "	7 : 0
	£105 : 9 : 9		£8 : 3 : 0

Commissioners { SIMON WILLARD
 { PETER OSGOOD
 { W^m. MURRAY

Allowed y^e Commissioners 30^s

Essex S.S. Eliza. Ives alias White Adm^x of the estate of Thomas Ives, late of Salem,
 dec'd, the acct of ther adm^{con} on s^d estate exhibited to the Hon^{ble} Barth^o Gedney, Esq.
 Judge of probate of wills &c. for s^d County. December 6th 1697. The s^d estate

Cred^r p^r the Real estate as p^r Inventory

Mortgaged to Mr. Turner £95 : 00 : 00

p^r the p^rsonall estate as p^r ditto £33 : 3 : 00

Yor Hon^r acct and Prays allowance for the following charges, payments & disbursements
 by her made since she accepted s^d Trust

The said estate Dr.

It : bond & letter of adm ^{con} & recording Inventory	s. d.
It : Commission of Insolvency 3 ^s Registring y ^e Comission & Report 8 ^s	9 : 0
It : allowed y ^e commission ^r 30 ^v an order to pay out y ^e estate in p ^r portion 18 ^d	4 : 6.
It : stating y ^e acct & recording the settlement	5 : 0
It : allowing y ^e acct : settling & deviding y ^e estate	10 : 0
It : a quietus 4 ^v allowed y ^e Adm ^x for her trouble 3 ^l b	3 : 4 : 0.
It : funerall charges about 70 ^s	3 : 10 : 0
It : pd. the Docter in his sickness	3 : 6 : 0
It : keeping 2 young children 2 y ^r to this time	12 : 0 : 0
	£25 : 0 : 0
Remains to Ballance y ^e p ^r sonall estate as above	8 : 3 : 0
	33 : 3 : 0

Which yeilds & makes about 18^s : 4^d p^r lb. and is proportioned as above."

Children of **Thomas** and **Martha (Withe) Ives** were : —

2. **ELIZABETH IVES** ², born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 12, 1672; died July 21, 1673.
3. **THOMAS IVES** , born in Salem, Mass., March 31, 1674; bapt. March, 1683; settled in Marblehead, Mass.
4. **DEBORAH IVES** ², born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 8, 1675; bapt. March, 1683, with her step-brothers, Joseph and John, in the First Church of Salem, Mass.

Children of **Thomas** and **Elizabeth (Metcalf) Ives** were :

5. **JOSEPH IVES** ², bapt. March, 1683.
6. **JOHN IVES** ², bapt. March, 1683.
7. A daughter ² (**ELIZABETH** ?), bapt. Dec. 4, 1687; md. Dec. 11, 1718, John Philpot, as his second wife.
8. **BENJAMIN IVES** ², born about 1692; bapt. Aug. 2, 1702, after his father's death; master-mariner; died in 1752; md. Jan. 2, 1717-18, Anne Derby.

Children of **John White** and **Elizabeth (Metcalf) Ives** were : —

9. **JOHN WHITE** ², born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 24, 1696; md. first, Sept. 23, 1720, Rebecca Flint, dau. of Thomas and Elizabeth (Johnson) Flint; she bapt. Jan. 29, 1698; died about 1725. He md. second, Nov. 4, 1726, Desire Shallote. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 26.)
10. **ABIGAIL WHITE** ², bapt. Aug. 9, 1702.

SECOND GENERATION.

THOMAS IVES ² (No. 3), son of Thomas ¹ and Martha (Withe) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., March 31, 1674; settled in Marblehead, Mass., where he married, — who, was not ascertained, — and had two sons, namely : —

11. **THOMAS IVES** ³, bapt. in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass., May 20, 1711.
12. **SAMUEL IVES** ³, bapt. in the same place Aug. 23, 1713; md. Nov. 21, 1737, Hannah Hodges.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. BENJAMIN IVES² (No. 8), son of Thomas¹ and Elizabeth (Metcalf) Ives; master-mariner and tanner; born in Salem, Mass., about 1692; bapt. in the First Church there Aug. 9, 1702, after the death of his father, at the same time with his half-sister, Abigail White. He died in 1752; will proved July 16th of that year; made June 19, 1752; Inventory £2,311 10s. 2½d.; md. Jan. 2, 1717-18, Anne Derby, dau. of Roger Derby and Elizabeth (Haskett) Derby; she born Dec. 10, 1695. (See Appendix, Derby Family No. 12.)

In 1734 Benjamin Ives bought of Benjamin and Joseph Very 62 acres of land in the vicinity of "Very's Plain."

In 1736 the committee of the proprietors of the common and undivided lands belonging to the Village (Salem) and Royal side (Beverly) proprietors sell Benjamin Ives 12 acres of land on "Verrey's Plain."

Will of Capt. Benj. Ives.

Probate Rec. } "In the name of God amen, this nineteenth Day of June Anno Domini XXX. — 249. } 1752, I Benjamin Ives of Salem in y^e County of Essex in N. England, Tanner. Being weak in body but of perfect mind & memory. Thanks be given to God, and calling to mind y^e immortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to Die. Do make & ordain this my last Will & testament. That is to say principally and First of all I give & Recommend my Soul into the hands of God that gave it, and my body to y^e earth to be Buried in Decent Christian burial at y^e Discretion of my Exec^r hereafter named: and as touching such worldly estate wherewith It hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give Demise & Dispose of y^e same In the following manner. Imp^r — I give to my beloved wife Anne Ives the use & Improvm^t of all my estate both Real & personal During her Natural life.

Item — I give to my son Benjamin Ives Forty pounds lawfull money to be paid at the Decease of my wife.

Item — I give to my two Grand Children (viz^t) Benjamin & Anna Ives, the children of my son Samuel Dec^d

Lastly — I constitute & ordain my s^d wife Anne Ives, sole Executrix of this my last will & testament Revoking & Disannulling all other & former wills, Legacies and Exec^{rs} by me before named willed or bequeathed, Rattifying & Confirming this & no other to be my last will & Testament.

In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand & seal y^e Day & year First within written

BENJAMIN IVES [Seal]

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced & declared By y^e s^d Benjamin Ives as his will & testament In presence of us JOSEPH BOWDITCH, JONATHAN GARDNER, ABRAHAM WATSON."

Children of **Capt. Benjamin** and **Anne (Derby) Ives** were nine, all born in Salem, Mass., namely: —

13. ANNE IVES³, born March 20, 1719; living in 1752.

14. BENJAMIN IVES², born Nov. 2, 1720; died Dec. 26, 1767; md. Oct. 12, 1743, Elizabeth Hale, dau. of Col. Robert and Elizabeth (Gilman) Hale, of Beverly, Mass.
15. SAMUEL IVES², born Dec. 22, 17(22?); died about Dec., 1750; md. July 4, 1745, Mary Berry.
16. ELIZABETH IVES², born July 5, 172-; md. Richard Lee, as his second wife; she md. second, date not found, Josiah Gilman, of Exeter, N. H., of whom Mr. Arthur Gilman, in his "Gilman Genealogy," makes no mention, although he records two Josiah Gilmans.
17. MARY IVES², born about 1728; died of consumption June 4, 1794; md. July 12, 1750, John Crowninshield, son of Clifford and Martha (Hillard) Crowninshield, and grandson of Dr. John Kasper Richter Von Kronenshelt and Elizabeth (Allen); he died June, 1777; master-mariner. (See Appendix, Crowninshield Family, No. 11.)

Children were:—

- (a) MARY CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born —; died June 6, 1832; md. Aug. 27, 1780, William Molloy.
- (b) ANNA CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born Jan. 19, 1753; died Aug. 9, 1830; md. March 1, 1774, Samuel Foote.
- (c) MARTHA CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born —; died April, 1822; md. first, Sept. 21, 1784, Benjamin Gale; md. second, Dec. 31, 1792, Thomas Palfray.
- (d) ELIZABETH CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born —; died July 31, 1833; md. Oct. 20, 1782, Joseph Moseley, whose son Joseph born Oct. 8, 1787; died July 17, 1825; md. Nov. 14, 1816, Martha Lang, dau. of William and Bridget (Derby) Lang; said Bridget being daughter of Samuel² (Samuel², Roger¹) Derby; she born March 13, 1752; died Oct. 12, 1842. (See Appendix, Derby Family No. 20, ninth child.)
- (e) ABIGAIL CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born in 1760; died Sept. 20, 1792 (grave-stone); md. May 5, 1782, Samuel Very⁵, son of Jonathan⁴ (Jonathan³, Samuel², Bridget¹, widow and emigrant), and Elizabeth (Beckford) Very; he born in 1759; died Jan. 21, 1832.

He married second, Sept. 26, 1793, Mary, widow of Robert Rantoul and dau. of Andrew Preston and Mary (Lambert). Andrew Preston, a native of Beverly, Mass., in the First Church of which he was baptized March 11, 1728, was son of Randall and Susanna Preston. Before his marriage he removed to Salem, Mass., where he died in 1799. Robert Rantoul was the emigrant, born in Fifeshire, Scotland, Jan., 1753; arrived in Boston, Mass., in 1769; a shipmaster; in 1782 he sailed for York River, Va., in the ship "Iris," from thence March 4, 1783, for Nantes, France. As the vessel after that date was never heard from, it is presumed that she foundered in the gale of March 20, 1783. He married Mary Preston Nov. 3, 1773; they had three children, namely:—

- I. ROBERT RANTOUL⁵, born Nov. 23, 1778; died at Beverly, Mass., Oct. 24, 1858; apothecary.
- II. SAMUEL RANTOUL⁵, born July 10, 1781; died at Bilboa, Spain, April 22, 1802.
- III. POLLY RANTOUL⁵, born July 22, 1783; died Nov. 15, 1836; md. May, 1808, Andrew Peabody, of Beverly, Mass., and had Andrew Preston Peabody⁶, who was Plummer Professor at Harvard College, and Mary Rantoul Peabody⁶, who md. John P. Lyman, of Portsmouth, N. H.

THE IVES FAMILY.

Emigrated from New Britain.
 Samuel Very, md. third, May 28, 1797, Martha Cheever, dau. of Peter and second wife, Martha (Osgood) Cheever (his first wife having been Margaret Ives, cousin to Samuel Very's first wife, Abigail); she bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., June 4, 1769.

Children of **Samuel and Abigail (Crowninshield) Very** were :

1. **SAMUEL VERY** ⁵, bapt. March 5, 1785; died April, 1813; md. Dec. 4, 1804, Alice Palmer, dau. of John ⁴ (John ³, John ², John ¹), and Hannah (Carnes) Palmer; she born in 1783. (See Appendix, Palmer Family, No. 20.)
2. **JOHN CROWNINSHIELD VERY** ⁵, bapt. March 6, 1785, together with Samuel; md. Feb. 28, 1813, Mary Dwyer, dau. of Edmund and Anna (Grant) Dwyer; she bapt. Aug. 16, 1788.
 He was a passenger on the ship "Margaret," of Salem, Mass., which on her passage from Naples to Salem was wrecked at sea, May 21, 1810. Fifteen persons were saved in her long-boat and brought to Marblehead, Mass., by Capt. Richard Pedrick. Mr. Very and thirty others were left on the wreck. Of these only three were saved and restored to their families, — Capt. Henry Larcom, of Beverly, Mass.; E. A. Irvine; and Mr. Very (Essex Inst. Coll., Vol. II. p. 36).
3. **ABIGAIL VERY** ⁵, bapt. July 27, 1788; md. July 25, 1811, Theodore Eames.
4. **JONATHAN VERY** ⁵, bapt. April 4, 1790; md. May 5, 1811, Susan Peabody.

Child by **Mary Preston** was :—

5. **WILLIAM RANDOLPH VERY** ⁶, bapt. at the East Church (Unitarian), Salem, Mass., July 29, 1794.

Children by **Martha Cheever** were :—

6. **ELIZABETH VERY** ⁶, born —; md. Sept. 28, 1826, John Felt.
7. **NATHANIEL VERY** ⁶, born —; md. Sept. 9, 1821, Esther Gilbert Ward.
8. **HARRIET VERY** ⁶, born —.
9. **MARTHA VERY** ⁶, born —; md. Aug. 30, 1827, Nathaniel Horton.
10. **MARY ANN VERY** ⁶, born —; md. Joseph Gomes.

The Very family in America descended from Bridget Very, who with her two sons Samuel and Thomas, and her daughter Mary, came a widow, probably from Salisbury, Eng., to New England, before 1648, for in that year she became a member of the First Church in Salem, Mass.; she lived with her son Samuel about sixty rods from Danvers Almshouse, where they owned a large tract of land. She was born about 1600, and married second in New England Edward Giles, of Salem, Mass., and had children Mehitable, Remember, Eleazer, and John. (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.).

- (f) **CLIFFORD CROWNINSHIELD** ⁴, born 1762; died June 3, 1809; md. July 9, 1805, Elizabeth Fisher, dau. of Rev. Nathaniel Fisher, rector of St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass., and wife Silence (Baker); she bapt. Sept. 5, 1785. No issue.

- (g) **MARGARET CROWNINSHIELD** ⁴, born —; died April 9, 1831; md. first, Aug. 4, 1784, Capt. John Murphy (properly O'Morroghue); he born in Wexford, Ire.; died at sea Oct. 5, 1800; master-mariner. No issue.

She md. second, Sept. 24, 1809, William Mansfield, son of John Mansfield, Colonel in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, who died Aug. 28, 1840.

- (h) **SARAH CROWNINSHIELD** ⁴, born —; died March 13, 1815; md. Sept. 12, 1792, Capt. James Devereux, son of James and Eleanor (Murphy) Devereux; he born in the village of Saltinye, parish of Dunbrody, co. Wexford, Ire., April 14, 1766; died in Salem, Mass., May 29, 1846; master-mariner and merchant. He was the commander of the ship "Franklin," the first merchant vessel from the United States to visit Japan.

He was descended from Philip D'Evereux, who passed over into Ireland from England in 1232, and who settled in the same neighborhood where the family now reside. (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. IV.). Edward de Evreux was sheriff of Essex, Eng., in 1100, the name having been taken from Evereux, a town in Normandy, — the name found on the list of those who started from Dives, Normandy, 1066, with William, Duke of Normandy, in his Conquest of England. (Bridges and Burke).

His children were eight, namely: —

1. ELEANOR DEVEREUX⁵, bapt. July 7, 1793; md. May 17, 1826, Nathaniel Langdon Williams; he born March 20, 1784; died Dec. 17, 1862.
2. JOHN JAMES DEVEREUX⁵, born June 12, 1796; died March 10, 1856; graduate of Harvard.
3. SARAH DEVEREUX⁵, born Aug. 23, 1797; md. June 4, 1838, Samuel S. Gilbert, son of Hon. Benjamin T. and Sarah (Shepard) Gilbert, of Boston, Mass.; he born Dec. 25, 1802; died Nov. 10, 1860, whose ancestor may have been "William Gilbert of Boston, whose son William wrote home in 1680 to his grandfather, Mr. Arthur Bridge, of Sherborn, in Dorsetshire, mentioning numerous relations in England." — HENRY F. WATERS, *Gleanings from English Records*.

It will be a subject of inquiry whether those relations were descendants of Sir Humphrey Gilbert, who attempted colonizing North America, and was also step-brother to Sir Walter Raleigh.

4. MARY CROWNINSHIELD DEVEREUX⁵, born April 9, 1801; died May 25, 1822.
5. ABIGAIL DEVEREUX⁵, born April 12, 1803; died March 4, 1879; md. Feb. 19, 1827, William Dean Waters, born Nov. 1, 1798; died March 4, 1879; and had issue William Crowninshield Waters⁶, James Devereux Waters⁶, Edward Stanley Waters⁶, (the Compiler), Clifford Crowninshield Waters⁶, Joseph Waters⁶, Mary Waters⁶. (See Appendix, Cash Family, No. 15.)

The emigrant ancestor of William Dean Waters was Lawrence Waters, who married Anna Linton, daughter of Richard Linton, and had issue Stephen², who married Sarah Carter, who had Benjamin³, who married Abigail Stone and had Benjamin⁴, who married Esther Gilbert and had Joseph⁵, who married Mary Dean, parents of the said William Dean Waters, husband of Abigail Devereux⁵ aforesaid; his brother was Joseph Gilbert Waters, born July 5, 1796, and died July 12, 1878; Judge for many years of the Police Court of Salem, Mass.; he married Dec. 8, 1825, Eliza Greenleaf Townsend, dau. of Penn and Mary (Richardson) Townsend, born Jan. 17, 1798; living in 1885. They had five sons, all born in Salem, Mass., namely: —

- (1) JOSEPH LINTON WATERS⁶, born Oct. 4, 1826; living in 1886; unmarried.
- (2) PENN TOWNSEND WATERS⁶, born March 28, 1829; lost at sea in 1852; unmarried.
- (3) EDWARD STANLEY WATERS⁶, born March 22, 1831; md. March 5, 1858, Marietta Barney.
- (4) HENRY FITZGILBERT WATERS⁶, born March 29, 1833;

living in London, Eng., in 1836; genealogist and antiquarian; also contributor to the Essex Inst. Hist. Collections, and New England Gen. Register.

(5) CHARLES RICHARDSON WATERS⁴, born Sept. 17, 1835; living in 1886; unmarried.

6. JAMES DEVEREUX⁴, born Jan. 19, 1806; died at Zanzibar, Africa, June 20, 1832.

7. NICHOLAS DEVEREUX⁴, born July 28, 1808; died March 2, 1848, at Somerville, Mass.

8. ELIZABETH IVES DEVEREUX⁵, bapt. Sept. 12, 1812.

(i) JOHN CROWNINSHIELD⁴, born —; died about 1781; unmarried.

18. ABIGAIL IVES³, born —; mentioned in her father's will, June 19, 1752.

19. JOHN IVES³, born about 1732; md. March 13, 1755, Sarah Ward.

20. MARTHA IVES³, born —; md. Nov. 23, 1760, Daniel Cheever.

21. MARGARET IVES³, born —; md. Peter Cheever⁴, son of Peter³ (Peter², Peter¹), and Margaret (Caiton) Cheever, Margaret Caiton being daughter of Capt. Daniel and Margaret (Luscomb) Caiton; he born Feb. 6, 1733. He md. second, Dec. 23, 1762, Martha Osgood, dau. of Samuel and Abigail (Walk) Osgood; she bapt. June 25, 1738.

Children by first marriage were: —

(a) ANNA (NANCY) CHEEVER⁴, bapt. Dec. 9, 1759; md. first, Samuel Cook; md. second, April 29, 1797, William Merriam.

(b) MARGARET CHEEVER⁴, bapt. Jan. 3, 1762; died Feb. 12, 1839; md. John Flint, son of John and Susanna (Webb) Flint; he born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 1, 1757; died Dec. 28, 1813. They had issue six children. (See Appendix, Webb Family No. 7, and Flint Family No. 44.)

Children by second marriage were: —

(c) PETER OSGOOD CHEEVER⁴, bapt. March 18, 1764.

(d) SAMUEL CHEEVER⁴, bapt. Sept. 8, 1765.

(e) MARTHA CHEEVER⁴, bapt. June 4, 1769; md. May 28, 1797, for his third wife, Samuel Very, son of Jonathan, Jr., and Elizabeth (Beckford) Very; he born in 1759; died in 1832. His first wife was Abigail Crowninshield (No. 17. 5th child); his second wife was Mary, widow of Robert Rantoul. (See Appendix, Beckford Family, No. 26.)

(f) ABIGAIL CHEEVER⁴, born —; md. June 13, 1802, James Perkins.

(g) JAMES CHEEVER⁴, bapt. Dec. 22, 1771.

(h) BENJAMIN CHEEVER⁴, born —.

(i) NATHANIEL CHEEVER⁴, born —.

Peter Cheever¹, the emigrant ancestor, born in England about 1645; will proved Aug. 7, 1699, in which he gave son Samuel his butcher's shop and land at the east end of his house, provided he pay Mr. Samuel Cheever, of Marblehead, £8. He appoints his cousin, Samuel Cheever, of Marblehead, overseer. The said Samuel Cheever was son of Ezekiel Cheever, he born in New Haven, Conn., Sept. 22, 1639; Harvard graduate, 1659; removed to Marblehead, where he preached sixteen years before his ordination, Aug. 13, 1684. Daniel Cheever, husband of Martha Cheever (No. 20), may have been of the Marblehead family.

THIRD GENERATION.

SAMUEL IVES³ (No. 12), son of Thomas² (THOMAS¹), bapt. in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass., Aug. 23, 1713; died before 1768; md. Nov. 21, 1737, Hannah Hodges, dau. of Gamaliel and Sarah (Williams) Hodges, and granddau. of George Hodges, whose first wife was Mary Hudson, and second Sarah Phippen. Hannah was born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 30, 1718; died July 15, 1804 (gravestone).

The compiler of the Hodges Family states that they had one son and two daughters, but fails to record even their names.

She married second, April 3, 1768, as his second wife, Nathaniel Archer, son of Jonathan Archer and Abigail (widow of Hilliard Williams, and daughter of John and Sarah (Wells) Massey), he born April 17, 1710; died June 10, 1772; he married first, Aug. 2, 1733, Hannah Cook, dau. of John and Hannah (Dean) Cook. According to the Probate Records she was a minor, Dec. 13, 1731, aged 15 years; hence born in 1716; she died May 21, 1767, and had issue nine children, to whom Mrs. Ives became stepmother, namely:—

- (a) **NATHANIEL ARCHER**⁴, bapt. March 21, 1735; md. March 30, 1760, Hannah Cheever, dau. of Peter Cheever and second wife, Sarah (Osgood) Moses, dau. of Nath'l Osgood and Hannah (Buttolph), and widow of Henry Moses. (See Appendix, Moses Family, No. 15.)
- (b) **HANNAH ARCHER**⁴, bapt. Sept. 12, 1736; died in 1824; md. Dec. 16, 1756, Benj. Brown, son of Jno. and Lydia (Gerrish) Brown; he born April 16, 1740; died April 24, 1785.
- (c) **ELIZABETH ARCHER**⁴, bapt. Nov. 23, 1740.
- (d) **GEORGE ARCHER**⁴, bapt. Nov. 14, 1742; died abroad; mariner; administration on his estate, Sept. 7, 1772; md. Dec. 16, 1764, Martha, dau. of Isaac and Margaret (Sheldon) Needham; she bapt. Jan. 6, 1744. Their son George, b. 1765, married Judith Hathorne, aunt of Nath'l Hawthorne, the novelist.
- (e) **ABIGAIL ARCHER**⁴, born —; md. June 15, 1769, Issachar Woodbury, son of Thomas and Lucy (Herrick) Woodbury, born in Beverly, Mass., Oct. 27, 1745. No issue.
- (f) **STEPHEN ARCHER**⁴, born —; md. June 11, 1766, Sarah Pickering.
- (g) **BENJAMIN ARCHER**⁴, born in 1750; died July 4, 1787; baker.
- (h) **JONATHAN ARCHER**⁴, born —.
- (i) **SARAH ARCHER**⁴, born —; md. Andrew Campbell. (See Appendix, Archer Family, No. 28.)

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. BENJAMIN IVES^{*} (No. 14), son of Benjamin² (THOMAS¹), and Anne (Derby) Ives, born Nov. 2, 1720; died Dec. 26, 1757; master-mariner; lived in Beverly, Mass., where, Oct. 12, 1743, he married Elizabeth Hale, eldest and only surviving daughter of Col. Robert Hale and first wife Elizabeth (Gilman), daughter of Col. John Gilman, of Exeter, N. H., and his first wife, Elizabeth (Coffin), ninth child of Peter² (Peter³; Hon. Tristram¹), and Abigail (Starbuck) Coffin.

Hon. Tristram Coffin lived in Newbury, Mass., and was descended from the Coffins of Alwington in Dean, Eng. "The first of the name known in England was Sir Richard Coffyn, knight, who accompanied William the Conqueror in his invasion of that country in 1066. Sir Richard held the rank of general in his army, and on the division of the spoils he received from the king the manor of Alwington on the borders of the Severn, six miles east of the Isle of Lundy; and his property has descended in his family in a direct line, by inheritance, for upwards of seven centuries." — PENCE, *Worthies of Devonshire*.

"Mr. Tristram Coffin was born in Brixham parish, town of Plymouth, Devonshire, Eng., son of Peter and Johanna Coffin. He was a royalist, and came to America in consequence of the success of Oliver Cromwell; he married Dionis Stevens, and with five children, his mother and two sisters, sailed for New England in 1642; he settled in Salisbury, thence to Haverhill, thence to Newbury, thence to Nantucket." — *New Eng. Gen. Register*.

NOTE. — Richard Coffyn's name does not appear on the roll of the church of Dives as found in Burke (see Appendix).

Elizabeth Gilman, the mother, was granddaughter of Hon. John Gilman, the emigrant, and Elizabeth (Treworgye), who removed from Hingham, England, to Ipswich, Mass., and from thence to Exeter, N. H., where he resided till his death in 1708.

Col. John Gilman, the father, was one of the grantees of Gilmanton, and in the charter was mentioned as chairman of the First Board of Selectmen of that place. He was a large landholder there; he owned two slaves and a slave child, which in his will he mentions as valued at £540; also a "Gilman Genealogy which was in the Parlor value at 100^s," — worth a great deal more to the Compiler of this account.

Elizabeth Gilman, the wife, died Aug. 19, 1736, aged 35 years, and her husband, Col. Robert Hale, married second, Dec. 21, 1737, Elizabeth Clarke, dau. of Hon. John Clarke, of Boston, and Elizabeth (Somerby), of Newbury, Mass.; also the daughter of Col. Robert's step-mother, for Elizabeth (Somerby) Clarke, mother of his second wife, became a widow and married, as his second wife, Dec. 29, 1720, Col. John Gilman, the father of Col. Robert's first

wife, Elizabeth Gilman. (Sarah Somerby, the only sister of Elizabeth, married a John Hale, of Newbury, as his second wife; he son of Thomas Hale, Sr.)

The father of Col. Robert Hale was Dr. Robert Hale, graduate of Harvard College, 1686, aged 18 years. He intended to enter the ministry, and prepared himself accordingly. In 1690, while his father was absent as chaplain in the expedition to Canada, he supplied his pulpit. Soon after, on account of poor health, inherited from his mother, he was compelled to relinquish the ministry. Then he engaged in the practice of medicine, which he ever afterwards continued till his death, Jan. 12, 1718, aged 61. His children were the said Col. Robert and Henry, and a daughter Rebecca, who died Aug. 23, 1736, aged 4 years.

The grandfather of Col. Robert Hale was Rev. John Hale, first minister of Bass River (Beverly), Mass., he born in Charlestown, Mass., June 3, 1636, son of Robert, the emigrant of 1632 (freeman, 1634; ensign, 1659; member of an artillery company, 1644), and Rebecca.

Rev. John Hale graduated from Harvard in 1657; married first, Rebeckah Byles (Bile, Bilelate, another account), dau. of Henry Byles, of Sarum, Eng., who settled in Salisbury, Mass., as early as 1640, and Rebeckah, widow of John Hale. This last Rebeckah married third, Rev. William Worcester, of Salisbury, Mass., and married fourth, Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds, of Ipswich, Mass., and died at last as Mrs. Symonds, July 2, 1695, aged 78 years, — a much married woman.

Rev. John married second, March 31, 1684, — after the death of wife Rebeckah, who left a daughter, ^(Rev. J. R. Hale's wife) Rebecka, born Nov. 3, 1668, — Mrs. Sarah Noyes, of Newbury, Mass., who died May 20, 1697, and he married third, Aug. 8, 1698, Mrs. Elizabeth Clarke, born Somerby, widow of Mr. Nathaniel Clarke, mother of Elizabeth Clarke, second wife of Col. Robert Hale, his grandson. She had eleven children, having married Mr. Clarke Nov. 23, 1668; he was wounded on board the ship "Six Friends," in the expedition to Canada; he there died Aug. 25, 1690, aged 46 years. Her parents were ** Henry Somerby, of Newbury, Mass., and Judith Greenleaf, who married second, Tristram Coffin, of Newbury" (Coffin, Hist. of Newbury).*

Sarah Noyes, second wife of Rev. John Hale, in 1692 was accused of witchcraft during the excitement in Salem. Stone, in his "History of Beverly," says "the whole community was convinced that the accusers in crying out upon Mrs. Hale had perjured themselves, and from that moment their power was destroyed." *Rev. J. R. Hale's wife, July 15, 1697.*

The father-in-law of Capt. Benjamin Ives, Col. Robert Hale, graduated at Harvard in 1721, to the philosophical department of which in 1764 he presented a solar microscope and magic lantern.

In 1723 he engaged in the practice of medicine, as his father did before him, not only in Beverly, but extending to all the neighboring towns.

In 1745 he received the commission of colonel to command a regiment under Gen. William Pepperell, in the expedition which resulted in the reduction of the Fortress of Louisburg. Thus the title of doctor was superseded by that of colonel, and served as a means of distinction, as his father was also Dr. Hale.

** Rev. J. R. Hale's name from Ipswich appears in 1697, with his wife in the church list of 1697, and in 1698, when he was a minister of the church at the time of the removal of the church.*

** Until the new town boundary in the 17th century, he was living in the town of Newbury, and he was a member of the church at Newbury.*

In 1723 he married Elizabeth Gilman, and had issue three children, Rebecah, born May 27, 1730; died April 27, 1732; Rebeckah, born Feb. 5, 1732; died Aug. 23, 1736; Elizabeth, whose birth, date was not on record, but believed to have been born before the first Rebeckah, who married, as above-said, Col. Robert Hale, and died about 1778. Col. Robert Hale died after a lingering illness in 1765. In 1729 his property amounted to £1155:13:3; when nineteen years of age he inherited from his father £790:10:5.

Rev. Enoch Hale was of the fifth generation of this same family of Hales in descent from the emigrant; his son was the Hon. Nathan Hale, LL.D., of Brookline, Mass., who took a prominent part in establishing the railway system in New England and introducing water into Boston. He was editor of the "Boston Daily Advertiser," founded March 1, 1814; in 1817 he took charge of the "North American Review."

He married Sarah Preston Everett, sister of Hon. Edward Everett, *and Lucy Hale*

The name of Hale was probably taken from the township of Hale in England, which was in existence till the 30th year of Ed. III. (1357); by the inquisition taken that year it appears the town was destitute of inhabitants, having been depopulated by the plague. "In the 21 year of King John, (1201), Robert de Hale paid 2 marks into the Exchequer for livery of the lands in Hale, which had been held by Alan de Hale, his father. By inquisition taken in the reign of Henry III. Alan de Hale was certified to be seized of one virgate of land, (a virgate of land was a yardland, of a different quantity, in different countries. In some it was 15 acres, in others 20, 25 or even 40 acres), with its appertinances in Hale, by the sergeantry of finding, at his own cost one man with a bow and arrows to serve in the King's army for forty days. This sergeantry was afterwards alienated in part, the several tenants of the manor respectively engaging to be answerable to the said Alan, in the sum of 9s. 1 pence, being a $\frac{1}{3}$ part of their rate for the said sergeantry, and he himself stipulating to perform the service for his own part, which was not alienated." "Hale was between Southwiche and Apethorp in the neighborhood of Wood in Northamptonshire." — BRIDGES, *Northamptonshire*, Vol. II. p. 461.

Benjamin Ives* in 1745 commanded a company of soldiers enlisted in Beverly, Mass., for the expedition against Louisbourg, hence his title; of which his father-in-law, Dr. Robert Hale, was colonel.

"Louisbourg Soldiers."

Commissions in the Fifth Massachusetts Regiment whereof Robert Hale Esq. is Colonel.

Name.	Quality.	Date.
Robert Hale Esq.	Colonel	
Ed. Eveleth Esq.	1st Col. & Captain 2d Company.	Feb. 7, 1744.
Moses Titcomb Esq.	Major & Capt. 3d Company	" " "
Jonathan Bagly	Capt. of the 5th Company	" " "
Jeremiah Foster	Capt. of the 6th Company	" " "
Samuel Davis	Capt. of the 7th Company	" " "
Thomas Staniford	Capt. of the 8th Company	" " "
Charles Byles	Capt. of the 9th Company	Feb. 12, 1744
Benjamin Ives	Capt. of the 10th Company	" " "
Daniel Tilton	Capt. Lieut of the 1st Company	" " "
Samuel Greenough	Lieut. 2d Company	Feb. 7, 1744
Caleb Swan	Lieut. 3d Company	" " "
Daniel Giddens	Lieut. 4th Company	" " "

Name.	Quality.	Date.
Isaac Annis	Lieut. 5 th Company	Feb. 7, 1744
Samuel Morgan	Lieut. 8 th Company	Feb. 12, 1744
Daniel Eveleigh	2 ^d Lieut. 1 st Comp.	" " "
Beamsly Glazier	Ensign 3 ^d Comp.	Feb. 7, 1744
Joseph Fry	Ensign 5 th Comp.	" " "

— *New Eng. Gen. Hist. Register*, Vol. XXIV. p. 372.

Notarial Rec., }

Vol. II. p. 75. } "July 7, 1750, Joseph Pierpont, Halifax, Nova Scotia, merchant, principal, and Benjamin Ives Esq. of the same place, surety, who were bound unto James Foster of Salem, Mass mariner, in the sum of £230, lawful money of Halifax, to be paid unto the said James Foster, his heirs &c. . . .

The condition of the obligation is that £115, shall be paid to said Foster on or before Oct. 7, next which will be in the year 1750."

"April 2, 1757, Benjamin Ives received a commission as Lieutenant of the Province Snow, of a vessel called the 'Prince of Wales,' but before the day of sailing he was suddenly taken ill, and died Dec. 26, 1757. Subsequently this vessel was captured by the enemy." — FELT.

Children of **Benjamin and Elizabeth (Hale) Ives** were: —

22. **ROBERT HALE IVES**⁴, born in Beverly, Mass., July 18, 1744; died at sea, Oct. 19, 1779; md. March 20, 1766, Sarah Bray, granddaughter of *Capt. Michael Driver*.
23. **REBECCA IVES**⁴, born in Beverly, Mass., June 23, 1745; bapt. June 15, 1746; died May 20, 1823; md. as his second wife, Sept. 22, 1763, Joseph Gilman, fourth son of Rev. Nicholas and Mary (Thing, now written Tyng) Gilman, who was born in Exeter, N. H., May 5, 1738; died May 14, 1806.

Rev. Nicholas Gilman was a brother to Col. John Gilman aforesaid, and a popular preacher, commencing at Kingston when only twenty years of age. His son Joseph removed to Boston when a very young man to engage there in business; here he married Jane Tyler, of Boston, of whom nothing is known by the family, save that she died probably in 1760. In this year his father, Rev. Nicholas, was taken ill, and was advised to go to Beverly, Mass., to "Dr. Hale's to drink the mineral waters there," according to the diary of Rev. Nicholas Gilman. Thus the acquaintance was formed with the Hale family, which resulted in the son Joseph marrying in 1763 the granddaughter of Dr. Hale.

In 1776 Joseph Gilman was appointed to the office of Treasurer of the County of Rockingham by the New Hampshire House of Representatives.

In 1784, 1785, 1787, he held the office of State Senator.

In 1781 he was chosen chairman of the New Hampshire Committee of Safety (a body which held supplies for State troops). In 1788, aged fifty years, he, with his wife and only surviving child, a son, removed to Marietta, Ohio, where in 1790 he was appointed Judge of Probate, Judge of the Court of Quarter Sessions, Justice of the Peace, and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

The President of the United States at this date, was Washington, who appointed him Judge of the Northwest Territory.

He died in 1806; but his wife Rebeckah survived him fourteen years, living in Marietta till 1812, when with her son and his family she removed to Philadelphia, Pa., where she died in 1820.

Mr. Arthur Gilman in his "Genealogy," from which this account was taken, states that Mrs. Rebeckah Gilman (Ives) had been educated far beyond the ladies of her time. French authors she could read with facility, and was familiar with the best writers of the days of Queen Anne and Elizabeth. Her education had been chiefly acquired under the direction of her grandfather, Hon. Robert Hale, by whom her literary taste had been highly cultivated. Her children were two, both born in Exeter, N. H.; namely:—

(a) ROBERT HALE GILMAN⁶, born May 5, 1768.

(b) BENJAMIN IVES GILMAN⁶, born July 29, 1766; died Oct. 13, 1833, of a fever while on a visit to his sons in Acton, Ill.; md. Feb., 1770, Hannah Robbins, who was born Sept. 29, 1768; died Aug. 24, 1837; dau. of Rev. Chandler Robbins, D.D., pastor of the First Church of Plymouth, Mass., and Jane Prince, and granddaughter of Dr. Moses and Jane (Bethune) Prince, and great-granddaughter of Samuel Prince and second wife Mercy (Hinckley) of Plymouth Colony; Gov. Thomas Hinckley of that Colony having been father to Mercy.

The father of Samuel Prince was Elder John Prince, of Watertown and Hull, Me., and Hingham, Mass.; his father having been Rev. John Prince, of Berkshire, Eng. (Gilman Genealogy, p. 122).

Hannah (Robbins) Gilman's grandmother married second, as his third wife, Hon. Peter Gilman, son of Col. John Gilman and his wife Elizabeth (Coffin), who was brother of Elizabeth Gilman, first wife of Col. Robert Hale, whose daughter Elizabeth married Capt. Benjamin Ives, grandfather of Hannah's mother, Mrs. Rebecca Gilman (Ives).

At the time of Mrs. Prince's second marriage she had two daughters and one son, with whom she entered a very mixed family as to children, for Hon. Peter married, first, Dec. 8, 1724, Mary (Thing) Gilman, widow of Hon. John Gilman, his cousin; she had children by her first marriage; then he married, second, Mrs. Taylor, daughter of Henry and Dorothy Sherburne, who had with her five sets of children, as she married, first, her cousin, Capt. Christopher Rymes, who at his death left her two sons and one daughter; she then married, second, Dr. Nathaniel Rogers, and had issue one son, Nathaniel; she married, third, Rev. John Taylor, who was a widower with two sons, and had issue one daughter, Ann, who married Hon. Nicholas Gilman, and became the mother of Gov. John Taylor Gilman. Mrs. Taylor married, fourth, Hon. Peter, abovesaid, and had issue one daughter, Abigail. Thus Mrs. Jane Prince (Bethune) by her last marriage became the mother to six sets of children; and as she survived Hon. Peter, the care of all devolved on her, for her daughter Jane Prince soon married Rev. Chandler Robbins. (New Eng. Gen. Register, Vol. VII. p. 259.)

Benjamin Ives Gilman⁶ in 1788 removed with his parents from Exeter, N. H., to Marietta, Ohio, leaving his betrothed in Plymouth Colony. But in 1790 he returned to be married, at which time he was twenty-four years of age. This journey occupied one month, attended by much hardship. The parents of his betrothed were greatly grieved to think that the future home of their daughter was to be so far from

them, reached by such a perilous journey; for at that time to go to Ohio, the mountains had to be crossed on horseback to Pittsburg, where the boat was taken down the Ohio River to Marietta. But Hannah Robbins was equal to the occasion; she was married, and started on her journey with her husband, amid many tears and prayers from those left at home. The journey was made without any mishap, and they both lived in Marietta till 1813, making two visits to Plymouth Colony during that time (Gilman Genealogy).

In 1813 they with their children and mother, Mrs. Rebecca Gilman (Ives), removed to Philadelphia, Pa., where Hannah died Aug. 24, 1837, aged 59 years.

Children of Benjamin Ives and Hannah (Robbins) Gilman were nine; namely:—

1. JANE ROBBINS GILMAN⁶, born in Marietta, O., Nov. 9, 1790; died Sept. 18, 1808; md. Nov. 10, 1807, Dudley Woodbridge, Jr., of Marietta, O.
2. JOSEPH GILMAN⁶, born in Marietta, O., June 23, 1792; died unmarried Aug. 10, 1823. Harvard graduate, 1813.
3. BENJAMIN IVES GILMAN⁶, born at Plymouth, Mass., Oct. 3, 1794; died at Monticello, Ill., Jan. 11, 1866; graduate of Brown University, 1818; md. Mary E. Miles, of Milford, Conn., and had six children: Thomas Poynton⁷, Charles Miles⁷, Elizabeth Hale⁷, Mary Carrington⁷, Susan⁷, Benjamin Ives⁷. (Gilman Genealogy, p. 199)
4. REBECCA IVES GILMAN⁶, born Sept. 1, 1796; died Oct. 5, 1827, on a voyage from New York to New Orleans; md. Nov. 3, 1817, John S. Miller at Philadelphia, Pa., and had three children. (Ibid., p. 167.)
5. ROBERT HALE GILMAN⁶, born at Marietta, O., May 25, 1798; died Sept. 20, 1830; md. at Boston, Mass., Sept. 20, 1823, Mary Boardman. She married, second, John G. Bates, of Boston, where in 1869 she resided.
6. ELIZABETH HALE GILMAN⁶, born April 3, 1800; md. Oct. 23, 1831, at New Haven, Conn., Martin Hoffman, son of Martin Hoffman of New York city.
7. CHANDLER ROBBINS GILMAN⁶ (Dr.), born Sept. 6, 1802; died at Middletown, Conn., Sept. 26, 1865; md. first, Nov. 3, 1825, Serena Hoffman, dau. of Martin Hoffman, Sr., of New York; she born Feb. 28, 1803; died Feb. 28, 1842. He md. second, Sept. 19, 1844, Hannah Hawkhurst Marshall, of New York, dau. of Capt. David Marshall; she born Feb. 9, 1822; they had a son, Arthur Gilman, who compiled the "Gilman Genealogy."
8. ARTHUR GILMAN⁶, born at Marietta, O., June 28, 1806; died at Acton, Ill., July 26, 1834, unmarried.
9. WILTHROP SARGENT GILMAN⁶, born at Marietta, O., March 28, 1808; md. at Carrolton, Ill., Dec. 4, 1834, Abia Swift Lippincott, dau. of Thomas; she born July 3, 1817; living in 1869 in New York city; had issue twelve children.

24. BENJAMIN IVES⁴, born in Salem, Mass., in 1749; died Feb. 27, 1762.

THIRD GENERATION.

SAMUEL IVES^s (No. 15), son of Capt. Benjamin², (THOMAS¹), and Anne (Derby) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 22, 1722; died before 1750; a shoreman; md. July 4, 1745, Mary Berry, probably daughter of John and Catherine (Manning) Berry; administration on his estate granted his widow, Mary, Dec. 29, 1750; inventory being £143:2:6, all personal. In list of debts due the estate is one to the widow for bringing up two young children three months, £2.

Deeds. } "Jan. 19, 1764, John Ives, tanner," (son of Benjamin and Anne), "for Vol. III. p. 278. } himself for 3-63^d parts; — in behalf of Benjamin & Anna Ives, minor children of Samuel Ives, mariner, dec'd" (brother of said John) "for 3 other 63^d parts; — Elizabeth Ives, widow, in behalf of her son Hale Ives" (Robert Hale Ives), "and Joseph Gilman and wife Rebecca — the 2^d Hale & Rebecca being minor children of s^d Elizabeth by her late husband Benj. Ives, dec'd for 3 other 63^d parts. — John Crowninshield, Salem, shipwright & wife Mary in her right, for 3 other 63^d parts; — Abigail Ives, spinster, 3-63^d parts; Peter Cheever Jr. Salem, Cordwr in behalf of his late wife Margaret, dec'd; viz: — Anna & Margaret Cheever, minors, for 3-63^d — for £22:4:4, convey to James Ford, Salem, schoolmaster, one third, or 21-63^d parts of a piece of land bounded N. on Main St. — E. partly on land of W^m Brown Esq. dec'd, and partly on land of Sarah Stone: — S. on land of Elizabeth Reeves; — W. on land of Nath'l Reeves, Richard Palmer & wife Mary, and partly on land of Hannah Reeves, W^m Reeves and Jonathan Felt.

ROBERT HALE IVES } Wit."
NOAH DODGE }

Children were:—

25. BENJAMIN IVES⁴, born in Salem, Mass., in 1744; bapt. at adult age in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal) Salem, Mass., Nov. 15, 1772, with his daughter Elizabeth; died before May 5, 1801; md. March 17, 1768, Elizabeth Giles.
26. ANNA IVES⁴, born —; named in her grandfather's (Benjamin Ives), will.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN IVES^s (No. 19), son of Capt. Benjamin² (THOMAS¹), and Anne (Derby) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., about 1732; mentioned in his father's will; died Oct. 18, 1801; md. March 13, 1755, Sarah Ward, dau. of Miles and Elizabeth (Webb) Ward, she born in Salem, Mass., March 1, 1734; died there Oct. 18, 1801 (see Appendix, Webb Family continued, No. 10); granddaughter of Joshua and Hannah (Flint) Ward. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 7.)

Children were:—

27. WILLIAM IVES⁴ born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 25, 1756; md. Sept. 12, 1790, Polly Bradshaw.
28. SARAH IVES⁴, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 2, 1757; md. about 1779 William Brewer, mariner; he born in 1750; died at sea, 1795.
29. JOHN IVES⁴, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., July 22, 1759; md. May 19, 1781, Elizabeth Newhall; she md. second, Aug. 11, 1785, Jeremiah Emmerton.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. ROBERT HALE IVES⁴ (No. 22), son of Capt. Benjamin³ (Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Elizabeth (Hale) Ives; grandson of Col. Robert and Elizabeth (Gilman) Hale; born in Beverly, Mass., July 18, 1744; died at sea on a passage from the West Indies, Oct. 19, 1773; master-mariner; md. March 20, 1766, Sarah Bray, dau. of Benjamin, Jr., and Sarah (Driver) Bray; granddaughter of Capt. Michael and Sarah (Gray) Driver (*Driver Family*, No. 19).

She bapt. in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass. (Baptist), Oct. 9, 1748; died in Beverly, Mass., Sept. 27, 1782.

He was one of the original eighteen members of the Salem Marine Society, joining March 25, 1766.

"Jan. 25, 1772, Robert Hale Ives, William Bartlett, Edmund Giles, William Morgan, Joseph Batchelder, Jr., members of the Salem Marine Society, all living in Beverly, petitioned the Society to be allowed to hold their monthly meetings in Beverly, instead of Salem, representing 'that their attending the monthly meetings in Salem was attended oftentimes with great Difficulty by Reason of there being sometimes stormy Weather oftentimes Dark, and the Ice at times preventing the Boats from Passing.' Their petition was granted." — *Laws of the Society*.

Children were four, namely:—

30. ELIZABETH IVES⁵, born in Beverly, Mass., Dec. 15, 1767; bapt. (Episcopal Church), Salem, Mass., Feb. 14, 1768; died there, "Friday morning at six o'clock, Jan. 13, 1801." She md. Nov. 10, 1797, Thomas Bancroft, son of Deacon Nathaniel Bancroft, of Lynnfield, Mass., and Mary Taylor, of Sudbury, Mass.; he born in Lynnfield, Mass., Dec. 14, 1765; died Nov. 15, 1807, at Canton, China, where he had gone as a supercargo of the ship "Hercules." Graduate of Harvard

College 1788; clerk of the courts of Salem, Mass., for several years; a lawyer.

Deacon Bancroft, born Oct. 22, 1725; died June 26, 1810; md. May 18, 1749, Mary Taylor, who died Oct. 5, 1815, aged ninety years. He was grandchild of John and Mary Bancroft, and great-grandchild of John and Elizabeth (Eaton) Bancroft. The father of the last John probably was John Bancroft who died in Lynn, Mass., in 1637, whose widow received a grant of one hundred acres of land in 1630 (*Essex Inst. Collections*, Vol. IV., p. 279).

The said Thomas Bancroft lived in Salem, Mass., in the house of Mrs. Hannah Poynton, grand-aunt to his wife, who was a widow without any family. This house, then and now, was known as the Pine Apple House. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 15.) Its frame was brought from England by Capt. Thomas Poynton, husband of Mrs. Hannah Poynton (Bray), in one of his own ships, as early as 1740. This house still stands in 1887, in a most excellent condition, but not on its original site, having been moved some hundred feet back to make room for a house built for Mr. Stephen B. Ives (No. 40), whose heirs are the present owners of the Pine Apple House.

The pine-apple, also brought from England at the same time with the frame, and placed directly over the front door, was so tall that it reached nearly to the middle of the sash of a window in the second story of the house, which was also directly over the front door; hence the blinds to this window were cut to accommodate the pine-apple, still to be seen by any one visiting this house, which took its name from this pine-apple.

It was highly gilded in the lifetime of Mrs. Poynton (known to all of the family as "Aunt Poynton"), for every year she had it regilt to equal in brightness the huge brass knocker, in the form of the head of a lion, which hung in the middle of the front door, long ago removed for the more modern bell. The significance of this pine-apple, tradition nor record ever revealed.

Thomas Bancroft and his brother-in-law, Thomas Poynton Ives (No. 31), were made the executors of the will of Mrs. Poynton, which was made in favor of the son of Thomas Bancroft, a boy then two years of age, but who was twenty-two when he received his inheritance; and his father dying two years before Mrs. Poynton, Thomas P. Ives became sole executor of her will.

Children of **Thomas and Elizabeth (Ives) Bancroft** were:—

(a) **THOMAS POYNTON BANCROFT**⁶, born Dec. 20, 1799; died in New Orleans, La., March 16, 1852; grand-nephew of Mrs. Hannah Poynton; inherited the Poynton estate when twenty-two years of age; md. Dec. 9, 1822, Hannah Putnam, dau. of Samuel and Sarah (Good) Putnam, granddaughter of Deacon Gideon Putnam, of Danvers, Mass., Judge of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts (who removed to Boston in 1833; died in Somerville, Mass., July 8, 1853), and Sarah, dau. of John and Lois (Pickering) Good, a niece of Col. Timothy Pickering.

(b) **NATHANIEL BANCROFT**⁶, born May 24, 1800; died June 20, 1800.

31. **THOMAS POYNTON IVES**⁵, born in Beverly, Mass., April 9, 1769; died in Providence, R. I., April 30, 1835; md. March 16, 1792, Hope Brown. Sole executor of the will of his grand-aunt, Mrs. Hannah Poynton.
32. **CHARLOTTE IVES**⁵, bapt. in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass., Jan. 27, 1771; died March 31, 1789; betrothed to her cousin, Thomas Poynton Bray, son of John and Elizabeth (Driver) Bray. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 28.)
33. **ROBERT HALE IVES**⁵, born Feb., 1772; bapt. (Episcopal Church), April 4, 1772; died June 4, 1795, at Lisbon, Portugal.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. BENJAMIN IVES⁴ (No. 25), son of Samuel³ (Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary (Berry) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., in 1744; bapt. at adult age, with his daughter Elizabeth, in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass., Nov. 15, 1772; administration on his estate granted his widow, Elizabeth, May 5, 1801; master-mariner; removed to Beverly, Mass.; md. March 17, 1768, Elizabeth Giles, dau. of Eleazer and Elizabeth (Smith) Giles; she born Feb. 1, 1749; bapt. in the Tabernacle Church (Baptist), Salem, Mass., Feb. 4, 1749.

Children were:—

34. **HANNAH IVES**⁵, bapt. in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass., April 29, 1770.
35. **ELIZABETH IVES**⁵, bapt. in the same church with her father, Nov. 15, 1772.
36. **MARY IVES**⁵, born —; md. John Adams, of Beverly, Mass.

Children were:—

- (a) **MARY ADAMS**⁶, md. John Kirby.
- (b) **ELIZABETH ADAMS**⁶, md. Joseph Henderson, of Salem, Mass.
- (c) **AUGUSTA ADAMS**⁶, md. Henry Cobb, of Lynn, Mass.

37. **CHARLOTTE IVES**⁵, born Feb. 17, 1784; md. in 1804, Capt. Benjamin Larcom, of Beverly, Mass.
38. **SAMUEL IVES**⁵, born Aug., 1786; md. Mary Dyson, of Beverly, Mass.; shipmaster. He lived in Pepperell, Mass., till 1855, then removed to Mobile, Ala.; living there in 1862.
39. **SARAH IVES**⁵, born —; died at Pepperell, Mass., April, 1852; unmarried.
40. **BENJAMIN IVES**⁵, born —; died young.
41. **BENJAMIN IVES**⁵, born —; died young.
42. **BENJAMIN IVES**⁵, born —; died young.

(Nos. 36, 39, 40, 41, and 42, found in "Giles Memorial," by Rev. John A. Vinton, who must have obtained them from private sources, as they are not on record.)

"Charlotte was seventeen years of age, and Samuel more than thirteen, when guardianship was granted their mother, Elizabeth." — *Town Records*.

"Elizabeth Ives appointed guardian to Mary Ives, of Beverly, Mass., non compos." — *Ibid*.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. WILLIAM IVES⁴ (No. 27), son of John³ (Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Sarah (Ward) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 25, 1756 (Town Records); Nov. 25, 1761 (Family Bible); baptized in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., May 2, 1756 (Church Records); died April, 1814, at Savannah, Ga.; md. Sept. 12, 1790, Polly Bradshaw, dau. of Stephen and Polly (Mansfield) Bradshaw; she born Sept. 14, 1768; died in Salem, Mass., Dec. 3, 1820. Her mother md. second, Feb. 28, 1781, as his third wife, Robert Peele, son of Robert and Mary (Bartlett) Peele; Robert being the grandson of Roger Peele the emigrant, who was born in London, Eng., Jan. 26, 1676; died in Salem, Mass., in 1728. Robert Peele md. first, Elizabeth Ropes, Dec. 11, 1763; he md. second, Eunice Stearns, June 2, 1771. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 20, for Peele record.)

Oct. 31, 1795, Capt. William Ives became a member of the Salem Marine Society.

Children were: —

43. WILLIAM IVES⁵, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 15, 1794; died there Dec. 12, 1874; md. May 12, 1824, Lucy Gardner.
44. JOHN MANSFIELD IVES⁵, born in Salem, Mass., July 8, 1798 (1799, another account); died July 29, 1883; md. Sept. 23, 1827, Lois Alley Southwick.
45. STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES⁵, born in Salem, Mass., April 12, 1801; died July 31, 1883; md. first, May 1, 1826, Mary Perkins; md. second, May 31, 1876, Harriet Perkins; sisters.
46. MARY MANSFIELD IVES⁵, born in Salem, Mass., May 14, 1803; died there Jan. 31, 1887.
47. BENJAMIN HALE IVES⁵, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 7, 1806 (Town Records); 1805 (Family Bible); died there Jan. 26, 1837; md. Oct. 29, 1833, Lydia Ann Harraden.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOHN IVES⁴ (No. 29), son of John³ (Capt. **BENJAMIN**², **THOMAS**¹), and Sarah (Ward) Ives, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass. (Baptist), July 22, 1729; died before 1785; md. May 19, 1781, Elizabeth Newhall, dau. of James and Lois (Burrill) Newhall; she born in Lynn, Mass., June 23, 1761; died March 28, 1837. The same family of Newhalls with whom Ruth (Driver) Potter was connected. (See Driver Family No. 6.) After the death of John Ives, his widow, Elizabeth, md. second, Aug. 11, 1785, as his second wife, Jeremiah Emmerton², son of Jeremiah¹ and Mary (Foster) Emmerton; he born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 23, 1753; died Aug. 18, 1826. *May Foster dau. of Jeremiah⁴, John³, Benjamin², Benjamin¹. She m. a son of Daniel & id. third he found her. 334, last line*

Child of **John** and **Elizabeth (Newhall) Ives** was:

48. **JOHN IVES**⁵, born in Lynn, Mass., Dec. 22, 1783; died at sea, on a voyage to Havanna, Cuba, in 1809; mariner; md. July 6, 1809, Betsey Cross, dau. of Joshua and Lydia (Derby) Cross; she born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 11, 1784; died Sept. 9, 1862. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 21.)

She married, second, April 15, 1816, Oliver Parsons, he born in 1785; died at Worcester, Mass., Aug. 25, 1845. No issue.

Children of **Elizabeth (Newhall) Ives** and **Jeremiah Emmerton** were seven, all born in Salem, Mass., viz.:—

- (a) **WILLIAM EMMERTON**⁵, born Oct. 10, 1785; died Oct. 17, 1871.
- (b) **JAMES EMMERTON**⁵, born April 21, 1789; died June 7, 1835.
- (c) **EPHRAIM EMMERTON**⁵, born July 6, 1791; died March 22, 1877; supercargo; md. Ann Sage, dau. of Capt. Daniel Sage, and had issue Dr. James A. Emmerton, compiler of the Emmerton and Silsbee Families, from which this account of the family has been taken.
- (d) **ELIZABETH EMMERTON**⁵, born July 10, 1794; died Sept. 13, 1797.
- (e) **MARY EMMERTON**⁵, born March 27, 1795; died Aug. 3, 1838.
- (f) **ELIZABETH EMMERTON**⁵, born Aug. 3, 1798; died Sept. 21, 1798.
- (g) **ELIZABETH EMMERTON**⁵, born Nov. 10, 1802; died Aug. 18, 1804.

Jeremiah Emmerton married, first, Rebecca Murray, to whom he was published Nov. 9, 1776, daughter of Samuel and Rebecca (Massey) Murray, and had issue:—

- 1. **REBECCA EMMERTON**⁵, born Oct. 9, 1778; died Dec. 22, 1857, unmarried.
- 2. **JEREMIAH EMMERTON**⁵, born Dec. 17, 1779; died Dec. 1, 1820.

For many years Jeremiah Emmerton was master of the Salem, Mass., Almshouse, which stood on the northeast corner of the Common.

FIFTH GENERATION.

THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁵ (No. 31), son of Robert Hale⁴ (Capt. BENJAMIN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Sarah (Bray) Ives; grandson of Benjamin and Sarah (Driver) Bray; great-grandson of Capt. Michael and Sarah (Gray) Driver (see Driver Family, Family VIII.); he born in Beverly, Mass., April 9, 1769; bapt. (Episcopal Church), June 4, 1769; died in Providence, R. I., April 30, 1835; merchant; married in Providence, March 5, 1792, Hope Brown, born Feb. 22, 1773; died Aug. 21, 1855, daughter of Hon. Nicholas and first wife Rhoda (Jenckes) Brown, of Providence, R. I., who, out of a family of ten children, with her brother Nicholas, only survived infancy.

Their grand-parents were James and Hope (Power) Brown, whose parents were Rev. James and Mary (Harris) Brown (Mary Harris's father being one of the seven who with Roger Williams fled from Massachusetts to Rhode Island to escape religious persecution).

The parents of Rev. James were John and Mary (Holmes, of Newport) Brown; and his parents were Elder Chad and Elizabeth Brown; Elder Chad being the first of the name of Brown in Providence, who came from England in 1638 in the ship "Martin," arriving at Boston in that year, and settled at Providence, and probably became the second minister of its First Baptist Church; he was succeeded by his grandson, Rev. James aforesaid, who had ten children, the youngest of whom was Elisha, who from 1765 to 1767 was Deputy-Governor of Rhode Island; he married Martha Smith, and had seven children, the sixth of whom was Capt. Isaac, who married Amey Dexter, and had nine children, the fourth of whom was Amey, who married Capt. Benoni Cooke, and died of consumption, leaving six children, the third of whom was Charles Dexter Cooke, who married Mary Anne King and had three sons, the youngest of whom, Henry Clarence Cooke, married Harriet Ruth Waters, the Compiler. For more full account, see "The Chad-Brown Memorial," by Abby I. Bulkely.

Thomas Poynton Ives at four years of age became a half orphan, and at thirteen years of age his mother died; he was then committed to the care of relatives in Boston, who gave him a few years' education at one of the public schools there, when he was withdrawn and placed in the counting-house of Brown & Benson, of Providence, R. I.

His energy, promptness, method, quickness of motion, and attention to business, soon attracted not only Mr. Brown, but also his only daughter Hope, for whose hand he in time was a suitor, but which the father did not much favor, so the courtship was not consummated by marriage until two years after the death of Mr. Brown. In 1792 Mr. Ives entered the firm of Brown & Benson, and in 1796 Mr. Benson withdrew, and Mr. Ives became associated with Nicholas Brown, Jr., as a partner in business, thus forming the famous house of Brown & Ives, which so continued forty-three years, until the death of Mr. Ives.

"For twenty-four years Mr. Ives was president of the Providence Bank, and fifteen years president of the Providence Institution for Savings.

For forty-three years he was a member of the Board of Trustees of Brown University, and a liberal benefactor." — W. G. GODDARD, *Writings*.

His partner, Nicholas Brown, Jr., brother of his wife, in 1791 was elected a member of the corporation of Rhode Island College (now Brown University), and in 1796 was chosen its treasurer.

His first donation to the College was a law library of considerable value, and in 1804 he presented the Corporation with the sum of five thousand dollars to found a Professorship of Oratory and Belles-Lettres. In that year the name of the institution was changed to Brown University. In 1823 he built Hope College, and presented it to the Corporation. In 1829 he, with his brother-in-law, Thomas P. Ives, presented a philosophical apparatus to the university, and in 1832, when it was decided to raise the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars as a permanent fund for the increase of the library, Nicholas Brown subscribed two fifths of the amount. In 1834 he erected Manning Hall, and in 1840 contributed ten thousand dollars to the building of Rhode Island Hall in Providence. He also gave ten thousand dollars to the Providence Athenæum. He extended his liberal aid to the building of churches and colleges in various States of the Union. He died in Providence, Sept. 27, 1871.

Nicholas Brown, Sr., Hope's father, was the grandson of Rev. James *afore-said*; and her mother, Rhoda Jenckes, was of the same family as Henry Jenks, of Salem, who married *Ruth Driver Millet*, granddaughter of Stephen and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, grandparents of the Compiler. The full account of this Jenks, or Jenckes, family is to be found under this child, Ruth Driver Millet, first child of No. 74, Driver Family, which see.

Children of **Thomas Poynton** and **Hope (Brown) Ives**, all born in Providence, R. I., were : —

49. CHARLOTTE RHODA IVES, born Dec. 18, 1792; died in Providence, R. I., June 15, 1881; md. May 22, 1821, Prof. William Giles Goddard, son of William and Abigail⁵ (Angell) Goddard, he born Jan. 2, 1794, "upon a family estate in Johnson, R. I., belonging to his maternal grandfather, Brigadier-General James Angell," a descendant of Thomas Angell¹, who, a lad, was one of the six persons who landed on Slate Rock, Providence, R. I., with Roger Williams. He married Alice —, and had children: James Angell², John Angell², Amphyllis Angell², Mary Angell², Deborah Angell², Alice Angell², and Margery Angell². *

James Angell², married Abigail Dexter, dau. of Rev. Gregory Dexter and Abigail (Fullerton), and their son John Angell² married some one as yet unknown, and had Brig.-Gen. James Angell⁴, who married Mary Mawney (corruption of Le Moine), and had Abigail Angell⁴, abovesaid. James Angell² also had a daughter Deborah (Angell) Smith², who was the mother of Martha (Smith) Brown⁴, whose daughter Amey Brown⁶ married Capt. Benoni Cooke, and had Charles Dexter Cooke, who married Mary Anna King, and had Henry Clarence Cooke, who married Harriet Ruth Waters, the Compiler (see p. 156).

John Angell², brother to James², married Ruth Field, and had John Angell³, who married and had Stephen⁴, who married Martha Olney and had Daniel⁵, who married Phebe Olney and had Olney⁶, who married Mary Waterman and had Catherine⁷, who married Dr. Samuel Ward King and had Mary Anne King⁸, who married Charles Dexter Cooke and had Henry Clarence Cooke, who married Harriet Ruth Waters, the Compiler.

Martha Olney⁴, who married Stephen Angell⁴, was the daughter of Epenetus Olney³ and Mary (Williams), through Epenetus² and Mary (Whipple) Olney, through Thomas¹ and Mary (Small) Olney, and granddaughter of Daniel² and Rebecca (Rhodes) Williams, and great-granddaughter of Roger Williams and Mary (Warnard).

The lineage of Phebe Olney, wife of Daniel Angell⁵, does not appear.

"Roger Williams in 1635 and 36, lived in Salem, Mass., in a house on the North-west corner of Essex and North Streets, known after as the 'Witch House,' because Judge Corwin lived there in 1692, and tradition says that one of the rooms was used by him for preliminary examinations of those charged with witchcraft in that year, hence its name." *Sketch of Salem*, p. 252. "While in Salem, Roger Williams was first settled as Rev. Samuel Skelton's colleague over the First Church there (Congregational), Mr. Skelton being its first pastor.

Roger Williams was born in Wales in 1599; educated at Oxford. He was a thorough Nonconformist. He landed at Boston in February, 1631; settled in Salem, April 12, 1631. His settlement was so strongly opposed by the governor and magistrates that he was induced to leave Salem before the close of the summer, and to become the assistant of Mr. Ralph Smith, at Plymouth.

In 1633 he returned to Salem, and again became the assistant of Mr. Skelton. After the latter's death he was sole minister of the church until November, 1635, when the renewed opposition of the magistrates drove him from Salem into exile, and he went forth into the wilderness to found the future State of Rhode Island upon the basis of civil and religious freedom. The cause of his offending was the declaring that the ministers of

- * Alice Angell² married Eleazer Whipple; Mary Angell² married Richard Arnold.

Boston had conformed in a sinful degree to the English Church, and ought to declare their repentance, and that the royal patent could give them no title to lands without a purchase from the natives; that the civil power could not rightly punish breaches of the Sabbath, nor in any way interfere with the rights of conscience." — *Ibid.*, p. 81.

He was tried by the magistrates, who gave him six weeks to leave the colony; "but, in the meantime, they thought he was better out of the country, so they sent a vessel from Boston to take him to England. Roger Williams hearing of this left three days before the vessel's arrival, and made the memorable journey in mid winter through the deep snows of a New England forest, guided only by a rude compass." — *Ibid.*, p. 14.

William Goddard (father of the said William Giles Goddard), who married Abigail Angell, was the son of Dr. Giles Goddard, physician, and postmaster of New London, Conn., and Sarah Updike, daughter of Ludowick Updike, a descendant of Henrick op-den-Dyck, burgomaster in Wesel, Germany, in 1333 to 1368. He had Dric², who had Johann³, who had Johann⁴, who had Gysbert⁵, who had Lodowick⁶, who had Gysbert⁷, the emigrant to America, there called Gilbert; he born in Wesel, Germany, in 1605. He married Catherine Smith, dau. of Richard Smith, of Narragansett; they had a son Lodowick⁸, who married Abigail Newton, daughter of Thomas and Joan (Smith) Newton (hence his first cousin, as Joan and Catherine his mother were sisters), and had Sarah Updike⁹, abovesaid, who married Giles Goddard and had William Goddard. William Goddard was by trade a printer, which business he at first engaged in alone at Providence, R. I., but subsequently his mother, Sarah Goddard (Updike), became his partner.

In 1762 he established the first newspaper in Providence, called the "Gazette," and on his removal to New York to become associated with "Parkin's Gazette," he left his mother in full charge in Providence of both the newspaper and printing-house, which she managed with great ability two years; at the expiration of which she associated herself with John Carter, brother-in-law of the before-mentioned Nicholas Brown, Jr., under the firm name of Sarah Goddard & Co.

In 1769 Sarah Goddard resigned the business to John Carter, and removed to Philadelphia, Pa., where she died Jan. 5, 1770.

In 1767 William Goddard aforesaid commenced the publication of the "Pennsylvania Chronicle" in Philadelphia; and in 1773 he started the "Maryland Journal," the first paper printed in Baltimore; in this he was assisted by his sister Mary (who had inherited her mother's skill in such work), with whom he continued until 1792.

In 1883 the "Maryland Journal" published its centennial number, giving a full account of William Goddard, its founder, in which it stated that he was also the founder of the present postal system of the United States, — although that honor had always been given to Benjamin Franklin, — in words to this effect: —

Mr. Goddard conceived the idea of opening a subscription paper at New London for contributions to sustain a "constitutional post-office," instead of a "parliamentary one," and in common with the Southern and other colonies, to resist the oppressive measures of the British administrators of the Colonies, which subscription was opened April 4, 1774; at the same time Mr. William Goddard travelled all over the country to establish his plan, which received

commendation and support in New York and New England, and in the South, but not in Philadelphia, where William Bradford of that city had set up a post, and his fellow-citizens preferred to patronize it.

At length Benjamin Franklin was appointed Postmaster-General, and Mr. Goddard Surveyor of the Post-roads and Comptroller of the Post-office, as a reward for his exertions, which office he held but one year; for on the retirement of Franklin, Mr. Goddard expected to succeed him as Postmaster-General; but to his great disappointment Richard Bache, the son-in-law of Franklin, received the position, and he resigned in disgust.

While working for the post-office, his sister Mary, in his absence, edited with ability the "Maryland Journal" alone. On account of the Revolutionary War the paper for the "Journal" became scarce, so in 1778, Mr. Goddard started a paper-mill in Baltimore, thus making his own paper for the "Journal;" in its issue of May 5, 1778, appears the following notice: "Rags for the paper-mill near this town are much wanted, and the highest price will be given for them by the printer;" and again: "Cash will be given in exchange for rags at this office."

The professional labors of Mr. Goddard closed in Baltimore, and he returned to Rhode Island, where, late in life, he married Abigail Angell, of Johnston, R. I., dau. of Brig-Gen. James Angell and Mary (Mawney, corruption of Le Moine), granddaughter of John Angell², who was son of James Angell¹ and Abigail (Dexter), who was son of Thomas Angell¹ and Alice (—), etc., as found on p. 346.

In 1803 Mr. Goddard left Johnston, R. I., for Providence, for the purpose of giving his children the advantages of instruction to be obtained in that city; here he lived till his death, Dec. 22, 1817, aged 77, having been born in 1740. He is buried in the North Burial-ground, Providence, R. I.

William Giles Goddard graduated at Brown University in 1812, and in 1825 received the appointment of Professor of Moral Philosophy and Metaphysics.

In 1814 he purchased, at Providence, R. I., the "Rhode Island American," a Federal newspaper, and was its editor for eleven years, relinquishing his connection with the paper on receiving his appointment of professorship. This he held till 1842, when he resigned on account of continued ill-health, which was never permanently restored to him, and he died suddenly, Feb. 16, 1846, aged 52 years (Duyckinck, Cyclopædia).

"The Goddards are sprung from Godardus, who in 1241 had license with Robert de Norfolcia to receive lands held of the crown; in 1390 Mounsier John Goddard, then 40 years of age, was examined in the court of chivalry in the cause between Richard le Scroop, Knt., and Sir Robert Grosvenour, Knt., concerning their arms.

From him descended William Godard or Godered of Middleton, who sold Terrington-hall manor, to the Lord Scales; he was made Serjeant in 1425, King's serjeant in 1431, and justice of the King's Bench, July 3, 1434. He married Catherine Schuldham, widow of Walter Bawde, and Ralf Middleton, who died in 1464.

Thomas Goddard or Stanhow, Esq., married Frances Buxton, and had Thomas, of Stanhow, Gent., who died before his father; he married Mary Gaybon, daughter of William Gaybon of Watlington, Esq., and had Gaybon Goddard, Esq., a lawyer eminent in his profession, and a great antiquary, and laborious collector of the antiquities of this

his profession, and a great antiquary, and laborious collector of the antiquities of this

county (Norfolk), to whom Mr. Bromesfield was greatly indebted for material to write his book.

Mr. Goddard was called to be serjeant-at-law in 1669, was chosen recorder of Lynn-Regis, and when he purchased Brampton, left Flitcham, where he had lived and settled. He married Mary, daughter of John Green, serjeant-at-law, of Bois-hall, Essex, near Stoke parish, who died in 1671, aged 68. He was buried in the Brampton's burial place, where there is no memorial for him. He left Thomas, Guibon, John, Walter, Mary, Margaret, and several more who died young." — *BLOMEFIELD, Norfolk*, Vol. VII. p. 437.

"Gaybon Goddard, Esq., serjeant-at-law, and recorder of Lynn, who came and settled at Brampton, co. Norfolk, which takes its name from the bodies that were so frequently burned at the burial place there, according to the custom of the Roman people.

This town belonged to Earl Harold, and was seized with the crown by the Conqueror, and given to William de Warren: In 1099 Botyld had it, whose son, Aylward, surnamed himself de Brampton, the Brampton family held it down to 1625, when Charles Brampton died in 1631, without issue, and his brother Edward was sole heir, who also died without issue, and all his brothers being dead issueless, the whole estate descended to his two surviving sisters Phillippa, who married Thomas Whall of Catton in Norfolk, Gent., and Alice, who married Mr. Bray, who sold the whole to Gaybon Goddard, Esq., serjeant-at-law, and recorder of Lynn, about 1650.

It is also stated that rather than have the Arms and crests of the Bramptons totally lost, they desired Mr. Goddard to unite theirs with his which he did using the crest and coat belonging to the said family of Brampton, — Gules, a St. Andrews Crosse between four cross crozlets fitché Argent. The crest upon a wreath or ducal cap, a lion rampant or.

Mr. Goddard used it with his own which was Gules, an eagle displayed or, quartered with Brampton. With a crest of Brampton and Goddard, a demi eagle or." — *BLOMEFIELD, Norfolk*, Vol. VI. p. 436.

Children of **William Giles and Charlotte Rhoda (Ives) Goddard**, all born in Providence, R. I., were: —

- (1) ELIZA GODDARD⁷, born April 8, 1822; died Jan. 30, 1823.
- (2) CHARLOTTE HOPE GODDARD⁷, born Dec. 1, 1823; died April 26, 1866; md. June 14, 1848, William Binney, son of Horace and Mary (Woodrow) Binney, of Philadelphia, Pa., and had four children, namely:
 - (a) HOPE IVES BINNEY⁸, born May 10, 1849; md. Samuel Powell, Jr., of Philadelphia, Pa.
 - (b) MARY WOODROW BINNEY⁸, born Dec. 14, 1856; died Dec. 19, 1884; md. Sidney F. Tyler, of Philadelphia.
 - (c) WILLIAM BINNEY⁸, born July 31, 1858; md. Harriet De Costa Rhodes.
 - (d) HORACE BINNEY⁸, born May 18, 1860.
- (3) WILLIAM GODDARD⁷, born Dec. 25, 1825; living in 1887; md. Feb. 19, 1867, Mary Edith Jenckes, dau. of Hon. Thomas Allen Jenckes and Mary Jane (Fuller), of Providence, R. I., and had one child, namely:
 - (a) EDITH HOPE GODDARD⁸, born Jan. 4, 1868.

In the War of the Rebellion he was Major of the First Rhode Island Regiment; subsequently a member of the staff of Gen. Burnside.

- (4) THOMAS POYNTON IVES GODDARD⁷, born Aug. 14, 1827; md. Oct. 19, 1853, Anna Elizabeth Fearing, dau. of William and Sarah (Burrill) Fearing, of New York city. No issue.
- (5) ELIZABETH ANNE GODDARD⁷, born Nov. 24, 1829; living in 1887, a widow; md. June 17, 1856, Dr. Thomas Perkins Shepard, born in Salem, Mass., March 16, 1817; died in Providence, R. I., May, 1877; a physician. No issue.

Dr. Shepard graduated from Brown University; studied medicine at

the Harvard Medical School at Boston; travelled four years in Europe, visiting all its departments of medical science; returned to Boston in 1844; settled in Providence in 1848; elected that year to the Common Council of that city, of which he was president in 1850; elected State Senator in 1853; elected a member of the Board of Trustees of Brown University in 1851. He was the son of Michael Shepard, merchant, of Salem, Mass., and Harriet Fairfax (Clarke), grandson of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (Webb) Shepard. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 13, 7th child.) Harriet Fairfax Clarke was the daughter of Francis² (John², Francis¹), and Martha (Mansfield) Clarke, and grand-niece of Deborah Clarke, the sister of her grandfather, John Clarke; Deborah married as his second wife William Fairfax, Esq., whence the Fairfax in Harriet's name.

"William Fairfax, Esq., was the second son of Henry Fairfax of Toleston, co. York, Esq., England, who was the second son of Henry, fourth Baron Fairfax of Cameron in the Peerage of Scotland, and cousin of the great General Lord Fairfax, who died April 5, 1665, aged 78 years, leaving two sons, Thomas, the fifth Lord Fairfax, and Henry, whose son William settled in Virginia and became the ancestor of the American Fairfaxes.

William Fairfax, Esq., married first, in 1723, Sarah, daughter of Thomas Walker, and had four children, the third of whom, Ann, married first, July 19, 1743, Lawrence Washington, elder half-brother of George Washington. They resided at Mount Vernon, the estate of her husband, who built the original dwelling and named it in memory of Admiral Vernon. Lawrence died in 1762, and his daughter inherited his estate; she soon died, and George Washington fell heir to Mount Vernon."—"Home and Haunts of Washington," *The Century Magazine*.

He (William Fairfax, Esq.) married, second, Deborah Clarke aforesaid, and had issue three children, to the first of whom, Bryan Fairfax, devolved the title of eighth Lord Fairfax on the death of Robert, who died in 1793, "leaving no heir of his body." Bryan entered orders in 1789, became a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church. His claim to the peerage was recognized by the House of Lords in 1800, but he never assumed it; he died in 1802, when his eldest son, Thomas, succeeded him as ninth Lord Fairfax of Belvoir and Vauluse. He died in 1846, and his son, Charles Snowden, became tenth Lord Fairfax. He died at Baltimore, 1869, and his brother, John Contee, became eleventh Lord Fairfax.

Hannah Fairfax, third child of William, Esq., and Deborah (Clarke) Fairfax, married Warner Washington, eldest cousin of Gen. George Washington.

William Fairfax, Esq., was a cultured gentleman and an experienced soldier; had been Governor of New Providence, Bahama Islands, and came to Salem, Mass., about 1725, and was the Collector of the Customs of the port of that place. June 17, 1734, he set sail from Salem to Virginia, and there was made manager of the estates of his cousin Thomas, sixth Lord Fairfax, who had become possessed of 300,000 acres of land in Shenandoah Valley, through his mother, Catherine, daughter of Lord Culpepper, who married Thomas, the fifth Lord Fairfax before said, who acquired with her the proprietary title to the northern neck of Virginia. Thomas in 1739 visited his American estates, with which he was so much pleased that he settled on them himself.

William, Esq., died Sept. 3, 1757, at Belvoir, a beautiful place just below Alexandria, opposite Mount Vernon, on the Potomac. Here George Washington became closely associated with William Fairfax,

Esq., who advised him to enter the navy; but the misgivings of his mother prevented it. He also advised Washington to hold "public prayers in his camp while in command of the local forces operating against the French."

The name Fairfax is Saxon, and—as Fuller in his "Worthies of England" explains—means, "fair hair, either bright in color, or comely from the plenty thereof."

Clements R. Markham, in his "Life of the Great Lord Fairfax," says, "the original seat of the family was at Walton, near Thorparch, where it commanded a view of the valley of the Wharfe."

("The Fairfaxes of Yorkshire and Virginia," by Rich. Wheatley; and "Clarke and Gedney Genealogy," p. 35).

- | | | |
|---|-------------------|--|
| (6) MOSES BROWN IVES GODDARD ⁷ , | } | md. Feb. 13, 1873,
Elizabeth Amory
Swann, dau. of
Robert Paige
Swann and Sarah
Corlies (Whipple),
both living in
Providence, R. I.,
in 1887. No issue. |
| | twins, | |
| | b. Apr. 21, 1831, | |
| (7) ROBERT GODDARD ⁷ , | } | Died in Prov.,
R. I., July 30, 1835. |

The grandparents of Elizabeth Amory (Swann) Goddard were Hon. John Whipple and Maria (Bowen). Maria Bowen was the sister of Elizabeth Bowen, who married Thomas Amory, the mother-in-law of Robert Hale Ives⁸, No. 47.

- (8) FRANCIS WAYLAND GODDARD⁷, born May 4, 1833; living in 1887 in Providence, R. I.; md. April 9, 1862, Elizabeth Cass Ledyard, dau. of Henry Ledyard, of Newport, R. I., and Matilda (Cass), granddaughter of Gen. Lewis Cass, the distinguished statesman of Detroit, Michigan, who was born in New Hampshire, Oct. 9, 1782; died in Detroit, June 17, 1866, where he removed in 1813, when appointed Governor of Michigan. This position he held for twenty years. He served in the War of 1812, and rose to the rank of general. In 1831 he became Secretary of War under General Jackson; five years after he was appointed Minister Plenipotentiary to France, which he held seven years. In 1844 he stood Democratic candidate for the Presidency, but after a long and bitter fight James K. Polk won the nomination. In 1848 the Michigan Democrats again brought forth Mr. Cass as their candidate, and on the fourth ballot he won the two-thirds vote necessary for his nomination, beating James Buchanan and Judge Levi Woodbury; but again he was unsuccessful. Again in 1852 the Democrats of the State of Michigan endeavored to have Mr. Cass nominated, but Franklin Pierce, who had not been nominated as a candidate, was named by Virginia and won. He was Secretary of War under Buchanan; and in 1860 he retired into private life on account of reinforcements not being sent to Fort Sumter.

As an author he was known by his History of the Indians and by his "France, its King, Court, and Government," published in 1840 (Encyclopædia Britannica). General Cass married Elizabeth Spencer, daughter of Gen. Joseph Spencer and Martha (Brainard), whose father was the Hon. Hezekiah Brainard, of Haddam, and her mother Dorothy (Hobart). Dorothy's parents were Rev. Jeremiah Hobart and Elizabeth (Whiting), and her parents were Rev. Samuel Whiting, of Lynn, and Elizabeth (St. John). General Cass's grandparents were Gen. Jonathan Cass and

Mary (Gilman), of Exeter, N. H.: she daughter of Theophilus Gilman, of the same Gilman family as No. 23 Ives Family. The parents of Jonathan Cass were Joseph Cass and Sarah (Flanders), she daughter of Jedediah⁴ (Daniel², Stephen², Stephen¹), Flanders and Eleanor (Barnard).

Children were two, born in Providence, R. I., namely: —

(a) CHARLOTTE IVES GODDARD⁶, born March 1, 1863; md. Oct. 12, 1887, Amos Lockwood Danielson, son of John W. and Sarah (Lockwood) Danielson, of Providence, R. I.

(b) HENRY LEDYARD GODDARD⁶, born Nov. —, 1866.

(9) ROBERT HALE IVES GODDARD⁷ (Col.), born Sept. 21, 1837; living in Providence, R. I., in 1887; md. Jan. 26, 1871, Rebekah Burnett Groesbeck, dau. of William Groesbeck and Elizabeth (Burnett), of Cincinnati, Ohio; granddaughter of Judge Jacob Burnett.

Children were: —

(a) WILLIAM GROESBECK GODDARD⁸, born Nov. 21, 1871; died April 26, 1882.

(b) MADELINE IVES GODDARD⁸, born June 25, 1874.

(c) ROBERT HALE IVES GODDARD⁸, born Feb. 12, 1880.

50. MOSES BROWN IVES⁶, born in Providence, R. I., July 21, 1794; died there Aug. 7, 1857; md. April 17, 1833, Anne Allen Dorr.

51. ELIZABETH IVES⁶, born in Providence, R. I., Aug. 6, 1796; died there, unmarried, March 12, 1813.

52. ROBERT HALE IVES⁶, born in Providence, R. I., Sept. 16, 1798; died there July 6, 1875; md. Oct. 3, 1827, Harriet Bowen Amory.

53. HOPE BROWN IVES⁶, born in Providence, R. I., May 14, 1802; died there, April 5, 1837, unmarried.

54. THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁶, born in Providence, R. I., March 25, 1804; died there Aug. 15, 1804.

FIFTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM IVES⁵ (No. 43), son of Capt. William⁴ (JOHN², Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Polly (Bradshaw) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 15, 1794; died there, Dec. 12, 1874; buried there in Harmony Grove; md. May 12, 1824, Lucy Gardner, dau. of Perez and Silence (Gardner) Gardner, of Hingham, Mass. (cousins); she born in Hingham, Mass., Feb. 10, 1800; died at Riverside, Cook co., Ill., in the house of her daughter, Mrs. Susan Spear, Oct. 19, 1882; buried in Harmony Grove, Salem, Mass.

Jan. 6, 1823, William Ives and his brother Stephen Bradshaw Ives started a newspaper, at first called "The Observer," afterwards "The Salem Observer;" it was a weekly, then issued every Monday morning, now every Saturday morning, as the "Salem

Observer." The brothers conducted the paper till 1839, when Stephen withdrew, and William continued until 1865, when it was published by Pease and Traill. In 1879 Gilbert L. Streeter (No. 63) was its editor. In 1856 Mr. Streeter wrote "an account of the newspapers and periodicals published in Salem" up to that year, and it contains much detailed information. The pamphlet is on file at the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass. (Sketch of Salem, p. 257).

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were eight, namely: —

55. MARY BRADSHAW IVES⁶, born Feb. 3, 1825; living in 1887; md. Dec., 1854, by Rev. O. B. Frothingham, to Jesse Mayne Richards, son of Jesse and Susan (McDonald) Richards, of Norridgewock, Me.; he born there Oct. —, 1828. No issue.
56. LUCY GARDNER IVES⁶, born Oct. 15, 1827; living in 1886 in Chicago, Ill.; md. March 7, 1849, her cousin, William Porter, son of Perez Porter and Ruth (Gardner); he born Jan. 22, 1827.

Children were: —

- (a) EDWARD JARVIS PORTER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., June 18, 1850; md. Sept. 17, 1875, Caroline Ramsey, dau. of Rev. Richard Ramsey, of Winchester, O.
- (b) ALICE IVES PORTER⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 1, 1852; md. June 25, 1874, George Goodman, of Cincinnati, O.
- (c) JESSIE MAY PORTER⁷, born in Cincinnati, O., Oct. 31, 1857; md. Oct. 22, 1880, Oscar M. Shannon of that city.
- (d) WILLIAM PORTER⁷, JR., born Jan. 22, 1860; died July 1, 1886; married in 1885.
- (e) LUCY GARDNER PORTER⁷, born Jan. 29, 1862.
- (f) MARY MANSFIELD PORTER⁷, born April 6, 1864; md. April 14, 1886, Edgar Bliss, of Riverside, Cook co., Ill.
- (g) HELEN MAY PORTER⁷, born June 30, 1866.

57. WILLIAM HALE IVES⁶, born Jan. 17, 1829; md. Jan. 17, 1854, Mary Walker.
58. SUSAN SHILLABER IVES⁶, born Feb. 3, 1832; living in 1886 in Riverside, Cook co., Ill.; md. March 17, 1854, by Rev. O. B. Frothingham, to Emmons Raymond Spear, then of Salem, Mass., son of Moses and Hulda (Raymond) Spear, of Shutesburg, Mass.; he born Nov. 21, 1831.

Children were: —

- (a) FRANK RAYMOND SPEAR⁷, born Sept. 9, 1856; living in 1887 in Chicago, Ill.; md. Nov. 20, 1879, Fanny Polley, dau. of John Calvin Polley and Julia Ann (Merrill), she born about 1857. Her father born in Holland, Mass., Jan. 27, 1828; her mother born in New Hartford, Ct., June 8, 1834.
- (b) MARY LOUISE SPEAR⁷, born Jan. 1, 1859; living at Riverside, Cook co., Ill., in 1887; md. there May 17, 1882, to Randolph Manning, son of Randolph and second wife, Eliza W. (Carley) Manning; he born in Pontiac, Mich., Nov. 28, 1851.
- (c) SAMUEL NICHOLS SPEAR⁷, born April 3, 1863; died April 18, 1864.

59. **FRANKLIN GARDNER IVES** ⁶, born in 1834; died aged 9 months.
60. **ANNE WARREN BRAZER IVES** ⁶, born April 27, 1836; living in 1886 in Chicago, Ill.; md. first, in 1856, Thomas Palfray Cole, son of Rev. Jonathan and Elizabeth (Upham) Cole, who died without issue, at the Sandwich Islands, in 1858. She married second, June 2, 1867, Samuel Pierpont Richardson, of Assumption, Canada, where he was born, Nov. 22, 1837; died in Chicago, Ill., in 1880. They had one child, born and died Feb. 16, 1874, a son.
61. **BENJAMIN FRANKLIN IVES** ⁶, born Dec. 3, 1837; md. first, Sarah Boerstler; md. second, her cousin, Emma Boerstler.
62. **HELEN MAY IVES** ⁶, born July 27, 1843; living in 1887 in Riverside, Cook co., Ill.; md. in Salem, Mass., June 2, 1866, Edward Augustus Saunders Driver, son of Rev. Joseph and Maria Antoinette (Saunders) Driver, No. 114, Driver Family.
- Children were: —

(a) **JOHN SAUNDERS DRIVER** ⁷, born in Chicago, Ill., March 25, 1869.

(b) **HELEN MAY IVES DRIVER** ⁷, born in Chicago, Ill., June 15, 1872.

(c) **EDWARD RAYMOND DRIVER** ⁷, born in Chicago, Ill., Dec. 12, 1873.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JOHN MANSFIELD IVES ⁵ (No. 44), son of Capt. William ⁴ (**JOHN** ², Capt. **BENJAMIN** ², **THOMAS** ¹), and Polly (Bradshaw) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., July 8, 1799; died there Aug. 29, 1883; md. Sept. 8, 1827, Lois Alley Southwick, dau. of John ⁶ and Rebecca (Alley) Southwick, dau. of John ⁶ and Rebecca (Alley) Southwick, granddaughter of James and Lois Alley, of Lynn, Mass.; also granddaughter of Joseph ⁴ and Elizabeth Southwick, and great-granddaughter of John ³ and widow Mary (Buffum) Southwick.

Their emigrant ancestors were Lawrence ¹ and Cassandra Southwick, who came to America in 1625 from Lancashire, Eng. They returned to England the same year, and came again to America in 1630 with their family, and obtained in Salem, now Peabody, Mass., lands for the prosecution of their trade of pottery and glass manufacturing. They were Quakers, called in New England "a cursed sect of hereticks," "who do like rogues and vagabonds come in upon us," and in 1658-9 they were persecuted and banished for attending the meetings of their sect, being first fined, then whipped, and imprisoned (Essex Inst. Coll., Vol. XVIII. p. 172).

Their son Daniel and daughter Provided were sentenced by the General Court to be sold into slavery because they could not pay

** John Mansfield Ives, a wife, and son, Daniel Ives, and daughter, Provided Ives, were sold into slavery by the General Court, 1702, for non-payment of taxes.*

the fine of ten shillings imposed on them for non-attendance at church, — to be sold to any of the English nation at Virginia or Barbadoes to answer said fine; but no shipmaster was found willing to convey them to the West Indies (Sewall's History).

Their son Josiah and daughter Mary were also whipped, imprisoned, and finally banished. Josiah went to Rhode Island, — then a refuge for everybody. Lawrence and wife Cassandra went to Shelter Island, Long Island Sound, in 1659; and in 1660 they both died, within three days of each other, from want, exposure, and privation.

The said Daniel ^{md. Esther Boyce} had a son Daniel², who had a son John³, who had a son Josiah⁴, who had John⁵, whose daughter Lois Alley⁷ abovesaid was born Oct. 30, 1804, in Salem, Mass., and died there March 24, 1873; married the said John M. Ives. In 1833 the Natural History Society of Essex County was formed, of which Mr. Ives was the secretary; soon after its organization attention was directed to horticulture, in which Mr. Ives became much interested, introducing rare varieties of fruits and vegetables, for which he was awarded a medal. He was also a botanist and ornithologist; he accompanied Prof. Audubon through Massachusetts when he was obtaining birds for his collections, at which time he was presented with a very fine white owl, which Mr. Ives gave his wife. She possessed the rare gift of painting birds from nature, and so sketched this owl while he was sitting on his perch before her; when the head was about finished, the owl pounced down upon it, tearing it with his claws into shreds, — evidently taking it for another owl. Mrs. Ives then chained him, sat farther away from him, and succeeded in finishing his picture, which, when Prof. Audubon saw, he considered it so much more life-like than one he had himself executed, that he begged both the picture and the owl. The picture was copied into his great work on birds, and the owl was placed among his collections, which collections have been presented to Amherst College.

Mr. Ives for many years was associated with John P. Jewett in the book trade, during which time they published Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe's famous book, "Uncle Tom's Cabin."

Children of **John M.** and **Lois A. (Southwick) Ives** were:—

63. **REBECCA SOUTHWICK IVES**⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 14, 1828; living there in 1887; md. Sept. 6, 1854, Gilbert Lewis Streeter, son of Rev. Barzillar and Sarah (Lewis) Streeter; he born in Salem, Mass.,

April 30, 1823; living there in 1887, where he is assistant cashier of the First National Bank; editor of the "Salem Observer;" treasurer of the Farm School, also of the Salem Lyceum; and in 1865, 1870-71, was President of the Common Council of Salem, Mass.

Mrs. Streeter greatly assisted the Compiler in the data on the Ives Family in Salem, Mass., which assistance she here gratefully acknowledges.

Children were:—

(a) LEWIS GILBERT STREETER⁷, born Jan. 4, 1855; died April 20, 1863.

(b) MARY LOUISA STREETER⁷, born Dec. 10, 1857; died Jan. 26, 1858.

(c) REBECCA IVES STREETER⁷, born Oct. 18, 1859.

(d) MARY ELLEN STREETER⁷, born Oct. 13, 1862.

(e) ABIGAIL NICHOLS STREETER⁷, born Aug. 23, 1866.

(f) GILBERT SOUTHWICK STREETER⁷, born March 10, 1868.

64. MARY LOUISA IVES⁶, born in Salem, Mass., May 7, 1830; died June 17, 1830.

65. MARY ELLEN IVES⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 23, 1832; died Nov. 22, 1862; md. Jan. 19, 1858, George Lathrop Hawkes, of Wakefield, Mass., son of Joshua⁷ and Abigail (Bancroft) Hawkes, through John², Adam¹, the emigrant, who arrived in Lynn about 1630.

Child was:—

(a) ELLEN LOUISA HAWKES⁷, born March —, 1859; died May 2, 1859.

66. JOHN SOUTHWICK IVES⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 25, 1833; md. Jan. 24, 1855, Mary Butterick.

67. HARRIET VAUGHAN IVES⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 17, 1835; died Oct. 15, 1839.

68. LOUISA MANSFIELD IVES⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 26, 1838; living there in 1887; md. in Boston, Mass., Sept. 19, 1872, as his second wife, Lewis Pierce⁹, son of Job⁸ and Thankful (Fairfield) Pierce; he born in Lyme, N. H., Jan. 24, 1826; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.

He descended from Thomas Pierce¹, the emigrant, who in 1633-4 came from England to New England with wife Elizabeth; he born in 1583; she born in 1595; they had issue eight children, the third of whom was Thomas², whose eighth child was Samuel³, who had a son Samuel⁴, who also had a son Samuel⁵, and he had a son Josiah⁶, who had Josiah⁷, whose son Job⁸ was father of Lewis⁹ aforesaid.

The emigrant's son Thomas's² sixth child was Stephen³, who had a son Stephen⁴, who had a son Benjamin⁵, who had Gen. Benjamin⁶, father of President Franklin Pierce⁷; Gen. Benjamin Pierce⁶ having been a general in the Revolution, and in 1825 was elected governor of New Hampshire. Thus Gen. Pierce descended from the sixth grandchild of the emigrant, while Lewis Pierce descended from the eighth grandchild of the emigrant.

Mrs. Lewis Pierce has greatly aided the Compiler to data on her own and kindred families, sparing neither time nor attention on all records within her knowledge; for all of which the Compiler is deeply indebted, and desires thankfully to acknowledge.

Children by **Frances** were : —

- (a) **FRANK HOLDEN PIERCE**⁷, born in Medford, Me., Nov. 20, 1857.
- (b) **ELLA FRANCES PIERCE**⁷, born in Lowell, Mass., Nov. 18, 1859.
- (c) **GEORGE LEWIS PIERCE**⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. —, 1861.

Child by **Louisa** was : —

- (d) **CHARLES SOUTHWICK PIERCE**⁷, born in Salem, Mass., March 21, 1874.

69. **CHARLES FREDERIC IVES**⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 4, 1848; living in Malden, Mass., in 1886; md. Aug. 24, 1876, **Ida Marion Washburn**.

FIFTH GENERATION.

STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES⁶ (No. 45), son of Capt. **WILLIAM**⁴ (**JOHN**³, Capt. **BENJAMIN**², **THOMAS**¹), and Polly (Bradshaw) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., April 12, 1801; died there July 31, 1883; md. first, May 16, 1826, **Mary Perkins**, dau. of **David**⁶ and **Harriet (Fabens) Perkins**; she born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1805; died there July 4, 1873; he md. second, May 31, 1876, her sister, **Harriet Perkins**; she born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 26, 1808; died in Philadelphia, Pa., Dec. 23, 1886. No issue by this second marriage. Their father descended from **John Perkins**¹, the emigrant, of Ipswich, Mass., through **John**², **Isaac**², **Jacob**⁴, **Frances**⁵, **David**⁶.

Stephen B. Ives by trade was a printer and bookbinder; his seven years of apprenticeship were marked by great industry and valuable service to his employer. On arriving at the age of twenty-one he commenced business on his own account.

In January, 1823, he formed in Salem, Mass., a partnership with his elder brother, **William Ives**, in the establishment of the "Salem Observer" and "The Old Corner Bookstore," so called to this day (1887), both of which proved successful ventures.

Some years afterwards he established a business in Boston for the importation and sale of fancy goods, from which business subsequently he retired in favor of his sons, attending only to the duties of director in various corporations, and of membership in various boards of the city government to which he was called from time to time (Salem Gazette).

In 1858 he was President of the Common Council of Salem, Mass.; also served in the lower branch of the Massachusetts Legislature.

Children by **Mary**, all born in Salem, Mass., were ten, namely :

70. **STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES** ⁶, JR., born March 9, 1827; died Feb. 8, 1884; md. first, Jan. —, 1848, Mary Elizabeth Burnham; md. second, Widow Constance (Telford) Farndale, of England.
71. **DAVID PERKINS IVES** ⁶, born July 13, 1828; living in Salem, Mass., in 1887; md. Dec. 21, 1854, Sarah Shreve Calef, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Shreve) Calef. No issue.
72. **HENRY PERKINS IVES** ⁶, born April 15, 1880; md. Oct. 2, 1856, Adeline Simes Jones.
73. **EDWARD LANG IVES** ⁶, born Oct. 13, 1832; died Sept. 8, 1834.
74. **MARY ELIZABETH IVES** ⁶, born April 9, 1835; living in Salem, Mass., in 1887; unmarried.
75. **MARGARET PERKINS IVES** ⁶, born Aug. 26, 1836; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.; md. there in 1863, Charles Sewall, son of Levi and Mary Ann Sewall; she born Aug. 8, 1836.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were : —

- | | | |
|--|---|----------------------------------|
| (a) GRACE SEWALL ⁷ | } twins, born | { living in 1887 in Salem, Mass. |
| and | | |
| (b) ALICE SEWALL ⁷ , | } Sept. 1, 1866; | { died the same year. |
| (c) EDWARD LANG SEWALL ⁷ , | | |
| (d) ELIZABETH SEWALL ⁷ , | born July 29, 1867; died July 22, 1876. | |
| (e) ELIZABETH SEWALL ⁷ , | born Sept. 5, 1868; died Dec. 4, 1876. | |
| (f) STEPHEN IVES SEWALL ⁷ , | born Nov. 11, 1876; died Nov. 29, 1876. | |
| (g) CHARLES SEWALL ⁷ , JR., | born July 11, 1877. | |

76. **GEORGE AUGUSTUS IVES** ⁶, born Sept. 13, 1839; md. Oct. 10, 1866, Clara Thorndike Rand, of Beverly, Mass.
77. **CORNELIA ALLEN IVES** ⁶, born July 27, 1844; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.; md. June 29, 1871, Frederick Manton Osborne, son of Stephen and Jane (Brace) Osborne, and had two children, namely : —

- (a) **FREDERICK BRACE OSBORNE** ⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 18, 1872.
- (b) **ETHEL BRADSHAW OSBORNE** ⁷, born in Salem, Mass., May 15, 1876.

78. **CAROLINE LOUISA IVES** ⁶, born Oct. 27, 1847; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.; md. Oct. 11, 1871, Frank Augustus Langmaid, son of John Ponsland Langmaid and Rebecca Morrison (Taylor). A lumber merchant.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were : —

- (a) **MARY PERKINS LANGMAID** ⁷, born Feb. 22, 1873.
- (b) **HENRY TAYLOR LANGMAID** ⁷, born Aug. 24, 1874.
- (c) **ALICE IVES LANGMAID** ⁷, born Feb. 8, 1876.
- (d) **JOHN FRANK LANGMAID** ⁷, born Feb. 7, 1880.
- (e) **STEPHEN IVES LANGMAID** ⁷, born July 31, 1884.

FIFTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN HALE IVES⁶ (No. 47), son of Capt. William⁴ (JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Polly (Bradshaw) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 7, 1806 (Town Records); Nov. 7, 1805 (Family Bible); died there Oct. 27, 1837; bookseller and stationer; md. Oct. 27, 1833, Lydia Ann Harraden, dau. of Jonathan and Sarah (Henfield) Harraden; she born April 7, 1809; died Feb. 23, 1881.

Children, born in Salem, Mass., were:—

79. BENJAMIN HALE IVES⁶, JR., born Sept. 18, 1837; md. June 6, 1865, Sarah Elizabeth Safford Kimball, dau. of Jonathan Lord Kimball.
80. SARAH ELLEN IVES⁶, born Nov. 17, 1834; died Jan. 30, 1874; md. May 8, 1856, William Cleveland Henderson, son of Samuel⁶ (Samuel⁵, Samuel⁴, John³, John², John¹), and Frances (Brown) Henderson; he born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 17, 1833; living in 1887 in East Somerville, Mass.

Children were:—

- (a) FANNY PARKS HENDERSON⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 8, 1857.
 (b) WILLIAM IVES HENDERSON⁷, born in Salem, Mass., June 27, 1859.
 (c) BENJAMIN HALE HENDERSON⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 29, 1861.
 (d) ANNIE HARRADEN HENDERSON⁷, born in Salem, Mass., July 28, 1867.

He married second, Sept. 8, 1875, Marrayet Robertson, of Prince Edward's Island; she born Jan. 1, 1844; died at East Somerville, Mass., Dec. 15, 1886.

Children were:—

- (e) WALTER CLEVELAND HENDERSON⁷, born in Chelsea, Mass., July 6, 1876.
 (f) ISABEL SCOTT HENDERSON⁷, born in Chelsea, Mass., March 9, 1880.

SIXTH GENERATION.

MOSES BROWN IVES⁶ (No. 50), son of Thomas Poynton⁶ (ROBERT HALE⁴, Capt. BENJAMIN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Hope (Brown) Ives; born in Providence, R. I., July 21, 1794; died in Warwick, R. I., Aug. 7, 1857; md. April 17, 1833, Anne Allen Dorr, dau. of Sullivan and Lydia Dorr, grand-daughter of Gov. Thomas W. Dorr, of Providence, R. I.; she born in Providence, R. I., Feb. 7, 1810; died there March 1, 1884.

He graduated from Harvard College in 1812, admitted to the

bar of Providence, R. I., in 1815, but never practised his profession, commercial pursuits affording him greater attractions.

At his father's death he took his place in the firm of Brown & Ives, and as the president of the Providence Bank, which position he held about twenty-two years. In 1825 he became the treasurer of Brown University, which he retained until 1858. He was also the treasurer of the Butler Hospital for the Insane.

To the Providence Athenæum he was a large contributor to its endowment, being one of its founders.

Children, all born in Providence, R. I., were:—

81. THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁷, born Jan. 17, 1834; graduated from Brown University in 1854; died Nov. 17, 1865, at Havre, France, where he had gone to take the steamship for America. In the War of the Rebellion he gave his yacht, the "Hope," and his personal services, without compensation, to the United States Government, which were accepted; and Nov. 7, 1864, his services to his country were acknowledged by promotion to lieutenant commander, with a leave of absence for six months. April 5 he sailed for Europe; but his impaired health developed a pulmonary disease, and he never returned. ("The Chad Brown Memorial," by Abby I. (Brown) Bulkley.)

He married at Vienna, Oct. 1, 1865, Elizabeth Cabot Motley, daughter of Hon. John Lothrop Motley (the eminent American historian, and Secretary of Legation to Russia in 1841, and United States Minister at Vienna from 1861 to 1867, and during Gen. Grant's term as President, Minister at the Court of St. James for one year).

"Her father was a descendant in the fourth generation of John Motley, of Belfast, Ire., who emigrated before 1738, and settled in Portland, Me. (John⁴, Thomas⁵, Thomas⁶, John⁷)."—*The Chad Brown Memorial*, p. 81.

She was born in Dedham, Mass., in 1838; living in 1886 in London, Eng., where she was married second, as his second wife, in Westminster Abbey, in that portion known as Henry VII.'s Chapel, by Dean Stanley, Dec., 1876, to Sir William George Granville Vernon Harcourt; he born in 1827; entered Parliament in 1868; and about the same time he was made Whewell Professor of International Law in the University of Cambridge, which position he held till 1880, when he became a cabinet minister. In 1885 he was Home Secretary of England.

There were no children by the first marriage, but one by the second, — a son; and Sir William had one son when he married Mrs. Ives.

82. HOPE BROWN IVES⁷, born May 18, 1839; living a widow in Providence, R. I., in 1887; md. Jan. 20, 1864, Henry Grinnell Russell, *born* No issue.

SIXTH GENERATION.

ROBERT HALE IVES⁶ (No. 52), son of Thomas Poynton⁵ (ROBERT HALE⁴, Capt. BENJAMIN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Hope (Brown) Ives, born in Providence, R. I., Sept. 16, 1798; died there July 6, 1875; md. Oct. 3, 1827, Harriet Bowen Amory, dau. of Thomas and Elizabeth (Bowen) Amory, of Boston, Mass.; she born in Boston, March 4, 1803; died in Providence, R. I., Nov. 10, 1868. She was granddaughter of Dr. William and Sarah (Corliss) Bowen, and great-granddaughter of Capt. George Corliss and Waitstill (Rhodes).

Children, all born in Providence, R. I., were:—

83. THOMAS POYNTON IVES⁷, born Aug. 24, 1828; died Jan. 16, 1829.
 84. ELIZABETH AMORY IVES⁷, born April 10, 1830; living in 1887 in Providence, R. I.; md. Sept. 22, 1851, as his second wife, Prof. William Gammell, eldest son of Rev. William Gammell and Mary (Slocomb); he born in Medfield, Mass., Feb. 10, 1812; his father's family moved to Newport, R. I., in 1822; he went to Providence, R. I., as a student in Brown University; graduated in 1831; and the following year was appointed to the Latin tutorship in the institute. In 1835 he was appointed Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature; and in 1850 was transferred to the professorship of History and Political Economy, which he resigned in 1864.

He is known as an author and a writer for magazines, reviews, etc., and for several years has been President of the Rhode Island Historical Society.

Children, all born in Providence, R. I., were:—

- (a) ROBERT IVES GAMMELL⁸, born Dec. 30, 1852; md. Feb. 28, 1878, Eliza Anthony Hoppin.
 (b) ELIZABETH HOPE GAMMELL⁸, born Nov. 7, 1854; md. May 19, 1880, John Whipple Slater.
 (c) WILLIAM GAMMELL⁸, born May 20, 1857; md. Feb. 20, 1884, Elizabeth Gardiner Bowen.
 (d) ARTHUR AMORY GAMMELL⁸, born March 13, 1862; died March 23, 1887.
 (e) HARRIET IVES GAMMELL⁸, born May 16, 1864.
 (f) HELEN LOUISE GAMMELL⁸, born April 24, 1868.

85. HARRIET BOWEN IVES⁷, born Jan. 4, 1832; died in Providence, R. I., of consumption, Aug. 28, 1860; unmarried.
 86. ROBERT HALE IVES⁷, born April 3, 1837; died unmarried, Sept. 27, 1862, at Hagerstown, Md., of wounds received in the battle of Antietam, in the War of the Rebellion, where his rank was that of lieutenant; buried Oct. 1, 1862, in the North Burial-ground, Providence, R. I.

SIXTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM HALE IVES ⁶ (No. 57), son of William ⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM ⁴, JOHN ³, Capt. BENJAMIN ², THOMAS ¹), and Lucy (Gardner) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 17, 1829; living in 1887 in Taylorville, Christian co., Il.; md. Jan. 17, 1854, Mary Walker, dau. of Jonas and Mary (Lindsley) Walker, of Chicago, Ill.

Jonas Walker was born in Orange, N. J., in 1802; Mary Lindsley was born in Elizabeth, N. J., March 7, 1800; they were married in Orange, N. J., Sept. 10, 1826; her parents were Lewis and Amy (Roades) Lindsey.

Children were: —

87. LUCY LINDSEY IVES ⁷, born Oct. 6, 1854; died July 27, 1855.

88. WILLIAM WALKER IVES ⁷, born May 10, 1857.

89. KATE BUTLER IVES ⁷, born Jan. 14, 1872; died Jan. 23, 1872.

90. RAYMOND SPEAR IVES ⁷, born Oct. 4, 1878.

SIXTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN IVES ⁶ (No. 61), son of William ⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM ⁴, JOHN ³, Capt. BENJAMIN ², THOMAS ¹), and Lucy (Gardner) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 3, 1837; living in 1886 in Riverside, Cook co., Ill.; md. first, at Fairfield, Ia., Sarah L. Boerstler, dau. of Lewis F. and Amy (Studes) Boerstler; she born at Sinking Springs, O., Oct. 26, 1836; died in Florida, Dec. 25 1881, where she had gone from Riverside, Ill., for her health.

He married second, May 3, 1883, his first wife's cousin, Emma J. Boerstler, dau. of George B. and Eliza (Scuber) Boerstler; she born at Lancaster, O., about 1836. No issue.

Children by first marriage were: —

91. LEWIS BOERSTLER IVES ⁷, born July 10, 1860.

92. EDWARD GARDNER IVES ⁷, born June 20, 1864.

93. WILLIAM IVES ⁷, born Oct. 5, 1866.

94. JANE EVANS IVES ⁷, born Aug. 4, 1868.

SIXTH GENERATION.

JOHN SOUTHWICK IVES⁶ (No. 66), son of John Mansfield⁶ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Lois Alley (Southwick) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 25, 1833; living in 1887 in Salem, Mass.; md. Jan. 24, 1855, by the Rev. Geo. W. Briggs to Mary Butterick, dau. of Samuel Bartlett Butterick and Anna Ashly (Merritt), granddaughter of Willard and Mary (Bartlett) Butterick; she born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 14, 1836, where in 1886 she resided.

Samuel Bartlett Butterick was born in Gorham, Me., Oct. 16, 1801; removed to Salem, Mass., Oct., 1823, where he married Jan. 24, 1833.

(The earliest record of those of the name of Butterick is in 1635, of the then town of Concord, N. H.)

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were: —

98. CHARLES EDWIN IVES⁷, born Oct. 6, 1855; md. May 13, 1880, Catherine Augusta Allen.
99. ALFRED SOUTHWICK IVES⁷, born Nov. 7, 1857; md. Nov. 25, 1880, Anna Maria Connacher, dau. of David and Annie (Smith) Connacher; she born in Prince Edward's Island, Feb. —, 1854; both living in 1887 in Salem, Mass. They had issue one son, Samuel Southwick Ives⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 17, 1884.
97. JOHN SOUTHWICK IVES⁷, born June 22, 1860; md. Dec. 16, 1884, Anna Gardner Symonds, dau. of Thomas and Eliza Radford (Jordan) Symonds; she born in Danville, Me., in 1862; both living in 1887 in Salem, Mass. They had issue one son, Chester Symonds Ives⁸, born in Salem, Mass., April 4, 1887.
98. SAMUEL BUTTERICK IVES⁷, born May 25, 1862; md. Feb. 11, 1885, Lillian Morse, dau. of Ebenezer Henry Morse and Sarah Jane (Gower); she born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 27, 1861; both living in Salem, Mass., in 1887. They had issue one daughter, Lillian Gower Ives⁸, born Nov. 13, 1885.
99. HENRY MERRITT IVES⁷, born March 29, 1865; md. Oct. 13, 1884, Florence Alice Rogers, dau. of John Walter Rogers and Jessie (St. Clair); she born in Charlestown, Mass., Dec., 1859. They had issue one child, Jessie St. Clair Ives⁸, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 20, 1884.
100. MARY ELLEN IVES⁷, born April 16, 1867.
101. WILLIAM LINCOLN IVES⁷, born Jan. 29, 1871.
102. EMILY ASHLY IVES⁷, born Jan. 1, 1873.

SIXTH GENERATION.

CHARLES FREDERIC IVES⁶ (No. 69), son of John Mansfield⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Lois Alley (Southwick) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 4, 1848; living in Malden, Mass., in 1887; md. at Saratoga, N. Y., Aug. 24, 1876, Ida Marion Washburn, dau. of Francis Marion Washburn and Anna Matilda (Hill); she born in Salem, Mass., April 5, 1856; living in Malden, Mass., in 1887.

This gentleman rendered material aid to the Compiler, correcting and adding to the data collected on his uncle Stephen's family, and that of his father's. For which this opportunity is taken to gratefully acknowledge the same, and render thanks.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

103. FREDERIC WASHBURN IVES⁷, born July 26, 1877.

104. LOIS SOUTHWICK IVES⁷, born Aug. 1, 1880.

SIXTH GENERATION.

STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES⁶, Jr. (No. 69), son of Stephen Bradshaw⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary (Perkins) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., March 9, 1827; died there, "after a lingering illness, Feb. 8, 1884" (Gazette); graduate of Harvard College, class of 1848; admitted to the bar in 1851; clerk of the Police Court of Salem, Mass., about two years; president of the Essex Bar Association; md. first, Jan. —, 1848, Mary Elizabeth Burnham, dau. of — Burnham and Lydia (Cloutman); she born in Salem, Mass., March 9, 1827; died there, Jan. 4, 1870; he md. second, in England, Mrs. Constance (Telford) Farndale, of whom nothing further is known. No issue by second marriage.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

105. EDWARD LANG IVES⁷, born April 19, 1849; living in 1886 in Calcutta, India, where he md. Feb. —, 1879, Sophie De Terreno, and had issue Mary Sophie Ives⁸, who was born in Calcutta, India, Dec. 28, 1879.

106. MARY PERKINS IVES⁷, born Oct. 17, 1850; living in 1886 in Boston,

Mass., a widow; md. in Salem, Mass., April 12, 1874, Charles Patter-son Abbot, son of Rev. Joseph Abbot and Margaret (Tilton), of Beverly, Mass., where he was born, April 26, 1843; he died at Andover, Mass., Aug. 15, 1879; buried in Beverly, Mass.

Children, all born in Calcutta, India, were:—

(a) MARGARET IVES ABBOT⁸, born June 15, 1876.

(b) CHARLES OTIS ABBOT⁸, born June 18, 1877.

(c) SPRAGUE ABBOT⁸, born Sept. 18, 1879.

107. ARTHUR BURNHAM IVES⁷, born in 1854; died in 1855.

108. GEORGE BURNHAM IVES⁷, born Oct. 18, 1856; md. April 10, 1879, Mary Manley Creamer.

109. DAVID OTIS IVES⁷, born Nov. 28, 1858; living in Salem, Mass., in 1886, unmarried.

110. ALICE PEIRCE IVES⁷, born Dec. —, 1862; died July —, 1863.

SIXTH GENERATION.

HENRY PERKINS IVES⁶ (No. 72), son of Stephen Bradshaw⁶ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN⁵, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary (Perkins) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., April 15, 1830; living there in 1887; bookseller; md. Oct. 2, 1856, Ada Simes Jones, dau. of Timothy Ladd Jones and Eliza (Chase), she born in Portsmouth, N. H., July 18, 1832; living in Salem, Mass., in 1887.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

111. ETTA MOLINEUX IVES⁷, born Dec. 24, 1857; living in 1886 in Longwood, Mass.; md. Oct. 20, 1878, Charles Francis Quincy, son of George H. and Caroline (Sweetser) Quincy, who probably belong to the Quincy family of Braintree, Mass., and thus are the ancestral progenitors of the mother of John Adams, second President of the United States, for Daniel Quincy, of Braintree, married Ann, daughter of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Charlestown, Mass., whose granddaughter Elizabeth married Rev. William Smith, of Weymouth, and they had a daughter Abigail, who married President John Adams.

Child was:—

(a) POLLY QUINCY⁸, born July 8, 1835.

(b) ADA IVES QUINCY⁸, born Aug. —, 1880; an adopted child, to whom they gave their own name.

112. AUGUSTINE PERKINS IVES⁷, born April 17, 1859; died Sept. 12, 1859.

113. AUGUSTINE PERKINS IVES⁷, born May 31, 1861; living in Salem, Mass., in 1887; md. there by the Rev. De Witt S. Clark, Jan. 27, 1886,

to Katherine Cowan-Browne, dau. of John Cowan and Katherine H. (Clooney).

John Cowan died when his daughter Katherine was two years of age, and his widow married, second, Josiah H. Browne, and her child was given the name of its step-father in connection with her own name. Katherine was born in Orleans, Mass., Aug. 20, 1863.

114. NATHAN FRYE IVES⁷, born Aug. 5, 1865.

115. RICHARD IVES⁷, born Sept. 30, 1867.

116. LUCY PERKINS IVES⁷, born Dec. 7, 1872.

117 ^{1/2} Ernest Henry Ives⁷, b. Aug. 2, 1863.

SIXTH GENERATION.

GEORGE AUGUSTUS IVES⁶ (No. 76), son of Stephen Bradshaw⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary (Perkins) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 13, 1839; living in 1886 in Boston, Mass.; md. Oct. 10, 1866, Clara Thorndike Rand, dau. of Thorndike Rand and Hannah Parnell (Nurse), of Beverly, Mass.

Children were:—

117. HELEN BIGELOW IVES⁷, born in Boston, Mass., Nov. 5, 1867.

118. KATHARINE THORNDIKE IVES⁷, born in Boston, Mass., Dec. 10, 1874.

SIXTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN HALE IVES⁶, Jr. (No. 79), son of Benjamin Hale⁵ (Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Lydia (Harraden) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 18, 1837; living there in 1886; md. June 6, 1865, Sarah Elizabeth Safford Kimball, dau. of Jonathan Lord Kimball and Sarah Smith (Safford); granddaughter of Nathaniel Foster Safford and Sally (Smith); great-granddaughter of George K(night?). Smith and Sally (*Driver*), No. 50, Driver Family.

Sarah E. S. Kimball born in Salem, Mass., March 16, 1841; living there in 1886.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

119. A son (still-born), June 6, 1867.

120. FRANCIS SAFFORD IVES⁷, born Dec. 12, 1869; died Sept. 18, 1870.

121. BENJAMIN HALE IVES⁷, born June 20, 1874; died April 13, 1877.

122. MABEL IVES⁷, born May 17, 1878.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

CHARLES EDWIN IVES⁷ (No. 95), son of John Southwick⁶ (JOHN MANSFIELD⁵, Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary (Butterick) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 6, 1855; living in 1887 in Malden, Mass.; md. May 13, 1880, Catherine Augusta Allen, dau. of George Wilkins and Anna Maria Allen; she born in Salem, Mass., about 1857; living in 1887 in Malden, Mass.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

123. CHARLES ALLEN IVES⁸, born April 17, 1882.

124. MARY ASHBY IVES⁸, born April 17, 1882.

125. GEORGE WILKINS IVES⁸, born July 26, 1883.

126. EDITH LYNWOOD IVES⁸, born July 13, 1887.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

GEORGE BURNHAM IVES⁷ (No. 108), son of Stephen Bradshaw⁶, Jr. (STEPHEN BRADSHAW⁵, Capt. WILLIAM⁴, JOHN³, Capt. BENJAMIN², THOMAS¹), and Mary Elizabeth (Burnham) Ives, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 18, 1856; living there in 1886; a lawyer; md. April 10, 1879, Mary Manley Creamer, dau. of Frederick and Martha (Chase) Creamer; she born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 8, 1856.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

127. FREDERICK MANLEY IVES⁸, born Jan. 10, 1880,

128. OSCAR JACKSON IVES⁸, born May 28, 1881.

THE KIMBALL FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

RICHARD KIMBALL (KEMBALL and KEMBLE), born in England in 1595; wheelwright; embarked at Ipswich, England, for New England, the last of April, 1634, in the ship "Elizabeth," William Andrews, master. He landed at Watertown, New England, with his wife Ursula, and children Henry, aged 15; Elizabeth, aged 13; Richard, aged 11; Mary, aged 9; Martha, aged 5; John, aged 3; and Thomas, aged 1: all recorded in Drake's "Founders of New England."

Martha Scott, aged 60, also Thomas Scott, aged 40, mother and brother of Ursula, his wife, came with them in the "Elizabeth." Thomas Scott settled in Ipswich, Mass., and had children Thomas, Elizabeth, Abigail, Hannah, Sarah, and Mary.

Thomas, Jr., was in the Indian War at Squakeheage (Northfield, Mass.), under Capt. Lathrop, where he was killed Sept. 8, 1675. The will of Thomas Scott, Sr., was approved March 8, 1653.

Henry Kimball, brother of Richard, came also with him, accompanied by his wife, Susan, daughters Elizabeth and Susan, and a lad named Richard Cutting, probably an apprentice. Henry Kimball remained in Watertown, where he died about 1650; but Richard Kimball removed to Ipswich, Mass., where, Feb. 23, 1635, he was granted a house-lot, also 40 acres beyond the North River.

May 6, 1635, he took the freeman's oath. He was also "one of a comm to perfect the line between Bass River and Wenham; and 18:5:1673, he was on comm to establish rates for the cost of building the minister's house, which was voted to be 18 ft. square, 13 ft. stud, to be added to Robert's house" (Wenham Records).

Richard Kimball was a wheelwright by trade, and in 1660 he was granted liberty "to fell twenty white oak trees to make weels for the Towns men there use." In 1666 a similar grant was made him.

The date of the death of Ursula Kimball, his wife, has not been ascertained; but he married, second, this time in New England,

Oct. 23, 1661, Margaret, widow of Henry Dow, of Hampton, N. H., who died March 1, 1675-6. Administration of her estate was granted March 28, 1676, to Daniel and Thomas Dow, of Hampton, N. H. (Co. Ct. and Hampton Recs.) In the inventory of the estate is mentioned, "Due from Executors of her husband's Richard's will £40." Also a separate inventory of £101 : 13 : 11 : of goods of the widow at Hampton (Essex Deeds).

Richard Kimball made his will March 5, 1674-5; proved Sept. 28, 1675.

Children by **Ursula** were : —

2. **ABIGAIL KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1616; died in Salisbury, Mass., June 17, 1658; md. John Severance, of Salisbury, Mass. They had eleven children, namely : 1. Samuel ²; 2. Eben ²; 3. Abigail ²; 4. Abigail ²; 5. Mary ²; 6. John ²; 7. Joseph ²; 8. Elizabeth ²; 9. Benjamin ²; 10. Ephraim ²; 11. Elizabeth ². Mr. Severance married, second, Susannah, widow of Henry Ambrose, who died in 1658.
John Severance died April 9, 1682.

3. **HENRY KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1619; inventory of his estate taken June 16, 1676; md. first, about 1642, Mary Wyatt; md. second, Elizabeth, widow of William Rayner.

4. **ELIZABETH KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1621; living, unmarried, in 1675.

5. **RICHARD KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1623; died at Wenham, Mass., May 26, 1676; md. first, Mary —; md. second, Mary —.

The first Mary probably was the daughter of Dea. Charles Gott.

6. **MARY KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1625; living unmarried in 1675.

7. **MARTHA KIMBALL** ², born in England in 1629; md. Joseph Fowler, son of Philip ¹ and Mary (Winsley or Winslow ?) Fowler, he born in England about 1629; came with his parents in the ship "Mary and John" in 1634 to Ipswich, Mass.; killed May 19, 1676, by the Indians, near Deerfield, Mass., on his return from the Falls fight.

Jan. 5, 1634, Joseph Fowler received a grant of 30 acres of land in Ipswich, Mass., and in 1635 a grant of 34 acres.

"12 : 11th. mo. 1651, this writing & deed was acknowledged before me, Samuel Symonds.

"Know all men by these, that I, Joseph Fowler of Ipswich, in the county of Essex, in New England, husbandman, doe sell unto Richard Kemball, sen'r of y^e same towne, wheelwright, my father-in-law, such land & cattell as followeth, viz : — one cow & one yearling, 40 acres of ground joyning to Richard Jacob, on y^e one side, & Thomas Byshop & Jobe Byshop, on the other, 34 acres of it I enjoyne my selfe to fence in, of upland & meadow which the said Richard is to have of the said Joseph, for such goods as I have received of him for satisfaction thereof.

In wittnesse whereof, I have hereunto sett my hand, the 12th. of January, 1650.

JOSEPH FOWLER

Wittenesses

WILLIAM CHAUNDLER (his brother-in-law).

JOHN KIMBALL (his wife's brother).

WILLIAM SMITH "

Children of **Joseph and Martha (Kimball) Fowler** were : —

- I. **JOSEPH FOWLER**², born about 1647; resided in his youth with his grandfather, Richard Kimball. His uncle, Richard Kimball, Jr., settled in Wenham, Mass., where Joseph appears to have followed him, and where he married Elizabeth Hutton, dau. of Richard and Elizabeth Hutton, all of Wenham; he died in Wenham, Feb. 10, 1717.

Children were : —

- (a) **ELIZABETH FOWLER**⁴, born in 1678; md. Samuel Kimball, Jr., son of Ensign Samuel and Marah (Witt) Kimball. He md. second, Joanna —.
- (b) **JOSEPH FOWLER**⁴, born March 15, 1679; md. Susanna Dennis; she md. second, April 5, 1726, Samuel Smith, of Ipswich, Mass.
- (c) **RICHARD FOWLER**⁴, born —; md. Miriam Balch, dau. of Freeborn and Merriam (Batchelder) Balch (Moulton). She md. second, Ezekiel Day, of Nutfield.

- II. **PHILIP FOWLER**², born Dec. 25, 1648; named for his grandfather Fowler; died in 1715-16; md. Jan. 20, 1672-3, Elizabeth Herrick, dau. of Henry and Editha (Laskin) Herrick. She died May 6, 1727. They had nine children. (See Appendix, Herrick Family, No. 47.)

In 1651 "Philip Fowler the elder, of Ipswich, did come before me, and in the presence of Joseph his sonne & Martha his wife, & with their full & free consent, did adopt as his sonne Phillip, the sonne of the s'd Joseph & Martha, to be his sonne: SAMUEL SYMONDS."

He was educated by the famous Ezekiel Cheever, who then kept the grammar school of Ipswich. In 1668 by deed of gift his grandfather gave him, "in consideration of his being with me, and doeing my business for me, as formerly, . . . all that my now dwelling house and lands I stand now possesst off, after my decease, . . . if my Grand child Philip, leave a wife behind him when he dye, then she shall enjoy it, dureing her naturall life" etc. In 1883 that house was still standing and occupied by a descendant (Fowler Family, by M. A. Stickney).

- III. **JOHN FOWLER**², born in Ipswich, Mass.; md. first, Sarah —; md. second, in Springfield, Mass., Hannah Scott, dau. of John and Sarah (Bliss) Scott of that place.

- IV. **MARY FOWLER**², born —; md. Jan. 20, 1673, in Gloucester, Mass., John Briers, son of John and Elizabeth (Jackson) Briers, who was born May 29, 1658.

8. **JOHN KIMBALL**², born in 1631; died May 6, 1698; md. first, about 1655, Mary, dau. of Humphrey and Bridget Bradstreete; md. second, Oct. 6, 1666, Mary, dau. of Francis and Jane (Wilson) Jordan.

9. **THOMAS KIMBALL**², born in England in 1633; killed by an Indian, whose christian name was Symon, May 3, 1676, at Bradford, Mass., where he removed about 1666. Three well-known converted Indians, named Symon, Andrew, and Peter, it is stated in the History of Haverhill, Mass., lived among the settlers, worked for them, and became semi-civilized. These Indians intended to kill some one at Rowley; but the night being far advanced, they decided to stay where they were and attack Mr. Kimball, whom they killed, and took captive his wife and five children, one an infant. They were carried by them forty miles into the wilderness, but by the influence of Wannalanacet, chief of the Pennacooks, who was on friendly terms with the English, Mrs. Kimball and her five children were suffered to return to their

home, being freed without ransom, which they reached June 13, 1676, after an absence of forty-one days. Twice herself and infant were threatened with death, the fires having been kindled to burn them; but by some providential influence their lives were spared.

"May 3, 1676, a note was handed in on the Sabbath by the pious parents of Goodwife Kimball, that she, and her five children, taken at Bradford by Indians who killed her husband, might be delivered." — FELT, *Hist. of Ipswich*.

Shortly after her return she presented the following petition to the Governor and Council:—

"To the Hon. Governor and Council, The humble petition of Mary Kimball sheweth that Simon, the Indian who killed my husband, Thomas Kimball, hath threatened to kill me and my children if ever I goe to my own house, So that I dare not goe to looke after what little I have there left, for fear of my life being taken away by him; and therefore doe humbly entreate the Hon. Governor and Council that some course may be taken, as God shall direct, and your wisdoms shall think best to secure him; for I am in continual fear of my life by him; and if any course may be taken for the recovery of what is yet left in their hands of my goods that they have not destroyed (as there was two kettells and two or three baggs of linnen when I came from them) that I might have it restored, leaving myself and my concernes under God to your wisdom. Remain your humble suppliant

MARY KIMBALL."

(The three Indians were on the point of making peace with the inhabitants, when they were seized and secured in jail, but afterwards made their escape, and committed their depredations more vigorously than ever. Tradition or history reveals not their ending.)

Thomas Kimball married Mary —, who died Nov., 1697. Inventory of his estate taken May 18, 1676. Amount £536 : 03 : 00. Administration granted to Mary, relict of the deceased, Sept. 23, 1676, and the court orders that the eldest son, Richard, shall have £80, and the rest of the children £40, as they come to age, and the rest of the estate to the widow.

Mr. Kimball at first settled at Hampton, where, Oct. 20, 1653, he bought of Valentine Hill, of Boston, $\frac{1}{4}$ of the right and title in a saw-mill on Oyster River, with all the mills, mill-works, and lands belonging to the premises.

Feb. 20, 1653, he sold for £300, $\frac{1}{4}$ of this right to Randall Nichols, of Charlestown.

Oct. 13, 1659, Thomas Kimball, of Hampton, wheelwright, and wife Mary for £33 sells to Eliakin Wardwell, of Hampton, and Nathaniel Wier, of Nuberie, 55 acres of land in Hampton, bounded on Salisbury line, and Mr. Wheelwright's farm. Also 10 acres of salt-marsh butting on Mr. Huzzey's farm.

After his removal to Bradford, he and his wife Mary sold April 12, 1669, to Daniel Ela, of Haverhill, a piece of meadow and upland in Haverhill, near to pond meadow on said Ela.

Feb. 20, 1668, Thomas Kimball chosen constable at the first meeting of the Merrimack people while they were yet a part of Rowley.

"Voted, Thomas Kimball's house and Benjamin Gage's house shall be legal places of public concernment to the whole town, by setting up a writing or writings at said houses until we have more convenient place." — GAGE, *Hist. of Rowley*.

"March, 1671, the town of Bradford, (Mass.), caused various river lots to be laid out, beginning at the Glover farm, and extending down the river. Sixteen names given of lot owners, and the size of the lot. Thomas Kimball of the number, but the size of his lot was not given." — *Ibid.*

He lived on the public road to Boxford, the cellar of which house was still to be seen a few years since.

Children were : —

(a) ELIZABETH KIMBALL², born at Hampton, Mass., Dec. 5, 1658; died Dec. 27, 1658.

(b) RICHARD KIMBALL², born at Hampton, Mass., 1660; died at Bradford, Mass., Jan. 21, 1732-33; called Cornet; also styled Captain. He md. first, Sept. 7, 1682, Sarah, dau. of John and Elizabeth Spofford, who died Feb. 14, 1713, by whom he had issue nine children, the fifth child of whom was Richard⁴, born May 27, 1689, who md. June 29, 1715, Mary, dau. of Samuel⁴ and Mary (Heseltine) Stickney.

He md. second, Nov. 5, 1714, widow Mehitable Kimball. No issue. He was made a freeman July 21, 1685.

(c) MARY KIMBALL², born probably in Hampton about 1663; md. March 22, 1682, Thomas Redington, of Boxford.

(d) THOMAS KIMBALL², born in 1665; died June 30, 1732.

(e) EBENEZER KIMBALL², born April 29, 1668.

(f) PRISCILLA KIMBALL², born April 15, 1673.

(g) JOHN KIMBALL², born Oct. 14, 1675.

(h) JOANNA KIMBALL², born —; died April 10, 1691; md. Joshua Morse, of Newbury, who died March 20, 1690.

10. SARAH KIMBALL², born about 1635; md. Nov. 24, 1658, Edward Allen, of Ipswich, Mass. They had eight children.

(a) JOHN ALLEN², born Aug. 29, 1659.

(b) SARAH ALLEN², born July 4, 1661; died aged 8 mos.

(c) SARAH ALLEN², born March 1, 1664.

(d) ELIZABETH ALLEN², born Dec. 20, 1666.

(e) WILLIAM ALLEN², born March 12, 1668.

(f) BENJAMIN ALLEN², born —, 1673.

(g) DAVID ALLEN², born Feb. 1, 1675.

(h) ABIGAIL ALLEN², born March 25, 1678.

11. BENJAMIN KIMBALL², born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1637; died in Bradford, Mass., June 11, 1696; md. April 16, 1661, Mercy, dau. of Robert and Anne Hazeltine, of Bradford, Mass.

12. CALEB KIMBALL², born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1639; died there in 1682; md. Nov. 7, 1660, Anne, sister of Mercy, wife of his brother Benjamin, and dau. of Robert and Anne Hazeltine; she died April 9, 1688. Yeoman. Inventory of his estate taken Sept. 23, 1682: amount, £565:12:00.

They had nine children, namely :—

- (a) CALEB KIMBALL^s, born Sept. 8, 1662; died Feb. 4, 1736.
- (b) ANNE KIMBALL^s, born Dec. 11, 1664.
- (c) ELIZABETH KIMBALL^s, born Sept. 8, 1666.
- (d) ABIGAIL KIMBALL^s, born July, 1668; md. in 1693 Nathaniel Adams.
- (e) MARY KIMBALL^s, born —; md. June 16, 1696.
- (f) ROBERT KIMBALL^s, born about 1674; died June 27, 1703, in England.
- (g) ABRAHAM KIMBALL^s, born June 29, 1676; died young.
- (h) BENJAMIN KIMBALL^s, born March 27, 1678.
- (i) SARAH KIMBALL^s, born May 19, 1680; md. Dec. 17, 1701, Joseph Fellows.

July 6, 1665, he buys his brother Richard's house, being in Ipswich, for £30, and one acre of land about it; also six acres of land in the common field. Richard was then living in Wenham, whither he had removed.

SECOND GENERATION.

HENRY KIMBALL^s (No. 3), son of Richard¹ and Ursula (Scott) Kimball, born in England in 1619; came to New England when fifteen years of age with his parents in the ship "Elizabeth;" removed from Ipswich, where his father settled with his family, to Wenham, Mass., about 1655, where, June 16, 1676, an inventory of his estate was taken, amount being £177 : 11 : 00. "Administration granted Elizabeth, relict of y^e deceased, 30, 4 mo. 1676, who owned at her marriage to Henry a house and 12 acres of land valued at £40, which was her former husband's, William Rayner." He married first, about 1642, Mary Wyatt, daughter of John and Mary Wyatt, of Ipswich, Mass., who died in Wenham, Mass., Aug. 12, 1672. He married, second, Elizabeth, widow of William Raynor (son of Thurston Raynor), who previously had been the second wife of Humphrey Gilbert, of Ipswich Hamlet, and probably the mother of his only son, John Gilbert.

Mr. Humphrey Gilbert died Feb. 13, 1657–8, and his widow, Elizabeth aforesaid, married, Sept. 24, 1658, W^m Rayner, Reiner, Rainer, or Raynor, who died Oct. 26, 1672. She married fourth, Daniel Kilham, Sr., of Ipswich, Mass., with whom she unites with a deed, Dec. 25, 1679, conveying to John Lambson the "privilege and commonage belonging to y^e house y^t formerly was s^d Gilberts' and Raynors," "the said house standing in Ipswich bounds on North side of Boston Road as it enters into Wenham from Ipswich." — "Acknowledged by Elizabeth Kilham, June 19, 1684. Samuel

Adams and Isaac Comins witnesses." — *New Eng. Gen. and Hist. Register*, Vol. XXIX. p. 109, by H. F. Waters.

Henry Kimball was made a freeman May 2, 1638. Jan. 6, 1656, he, with another, was chosen "to look after swine," and see that "they are yoked & ringed or shutt up by April 1st."

Nov. 8, 1659, he subscribed £3 as minister's rate, " $\frac{1}{2}$ in wheat, and the other half in Indian Corn, at merchants price."

In 1660 he contributed 10s. towards the new meeting-house.

Oct. 22, 1660, he was chosen constable.

Aug. 26, 1676, Henry Kimball received £01:06:10: as wages due him for services in King Philip's War of 1675-6, his brother Caleb serving at the same time.

Hannah, wife of James Godfrey, daughter of Henry Kimball, drew a grant of land in Narragansett No. 4 as a reward for her father's faithful services in that war (*New Eng. Gen. and Hist. Register*, Vol. XXVII 243).

The following clause in the inventory of the estate of Caleb Kimball, brother to Henry, confirms that Henry had thirteen children, which is as follows: "The said Henry being deceased, sole administration is granted to the s^d Richard whose is to paye out of the estate to the 12 children of y^e deceased Henry Kimball, to say 18s. to each of them, when they com of age; in court 30: 4: 1676." Then something was due to Caleb, another son of Henry, thus making thirteen children.

Sept. 26, 1676, an agreement was made between two of Henry's sons, Richard and John, to resign to their mother-in-law, Elizabeth, all her right to such things as were her former husband Reyners (Reg. Deeds, Book 4, p. 55).

Children were: —

13. RICHARD KIMBALL^s, born about 1642; was seventy-two years of age in 1715; died in Wenham, Mass., date not known; md. first, May 13, 1667, Rebecca, dau. of John Abbey, of Wenham, Mass.; she died June, 1704; md. second, widow Ford, of Ipswich, Mass., to whom he was published Nov. 20, 1706.

They had three children, namely: —

- (a) REBECCA KIMBALL^d, born Dec. 20, 1668.
- (b) MARY KIMBALL^d, born June 26, 1674.
- (c) ABIGAIL KIMBALL^d, born March 12, 1680.

14. JOHN KIMBALL^s, born in Ipswich, Mass., about 1644; at sixteen years of age went to live with his grandfather, John Wyatt, of Ipswich, and so continued till the death of his grandfather, December, 1665, in whose will it was stated that his wife was to have "the vse of all my

household goods together with my grandchild John Kimball while he abides in the house; And my will is that if my Wife cannot live comfortably in the house with him then shee shall have libertie to chuse her another place of being in the towne and hee shall supply her with wood and pay for her Roome."

To John he gave his dwelling-house, and all the ground belonging to it, with all his meadow-land, and all his cattle, and husbandry implements, "provided he carry himself respectably towards my wife; And in case he shall not, Then I give unto said Grand child ten pounds and soe not to have to doo with any part of my Estate besides."

This estate John Kimball sold March 25, 1667, to Theophilus Wilson, of Ipswich, Mass. In 1668 John Kimball removed to Newbury, where he bought forty acres; and Oct. 9, same year, he sold to Samuel Graves his house, barn, pasture, and all lands adjoining situate in Ipswich.

Jan. 15, 1664-5:—"It is agreed between John Kimball Ips. and his Grandmother that he shall seasonably bring her yearly & every year during her naturall life foure good cords of good fire wood home to her house on consideration of what his grandfather John Wiate deceased required him by his will. In witness whereof the said John hathe hereunto sett his hand this day 15 of January 1664: 5.

JOHN KEMBALL

WILLIAM WHITE }
THEOPHILUS WILSON } wit."

County Ct. Rec., Bk. 18, p. 39.

In noncompliance with the above requisition, an action of debt was entered against John Kimball, March 16, 1677-8, by James Barker of Rowley (whose wife Grace died Feb. 27, 1665-6, and he married May 22, 1666, the widow Mary Wyatt) "for not paying to him forty-eight cords of good fire wood, being due to the said James Barker by his wife formerly called Mary Wyatt, grandmother to y^e above s^d John Kimball as doth appear by an agreement under his hand."

Record fails to state how this lawsuit ended.

John Kimball married first, Feb. 25, 1665-6, Mary Hobbs, of Boxford, Mass.; md. second, Deborah, dau. of John Weed. He died May, 1726. Administration granted his son John June 6, 1726.

Children were:—

- (a) MARY KIMBALL⁴, born July 19, 1667; died unmarried.
- (b) JOHN KIMBALL⁴, born Oct. 15, 1668.
- (c) JOSEPH KIMBALL⁴, born —; died Oct. 12, 1723; md. Bethiah Shepard Jan. 7, 1713.
- (d) BETHIAH KIMBALL⁴, born —.
- (e) ABRAHAM KIMBALL⁴, born —; died probably unmarried, for Jan. 11, 1754, he gives his cousin all his portion of real estate descended to him from his father.
- (f) HANNAH KIMBALL⁴, born —; will proved Feb. 5, 1753; md. Jan. 5, 1710, Roger Eastman, Jr.
- (g) DEBORAH KIMBALL⁴, born about 1678; md. Jan. 29, 1701, Barnes Prowse.

15. CALEB KIMBALL³, born about 1646; died unmarried Sept. 18, 1675, having been slain by Indians at the battle of Bloody Brook, being in

the expedition commanded by Capt. Lathrop. In his will it is he that makes mention of his brother Henry's thirteen children, as before stated.

16. DORCAS KIMBALL ³, born about 1648; md. Dec. 17, 166[8?] Thomas Dow.
17. ABIGAIL KIMBALL ³, born about 1652; md. in Rowley, Mass., May 14, 1673, John Wycome.
18. SARAH KIMBALL ³, born about 1654; md. May 3, 167[4?], Daniel Gage.
19. HENRY KIMBALL ³, born about 1656; removed to Haverhill, Mass., about 1675; administration granted Samuel Watts, of Haverhill, Mass., on his estate, May 1, 1699.

Sept. 3, 1695, he bought of Henry Dow, administrator of the estate of his father, Thomas Dow, $\frac{3}{4}$ of a parcel of land in Haverhill, formerly Thomas Dow's, bounded W. side of Little River, Samuel Watts, and said Henry Kimball.

He md. Dec. 14, 1677, Hannah Marsh, dau. of Onesipherus Marsh, of Haverhill, Mass. She was killed by the Indians, March 15, 1698.

Children were:—

- (a) HANNAH KIMBALL ⁴, born Oct. 7, 1678.
 - (b) MARY KIMBALL ⁴, born July 24, 1680; md. John Hall.
 - (c) JUDITH KIMBALL ⁴, born June, 1682; md. Col. Nathaniel Peaslee, son of Dr. Jos. Peaslee, the emigrant settler.
 - (d) ELIZABETH KIMBALL ⁴, born March 21, 1683; md. John Clement.
 - (e) SARAH KIMBALL ⁴, born Sept. 13, 1686; md. Jos. Hall.
 - (f) ABIGAIL KIMBALL ⁴, born April 7, 1689; captured March 15, 1697, by the Indians.
 - (g) JOHN KIMBALL ⁴, born Sept. 27, 1691; killed March 15, 1698, by the Indians.
 - (h) REBECCA KIMBALL, born Oct. 12, 1694; md. Dec. 8, 1718, Jabez Ayers, of Ipswich, Mass., and lived in Rowley, Mass.
20. MEHITABLE KIMBALL ⁵, born Aug., 1658; died in Bradford, Mass., Dec. 7, 1689, according to her gravestone; md. before 1689, Thomas Stickney, a twin, fifth son and seventh child of William Stickney, the emigrant settler, and his wife Elizabeth. Thomas was born in Rowley, Mass., May 1, 1646, and died in Bradford, Mass., July 17, 1714 (gravestone).

"Bradford, first called Merrimack, was settled while yet a part of ancient Rowley, as early as 1649. The inhabitants erected a house of worship and settled for their first minister Rev. Zachariah Symms, son of the second minister of the same name in Charlestown. In 1704 Thomas Stickney was chosen by the town of Bradford to see that Rev. Zachariah Symms received proper maintenance for his preaching." — GAGE, *Hist. of Rowley*, p. 40.

"Three miles beyond Old Newbury is a large and populous Towne called Rowley about two miles from the Bay of Agowame the Inhabitants are most Yorkshiresmen very laborious people and drive a pretty trade, making Cloath and Ruggs of Cotton Wool, and also sheeps wooll with which in a few yeares the Country will abound not only to supply themselves but also to send abroad. This Towne aboundeth with Corne and cattle, and have a great number of sheep. — MAVERICK, *Description of New England* (believed to have been written in 1660 by Samuel Maverick, one of Charles II.'s Commissioners).

In 1706 Thomas Stickney was appointed Tythingman; this officer was in imitation of the inferior parish officer known in England as the beadle, one of whose duties was a preservation of order in church services. The office of tythingman did not go out of existence in New England until as late as 1825 odd.

"In 1676, 1677, and 1695, Thomas Stickney was appointed Surveyor of Highways and fences in Bradford." — *Stickney Family*.

March 2, 1694-5 Mrs. Margaret Corwin, of Boston, for £10 paid by Zachary Sims, Richard Kimball £15, Thos. Kimball £15, Richard Kimball, Jr., £10, John Tenney £5, Philip Attwood £5, David Kimball £5, Thomas Stickney £5, all of Bradford, and £20 of Moses Tyler, of Bradford, current silver, conveys to them in said proportions a parcel of salt-marsh in the township of Rowley, on the Island called Plumb Island, containing 70 or 80 acres (Essex Deeds, 13 : 43).

May 8, 1693 : — Thomas Stickney, of Bradford, husbandman, for £21, in money and provisions buys of Elizabeth Deane, of Salem, widow, relict of Geo. Deane, dec'd, 3 acres of meadow in Boxford, also 10 acres of land in Bradford, bounded by land of Ezekiel Mighill on West, North by Merrimack river, S. E. by land of Richard Kimball and country road which leads from Bradford to Newbury (Essex Deeds, Vol. XIII. p. 63).

They had one child : — Mehitable⁴, b. Dec. 4, 1689 ; md., as his second wife, John Barker, July 24, 1729, son of Capt. and Deacon John² and Mary (Stevens) Barker, of Andover, Mass. She probably died without issue Dec. 4, 1752. He died March 19, 1751.

21. BENJAMIN KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., Jan. 20, 1660 ; made a freeman Oct. 11, 1682.

22. JOSEPH KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., Jan. 20, 1662.

23. MARTHA KIMBALL³, born Aug. 18, 1664 ; md. Aug. 25, 1683, Daniel Chase.

24. HANNAH KIMBALL³, born in 1666.

25. DEBORAH KIMBALL³, born in 1668.

SECOND GENERATION.

RICHARD KIMBALL² (No. 5), son of Richard¹ and Ursula (Scott) Kimball, born in England in 1623 ; died in Wenham, Mass., May 26, 1676 ; came to New England in 1634 in the ship "Elizabeth" with his parents ; removed to Wenham, Mass., between 1652 and 1656, and settled in the west part of the town, near Lord's Hill ; wheelwright. Amount of his estate at death was £986 : 16 : 06. Administration granted to Samuel and Thomas Kimball, sons of Richard. He was considered the largest taxpayer in the town at that date, and his descendants have generally been in affluent circumstances.

In 1658 Richard Kimball was chosen selectman, which office he held till 1674, excepting three years. "The selectmen at first charged according to the service rendered — till 1697, they performed the duties of treasurer, for which no regular salary was

paid, though the duties were never gratuitously performed. In 1798 the pay was fixed at \$33.33 per annum — but about 1850 odd it was changed to \$75.00."

Feb. 29, 1663 : — "Tis agreed y^t there shall be 200 Akers of land of y^e best of our Comon Leased to fowre men for one thousand years, viz. : to Abner Ordway, Thomas Searles, John Edwards, & Richard Kemball Junr. — they yeilding & payeing to the towne severally for every fiftie akers 5s for the first year & ten the 2d yere & 15s the 3d yere — & 20s the 4th yere & 30s the 5th yere & 40s for the 6th yere & so to paye yerely viz. 40s per yere Dureing the abovesaid terme. Also all the abovesd Rent is to be paid yearly for the vse of the ministry amongst vs."

Richard Kemball, Sr., was one of the selectmen who let out the abovesaid land, 50 acres each to said parties.

July 6, 1665, Richard Kimball sold to his brother Caleb, of Ipswich, for £30, his house, with 1 acre of land about it and 6 acres in the common field, all included in the bounds of Ipswich.

In the inventory of his estate, taken June 17, 1676, are the following, as found among the items : "due from Daniel Gott by a bill that he gave to Richard Kimball, there being but £4, 5s pd. £23. — Due from Daniel Gott for Rent £3. per year, during the natural life of Mary the wife of the late Richard Kimball of Wenham. — Due from the contry for wages and other debts £2 : 16 : 00."

That the country owed him wages as abovesaid makes it probable that he was engaged in the Indian War of 1675-6, with his nephew, Caleb Kimball.

Richard Kimball married, first, Mary —, who died Sept. 2, 1672 ; he married, second, Mary —, who survived him.

It is said that one of these Marys was a daughter of Deacon Charles Gott.

His children were eight (seven only on record), namely : —

26. RICHARD KIMBALL ², born — ; died Oct. 8, 1672, unmarried.

27. JOHN KIMBALL ⁴, born about 1650 ; will proved April, 1721 ; lived in Topsfield, removed to Rowley Hill (Boxford), where he took the freeman's oath March 22, 1689 ; md. first, Sarah — ; md. second, Hannah —. Children were : —

1. SARAH KIMBALL ⁴, born in Topsfield, Sept. 19, 1669 ; died Nov. 6, 1719 ; md. for his first wife William Foster, son of William and Mary (Jackson) Foster ; lived in Andover, Mass., about 1697 ; md. second, Nov. 13, 1744, Margaret Gould who survived him.

They had seven children : —

- (a) SARAH FOSTER^s, bapt. July 15, 1693; md. Nehemiah Abbot, of Andover, Mass.
 - (b) MARY FOSTER^s, born Jan. 2, 1698; md. Timothy Abbot, of Andover, Mass.
 - (c) JOHN FOSTER^s, born in Andover, Sept. 27, 1701.
 - (d) JOSEPH FOSTER^s, born —.
 - (e) HANNAH FOSTER^s, born —; md. Jan. 25, 1722, John Lovejoy.
 - (f) LYDIA FOSTER^s, born 1707; md. Feb. 14, 1728, David Blunt.
 - (g) ASA FOSTER^s, born June 16, 1710; died July 17, 1787. He was a weaver, and in his will he gave his son Asa his weaver's loom.
2. MARY KIMBALL^s, born in Topsfield, Jan. 15, 1671; md. July 16, 1694, Benjamin, son of John and Mary (Jordan) Kimball. (See No. 42 Kimball Family.)
3. RICHARD KIMBALL^s, born Sept. 28, 1673; died April 22, 1753; md. Feb. 22, 1698-9, Hannah, dau. of Ephraim Dorman, of Topsfield, Mass.

"April 3, 1744 — Richard Kimball, Samuel Foster, Thos. Redington, Jonathan Bixbee, John Dorman, John Buswell, John Peabody, Elijah Peabody, Elijah Dorman, Samuel Dorman & Samuel Fisk, yeomen, with Martha Dorman, all of Boxford, to the inhabitants of First Parish, we being proprietors of a tract of land in Boxford on which stands a new Meeting house, situated between Mr. John Rogers, (the minister,) & y^e old Meeting house in 1st Parish, do lease to y^e inhabitants of s^d parish $\frac{1}{2}$ acre land next adjoining and being round y^e new Meeting house, & bounded on Thos. Redington's fence & John Buswell's Corner bounds.

W^m FOSTER, SAM'L FOSTER, JR.

JAMES KIMBALL, STEPHEN BENNET }
EBENEZER KILLAM "

They had nine children, all born in Boxford, Mass., namely : —

- (a) JACOB KIMBALL^s, born June 9, 1700; removed to Andover, Mass.; yeoman; will proved June 5, 1787; md. Feb. 11, 1723, Sarah Hale^s, dau. of Joseph^s and first wife, Mary (Watson) Hale; she born April 6, 1704; died Jan. 11, 1723. They had seven children.
 - (b) HANNAH KIMBALL^s, born June 30, 1702.
 - (c) AMOS KIMBALL^s, born Sept. 8, 1703; md. Margaret Hale, dau. of Joseph Hale^s and second wife, widow Joanna Dodge, of Ipswich, Mass.; she born Feb. 23, 1712; thus half-sister to his brother Jacob's wife. They had a brother, Thomas Hale^s, born Jan. 8, 1714; died Sept. 18, 1796; md. Mary Kimball, who could have been sister to Jacob and Amos.
 - (d) AARON KIMBALL^s, born Jan. 17, 1704.
 - (e) RICHARD KIMBALL^s, born June 11, 1710.
 - (f) JOHN KIMBALL^s, born March 6, 1713.
 - (g) MARY KIMBALL^s, born Feb. 10, 1715; md. Thomas Hale^s (?); he born Jan. 8, 1714, and died Sept. 18, 1796.
 - (h) MOSES KIMBALL^s, born Aug. 23, 1718.
 - (i) EPHRAIM KIMBALL^s, born April 1, 1721.
4. ABIGAIL KIMBALL^s, born April 29, 1677; md. Dec. 14, 1697[3?]
Jonathan Foster^s, son of William^s (Reginald¹) and Mary (Jackson) Foster, brother to William, who married Sarah Kimball (the mother; Mary Jackson, was dau. of William and Joanna Jackson). He born in Boxford, Mass., March 6, 1667; died there May 21, 1730.

Children were:—

(a) JONATHAN FOSTER⁵, born Sept. 15, 1693.

(b) ABIGAIL FOSTER⁵, born Nov. 22, 1697.

(c) ZEBADIAH FOSTER⁵, born Sept. 23, 1702.

5. ELIZABETH KIMBALL⁴, born Sept. 23, 1679; md. Thomas Carleton.

6. HANNAH KIMBALL⁴, born April 11, 1682.

7. JOHN KIMBALL⁴, born Feb. 7, 1685; md. first, Oct. 29, 17—, Hannah Burton; md. second, Elizabeth Chapman, written Champney on the records.

28. SAMUEL KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., about 1653; died Oct. 3, 1716; md. Sept. 20, 1676, Mary Witt, dau. of John and Sarah Witt, of Lynn, Mass.

May 24, 1682, freeman; Jan. 1, 1676, surveyor; Jan. 11, 1677, constable; Jan. 1, 1682, and 1712, selectman; member of a military company at some time, and held the position of ensign. Yeoman.

Children were:—

1. SAMUEL KIMBALL⁴, born Aug. 19, 1677; died Jan. 20, 1745; md. first, Jan. 25, 1698, Elizabeth Fowler, dau. of Joseph, of Wenham, Mass.; md. second, Dec. 25, 1737, Abigail Foster, of Andover, Mass.; md. third, June 30, 1741, Joanna, widow of Daniel Dodge.

2. SARAH KIMBALL⁴, born Sept. 6, 1678; md. Jan. 15, 1696, John Herrick, of Beverly, Mass. (See Appendix, Herrick Family, No. 50.)

3. MARTHA KIMBALL⁴, born May 24, 1680; died May 24, 1680.

4. MARY KIMBALL⁴, born —; md. Dec. 23, 1709, Elisha Dodge, of Beverly, Mass.; his will proved Jan. 27, 1755, in which he mentions daus. Lois and Mary; son Elisha, wife Mary; and negro woman Bathsheba.

5. RICHARD KIMBALL⁴, born about 1683; died Aug. 1, 1713; mason; intention of marriage March 6, 1707, to Anne Quarles, of Ipswich, Mass.

6. JONATHAN KIMBALL⁴, born in Wenham, Mass., in 1686; died Feb. 19, 1758; removed to Boston, and married Hannah —. He was Town Clerk 1751, 1752, 1759, 1760; and chosen deacon of the First Church Nov. 26, 1742, which office he held till death.

7. JOHN KIMBALL⁴, born in Wenham, Mass., Nov. 13, 1687; md. Dec. 10, 1711, Charity Dodge, dau. of Joseph Dodge, of Beverly, Mass.

8. EBENEZER KIMBALL⁴, born —; md. about 1718, Elizabeth —; both members of First Church in Wenham, Mass., where all (six) of their children were baptized, the last June 20, 1731; soon after that date they are believed to have removed out of the State of Massachusetts.

9. THOMAS KIMBALL⁴, born in Wenham, Mass., Feb. 22, 1695; died in Exeter, N. H., where he was living in 1759; md. Nov. 26, 1723, Elizabeth, dau. of Nathaniel Brown, of Wenham, Mass., and granddaughter of Thos. Fisk.

10. BENJAMIN KIMBALL⁴, born —; died Aug. 4, 1703.

11. ABIGAIL KIMBALL⁴, born May 25, 1700; md. Dec. 14, 1720, Thomas Brown.

12. JERUSHA KIMBALL⁴, born April 30, 1703; died Aug. 22, 1703.

29. THOMAS KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., Nov. 12, 1657; died about 1732; md. Elizabeth Potter.

Children were:—

1. THOMAS KIMBALL⁴, born about 1683; removed to Marblehead; md. April 28, 1709, Hannah Porter, of Wenham, Mass.

2. DANIEL KIMBALL⁴, born in Wenham about 1684; removed to Andover, Mass., about 1710, where he died Dec. 17, 1754; md. April 5, 1712, Esther Foster, dau. of Abraham and Esther Foster, of Andover.

3. RICHARD KIMBALL⁴, born in Wenham, Mass., Sept. 18, 1686; removed to Boston, where he died before Aug. 21, 1717; md. there Nov. 4, 1707, by Cotton Mather, Hannah Orris.
 4. ELIZABETH KIMBALL⁴, born —; died Nov. 15, 1699.
 5. LYDIA KIMBALL⁴, born April 15, 1695; md. Jan. 22, 1719, David Best, of Salem, Mass.
 6. EDMUND KIMBALL⁴, born April 18, 1699; died April 24, 1768; md. first, April 14, 1724, Lydia Gilbert, of Ipswich, Mass.; md. second, Sept. 6, 1759, Mrs. Mercy Carter.
 7. PAUL KIMBALL⁴, born May 21, 1703; will proved July 9, 1755; currier; removed early to Salem, Mass.; md. first; Oct. 5, 1725, Martha, dau. of John Louder; md. second, Rachel, dau. of Joseph Hilliard.
80. EPHRAIM KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., Feb. 18, 1660; died Jan. 16, 1731; yeoman; md. Mary Friend, dau. of Deacon James Friend, of Wenham, Mass. He himself was deacon of the First Church of Wenham, Mass.
- Children were:—
1. MARY KIMBALL⁴, born Oct. 13, 1686; published in marriage to John Lovering, of Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 6, 1713.
 2. MARTHA KIMBALL⁴, born —.
 3. MIRIAM KIMBALL⁴, born —; md. Dec. 11, 1714, Hutton Goldsmith.
 4. EPHRAIM KIMBALL⁴, born —; will proved Dec. 18, 1752; md. Dec. 8, 1720, Mary Tarbox, of Wenham, Mass.
 5. JAMES KIMBALL⁴, born Jan. 21, 1695; died May, 1759; md. Nov. 26, 1725, Mary Lovering, of Ipswich, Mass.
 6. ESTHER KIMBALL⁴, born April 1, 1698; md. March 14, 1732, Nathaniel Dane, son of John and Abigail (Warner) Dane, of Ipswich, Mass., as his third wife, his first wife having been Elizabeth Potter, and second, Anne Low. He had seven children when Esther married him.
 7. EZRA KIMBALL⁴, born Aug. 25, 1700.
 8. NEHEMIAH KIMBALL⁴, born March 20, 1703.
 9. ELIZABETH KIMBALL⁴, born June 2, 1707; published Dec. 7, 1728, to Daniel Potter.
81. CALEB KIMBALL³, born in Wenham, Mass., April 9, 1665; died Jan. 25, 1725; md. Sarah —, who died in Wenham, Mass., Nov. 20, 1731. They had nine children.
1. Benjamin⁴; 2. Joseph⁴, unmarried; 3. Caleb⁴, unmarried; 4. Sarah⁴;
 5. John⁴, unmarried; 6. Abraham⁴; 7. Eleazer⁴; 8. Hannah⁴; 9. Mehitable⁴.
82. MEHITABLE KIMBALL³, born —; published Nov. 25, 1695, to Joseph Thurston.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN KIMBALL² (No. 8), son of Richard¹ and Ursula (Scott) Kimball, born in England, in 1631; came to New England in 1634, with his parents, in the ship "Elizabeth," aged three years; died in Ipswich, Mass., May 6, 1698; wheelwright and yeoman. He married first, about 1655, Mary Bradstreete,

daughter of Humphrey and Bridget Bradstreete, who was born in England in 1633, and came to New England in 1634 in the ship "Elizabeth," with her parents. She died in 1665, leaving six children.

He married second, Oct. 8, 1666, Mary Jordan, daughter of Francis and Jane (Wilson) Jordan. Oct. 16, 1665, John Kimball was appointed one of the executors of the will of Bridget, widow of Humphrey Bradstreete, proved March 28, 1666, in which she mentions "eldest daughter Martha Kemball, to whom she gives the ground she hath now in her possession, and my greine hood, a peuter dish and Mr. Norton's Bocke and on sheet and on peliber. To my daughter Mary Kemball my ould bible; my cloth waskate, my stamell peticote, on boulster and on palow on peuter dish and on candlestick. daus. Wallis, Rebecca Bondsett [Bondfield], & grand ch. Hannah Rogh."

1675:—The town of Rowley appointed William Foster, Joseph Peabody, and John Kimball collectors of taxes.

1677:—The town appointed various persons to see that the Sabbath was well kept, agreeably to the provisions of a law of the General Court, passed May 23, 1677.

1680:—The town appointed eleven men for the above purpose, nine for the town, and two for the village. Joseph Bigsbee and William Foster were appointed for the village. Bigsbee was to inspect the families of Goodman Black, Moses Tiler, Old Goodman Tiler, Robert Ames, Goodman Perry, John Kimball, John Peabody, Goodman Stiles, Goodman Bossell, Goodman Redington, and Daniel Wood (Gage's Hist. of Rowley).

Children by **Mary (Bradstreete)** were:—

33. JOHN KIMBALL^s, born Nov. 8, 1657; died Feb. 24, 1657-8.

34. MARY KIMBALL^s, born Dec. 10, 1658.

35. SARAH KIMBALL^s, born July 29, 1661; died in 1724; md. John Potter, of Ipswich; first child, Sarah Potter^d, born Dec. 11, 1685.

Reg. Deeds, Bk. 14, p. 103:—"Benj & Joseph Kimball to John Potter; whereas our honored father John Kimball Ips. late dec'd. did upon the marriage of our sister Sarah, unto John Potter Ips. give as part of her portion a parcel of land valued at £30 which said land s^d Potter enjoyed till s^d parents dec. and s^d parent not having given a deed we the s^d Benj and Jos. do convey according to his will &c.

THOS. POTTER }
NATH'L KNOWLTON } wit."

36. HANNAH KIMBALL^s, born —.

37. REBECCA KIMBALL^s, born Feb., 1663; md. Jan. 21, 1689, Thomas Lull.

38. RICHARD KIMBALL^s, } twins ; born
 39. ELIZABETH KIMBALL^s, } Sept. 22, 1665
- { Corporal; died May 25, 1716;
 md. Jan. 13, Lydia Wells,
 and had issue.
 { Nothing known of her.

Children by **Mary Jordan** were: —

40. ABIGAIL KIMBALL^s, born March 22, 1667-8; md. first, Oct. 14, 1689, Isaac Esty, of Topsfield, Mass.; md. second, April 25, 1718, William Poole, son of Jonathan and Judith Poole; he born Jan. 8, 1676.
41. JOHN KIMBALL^s, born March 16, 1668; md. Sarah Goodhue. *sister of wife of No. 43.*
 April 25, 1696, his father deeds to him "the housing and land where I now dwell, bounded on Isaac Jewett, Thomas Metcalf and the common which was formerly granted for a house lott of father Deane, formerly of Ips. — 7 acres of woodland, 8 acres of fresh meadow, bounded on Scotts meadow & town's common — 3 acres of Salt marsh at Kimball's point by Egypt river & Muddy river & Quilters."
42. BENJAMIN KIMBALL^s, born July 22, 1670; died May 28, 1716; md. July 16, 1694, Mary Kimball, dau. of John and Sarah Kimball, of Boxford, Mass. (2d child of No. 27 Kimball Family), hence his first cousin.
43. MOSES KIMBALL^s, born Sept., 1672; died Jan. 23, 1750; md. Susanna Goodhue, *dau. of Joseph & Wm. Goodhue and a great dau. of Elder John Phipps*
 March 28, 1696, his father deeds to him "in consideration of his marriage to Susanna Goodhue, a certain house, orchard, one acre of land by the road to Topsfield, and land of John Appleton & Thos. French, and on the road that leads to Goodman Lumasse's and Thomas Waites. — also 5 acres in common b. on Belcher, Hart, Thos. Dennis, Lull, & Nathan Lummas — a parcel of salt marsh, and 3 cows pastured in the pasture of Richard Kimball that was his fathers John Kimball." *Wm. was twin 2d. wife of the md. (3) Widow White.*
44. AARON KIMBALL^s, born Jan., 1673-4; died Feb. 12, 1728-9. Not named in his father's will, nor in any way remembered by him by Deed of Gift, as were the other sons, as far as can be ascertained.
45. JOSEPH KIMBALL^s, born Jan. 24, 1675: *will proved Dec. 14, 1761: mtd. Sarah —*
 April 25, 1696, his father deeds to him "the south end of his farm, bounded on Ipswich common, South on Benj. Kimball — on a piece of fresh meadow, formerly my father's — on Jacob's meadow, Egypt river & Richard Kimball."

SECOND GENERATION.

Cornet BENJAMIN KIMBALL² (No. 11), son of Richard¹ and Ursula (Scott) Kimball, born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1637; removed to Salisbury, Mass., where he was living in 1661; thence to Bradford, Mass., where he died June 11, 1696; his house was near Griffin's Ferry. Inventory of his estate was £1,060 17s.

He married at Salisbury, Mass., April 16, 1661, Mary Hazeltine (or Heseltine), dau. of Robert and Ann Hazeltine, of Bradford, Mass, who died Jan. 5, 1707-8. Her will was made May 14, 1706; proved Feb. 2, 1707-8; mentions son David; gives "what she lent him, if she does not call for it, during her life time — Eldest daughter Hannah Barker £15" — two youngest sons, Samuel and Eben, Jonathan, granddaughter Hannah, Elizabeth Carleton, and Abigail Day, all mentioned.

May 16, 1683, Benjamin Kimball was appointed cornet of horse troops.

He owned one fourth of a saw-mill in Haverhill, Mass., besides land in Amesbury.

Feb. 20, 1668, — while the Bradford people were a part of Rowley, — Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball, and David Heseltine were chosen Overseers of the Town.

"Oct. 31, 1682, A Council was convened at Bradford, for the purpose of advising the people of that town on the subject of the settlement of the ministry among them. On the 27th. of December a church was organized by the signature of 18 males to a covenant, whose names were :—

Zachariah Symms	Joseph Palmer	John Hardy
Samuel Stickney	David Heseltine	Joseph Bailey
John Tenney	Richd. Hall	Abram Heseltine
John Simmons	Francis West	John Boynton
W ^m Hutchens	Samuel Heseltine	John Watson
	Robert Heseltine	Benjamin Kimball
	Robert Savory	

Mr. Symms was ordained as minister the same day." (Samuel Stickney was brother to Thomas Stickney, who married Melitable Kimball, No. 20.)

"Jan. 7, 1682-3, being the second Sabbath of the organization of the church and probably the first communion season, seventeen females were received into the church namely:—

Patience, wife of Brother Shubal Walker
 Hannah, " " " Benjamin Kimball
 Mercie " " " Richard Kimball
 Mary " " " Nathan Webster
 Mary widow of Thomas Kimball (No. 9)

Elizabeth	wife of Brother	Robert Heseltine
Elizabeth	" " "	Abram Heseltine
Deborah	" " "	Samuel Heseltine
Martha	" " "	Richard Hall
Mary	" " "	John Hardy
Prudence 2d	" " "	Samuel Stickney
Sarah	" " "	W ^m Hutchens
Abigail	" " "	Joseph Bailey
Mary	" " "	Thomas West."

GAGE, *Hist. of Rowley.*

Children were eleven, namely: —

46. HANNAH KIMBALL^s, born in Salisbury, Mass., Dec. 22, 1662; md. in Andover, Mass., April 21, 1682, Richard Barker, son of Richard and Joanna Barker, of Andover, Mass., and had Sarah Barker⁴, born Nov. 23, 1684.
47. MERCY KIMBALL^s, born Dec. 27, 1663; buried Feb. 5, 1664.
48. RICHARD KIMBALL^s, born Dec. 30, 1664; died Jan. 10, 1710.
49. ELIZABETH KIMBALL^s, born July 24, 1669; md. Edward Carleton.
50. DAVID KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., July 26, 1671.
51. JONATHAN KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., Nov. 26, 1673.
52. ROBERT KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., March 6, 1675.
53. ABRAHAM KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., March 24, 1677.
54. SAMUEL KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., March 28, 1680.
55. EBENEZER KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., June 20, 1684; died Jan. 22, 1715.
56. ABIGAIL KIMBALL^s, born in Bradford, Mass., Sept. 8, 1686; md. June 2, 1703, Moses Day.

THIRD GENERATION.

BENJAMIN KIMBALL^s (No. 42), son of John² (RICHARD¹), and second wife Mary (Jordan) Kimball, born in Ipswich, Mass., July 22, 1670; died May 28, 1716; yeoman; md. July 16, 1694, Mary Kimball, daughter of John Kimball^s and Sarah, his wife (No. 27, second child); hence his cousin. She born in Topsfield, Mass., Jan. 15, 1671; living in 1716.

"April 25, 1696, John Kimball deeds to his son Benjamin, the North end of his farm, with house, barn and orchard, bounded on Ipswich common, Edward Neland's farm, and the other part of the farm which he hath given to his son Joseph; also 6 acres called Jacobs meadow, bounded east on a piece of meadow given to son Joseph, and three acres salt marsh at Wattles Neck, called the 10-acre lot, bounded partly on same marsh, given to son John,

lying between Egypt River and Joseph Quilters fence and on the end by marsh of Samuel, Thomas and Richard Kemble — also the West end of lott in common field called Varnums lott.

ISAAC JEWETT,
JOHN WARNER, JR., } wit."

Children were : —

57. JOHN KIMBALL⁴, born Oct. 21, 1695; died July 21, 1729.
58. MARY KIMBALL⁴, born Oct. 24, 1697; died before 1716.
59. HANNAH KIMBALL⁴, born June 3, 1700.
60. BENJAMIN KIMBALL⁴, born April 3, 1702; died before 1729.
61. ELIZABETH KIMBALL⁴, born Oct. 18, 1705.
62. AARON KIMBALL⁴, born July 6, 1709; died Nov. 9, 1738; md. Feb. 17, 1729, Ruth Metcalfe. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family, No. 15.)
63. SARAH KIMBALL⁴, bapt. March 15, 1713; died before 1716.
64. JOSEPH KIMBALL⁴, born —; died before 1716.

FOURTH GENERATION.

AARON KIMBALL⁴ (No. 62), son of Benjamin³ (JOHN², RICHARD¹), and Mary (Kimball) Kimball, born in Ipswich, Mass., July 6, 1709; died Nov. 9, 1738; md. Feb. 17, 1729–30, *Ruth Metcalfe*, dau. of Joseph and Ruth (Smith) Metcalfe; she born Feb. 22, 1712–13; died of small-pox Sept. 9, 1751. (See Appendix, Metcalf Family No. 15.)

Children were : —

65. RUTH KIMBALL⁵, born in Ipswich, Mass.; bapt. Dec. 6, 1730; md. Hezekiah Hodgkins, 3d, to whom she was published May 5, 1750.
66. AARON KIMBALL⁵, bapt. Aug. 19, 1733; died April 4, 1738.
67. BENJAMIN KIMBALL⁵, bapt. March 9, 1734; md. his second cousin, Abigail Davis, to whom he was published Feb. 4, 1754.
68. MARY KIMBALL⁵, bapt. May 8, 1737.

THE LUSCOMB FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. WILLIAM LUSCOMB¹, the first of the name in Salem, Mass., was a cooper, and appears on the county deeds, Dec. 4, 1680, when he bought of Mark Haskell, of Beverly, Mass., for £27, "a row of houses in which John Blygh now liveth next y^e Meeting house, . . . the land formerly pertaining to Abigail Lord."

This estate was settled by instalments, the last being paid Feb. 1, 1686, by his wife Susannah, during her husband's absence in England.

There is no date of his death, or settlement of his estate. He married Susannah —.

The following children constituted at least a part of his family :

2. **JOHN LUSCOMB**², born about 1668.
 3. **WILLIAM LUSCOMB**², born about 1675 ; died in 1733-4.
 4. **JOANNA LUSCOMB**², bapt. at adult age, Jan 16, 1686-7.
-

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN LUSCOMB² (No. 2), son of William¹ and Susannah Luscomb, born about 1668 ; died before 1707 ; md. about 1691, Abigail Brewer, dau. of Crispus and Mary Brewer, of Lynn, Mass. ; she born Dec. 4, 1664.

Dec. 10, 1706, her father gave her all his real and personal estate, he dying Dec. 11, 1706, and his wife Mary dying May 3, 1692.

Feb. 10, 1706-7, she (Abigail) was a widow, when she sold to Crispus Richards 8 acres of her father's land, which he bought of Ebenezer Witter.

Child was (probably others, not found) : —

5. **SAMUEL LUSCOMB**³, born in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 16, 1693.

SECOND GENERATION.

WILLIAM LUSCOMB² (No. 3), son of William¹ and Susanah Luscomb, born about 1675; md. Jane —; date unknown; who died before 1740. He was a housewright, and made his will July 8, 1726; proved Feb. 21, 1733-4; wife Jane to have the estate during her life, and after her death the residue to be divided between eldest son John $\frac{1}{3}$ part, William $\frac{1}{3}$ part, and the other $\frac{1}{3}$ to be divided between daughters Mary Mugford and Jane Luscomb (Town Record).

Children were:—

6. **MARY LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., May 7, 1700; md. March 9, 1721, John Mugford, and had nine children, viz.:—

- (a) **JOHN MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. May 3, 1724; died young.
- (b) **JAMES MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Aug. 1, 1725.
- (c) **MARY MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Dec. 17, 1725; md. Nathaniel Felt, son of Jonathan and Hannah (Silsbee) Felt, and had seven children, viz.:—

- 1. **NATHANIEL FELT**⁵, bapt. Oct. 6, 1750; died April 20, 1792.
- 2. **MARY FELT**⁵, bapt. Feb. 9, 1752.
- 3. **JONATHAN FELT**⁵, bapt. June 10, 1753; died Sept. 28, 1796.
- 4. **JOHN FELT**⁵, bapt. Feb. 6, 1757.
- 5. **WILLIAM FELT**⁵, bapt. Jan. 2, 1759.
- 6. **JAMES FELT**⁵, bapt. —.
- 7. **HENRY FELT**⁵, bapt. Jan. 5, 1766. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 21.)

- (d) **SARAH MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. June 29, 1729.
- (e) **JANE MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. July 25, 1731.
- (f) **WILLIAM MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Dec. 24, 1732.
- (g) **ELIZABETH MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Dec. 16, 1733.
- (h) **JOHN MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Nov. 9, 1735.
- (i) **JANE MUGFORD**⁴, bapt. Dec. 21, 1738.

- 7. **JOHN LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 23, 1702; md. Dec. 13, 1723, Mary Earle.
- 8. **FRANCES LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 14, 1706; died Sept. 15, 1707.
- 9. **JANE LUSCOMB**², born Oct. 14, 1707.
- 10. **WILLIAM LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 25, 1709-10; died March 5, following.
- 11. **SARAH LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 8, 1712; died Oct. 8, 1714.
- 12. **WILLIAM LUSCOMB**², born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1716; died about June, 1783.

THIRD GENERATION.

SAMUEL LUSCOMB * (No. 5), son of John * (WILLIAM¹), and Abigail (Brewer) Luscomb, born in Lynn, Mass., Sept. 16, 1693; made his will April 6, 1751; proved Jan. 2, 1751-2; names wife Mary, sons Thomas and Samuel, and daughter Elizabeth Abbott. He was at first a shipwright, afterwards a gunsmith; md. first, Jan. 20, 1715-16, Elizabeth, probably daughter of William Beal, of Marblehead, Mass.; she, with six others, baptized May 24, 1696.

He married, second, April 17, 1746, Mary Stacy.

Children by **Elizabeth** were:—

13. WILLIAM LUSCOMB⁴, born Nov. 1, 1716; died before 1751.
14. ELIZABETH LUSCOMB⁴, born Aug. 10, 1718; md. Oct. 19, 1740, Benjamin Abbott.
15. MARTHA LUSCOMB⁴, born Aug. 9, 1720; died before 1751; md. Oct. 19, 1740, Benjamin Tyler.
16. SAMUEL LUSCOMB⁴, born Aug. 9, 1722; died in 1781.
17. THOMAS LUSCOMB⁴, born March 21, 1724-5; md. May 19, 1747, Miriam Dike, of Dunston.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN LUSCOMB * (No. 7), son of William * (WILLIAM¹), and Jane Luscomb, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 23, 1702; removed to Newport, R. I., where he was Sept. 29, 1740, when he sold to his brother William all right in the estate of his father William, "whereof my mother Jane, widow, died possessed of."

He married Dec. 13, 1723, Mary Earle.

Children, all baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., were:—

18. JOHN LUSCOMB⁴, born Oct. 20, 1724.
19. SAMUEL LUSCOMB⁴, bapt. July 31, 1726.
20. MARY LUSCOMB⁴, bapt. Aug. 25, 1728.
21. JANE LUSCOMB⁴, bapt. Jan. 17, 1730.

THIRD GENERATION.

WILLIAM LUSCOMB³ (No. 12, son of William² (WILLIAM¹), and Jane Luscomb, born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1716-17; died June, 1783; housewright; administration on his estate granted his son William, who gave bonds with Miles Ward, Jr., and David Felt, July 19, 1783; inventory of his estate being £517:1:4.

He married Nov. 16, 1740, Sarah Henderson, dau. of Peter and Elizabeth (Beadle) Henderson, whose great-grandson, Benjamin Henderson, married June 12, 1785, Mary Bray. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 31.)

Children, all baptized in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., were —

22. SARAH LUSCOMB⁴, born —; md. Feb. 11, 1762, Benjamin Lander, son of William and Margaret (Henderson) Lander, who was baptized in the First Church at Salem, Mass., May 17, 1752, with her brothers William, Peter, and Robert, and her sister Margaret.

(William Lander married Aug. 7, 1738, Margaret Henderson, daughter of Peter.)

23. JANE LUSCOMB⁴, born —; md. Aug. 7, 1766, Jonathan Johnson, of Kittery.

24. ELIZABETH LUSCOMB⁴, born —; md. June 18, 1764, Thomas Marston, son of John and Mary (Flint) Marston, he born about 1741; settled in Marblehead, Mass.

25. ABIGAIL LUSCOMB⁴, born —.

26. LOVE LUSCOMB⁴, born —; md. Sept. 20, 1770, — Herbor.

27. WILLIAM LUSCOMB⁴, born in 1747; died April 10, 1827; md. Susanna Cook.

FOURTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL LUSCOMB⁴ (No. 16), son of Samuel³ (JOHN², WILLIAM¹), and Elizabeth (Beal?) Luscomb, born Aug. 9, 1722; made his will May 10, 1781; proved July 11th, following; was a gunsmith and clockmaker.

In his will names wife Lydia; eldest daughter Elizabeth Howard; sons Samuel and Henry; daughters Hannah Ropes, Martha, and Mary.

He married, first, Nov. 19, 1744, Hannah Ashby; she baptized

May 30, 1725, daughter of Jonathan and Jemima (Felt) Ashby, Jemima daughter of George Felt and second wife Jemima.

Samuel Luscomb married, second, Lydia, daughter of Francis and Lydia Begoe, and widow of Benjamin Neal (see Appendix, Neal Family, No. 40); she baptized Dec. 31, 1727.

Administration on her estate granted Benjamin Luscomb, who gave bonds with Miles Ward and Zadock Buffington, April 15, 1790.

Children by **Hannah** were: —

28. ELIZABETH LUSCOMB⁶, bapt. July 13, 1746; md. — Howard.
29. WILLIAM LUSCOMB⁶, bapt. Sept. 21, 1746.
30. HANNAH LUSCOMB⁶, bapt. July 3, 1748 (born June 25, 1748); died Dec. 9, 1830; md. Dec. 23, 1770, Jonathan Ropes.
31. SAMUEL LUSCOMB⁶, bapt. June 3, 1750; removed to Epping, N. H.
32. HENRY LUSCOMB⁶, born —.
33. MARTHA LUSCOMB⁶, born in 1758; died July, 1788, aged 30; md. July 1, 1776, Richard Luscomb.
34. MARY LUSCOMB⁶, born —; md. July 5, 1783, Benjamin Luscomb.

FOURTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM LUSCOMB⁴ (No. 27), son of William³ (WILLIAM², WILLIAM¹), and Sarah (Henderson) Luscomb, born in Salem, Mass., in 1747; died April 10, 1827; painter; md. Jan. 20, 1773, Susanna Cook, dau. of Robert and Margaret (widow of Edward Diamond, and daughter of Joseph and Margaret (Cox) Cook) Cook; she (Susanna), bapt. April 8, 1753.

Children were: —

35. WILLIAM LUSCOMB⁵, born in Salem, Mass., in 1774; died Feb. 8, 1820; md. Sept. 14, 1794, Mehitable Mansfield.
36. MARY LUSCOMB⁵, born —; md. Nov. 14, 1805, Hero Nichols, of Reading, Mass., and had five children, viz.: —
 - (a) MARY ANN NICHOLS⁶, born —; md. Dec. 18, 1836, John A. Tyler.
 - (b) HERO NICHOLS⁶, born —; died unmarried, *living at Reading, Mass.*
 - (c) MARIA NICHOLS⁶, born —; died unmarried. " " " "
 - (d) CAROLINE H. NICHOLS⁶, born —; md. Aug. 27, 1832, Matthew F. Leslie.
 - (e) ELIZA NICHOLS⁶, born —; died unmarried.
37. SUSANNA LUSCOMB⁵, born Oct. 22, 1792; died July 19, 1883; md. Jan. 16, 1815, Israel Woodbury, son of Nathaniel and Mary Woodbury; he born in New Salem, N. H., April 29, 1783; died in Salem, Mass., July 11, 1843; tobacconist.

They had six children, viz.: —

- (a) SUSAN ANN WOODBURY ⁶, born July 1, 1816; md. Aug. 17, 1835, Edmund Brown; he born Feb. 20, 1810, in Stockholm, Sweden, and died Feb. 18, 1851, in Salem, Mass. She md. second, Sept. 8, 1865, Andrew Johnson, born in Sweden Nov. 15, 1816. She had three children.
- (b) CAROLINE WOODBURY ⁶, born Dec. 2, 1818; died June 22, 1859, unmarried.
- (c) EZRA WOODBURY ⁶, born Feb. 12, 1821; a carpenter.
 He md. first, June 29, 1847, Elizabeth Knight, dau. of William and Abigail (Punchard) Knight; she born Oct. 25, 1822, and died Feb. 14, 1859. They had six children.
 He md. second, her sister Mary Knight, who was born July 24, 1820, and died Dec. 7, 1884. No issue.
- (d) LEVI WOODBURY ⁶, born June 1, 1823; died Oct. 2, 1824.
- (e) GEORGE WOODBURY ⁶, born June 25, 1826.
- (f) CHARLES WOODBURY ⁶, born Jan. 29, 1830.

FIFTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM LUSCOMB ⁵ (No. 35), son of William ⁴ (WILLIAM ⁴, WILLIAM ⁴, WILLIAM ⁴), and Susanna (Cook) Luscomb, born in Salem, Mass., in 1774; died there Feb. 8, 1820 (gravestone); painter. He md. Sept. 14, 1794, Mehitable Mansfield, dau. of Jonathan and Anna (Ward) Mansfield; she born in 1773, and died July 25, 1825 (gravestone). (See Appendix, Webb Family, continued, No. 10, twelfth child.)

Children, all baptized in the South Church of Salem, Mass., were: —

38. ELIZABETH MANSFIELD LUSCOMB ⁶, bapt. Jan. 16, 1800; died in 1821, unmarried.
39. MEHITABLE LUSCOMB ⁶, born in Salem, Mass., in 1798; died in Lynn, Mass., Feb., 1875; md. May 20, 1822, in Salem, Mass., to *Rev. Thomas Driver*, son of Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver; he born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 5, 1799; died in Lynn, Mass., Jan., 1873; a Baptist minister. (See Driver Family, No. 76.)
40. WILLIAM LUSCOMB ⁶, bapt. Jan. 16, 1800; died young.
41. WILLIAM G. LUSCOMB ⁶, bapt. Nov. 8, 1801; died Aug. 4, 1826, in Panama, unmarried.
42. MARY LUSCOMB ⁶, bapt. Oct. 9, 1803; died about 1828 in Baltimore, Md. She married June 4, 1822, Benjamin C. Rhodes, son of Amos Rhodes.
43. MARTHA TUCKER LUSCOMB ⁶, born Oct. 4, 1804; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass.; md. Oct. 5, 1831, Stephen Webb, son of Benjamin and Hannah (Bray) Webb; he born Sept. 4, 1801; died May 2, 1869; a bank officer, and afterwards a clerk in the Internal Revenue Service.
 They had six children, namely: —

- (a) WILLIAM GEORGE WEBB⁷, born Aug. 6, 1832.
- (b) STEPHEN WEBB⁷, born March 21, 1835.
- (c) MARY ELIZABETH WEBB⁷, born in 1837; died young.
- (d) JOHN F. WEBB⁷, born Oct. 6, 1838.
- (e) MARTHA WEBB⁷, born Feb. 6, 1840.
- (f) ISABELLA WEBB⁷, born May 6, 1848.

(See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 43.)

44. LUCY OSGOOD LUSCOMB⁶, born July 3, 1808; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass.; md. June 30, 1828, Capt. Abner Goodhue, son of Abner and Frances (Bott) Goodhue; he born Jan. 6, 1800; died Dec. 16, 1846; master-mariner.

They had six children, namely:—

- (a) LUCY ELLEN GOODHUE⁷, born Jan. 19, 1833.
- (b) MARTHA WEBB GOODHUE⁷, born July 16, 1834.
- (c) GEORGE CHASE GOODHUE⁷, born Sept. 26, 1837.
- (d) WILLIAM ABNER GOODHUE⁷, born June 26, 1838; died Aug. 28, 1838.
- (e) MARY ELIZABETH GOODHUE⁷, born April 18, 1840.
- (f) FRANCES KING GOODHUE⁷, born Oct. 23, 1843.

THE METCALF FAMILY, OF IPSWICH, MASS.

"METCALF, in the Welsh language, signifies the Church in the vale, from *medd* a vale, a meadow, and *calf*, a cell, a chancel.

The origin of the name, however, is given by tradition in this wise. In those days when bull-fights were in vogue, in Merry England, one of the enraged animals broke away from the combat, and was lively pursued by horsemen. A certain John Strong happened to meet the bull on the top of a hill, and when attacked by the furious beast, he seized him in the nostrils with his left hand and killed him. As he came to the foot of the hill, meeting several persons in the pursuit, he was inquired of whether he had met a bull; he replied, he 'met a calf,' and from this circumstance was called afterward John Metcalfe." — ARTHUR, *Derivations of Family Names*, p. 199.

Camden, in his "Britannia," Vol. III. p. 257, makes mention that "Nappa, in Yorkshire, England, a house with towers, is the chief residence of the Medcalfes, which, at this time (1603), are reckoned the most numerous family in England. It is stated that Sir Christopher Medcalfe, the first of this family, was attended by 300 persons of the same family, and in the same livery on horseback, when as sheriff of the county he met the judges and conducted them to York." "The Medcalfes originated from the county of Flint, in Wales."

Hon. John George Metcalf, in an article on the Metcalf Family in the "New Eng. Geneal. Register," Vol. XVI. p. 181, states that Michael Metcalfe, of Dedham, Mass., was undoubtedly the progenitor of the Metcalf families in New England, born in Tatterford, co. of Norfolk, Eng., in 1586; resided for some years in the city of Norwich, Eng., where he was a linen weaver. At first he did not start with his family, and after being "tossed up and down," from the 17th of Sept., 1636, till the following Christmas, came to Plymouth, Old England, — having sailed from London. The second attempt he sailed from Yarmouth; arrived in Boston three days

before midsummer, 1637, with his wife, nine children, and a servant. He immediately removed to Dedham, Mass.; made a freeman of the town July 16, 1637; died Dec. 24, 1664. He was a Nonconformist, and emigrated to escape the persecutions of Matthew Wren, then Bishop of Norwich, and his Chancellor, Dr. Corbit (New Eng. Geneal. Register, Vol. XVI. p. 181).

The ancestor of the Ipswich family, with whom the Driver family was connected, was Joseph Metcalfe, of whom no chronicler has given any information concerning the date of his sailing from England, or his arrival in New England; but it is on record that he was a resident of Ipswich, Mass., Jan. 5, 1634, and March 4, 1633, took the freeman's oath there; thus must have arrived in New England more than three years before Michael Metcalf, aforesaid.

Ipswich was a small village, settled in 1633-4 by John Winthrop and twelve others; and it may be that it was fully occupied on the arrival in 1637 of Michael Metcalfe with his large family, consisting of twelve persons, including himself; hence he settled at Dedham, Mass. He was thirteen years older than Joseph Metcalfe, and the only similarity between them was, that each had a son Thomas, which name was repeated in both families for generations. If any relationship existed between the families, it is yet to be ascertained.

Holten in his "List of Emigrants to New England," mentions only "Michill Metcalfe, April 8, 1637 — of Norwch Dornix, Weau-ear aged 45 years, and Sarrah, his wife aged 39 years with 8 children, Michill; Thomas; Marey; Sarrah; Elizabeth; Martha; Joane; and Rebeca; and his sarvant Thomas Comberbach aged 16 years ar desirous to passe to boston in New England to inhabitt."

There were others of the name in Norwich, England, some years afterwards, and in 1697 Augustine Metcalfe was sheriff of Norwich (Blomefield, Hist. of Norfolk, Vol. III. p. 431).

FIRST GENERATION.

1. Capt. JOSEPH METCALFE, mariner; born in England in 1605; died in Ipswich, Mass., July 21, 1665.

He was an original proprietor of Ipswich, receiving in 1634 his first grant of land. (See Possession Books of Ipswich, Mass.)

"Jan. 5, 1634, it was by the town of Ipswich, given and granted unto Mathias Currin (Curwen), and unto Philip Fowler, and unto

Christopher Osgood, and unto William Moody, and unto Thomas Dorman, and unto Joseph Metcalf, to each of them four acres of meadow and marsh ground as it will arise in 20 poles or rods, by the land side unto them their heirs, or assigns, lying northward of the Town, the marsh is not limited unto them."

March 4, 1633-4, Joseph Metcalf took the freeman's oath.

He was deputy that year to the General Court, also for 1644, 1645, 1654, 1655, and 1661 (Felt's Ipswich). He also owned a vessel: "So I came to ipswich and agred with goodman Medcafes vesell to bring me from Boston where I had brot my goods

JOHN DEAN born 1612."

New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Register, for 1854, p. 154.

He subscribed yearly to the support of Maj. Denison, leader of the town of Ipswich, Mass.; for,

"At the generall Towne Meeting of Ipswich held the 19 of December 1648.

Whereas the Inhabitants of the Towne have engaged themselves to pay yearly on the 10th day of December unto Maior Denison, soe long as he shall be theur Lader, the sum of Twenty four Pounds, seven shillings, in way of gratuitye, as under there hands may appear. . . .

Voted by the Town at the generall Towne meeting above mentioned. A list of names of those that did subscribe theur severall somes yearly while he continued to be our Lader.

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Mr. Symonds	0	3	0	Andrew Hodges	0	2	0
Rich. Kemball, Sr. . . .	0	3	0	Thos. Newman	0	2	0
John Davis	0	2	0	Renold Foster	0	3	0
Robt. Beacham	0	4	0	John Ingalls	0	4	0
Joseph Metcalfe	0	2	0	John Appleton	0	8	0
Thomas Metcalfe	0	2	0	Samuel Appleton	0	8	0
Rich. Kemball, Jr. . . .	0	2	0	Thomas Safford	0	2	0
Mr. Saltonstall	0	4	0	Henry Archer	0	3	0
Humphrey Bradstreet . .	0	2	0	Richard Nicholls	0	4	0
Francis Jordan	0	1	0	Samuel Varnam	0	2	0
Abra. Foster	0	3	0	John Ayuer	0	2	0
John Jackson	0	2	0	Humphrey Gilbert	0	4	0
Wm. Bartholomew	0	3	0				

New Eng. Gen. Register, Vol. II. p. 52.

Joseph Metcalfe witnessed the will of Robert Andrews, of Ipswich, dated March 1, 1643; proved 26, 1, 1644 (Essex Probate).

March 1, 1643; proved 26, 1, 1644 (Essex Probate).

"May 23, 1655. Joseph Metcalfe was on a Committee of the House to collect gifts made in England by friends to the Colony" (Mass. Bay).

"Nov. 13, 1655. He was an Essex Committee for Trade."

"Feb. 16, 1658. Voted by the Town, to choose a Committee, and give their apprehensions and commonages, and who not, and what else they conceive may conduce to the good of the town, and when they are ready, the Selectmen to call the Town together, to hear what they conceive. This Committee Are as followeth, viz.:—Our two honored Magistrates, our teaching and ruling Elders, Mr. Wade, George Giddings, Philip Fowler, Joseph Medcalf, Thomas Hart."

June 5, 1665, Joseph Metcalf, seaman, of Ipswich, sells to Edward Neal and, Irishman, 7 acres of land, signed by Joseph Metcalf, and Elizabeth his wife, made her mark, Thomas Metcalf and his seal under them (Essex Probate Rec., Vol. III. p. 22).

June 3, 1665, Joseph Metcalf made his will, which was proved Sept. 26th. following, he having died July 21, 1665.

He states his age as "60," and names his wife, Elizabeth, executrix, who is to have the estate, and after her decease, his grandson Joseph shall have his house and land, he paying £10 to his sister Mary.

What livestock his wife leaves at her death he bequeaths to his granddaughter Elizabeth. He appoints his son Thomas and William Goodhue overseers. His estate was valued at £370:13. Jacob Perkins (23 years old), was one of the witnesses of this will.

He married in England, Elizabeth —, who five years after her husband's death, Nov. 8, 1670, married, second, as his second wife, Edward Beacham, then spelled Beauchamp. No issue. Edward Beacham by first marriage had four children (only one of whom was living when he married Mrs. Metcalf), namely:—

(a) SAMUEL BEACHAM, bapt. Oct. 31, 1641; died Nov. 20, 1662.

(b) MARY BEACHAM, bapt. Sept. 10, 1643; died young.

(c) MARY (MAUD another account) BEACHAM, bapt. June 27, 1646; died March, 1667-8.

(d) ELIZABETH BEACHAM, bapt. July 9, 1648.

Their mother was Mary —, who died March, 1667-8, and who was admitted to the Covenant of the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 19, 1640. Her husband admitted Dec. 29, 1639. "Edward Beachamp received for an Inhabitant of Salem and to have foure acres of land 2d. 11mo. 1636." — *Town Rec.*

"The population at this date of what is now Salem, Mass., was so small that there was but one religious society in the place. All the people were accommodated in the meeting-house of the First Church." — UPHAM, *Witchcraft*, p. 15. That church at present date, 1886, is standing on the grounds, belonging to the Essex Institute of Salem, Mass.

"Feb. 18, 1678, a list of y^e Names of those psons y^e have right of Commonage according to Law and order of this Town" (Ipswich), "Widow Metcalf — Thom^s Metcalf — Bowls for Tho. Metcalf." — *New Eng. Hist. and Geneal. Register*, Vol. VII. p. 78.

As far as now known, **Joseph** and **Elizabeth Metcalfe** had but one child, namely:—

2. **THOMAS METCALFE**², born probably in England in 1630; died in Ipswich, Mass., before 1714; yeoman. He md. first, Abigail —, who was the mother of his children. He md. second, in 1689, Widow Lydia Davis.

SECOND GENERATION.

THOMAS METCALFE² (No. 2), son of Joseph¹ and Elizabeth Metcalfe; born probably in England, in 1630; died in Ipswich, Mass., before 1714, when a portion of his estate was divided; yeoman. He married, first, Abigail —, who was the mother of his children, and who died Dec. 6, 1688. He married, second, in 1689, Lydia (Liddea) Davis, a widow, with one son, Jacob Davis. She died May 5, 1727, aged eighty-eight years (Ipswich Records). No issue by this marriage.

Oct. 2, 1666, Christopher Osgood sells the dwelling-house and grounds in Ipswich, Mass., left him by his father, to Thomas Metcalfe.

May 27, 1674, Thomas Metcalfe was made a freeman.

1681, he was on the Jury of Trial.

1685, he was on the Grand Jury.

Feb. 18, 1688–9, he gives to his son Joseph one half of his farm in Ipswich, as found in Vol. V. p. 400, Essex Deeds, as follows:

“Thomas Metcalfe to son Joseph.”

Thomas Metcalfe Senior, & Joseph Metcalfe his son have mutually agreed that y^e farme which belonged to said Thomas his father shall be Divided betwixt them & that said Joseph shall have the East side as bounded, being at y^e South Divided by a line in y^e middle running about six score Rod In Length forward to a little white oke twisted about foure or five Rod, from a Cellar there Digged & stoned; from thence y^e line Running northerly through y^e corne feild to a small white oke, about three Rod in y^e line of Peckinge's land; from thence Runing to a black oke on y^e northermost End of y^e farme, all which land with all y^e buildings, orchard, wood & Timber & all comon priveledges, appertuneing thereunto. Said Joseph is to have without any Lett of him y^e said Thomas his heires, Executors, administrators & assigns forever. The said Thomas being to have halfe y^e apples from year to year dureing his life; farthermore said Joseph is to have half y^e meadow, both that adjoyneing to the upland & y^e halfe of y^e meadow at Peack-ing's Bridg; furthermore said Thomas In consideration of Natural affection he beareth to his son Joseph & that he may be debarred from claimeing any further right in his, freely Gives & Grants To him y^e said Joseph & his heirs for euer y^e tract of vpland purchased of Thomas Lowell, or any other as it lyet hupon y^e north East side of y^e farme Joyneing to said farme and Lemon Chapman's land which lands being originally Granted to Robert Lord & Alexander Knight, all which land with half of Quilters meadow &

halfe y^e marsh lott at y^e Hundreds, excepting halfe an acre, his halfe being at y^e Lower end next the River; all which land y^e said Thomas Doth Give & grant unto y^e said Joseph. To have and to hold to occupy & Improve, to possesse & Enjoy as his owne propper right & Inheritance, all that Tract of land To him & his heires for Ever without any lett hindrance or molestation of y^e said Thomas his heires executors, administrators or assigns for Ever. To all which said Thomas Metcalfe hath sett to his hand & seale in y^e year of our lord one thousand six hundred Eighty & Eight, on y^e Eighteenth of february 1688-89.

THOMAS METCALFE & a (seale)

Signed sealed & delivred
in y^e presence of us
EDMUND HEARD
MESHECH FARLEY

Thomas Metcalfe of Ipswich
appeared before me and did
acknowledge this Instrument
above written to be his act & deed
May y^e 13th, 1691.

Entered y^e Register as
June y^e 27, 1691 —

¶ SAMUEL APPLETON Assist^t.
THOS. WADE, recorder for Essex."

June 6, 1692, Thomas Metcalfe, with the consent of his wife, Lydia, and Joseph Metcalfe, sell to Joseph Ayers, of Ipswich, as follows: —

"Know all men by these presents that I Thomas Metcalfe of Ipswich In y^e county of Essex, In New England, yeoman, In consideration of full satisfaction to me In hand paid by Joseph Ayers & secured to be paid of y^e same Towne & County aforesaid, with which I doe acknowledg myself content & paid y^e full sum of fiftie pounds. I have therefore Bargained & sold aliened & confirmed unto said Joseph Ayers & his heires & assigns all that parcell of land Lyeing bounded from Skillion's stake Southerly to a wallnutt Tree by Jewetts field and Westerly by Jewetts' field & northerly on John Kimball his land, & Easterly by land of y^e Skillion's to y^e said Metcalf's land, with one quarter of my comon Right (belonging to my farm), in Ipswich Comon, which parcell of land is by estimation about sixteen acres be it more or less as it is sett out & bounded with Woods, trees, water courses & all & y^e singular appurtenances & priveledges, with one quarter of all division of comon lands in Ipswich Comon Right, any wayes thereto belonging & that it shall & may be lawfull for y^e said Joseph Ayers & his heires & assigns from time to time & at all times hereafter to vse, occupy enjoy all y^e aforesaid Bargained premises as his & their owne proper Right of Inheritance In fee simple And I y^e above named Thomas Metcalfe for myself my heires, executors and administrators & assigns do covenant & with y^e said Ayers & his heires & assigns To warrantie y^e selling of y^e aforesaid Premises from all maner of person or persons what ever any wayes layeing claime therevnto, & that it is freely discharged from all former bargaines, dowries or any other Intangements whatsoever & Therefore do Grant bargainie sell unto y^e said Ayers all that parcell of land To have & to hold to him & his heires & assigns for ever, as witness my hand & seale this third day of June one Thousand six hundred ninety & Two.

Signed sealed & delivered In
y^e presence of Witnesses

JOHN WARNER
PHILIP FOWLER

THOMAS METCALFE } & a [seale]
LIDEA METCALFE }

Thomas Metcalfe appeared June y^e 6, 1692 & did acknowledge this Instrument above written to be his act & Deed before me

SAMUEL APPLETON, of their Majesties Council.

I Joseph Metcalfe doe freely consent to y^e selling of y^e land mentioned In y^e above deed & doe warrant it to said Ayers for him his heires & assigns To have & To hold it to them

forever & doe acknowledg he hath paid me & my fater for it as is above expressed as witness my hand this sixth day of June 1692

Signed, sealed & delivered in y^e
presence of witnesses
PHILIP FOWLER
JOHN WARNER.

The signe JOSP of Joseph Metcalfe
& a [scale].

— *Ipswich Deeds*, Vol. V. p. 504.

Twenty-nine years after the execution of this deed the daughter of the said Joseph Ayers became the wife of the grandson of the said Thomas Metcalfe.

In 1699 Thomas and Liddea Metcalfe sell to Jacob Davis (her son by former marriage).

In 1703 Thomas Metcalfe made a division of his remaining property among his children.

Children of **Thomas** and **Abigail Metcalfe**, all born in Ipswich, Mass., were:—

3. **ELIZABETH METCALFE** ³, born about 1654; named in her grandfather's will; living in Salem, Mass., a widow, in 1701.

She married, first, about 1679, as his second wife, Thomas Ives, the emigrant; he born in England in 1648; died in Salem, Mass., in 1695. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 1.)

Administration on the estate of Thomas Ives Aug. 5, 1695, by his widow, Elizabeth. Inventory taken Sept. 26, 1695.

Account of adm. Dec. 6, 1697, when Elizabeth Ives, alias White, "for keeping two young children, two years to this time, £12."—*Essex Probate*, Vol. VI. p. 12, Vol. VI. pp. 39, 100.

She married, second, Jan. 16, 1696, John White.

Children of her first marriage were:—

- (a) **JOSEPH IVES** ⁴, bapt. March, 1683.
- (b) **JOHN IVES** ⁴, bapt. March, 1683.
- (c) A child ⁴, bapt. Dec. 4, 1687.
- (d) **BENJAMIN IVES** ⁴, born about 1692; bapt. Aug. 7, 1702, after his father's decease; md. Jan. 2, 1717, Anne Derby. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 12.)

Children by her second marriage were:—

- (e) **JOHN WHITE** ⁴, born Dec. 24, 1696; md. first, Sept. 23, 1720, Rebecca Flint; she bapt. Jan. 29, 1698-9, and died about 1725 (see Appendix, Flint Family, No. 26); md. second, Nov. 4, 1726, Desire Shallote.
- (f) **ABIGAIL WHITE** ⁴, bapt. Aug. 9, 1702.

March 18, 1701, Thomas Metcalfe, "for loving affection towards his daughter Elizabeth Metcalf, alias White of Salem, a widow being in perfect memory have given" etc., etc., "a certain shop called a butcher's shop with the land belonging to it" . . . "which land and shop were purchased by me of Samuel Cheever of Salem, son of Peter Cheever, Jan. 3, 1698-9."—*Essex Deeds*, Vol. XVIII. p. 4.

4. **ABIGAIL METCALFE** ², born about 1656; died —; md. Oct. 3, 1713, when fifty-seven years of age, as his third wife, Lieut. William Butler,

yeoman, of Ipswich, Mass.; he a freeman in 1682. He md. first, in 1675, Sarah——; he md. second, Mary (Ingalls?). No issue by third marriage. He made his will Oct. 26, 1724; proved Aug. 18, 1730.

Probate Rec.,
B. 316, p. 222. }

"The Will of William Butler.

In the Name of God Amen, This Twenty sixth day of October, one Thousand seven Hundred and Twenty Four, I William Butler of Ipswich, in the county of Essex in the Province of Massachusetts Bay, in New England, yeoman, Being through God's Goodness at this Time of Perfect mind & Memory but calling to Mind the Mortality of my Body, do make this to be my last Will and Testament.

Principally & first of all I humbly recommend my immortal Soul into the Hands of Almighty God my blessed Creator and Redeemer and my Body when dead to be buried in a Christian Manner at the discretion of my Executor hereafter named, in hopes of a Glorious Resurrection to eternal Life at the great and last Day; — and as touching such worldly Estate it has Pleased God to bless me withal in this Life, I do give demise and dispose of the same in the following Manner and Form.

Imprinis: — I give and bequeath unto Abigail my well beloved Wife one third Part of all my Household Stuff forever, Excepting such household Goods as did belong unto Mary my former wife; also I give unto my s^d Wife y^e Sum of seven Pounds in Passable money of this Province or in Passable Bills of Publick Credit to be paid to her yearly each and every year so long as she shall remain my widow; — also I give unto my said Wife a Convenient apartment in my now dwelling House during y^e Time she remains my Widow; and if my s^d Wife shall see cause to Marry again then I give her but Twenty shillings Per year in Passable Money or Passable Bills of Credit as above Exprest during her natural Life; and my s^d Wife taking up with the afore-mentioned Dowry she is not to have any other Priviledge in my Estate.

Item; — I confirm to my Grand children, y^e Children of my son William Butler the several Pieces of marsh as mentioned in a Deed under my hand and Seal made to my S^d Son's Children & dated September the second day one Thousand seven Hundred Twenty three and I give to my Grandson William Butler, the Eldest son of my s^d Son William the sum of ten shillings in Passable Money or Passable Province Bills of Credit. The Reason why I give to my s^d Grand children no more is because I having given unto their Father so much which was sufficient for his Part in my Estate.

Item; — I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Butler and his Heirs & assigns forever a Piece of salt Marsh Ground with Islands thereon & y^e same not to Exceed four acres bounded Northerly and northwesterly on land of Thomas Burnams; also I give to said Thomas and his Heirs & assigns as aforesaid six acres of woodland lying in Gloucester Bounds, bounded with a Hemlock Tree at the northeasterly Corner mark ' 1 from s^d Tree on a Line to Land of Joseph Ingalls, westerly to a heap of stones,

Southerly on land of John Cogswell to another Heap of Stones, westerly on my other Land from the last heap of stones to another Heap of stones, Then northerly on land that was Michael Farleys, to the Hemlock Tree first mentioned, which six acres of woodland I do give to said Thomas on Condition that when my sons Samuel and John Butler comes of age and ^{s^d} Thomas see cause to sell or dispose of his Right in the sheep commons of Ipswich they shall have it paying to him the sum of seven Pounds in Passable Money or Bills of Credit; and whereas ^{s^d} Thomas hath upon the Fencing of his own Marsh made a stone wall that includes Part of my Pasture land, I do give unto ^{s^d} Thomas & his Heirs and assigns the Land that said Wall stands upon and the whole of the Land yt is contained between ^{s^d} Wall and his own Marsh. —

Item : — I give to my son Ralph Butler, and his Heirs and assigns my Malt House and the Land whereon his House and Barn stands with the Conveniency of Land for a way to improve y^e same, he & his Heirs maintaining so much Fence for inclosing y^e ^{s^d} Lands whereon his House and Barn stands and the Lands for the Conveniency of improveing the same as may be thought needful by those that have and enjoy y^e Land adjoining thereto as may keep them from being damnified for want of the same being Fenced; and I do order my son Ralph Butler or his Heirs to pay the sum of seven Pounds to my Executors or his Order in Passable money or Passable Bills of Credit for defraying of Debts, and Charges of my Estate.

Item; — I give to my daughter Sarah Bayley Twenty shillings in Passable money or Passable Bills of Credit.

Item; — I give to my daughter Hannah Andrews in Passable money or Passable Bills of Credit, the sum of Ten Pounds.

Item; — I give to my daughter Elizabeth Burnam the sum of ten Pounds in Passable Money or Passable Bills of Credit.

The Reason why I give my children before named no more in this my last will is because what I have formerly given them in Possession I do account to be their full shares and Portions of my Estate. Therefore I debarr them forever making any Claim to any more of my Estate that what I have given them in this my last Will.

Item; — I give and bequeath to my Daughter Mary Butler, Twenty Pounds in Passable money or Passable Bills of Credit, & all the Household Goods that I have in Possession that were her own Mothers, and all her said Mother's Clothing, both Linen & Woolen and silk and her said Mother's two gold Rings, together with two thirds of all the rest of my Household Goods.

Item; — I give to my Grandson Job Giddings, Twenty Shillings in Passable money or Bills of Credit.

Item; — I give to my Granddaughter, Sarah Bennit, Twenty Shillings in Passable Money or Bills of Credit.

Item; — After all my just Debts and Funeral Expences are paid and discharged by my Executors hereafter named, Then all y^e rest and Remainder of my whole Estate both real and Personal either in Ipswich, y^e Town of Gloucester or elsewhere of what Nature or Kind soever (except what I have before given & Bequeathed) I do hereby demise Give

& bequeath the same to my two sons Sam^l Butler and John Butler and to their Heirs, Executors, administrators and assigns forever, equally to be divided between them, only my son Sam^l shall have ten Pounds in Value more than my son John Butler and if any of my last three mentioned children, viz : — Mary, Sam^l & John Butler, should die before they arrive at full age or without Heirs, Then y^e Portion of such deceased Child, shall be equally divided to and amongst the Survivors or Survivor of y^e said last mentioned three children ; and I do Order and Will that y^e several Legacies and Payments to my Daughters and grand Children shall be equally Paid to them or their Heirs by my Two sons Sam^l & John Butler, or their Heirs and not to be paid to them untill after the Death of my now Wife Unless my Daughter Mary Butler should marry before that Time, then she shall be paid her Portion I have given her in this my Will at Marriage.

Item ; — My Will is & I do also order & Impower my Executor hereafter named to pay all my Just Debts and Funeral Charges & other Charges of my Estate with and out of my Estate, and also y^e Dowry or Yearly Payment of seven Pounds to my s^d Wife if she take up with my Will or Dowry and Yearly Payment given her as aforesaid. But when my son John Butler comes of age after which y^e said Sam^l Butler and s^d John Butler yearly equally between them shall pay said seven Pounds.

Item ; — My Will is that my two sons Sam^l & John Butler shall neither of them sell any of their Lands given them in this my last Will unless it be to each other during the time that my Wife shall remain my Widow or her accepting of the Dowry given her as aforesaid.

Lastly ; — I do hereby make, ordain, constitute and appoint my trusty & Well beloved Friend William Giddings Sen^r of Chebacco in said Ipswich to be the sole Executor to and of this my last Will and Testament & I do hereby utterly disallow, Revoke, disannull & make Void all and every former Wills, Testaments & Legacies, Bequests & Executors by me before in any manner of Ways named Willed or bequeathed hereby declaring, Ratifying & confirming this & no other to be my last Will and Testament, In Witness whereof I the said William Butler have hereunto set my Hand & Seal y^e Day and Year before mentioned.

WILLIAM ^{his} **W** BUTLER
mark

Signed sealed Published
Pronounced & declared
by the s^d William Butler
to be his last Will &
Testament in Presence
of us y^e Subscribers

JOSEPH GOODHUE
JOHN GOODHUE JR.
SAM^l INGALLS

Will entered for Probate Aug. 18, 1730.

SAMUEL ROGERS Reg^r.."

"An Inventory of y^e Estate of Lieut. William Butler late of Ipswich deceased prized October 15, 1730.

	£
Imp ^{re} his Apparell	20 : 2 : 0
Item. Three Beds, Bedsteads & Bedding thereto	32 : 10 : 0
House Linning £2:14 ^s — Pewter £6	8 : 14 : 0
Iron Ware £7:13 — Brass Ware £10:17:6	18 : 10 : 6
Chests, Tables & other wooden Ware	8 : 8 : 0
Chairs £2:5 — Earthen Ware, Tin & Glass £1:11:6	3 : 16 : 6
Books £3:9 — Wheels, Cards & Sieves 29 ^s — bellows 6 ^s	3 : 14 : 0
Money Scales; small Chain for Sleeves 10 ^s — Pannel, Bridle, Pillion & Meal Bags 35/	2 : 5 : 0
Item : Chains, Yokes, Carts, Sleds & Utensiles for Husbandry	13 : 15 : 6
Item: Quick Stock	100 : 15 : 0
Hay £15 — Grain £27:8 — Flax 39 ^s	44 : 7 : 0
Shingles	8 : 0 : 0
Half a Pew in Chebacco meeting house	2 : 10 : 0
	<u>262 : 7 : 6</u>

Item — Real Estate

Homestead of Lands, consisting of about 71 acres, with dwelling house and Buildings	916 : 0 : 0
Three Parcels of Land containing about 80 acres	200 : 0 : 0

WILLIAM GIDDINGS Exec^r to
Lieut. Butler's last Will.

THOMAS LUFKIN
JOHN BURNAM
WILLIAM HASKOLL } Appraisers.

£1.378 : 7 : 6

Ipswich December 7th 1730.

Then William Giddings, Executor made oath to the Truth of this Inventory
Before JOHN APPLETON J. Prob.

Essex ss. William Giddings Executor to the last Will & Testament of William Butler late of Ipswich deceased his acc^t of adm^o on said Estate exhibited to the Hon^{ble} John Appleton Esq^r Judge of the Probate of Wills &c. Octobr 27, 1733.

	The s ^d Estate is Cred ^t viz:	
By real Estate as ^{pr} Invr		£1116 : 0 : 0
By personal Ditto	262 : 7 : 6	
By Cash &c. rec'd	3 : 10 : 0	265 : 17 : 6

	The s ^d Estate is Dr: Viz:	
To Sundries as by a partic ^l r List on File	155 : 16 : 7	
To James Bowdoin	323 : 11 : 0	
To Thomas Manning £8:0:5 — John Bayley £5	13 : 0 : 5	
To Doct ^r Hale 45/ Rob ^t R (—) 40/	8 : 5 : 0	
	<u>496 : 13 : 0</u>	

To Abigail Butler $\frac{3}{4}$ of Household Goods	52 : 0 : 0
To Ditto yearly annuity	8 : 0 : 0
To Mary Butler $\frac{1}{4}$ Household Goods	26 : 0 : 0
To Ditto	20 : 0 : 0
To William Butler, Grandson	0 : 10 : 0
To Sarah Bayley	1 : 0 : 0
To Hannah Andrews	10 : 0 : 0
To Elizabeth Burnam	10 : 0 : 0
To Job Giddings, Grandson	1 : 0 : 0
To Sarah Bennet, Grand daughter	1 : 0 : 0
	<u>129 : 10 : 0</u>

To y ^e Cloaths or apparel delivered the Sons	20 : 2 : 0
To Petition & Copies to Sup ^r Court &c.	2 : 2 : 0
To y ^e Executor for Time & Trouble	10 : 0 : 0
To stating, allowing, recording &c.	0 : 18 : 0
	<hr/> £659 : 5 : 0

Oct. 27th 1733.

WILLIAM GIDDINGS Execut^r

Then William Giddings Executor made Oath to the Truth of This Acc^t

Before JOHN APPLETON J. Prob.

L^t Butler's Cloaths being divided among his Children, I do allow the Executor
should have Cr^t for it £20 : 2
J. A."

Letter on file.

"Newbury, Oct. y^e 19: 1733.

Mr William Gidding Sr — there is due to mee from father Butler's Estat the sumb of five pounds, I understand you Remain Executor to father Butler's will, yett, & I desire you to Execute his will as to pay mee this money for it have been due to mee some time. I pray fail not sending the money as soon as may be or send mee word what you intend about the matter

I Remain
Your friend JOHN BAYLEY."

5. MARY METCALFE^s, born June —, 1658.
6. JOSEPH METCALFE^s, born Jan. 27, 1660-1; died Aug. —, 1714; md.
Rebecca —, who died Oct. 20, 1723.
7. THOMAS METCALFE^s, born Dec. 4, 1667; living in 1683.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOSEPH METCALFE^s (No. 6), son of Thomas^s (THOMAS¹), and Abigail Metcalfe, born in Ipswich, Mass., Jan. 27, 1660-1. Yeoman.

Administration on his estate granted his eldest son, Joseph, Sept. 6, 1714.

He married, date unknown, Rebecca —, who died Oct. 20, 1723.

"May 17, 1703:— Joseph Metcalfe and wife Rebeccah give their son-in-law James Davis after decease of said Joseph, his dwelling-house, barn and homestead, with 40 acres of land; provided that during our life time said Davis faithfully and carefully, and for our comfortable subsistence till and manure said land and improve the same for our best advantage and at our decease of me and said wife pay all our just and honest debts."

"Oct. 22, 1711:— Joseph Metcalf, Senior, of Ipswich sold to Francis Crumpton, for £70. House and 20 acres of land, bounded on the South by Thomas Metcalfe, and land in town of James Davis also bounded by John Kimball, Joseph Ayers, and — Perkins. (No wife mentioned, as she would not sell her thirds.)

Acknowledged March 3, 1711- 12."

"Feb. 4, 1702-3:— Joseph Metcalfe, son of Thomas and wife Abigail, for £20, sell to Col. John Appleton Esq. 6 acres salt marsh, given to said Joseph by his father Thomas Metcalf, Feb. 18, 1688-9."

"Joseph Metcalf & Bros & Sisters agreem^t."

To all Christian people to whom these presents shall come Joseph Metcalfe, & James Davis & Abigail his wife, & Rebecca Metcalfe all of Ipswich, in y^e county of Essex, within y^e province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England send Greeting.

Know y^e that whereas Thomas Metcalfe of Ipswich afores^d Deceased did Intaile several Land hereafter mentioned given to his son, Joseph Metcalfe during his natural life vpon y^e subscribers children of s^d Joseph together with his son Jacob Metcalfe who is not knowne at this Day to be living, & wee the children above named Interested in s^d Lands have vnanimously agreed that Each of vs having a like Interest in y^e same which will not be so beneficial & convenient to Divide into Equal parts that y^e Land shall be to them as it is here settled on & affixed vnto & y^e others shall have their share In moneys pay^d by y^e others according to y^e perticular value which each share amounts vnto.

That is to say y^e s^d Joseph Metcalfe, shall have to him & his hiers & assigns for ever of s^d Intailed Lands y^e salt marsh In bounds of Ipswich at y^e place called y^e hundreds, be y^e same three acres more or less, being valued at Ten pounds and that James Davis who married vnto Abigail shall have y^e upland & meadow thirty-five acres Intailed Jynning vpon y^e farme in Ipswich that they live on part of, at seventy pounds, & that being above his third part of s^d Intailed, that he shall pay to said Joseph, Twenty & three pounds, Six shillings & Eight pence in current money, of this province, at or before y^e first Day of next September, & vnto Rebecca Metcalfe in like specie y^e sume of Twenty & three pounds, six shillings, & eight pence — y^e sum of Ten pounds within Two years next following y^e Date hereof, with Twelve pence vpon y^e pound Interest for y^e forbearance till that time of the remainder of s^d y^e next following year after y^e s^d Ten pounds is to be pay^d with like Intrest anually vntill y^e time of payment & Joseph Metcalfe obliges to pay vnto s^d Rebecca y^e sum of three pounds six shillings & eight pence in like specie at or before y^e Two next yeares from y^e date hereof be expired together with Twelve pence vpon y^e pound for the Interest of y^e same. It is also Mutually agreed y^e Joseph Metcalfe shall pay vnto his said Brother James if Jacob come againe to demand his interest in y^e granted premises y^e sum of five pounds, sixteen shillings & eight pence vpon his acquitting his Claim to him of s^d Lands, & that Rebecca Metcalfe vpon his returne and acquitting his claims to s^d Lands shall pay him y^e s^d James y^e like sum of five pounds sixteen shillings & Eight pence. & also s^d James & Rebecca vpon s^d Jacobs returne againe shall pay vnto said Joseph Metcalfe y^e sum of sixteen shillings & Eight pence apiece & James Davis vpon y^e returne of Jacob & quitting claims to his Interest y^e Lands that James hath now settled vpon him obliges to pay vnto s^d Jacob also y^e sum of Eleven pounds thirteen shillings & four pence which he received of y^e said Joseph & Rebecca.

Also Joseph Metcalfe gives & grants for his brother James Davis share in y^e salt marsh at y^e hundreds, six acres of meadow commonly called Jacobs his meadow given him by his grandfather, bounded by Joseph Kimball on y^e Southerly side & by Benjamin Kimball on y^e Easterly end, and North East by meadow of s^d James y^e s^d Grantee, Covenant & oblige to y^e several grantees & their respective hiers, Executors, administrators & assigns that they shall for ever hereafter have, hold & enjoy, y^e granted premises to themselves respectively, it is granted vnto & to their hiers executor admⁿ & assigns without any let suit or denial of a good Inheritance in Fee simple without any condition to alter y^e same & each of s^d children oblige themselves respectively each to y^e other & their respective heirs executors admⁿ to discharge y^e severall parts as each are obliged on y^e premises by themselves or their heirs Executors or admⁿ.

In Testimony hereof & for confirmation of y^e premises each party have herevnto afixed their hands & seales this Twenty & second Day of November, Anno Dom. 1714.

Signed, sealed in

presence of Witnesses

NEH. JEWETT

JOSEPH FISKE

EBENEZER CLARKE

JOSEPH METCALFE & a seale

RUTH METCALFE & a seale

JAMES DAVIS & a seale

her

ABIGAIL X DAVIS & a seale

mark

her

REBECCA X METCALFE, widow, & a seale

mark

her

REBECCA R METCALFE JR. & a seale.

mark

ESSEX, ss. Ipswich y^e 22 of gber (Nov.) 1714.

Joseph Metcalfe & Ruth his wife, James Davis & Abigail his wife, Rebecca Metcalfe, widow, & Rebecca Metcalfe Jun^r, personally appeared and acknowledged this Instrument to be their act and deed and said Females resigned all their right of Dower & Claims in y^e Granted premises before me

NEHEMIAH JEWETT, *Just. peac..*"

Children of **Joseph and Rebecca Metcalfe** were: —

8. JOSEPH METCALFE ⁴, born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1681; died March 9, 1761; md. first, Nov. 22, 1704, Ruth Smith; md. second, Sarah Ayers, to whom he was published Dec. 9, 1721.
9. REBECCA METCALFE ⁴, born —; named in her father's will in 1714, at which date she was unmarried. She died April, 1716.
10. JACOB METCALFE ⁴, born in Ipswich, Mass., June 8, 1685; probably a mariner, and died at sea, for in the settlement of the estate of his father, Nov. 22, 1714, he was mentioned as not known to be living at that date.
11. ABIGAIL METCALFE ⁴, born in Ipswich, Mass., March 29, 1686; died Jan. 13, 1720; buried in Ipswich; has a gravestone; md. Elder James Davis, son of Isaac and Lydia Davis, of Beverly, Mass., to whom she was published Jan. 5, 1705-6; he died March 11, 1753.

Elder Davis was on a committee to treat with Mr. Nathaniel Rogers to preach in Linebrook. He was one of the founders and ministers of Linebrook parish church; he gave the land on which the church stood. His children were: —

1. MARY DAVIS ⁵, born Feb. 27, 1706-7; died June 2, 1776; intention of marriage June 13, 1724, to Nathan Davis, son of Cornelius and Elizabeth Jewett (Hidden) Davis, and grandson of Andrew and Sarah Hidden, on his mother's side, and grandson of John Davis, — an early settler and proprietor of Newbury, Mass., who was supposed to have come from Marlborough, Eng., — on his father's side. His father lived in Rowley, Mass., and was a soldier in the Narragansett War, and died March 16, 1731; husbandman. Nathan Davis was born in Rowley, June 15, 1701, and died June 2, 1776.

Oct. 24, 1727, John Fowler buys of Nathan Davis, of Rowley, Mass., husbandman, and Mary his wife, 4 acres of Cowbridge marsh in Rowley; he sells it Aug. 2, 1739, to George Jewett, of Rowley. He buys again of Nathan Davis, Jan. 4, 1731-2 (Fowler Family, p. 65).

Feb. 25, 1750-1, John Fowler (whose wife was Mercy Howe), bought of Nathan Davis and his wife Mary, of Providence, county of Providence in the colony in New England, 3 acres of upland and salt-marsh in Rowley, at "Swans Casway," bounded west on marsh of Benjamin Stickney, which with wife Mercy sells July 15, 1751, to Robert Hale, Esq., of Beverly (*Ibid.*, p. 91).

Nathan and Mary Davis had six children, all born in Rowley, Mass., viz.:—

- (a) **MARY DAVIS** ⁶, b. Nov. 11, 1724.
- (b) **ISRAEL DAVIS** ⁶, bapt. April 7, 1728; master-mariner; md. in Topsfield, Mass., March 20, 1750, his second cousin, Hannah Metcalf, dau. of Thomas and Ruth (Flint) Metcalf (No. 18, Metcalf Family); she born about 1730; died July 20, 1753. He married, second, date unknown, Sarah —.
- (c) **ABIGAIL DAVIS** ⁶, bapt. Jan. 19, 1728; published Feb. 4, 1754, to her second cousin, Benjamin Kimball, son of Aaron and Ruth (Metcalf) Kimball, and grandson of Joseph and Ruth (Smith) Metcalf (No. 8, Metcalf Family); also No. 34, Kimball Family (see Appendix). He bapt. March 9, 1734.
- (d) **LYDIA DAVIS** ⁶, bapt. Oct. 11, 1730.
- (e) **SAMUEL DAVIS** ⁶, bapt. Feb. 27, 1732.
- (f) **ISAAC DAVIS** ⁶, bapt. Nov. 30, 1735; died, probably unmarried, before June 18, 1789; a master-mariner; for at that date Jonathan Burnham, of Hampton Falls, N. H., and Abigail his wife, Samuel Ross, Jr., and Sarah his wife, and Susanna Ross, single woman, all of Ipswich, sell John Fowler, Jr. (son of John and Mercy (Howe) Fowler), of Ipswich, gentleman, all their right in the real estate in Ipswich of their uncle, the late Isaac Davis, of Ipswich.

"May 6, 1789, John Fowler, Jr., buys of widow Abigail Smith, of Ipswich, her right in estate of Capt. Isaac Davis, late of Ipswich, deceased, except her right in pew and burying-place. June 18 he buys of Joseph Fowler, Jr., and Lydia his wife" (who was Lydia Ross, 8th child of No. 4), 'with others, the right they have in the real estate of Davis above.' (See Fowler Family, p. 116.)

- 2. **ISAAC DAVIS** ⁶, born in 1711; md. March 8, 1731, Anne Barnum, of Ipswich.
- 3. **ABIGAIL DAVIS** ⁶, born Aug. 17, 1712; md. March 18, 1730, John Smith, who died before May 6, 1789.
- 4. **LYDIA DAVIS** ⁶, born in Ipswich, Mass., June 9, 1715; md. Samuel Ross, of Ipswich, to whom she was published Oct. 6, 1733.

They had ten children, namely:—

- (a) **SAMUEL ROSS** ⁶, bapt. Jan. 5, 1734-5; died Dec. 5, 1738.
- (b) **JAMES ROSS** ⁶, bapt. Nov. 7, 1736, and died Nov. 14th following.
- (c) **SAMUEL ROSS** ⁶, bapt. Nov. 19, 1739.
- (d) **ABIGAIL ROSS** ⁶, bapt. Dec. 25, 1740.
- (e) **SUSANNA ROSS** ⁶, bapt. March 20, 1742.
- (f) **CHRISTIAN ROSS** ⁶, bapt. April 14, 1745.
- (g) **JAMES ROSS** ⁶, bapt. Jan. 25, 1746-7.
- (h) **LYDIA ROSS** ⁶, born in Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 20, 1748; died in Winthrop, Me., March 3, 1831; md. before June of 1773, Joseph Fowler, son of Joseph and Esther (Huse) Fowler, blacksmith. In 1804 they removed to Winthrop, Me., where Joseph Fowler became a yeoman. Here he died Aug. 20, 1827.

Their children, Lydia, Joseph, Susanna, Mary, Samuel, Elizabeth, and Abigail, were all born in Ipswich, Mass. (See Fowler Family, by M. A. Stickney, pp. 104, 105.)

(i) NATHANIEL ROSS⁶, bapt. Oct. 27, 1751; died April 26, 1794.

(j) ELIZABETH ROSS⁶, bapt. March 9, 1755.

5. JAMES DAVIS⁶, born Jan. 9, 1716; died —; md. first, March 25, 1732, widow Martha Smith; second, Jan. 25, 1738, Mary Choate, of Ipswich, Mass. He was probably Capt. Davis, captain of Col. Doolittle's regiment, April 19, 1775, in the Revolutionary War.

6. REBECCA DAVIS⁶, born in Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 9, 1718; bapt. May 6, 1722; died Dec. 13, 1809; md. Benjamin Crombie, to whom she was published April 4, 1741; he born in Ballymore, Ir., where his father died. His mother emigrated to New England, Benjamin accompanying her. He became a teacher, and after his marriage he lived in New Rowley, Mass., till 1773, when he moved to Derryfield. In 1782 he removed to Chester, N. H., where he died May 2, 1806, aged 90 years.

They had eleven children, the sixth and eleventh of whom removed to Chester, N. H., with their parents.

The sixth child was:—

VI. MOSES CROMBIE⁶, born in New Rowley, Mass., Sept. 7, 1751; md. Abigail Underhill, dau. of Moses Hatter; she died April 29, 1849. Their children were:—

(a) MOSES CROMBIE⁷, JR.; died March 4, 1868, aged 87 years.

(b) ELIZABETH CROMBIE⁷, born March 22, 1790; md. Matthew Reid.

The eleventh child was:—

XI. AMOS CROMBIE⁶, born Aug. 29, 1764; died Sept. 10, 1854; md. Dec. 29, 1802, Anna Patten, dau. of John Patten, who died Dec. 29, 1842. Their children were:—

(a) FRANKLIN CROMBIE⁷, Esq., born Oct. 25, 1803.

(b) LUTHER CROMBIE⁷, born 1808. (Chase's History of Chester, N. H.)

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOSEPH METCALFE⁴ (No. 8), son of Joseph³ (THOMAS², THOMAS¹), and Rebeccah Metcalfe, born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1681; died March 17, 1761, aged 80 years.

He was twice married; first, Nov. 22, 1704, in the church at Ipswich, Mass., to Ruth Smith, who died, according to her gravestone in the burial-ground on High Street, Ipswich, Mass., "April y^e 22, 1721, Aged 39 years."

He married, second, Dec. 9, 1721, Sarah Ayers, dau. of Joseph and Sarah (Caldwell) Ayers, who was born Aug. 5, 1685, and died in Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 10, 1757. She was the granddaughter of John and Susanna Ayers, he being styled "Captain John." He was a

citizen of Ipswich in 1648, and was killed in 1675 by Indians at Squeag, now Northfield, Mass. His widow, Susanna, rendered an inventory of her husband's estate, as £195 : 13 : 6 (Hamatt's Early Inhabitants of Ipswich). John Ayers's children were six, namely : —

(1) Edward Ayers, born Feb. 12, 1658; (2) Mark Ayers, born Dec. 14, 1661; (3) Nathaniel Ayers, born July 6, 1664; (4) John Ayers, born —; died April, 1691; md. before May, 1678, Mary Woodam, dau. of John and Abigail Woodam; (5) Thomas Ayers, born —; md. March 21, 1677, Hannah Erington; (6) Joseph Ayers, born —; ind., first, June 9, 1684, Sarah Caldwell, dau. of John and Susanna Symonds (dau. of Mark Symonds) Caldwell; John Caldwell, her father, was of Scotch descent, and came from the North of England to New England in 1654, settling in Ipswich, Mass., where he purchased a house of Cornelius Waldo, which house in 1873, two hundred and nineteen years afterwards, was still standing, and owned by the Caldwell family; it was situated on High Street.

Joseph Ayers married, second, Hannah Dutch, to whom he was published April 21, 1714.

By his first wife he had five children, namely : (1) Sarah, born Aug. 5, 1685, and married Joseph Metcalf for his second wife, as abovesaid; (2) Elizabeth, born Jan. 23, 1687, and married Feb. 5, 1716, Aaron Kimball; (3) John, born Feb. 26, 1692; (4) William, born Sept. 13, 1696; (5) Benjamin, born Dec. 6, 1700.

Nov. 13, 1751, Joseph Metcalfe made his will; proved March 30, 1761, ten years afterwards, at which time his second wife was not living.

"He gives wife Sarah, all his household goods she brought to me when I married her, and one half of the bedding and linen we have made."

"To son Jacob £8. and one half of my wearing apparel."

"To children of son Thomas, deceased, £8. to be equally divided."

"To children of daughter Ruth Kimball, deceased, £8."

"To grandson, Joseph, son of Samuel, deceased, £2 : 13 : 4."

"To son Joseph, all the rest of my personal estate with my negro Scipio, Also all the real estate in Ipswich, and after his decease, then to his eldest son, then the same to go to the eldest son of Thomas."

Nov. 26, 1714, the said Joseph Metcalfe bought back the estate his father, Joseph Metcalfe, Sr., sold to Francis Crumpton Oct. 22, 1711, with the exception of his mother's third, which his father could not sell, she not signing the deed (Essex Deeds, Vol. XXIX. pp. 26, 27).

March 17, 1737-8, John Fowler with wife Mercy (Jacob) sells Joseph Metcalfe's, of Ipswich, land there.

Feb. 13, 1743, Joseph Metcalfe gave to West Parish, Ipswich, Mass., 4 acres of land for the use of the ministry, "so long as pub-

lic worship shall be kept up in the house on it." Witness—John Calef. (Essex Deeds, Vol. XCI. p. 137.)

At present date (1886), this gift of land is not "for the use of the ministry." At what date it ceased to be so used was not ascertained.

"Feb. 1743 — At the meeting of the building committee, Joseph Metcalfe gave four acres of land where the meeting house stands, voted against said Metcalfe pew room on north side of east door next the door five feet front, four and one half feet from the wall; Mark Howes one of the committee." — *Records of Linebrook Parish of Ipswich.*

Mr. Joseph Metcalfe on committee to invite the minister Nathaniel Rogers.

April 21, 1746 : — Joseph Metcalfe and first wife Ruth (Smith) were made members of the First Church of Ipswich, Mass.

"June 4, 1749 ; — At the request of our Bretheren of y^e West Parish in Ipswich (Linebrook), viz. Joseph Metcalfe, James Davis, Mark Fisk and Jeremiah Smith ; It was voted by the First Church in Ipswich, that they with their wives to be dismissed to their Embodying with some members of other churches dwelling in said Parish into church state by them. NATHANIEL ROGERS, *Pastor.*"

Linebrook Parish was constituted of inhabitants of Rowley and Ipswich ; four months after the above request, Nov. 30, 1749, George Lesslie, Joseph Metcalf, James Davis, brother-in-law of Joseph Metcalf, George Hibbert, Thomas Potter, Jonathan Burpee, John Abbot, Ebenezer Tenney, David Perley, Mark Fisk, John Chaplin, Jr., Amos Jewett, Jeremiah Smith, Nehemiah Abbot, Ezekiel Potter, and one whose name cannot be ascertained, organized the first church in Linebrook.

Mr. Lesslie was the pastor of this church, and had a settlement of £700, old tenor, equal to \$311.08, and £100 lawful money, and twelve cords of wood. At this date he was unmarried ; but Oct. 26, 1756, he married Hepzibar Burpee, daughter of Jonathan Burpee, who with John Abbot was made deacon of this church, Dec. 13, 1749.

Dec. 19th the church made choice of James Davis and George Hibbert to the office of ruling elders, but they were not ordained, which office they held till Feb. 21, 1757, when Amos Jewett and Jeremiah Burpee were chosen to the office, and were ordained April 19, 1758.

Nov. 4, 1679, by advice of council convened the pastor was dismissed, the parish having been induced to ask a dismission, because the parish declined making up the loss he sustained by the depreciation of paper money.

Aug. 5, 1789, Rev. Gilbert Tennenit Williams was ordained on a salary of £100 lawful money. The church at the time of his ordination consisted of twenty-four members, — nine males, and fifteen females.

"April 19, 1813, the church voted to dismiss Rev. Mr. Williams, his people being few, and considered themselves unable to support him." — GAGE, *Hist. of Rowley*, p. 99.

Children of **Joseph and Ruth (Smith) Metcalfe** were five, namely : —

12. THOMAS METCALFE⁵, bapt. Sept. 16, 1705; died Sept., 1749; md. Oct. 31, 1728, Ruth Flint, dau. of David and Ruth (Flint) Flint; she bapt. May 28, 1704, died in 1766. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 33.)

13. JOSEPH METCALFE⁵, born in Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 24, 1708–9; died in 1789, as administration on his estate was granted his widow, Sarah, Nov. 2, 1789; he md. Sarah ~~Jeal~~ ^{Jeal}, who was baptized Jan. 27, 1722.

14. SAMUEL METCALFE⁵, born in Ipswich, Mass., Sept. 18, 1711; died before 1734; md. March 22, 1732–3, Rebekah Dickinson.

15. RUTH METCALFE⁵, born in Ipswich, Mass., Feb. 22, 1712; died of small-pox Sept. 9, 1751; md. Feb. 17, 1729, Aaron Kimball, son of Benjamin and Mary (Kimball) Kimball, of Ipswich, Mass., who was there born July 6, 1709, and died Nov. 19, 1738; yeoman. (See Appendix, Kimball Family, No. 30.)

Israel Davis, nephew of the aforesaid Ruth Kimball, administered on her estate.

Children were : —

(a) RUTH KIMBALL⁶, bapt. Dec. 6, 1730; md. Hezekiah Hodgkins, 3d, to whom she was published May 5, 1750.

(b) AARON KIMBALL⁶, bapt. Aug. 19, 1733; died April 24, 1738.

(c) BENJAMIN KIMBALL⁶, bapt. March 9, 1734; md. Abigail Davis, to whom he was published Feb. 4, 1754, being second cousins. (See No. 1 (c) of this family, under No. 11.)

(d) MARY KIMBALL⁶, bapt. May 8, 1737.

15 ^{1/2} *part Metcalfe* ^{1719, 1717, 1715, md. Dec. 19, 1732 Mary Chapman.}
Children of **Joseph and Sarah (Ayers) Metcalfe** were : —

16. SARAH METCALFE⁶ (Metcalfe on her tombstone); born in 1722; died "Nov. 17, 1728, in y^e 6th. year of her age." Buried in the burial-ground on High St. Ipswich, Mass.

17. SARAH METCALFE⁶, ^{Child of M. H. Metcalfe} born in Linebrook Parish, Ipswich, Mass., in 1737; died in Rowley, Mass., Sept. 5, 1764, aged twenty-seven; buried in Byfield, Mass.; md. in Ipswich, Mass., Jan. 3, 1758, to Benjamin

Stickney, son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Burpee) Stickney; he born in Rowley, Mass., March 5, 1739; died of palsy, Jan. 1, 1811; buried in Byfield, Mass.

He md. second, May 15, 1765, his cousin, Elizabeth Stickney, dau. of Samuel and Faith (Platts) Stickney; she born June 8, 1737; died of a fever Aug. 28, 1819; buried in Byfield, Mass. (Stickney Family, by M. A. Stickney, p. 143, where it also is stated that Sarah Metcalf "was a small woman, with black hair and eyes, and broad forehead.")

Benjamin Stickney was a private, May 31, 1757, in Capt. John Pearson's troop of horse, of Rowley. April 19, 1775, he marched as lieutenant in Capt. Towle's company, Col. Gerrish's regiment, on the alarm of the battle of Lexington, to assist his countrymen. On their way to Cambridge they met the bodies of those persons of Danvers who were killed at Lexington and Concord. They formed in single rank on each side of the road, and the mournful procession passed between them (Gates's History of Rowley).

"Dec. 16, 1776, Benjamin Stickney was out as Sergeant, and served under Capt. John Dodge of Wenham, Mass., three months in the State of New York. They were dismissed April 1, 1777, in New York, three hundred and forty miles from Rowley, Mass., with nearly worthless paper money in their pockets to pay expenses."

"May 13, 1777, he enlisted in eight months' service, and Nov. 24th he was a Lieutenant at Cambridge to guard Burgoyne's captured army."

By the Town Records of Rowley, "it was voted, Jan. 4, 1781, that the town of Rowley should be divided into twenty-six classes, to hire men for the Continental Army. To Lieut. Benj. Stickney was directed one of the lists, and of the eleven persons of whom it was composed, and of a tax of £3812:2s. Continental money, his own quota was £329:10s."

(For fuller account, see Stickney Family, pp. 143-45.)

Children of Benjamin and Sarah (Metcalf) Stickney were:

- (a) SARAH STICKNEY ⁶, born Aug. 17, 1758; died Nov. 21, 1846; md. March 18, 1783, Nathaniel Kimball, son of Deacon Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Low) Kimball; he born March 24, 1757; died in Winthrop, Me., Oct. 12, 1843, having removed there from Ipswich after the birth of his ten children.
- (b) BENJAMIN STICKNEY ⁶, born Jan. 22, 1760; died in Hallowell, Me., Oct. 5, 1850; md. in 1786 Abigail Jackson, dau. of David, of Hallowell, Me.; she born Dec. 13, 1769; died May 8, 1856.

This Benjamin Stickney also was at the battle of Lexington, having enlisted as a private from Danvers, Mass., in Capt. Jeremiah Page's company, April 19, 1775, being only fifteen years of age.

From Dec. 16, 1776, to March 15, 1777, he was a drummer in Capt. Dodge's company, Col. Pickering's regiment. When the occasion required he could play several musical instruments, for from Aug. 16 to Nov. 30, 1777, he was a fifer in Capt. Benjamin Adams's company, Col. Johnson's regiment.

Sept., 1779, he is again fife-major in Col. Nathan Tyler's regiment.

In 1781 he is again a private from Rowley, in Capt. John Pearson's company, Col. Putnam's regiment (Massachusetts Archives).

In 1840 he was still receiving a pension for his Revolutionary services, as found on the pension list of Rowley, Mass.

His children were eight. (See Stickney Family, p 238.)

(c) MOLLY STICKNEY ⁶, born Oct. 24, 1762; baptized Nov. 1, 1762; died May 8, 1765.

(d) THOMAS STICKNEY ⁶, born Feb. 2, 1763; died at Hallowell, Me., of spotted fever, March 9, 1814; md. in Linebrook, Mass., Feb. 9, 1792, when of Hallowell, Dorothy Lancaster, dau. of Paul and Mary (Gage) Lancaster, who died Sept. 9, 1840. When fifteen years of age Thomas enlisted as a private and fifer in Capt. Oliver Titcomb's company, Col. Gerrish's regiment.

July 11, 1780, he was among the two months' men in Capt. George Webb's company, being "seventeen years of age, five feet three inches in stature, ruddy complexion."

Aug. 4 to Dec. of 1781 he was drummer in Capt. John Robinson's company (Massachusetts Archives).

"He settled in Hallowell, Me., where all his children were born. — Paul, Amos, and William. On the U. S. Direct Tax Books of 1798 he was taxed for a house and one hundred acres of land in Hallowell, Me."

Children of **Benjamin and Elizabeth (Stickney) Stickney** were: —

(e) ELIZABETH STICKNEY ⁶, born Feb. 22, 1766; md. first, Dec. 10, 1792, Joshua Sanders, son of Humphrey and Elizabeth Sanders. He settled in Waterford, Me., and there died, July 20, 1797. They had issue two children.

She md. second, Joseph Farrington, who died March, 1863; they had issue one son.

(f) JOSEPH STICKNEY ⁶, born April, 1767; died March 27, 1772.

(g) MEDITABLE STICKNEY ⁶, born July 27, 1768; died Oct. 5, 1818; md. Feb. 7, 1793, Joseph Howe, son of Deacon Abraham and Lucy (Appleton) Howe; he born Jan. 18, 1771; died Nov. 26, 1850. Children were ten.

(h) SUSANNA STICKNEY ⁶, born Feb. 1, 1770; died March 22, 1796; md. Ebenezer Jewett; settled in Waterford, Me.; he died Aug. 13, 1840. They had one son.

(i) SAMUEL STICKNEY ⁶, born June 27, 1771; died unmarried, Oct. 21, 1824. His grandparents, Samuel and Faith Stickney, resided in Newbury, Mass.

(j) ISAAC STICKNEY ⁶, born Dec. 22, 1772; died May 1, 1775.

(k) EUNICE STICKNEY ⁶, born Oct. 31, 1774; died June 3, 1861; md. Oct. 6, 1801, Jeremiah Chaplin, son of Moses, Jr., and Elizabeth (Hopkinson) Chaplin; he born May 2, 1780; died May 17, 1841. Children six.

(l) MOSES STICKNEY ⁶ (Lieut.), born July 12, 1776; died of consumption Sept. 1, 1834; md. Oct. 7, 1799, Sarah Pike, dau. of Joseph and (Lois) Pike; she born April 5, 1772; died Dec. 26, 1851. Children six.

(m) HANNAH STICKNEY ⁶, born July 20, 1778; died Aug. 27, 1778.

(n) JONATHAN STICKNEY ⁶, born July 17, 1779; died Nov. 22, 1781. (See Stickney Family for all descendants of this family.)

William Stickney (the emigrant ancestor of the said Benjamin Stickney), with his three children, Samuel, Amos, and Mary, were among the original settlers of Rowley, Mass., which place at first was called "Mr. Rogers's

plantation," afterwards Rowley, from Rowley, in Yorkshire, Eng., where Mr. Ezekiel Rogers and some of his people had lived. Mr. Rogers was a minister, born in England in 1590; he, with twenty families, arrived in New England in 1638. They found all the places of settlement were occupied, so they remained one year in Salem, looking about them. They decided to settle at Rowley, a place then of sixty families. These families had had great difficulty to obtain water; so the streets were laid out so that each house-lot should run down to the brook, which runs through the town to this day. This plantation of Rev. Ezekiel Rogers was incorporated Sept. 4, 1639. The streets were laid out and named, and the land divided the "10 of the 11th. Anno Dni 1643" (Gage's Rowley).

FIFTH GENERATION.

THOMAS METCALF⁵ (No. 12), son of Joseph⁴ (JOSEPH³, THOMAS², JOSEPH¹), and Ruth (Smith) Metcalf, born in Ipswich, Mass., about 1705; died Sept., 1749; md. Oct. 31, 1728, Ruth Flint, dau. of David and Ruth (Flint) Flint; she bapt. May 28, 1704, and died in 1766. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 33.)

Thomas Metcalf in his youth went to Gloucester, where for some time he was engaged as a fisherman; thence he removed to Salem, Mass., where he was married. An inventory of his estate was taken Oct. 7, 1749, by Timothy Pickering and Nathaniel Reeves, £600 : 12 : 6. Part of a dwelling-house, a barn, and about 16 pole land, £550 Old Tenor.

"£150 : 3 : 1½ L. Tenor.

Estate Dr. to Sarah Holman, Edward Norris, Jeremiah Neal and Michael Sibley. Bringing up young children, ten years in all, Charges of sickness of children, and funeral of one. Entire indebtedness £112 : 12. L Tenor."

June 15, 1739: "William Flint, Salem, brickmaker, and David Flint, Marblehead, fisherman, executors of the last will of their father David Flint, Salem, proved May 9, 1739; for £120, convey to Thomas Metcalf, the Easterly end of y^e late Mansion House of their said father, David Flint, deceased, situated in Salem, aforesaid. Butting Easterly on y^e lane, Southerly on land of Timothy Lindall Esq., to a stake w^{ch} stands Twenty nine feet from y^e Lane and from said stake to y^e middle of the chimney, and then through the chimney to y^e street, then Butting on y^e street Northerly about Thirty-six feet with y^e priviledges and appurtenances to the premises belonging.

JOSEPH FLINT } Wit."
JAMES ODELL }

Oct. 9, 1749: "Ruth Metcalf, widow, Salem, for £95: Old Tenor, deeds to Abel Gardner, blacksmith, my division or share of the brick kilnfield, so called, bounded North

on land of said Gardner; West on land of Thomas Blaney, 2 pole, 10 ft. South on land of heirs of John Flint, deceased, 15½ pole; and East on a way measuring 3½ pole."

July 8, 1751. "Abel Gardner, blacksmith and wife Priscilla, for £9:6:8, sold to Jona. Gardner, his brother, my homestead, consisting of a dwelling house, barn, and 1½ acres land, under an adjoining, bounded East on highway leading to Great Pasture; South, partly on Blaney's land, and partly on Flint's land; West on horse pasture, and North on land of Timothy Lindall."

March 13, 1749, Ruth, adm'x of her husband, Thomas Metcalf, Cordwainer, for £80, conveys to James Odell, Salem, blacksmith, 1½ pole land, bounded South on Timothy Lindall; West on said Odell; North on said Thomas Metcalf, deceased, with a barn thereon.

Ruth Metcalf, widow, made her will Aug. 6, 1764; proved April 7, 1766, in which she bequeaths her daughter, Ruth Symonds, £8; daughter Abigail Tozier (afterwards Cutler) £6:13:4; daughter Desire Metcalf £6:13:4, and "the privilege of living in my dwelling-house as long as she remains unmarried."

To grandson Charles Davis £1:13:4.

To granddaughter Sarah Davis £1:13:4.

To son Joseph (great grandfather of the Compiler), the residue of her estate, and appoints him executor.

Joseph Metcalf (her son) gave bonds with Joseph Kimball and James Davis, of Ipswich, Sept. 25, 1749 (Essex Prob., Vol. XLIII. p. 23).

Children of **Thomas and Ruth (Flint) Metcalf** were:—

18. **HANNAH METCALF** ⁶, born in Ipswich, Mass., about 1730-1; died there July 20, 1753; md. in Topsfield, Mass., March 20, 1750, Capt. Israel Davis, son of Nathan and Mary (Davis) Davis, and grandson of Elder James and Abigail (Metcalf) Davis; hence she married her second cousin. He md. second, Sarah —, who acknowledged y^e covenant Dec. 8, 1754; admitted to full communion June 26, 1757; dismissed to Second Church, Danvers, Mass., June 13, 1762.

Capt. Israel Davis was baptized in Rowley, Mass., April 7, 1720; living in 1763. After his marriage he lived in Topsfield until 1758, where he was taxed from 1754 to 1757. He removed to Danvers, which town he left soon after 1763, and Sept. 20, 1767, was of Boothbay, Me., when he was chosen deacon of Rev. John Murray's church (Presbyterian), and had charge of the western district. When under eighteen years of age he was a soldier before Louisburg, and one of the brave men who volunteered under Capt. Daniel Bacon to attack the Island Battery, May 26, 1745, in which attempt many were killed or made prisoners; but June 17, 1745, after a siege of forty-nine days, Louisburg and the Island of Cape Breton capitulated; but it was returned to France Oct. 7, 1748, on the treaty of peace.

Capt. Israel Davis, from Aug. 7 to Oct., 1755, did duty at Lake George as lieutenant in a company raised in Rowley, Mass., com-

manded by Capt. Thomas Gage. In November Capt. Gage was promoted to the rank of major, and Lieut. Davis to that of captain.

April 15, 1756, he was captain of a company in the Third Regiment, under Col. Thomas Berry, in the expedition to Crown Point.

Aug. 9 to Oct. 12, same year, he served under Berry at Fort William Henry.

May, 1757, he was captain in Col. Joseph Frye's regiment, and marched to the relief of and was in Fort William Henry when it capitulated to Montcalm, Aug. 9, 1759. He escaped to Fort Edward, and continued in service till Dec. 23d following.

In 1758 he served as captain in Col. Jonathan Bagley's regiment at Ticonderoga. He was also under him at Louisburg from Nov. 12, 1759, to Aug. 14, 1761, and assisted in demolishing its fortifications.

In the Revolutionary War he served as captain in Edward Wigglesworth's battalion from March 31, 1777, to June 30, 1777 (Fowler Family, p. 118).

He had seven children, namely:—

- (a) CHARLES DAVIS⁷, born in Topsfield, Mass., where he was bapt. Dec. 30, 1749; died in 1829; a farmer. He md. June 23, 1773, Elizabeth Fowler, dau. of John and Mercy (Howe) Fowler. She bapt. Oct. 14, 1750, and died in 1805.

"Jan. 24, 1783, Charles Davis bought of Simeon Safford of Ipswich 59 acres of land and buildings on the county road from Ipswich to Andover, bounding on Joseph Metcalf and Dr. John Calef, also thatch bank at Rogers Island in Ipswich, and northeast pew in Linebrook parish meeting house. One of the witnesses was his brother-in-law John Fowler. He sells this estate to Benj. Scott of Beverly."

"March 23, 1798:— Know all men by these presents that I Charles Davis of Topsfield, Mass. Yeo. in my right as an heir to the estate of Huldah Cutler, wife of James Cutler, late of Salem, dec'd, and by virtue of a power legally vested in me by my sister Sarah Decker of Edgcombe, county of Lyncoln, Mass." (now Maine), "widow, being the sole heir to the one third part of said estate accruing by descent from our mother Sarah Davis, deceased" (incorrect; probably an error of the town clerk in copying, for his mother was Hannah Davis, who at this date was deceased, but his step-mother was Sarah Davis, who was without doubt living at this date), "who was sister to the aforesaid Huldah Cutler" (another error, for Hannah Davis was aunt, not sister to Huldah Cutler, who was Huldah Symonds, the child of her sister Ruth), "in consideration of one hundred dollars in hand paid by Samuel Very of Salem, merchant, the receipt whereof in my right and as lawful attorney for the said Sarah Decker, I do hereby acknowledge and being therewith fully satisfied, do by these presents remise, release and forever quite claim unto the said Samuel Very, one full third part of all real estate situate in Salem, aforesaid, which lying in common and undivided with the other two thirds, contains the following lot or parcel of land, with all the buildings thereon, and fronting on a street or lane leading from a place called Buffums Corner to the Great Pasture."—*Probate Deeds, Essex Co.*

"Dec. 30, 1798: Charles Davis for \$1200 buys 105 acres of land in Ipswich of Jeremiah Staniford and Mary his wife, bounded on Capt. Benj. Scott's on one side, and Samuel Sawyer's on the other, and

William Conant and Joseph Metcalf's on the remaining sides. He also buys 3 acres of meadow bounding on Dr. John Calef's and Joseph Metcalf's."

Dec. 12, 1804. He sells part of the above farm to Allen Perley, of Ipswich (his brother-in-law), for \$1,458.70.

Dec. 20, 1804. He sells to Jabez Farley 3 acres of meadow land in Ipswich for \$60.

April 1, 1805. He sells Dr. Thomas Manning 7 acres 34 poles of meadow and swamp land, and in 1805 he removed to Belfast, Me., where he purchased a tract of land which long was known as Davistown, but in 1807 was incorporated as Montville, Me.

"June 28, 1817: Charles Davis of Montville, County of Lincoln, Mass., yeoman, for \$60, sells William Conant, Junior, of Ipswich, gentleman, 3 acres of thatch ground in Ipswich, 'at a place called Holy Island,' from the bounds established after the lawsuit with Allen Foster, which suit commenced Oct. 2, 1803, and terminated in 1809, against Allen Foster, plaintiff, to recover damages, for suit instituted by said Foster, for cutting grass on a piece of land, which he alleged to have owned, but which was proved belonged to the heirs of John Fowler, and to Charles Davis, and Charles Davis Jr. late of Ipswich, but now of Davistown, Me., and W^m Conant."

The children of **Charles Davis, Jr.** were seven, viz.:

- I. **ELIZABETH DAVIS** ⁸, born May 20, 1774; died of consumption in Belfast, Me., Oct. 25, 1808; buried there; md. in Topsfield, Mass., March 2, 1797, Dudley Stickney, son of Jedediah and Sarah (Stickney) Stickney (first cousins); he born in Rowley, Mass., May 1, 1774; died in Hartford, co. of Oxford, Me. (where he removed in 1826), May 20, 1834. He md. second, June, 1811, Anna, widow of John Taggart and dau. of William and Mary (Mitchell) Patterson, of Belfast, Me. She md. second, in Paris, Me., Nov., 1861, Henry Davis.

Dudley Stickney removed in 1814 to Belmont, co. Hancock, Me., where he, for fourteen years, was the justice of peace and acting magistrate. In 1821 he owned 110 acres of land in Hartford, Co. of Oxford, Me.

His children were two, namely:—

- (1) **DUDLEY STICKNEY** ⁹, JR., born Nov. 4, 1798; died of consumption, unmarried, Oct. 30, 1829. (See Stickney Family, p. 262.)
- (2) **MATTHEW ADAMS STICKNEY** ⁹, born Sept. 23, 1805; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; md. first, April 17, 1833, Mary Elizabeth Smith, dau. of Caleb and Betsey (Winchester) Smith; she born Dec. 17, 1810; died May 9, 1834.

He md. second, in Salem, Mass., Dec. 25, 1838, Lucy Waters, dau. of John ⁶ and Eleanor (Shales) Waters; she born Nov. 10, 1816; died Feb. 13, 1847. She was the descendant of William Waters ¹, the emigrant, and wife Elizabeth, through William ² and Abigail; William ³ and Rebecca (Worthylake); Seward ⁴ and Sarah (Porter); Ebenezer ⁵ and Mary (Calef) Waters, — all of Boston.

Matthew Adams Stickney engaged in mercantile

pursuits until 1869, when he prepared and published the Stickney Genealogy, under the title of "The Stickney Family." In 1883 he published a second work in genealogy, called the "Fowler Family," collecting at the same time the records of the Waters family, and also the Calef family, which his age prevents his publishing. He had also been many years collecting information and data on and of the Metcalf family, but had not sufficient to form a volume; hence, on learning that the Compiler could use his material, he, unasked, kindly offered the same, which she accepted and used, and takes this opportunity to acknowledge and render thanks.

- II. HANNAH DAVIS⁸, born Dec. 24, 1776; died the same day.
- III. CHARLES DAVIS⁸, born March 15, 1779; died in Ipswich, Mass., Jan. 22, 1863; intention of marriage March 20, 1802, to Sarah Kenny, dau. of Israel and Hannah (Balch) Kenny, of Topsfield, Mass., who died Oct. 7, 1858. He md. second, intention of given July 13, 1857, widow Mary McNear, of Newcastle, Me. No issue. He md. third, Edna Hunt. No issue. Three children by first marriage.
- IV. SARAH DAVIS⁸, born Jan. 15, 1783; died May 24, 1857; md. July 24, 1802, Caleb Chaplin, son of Moses, Jr., and Elizabeth (Hopkinson) Chaplin, he born in Rowley, Mass., March 30, 1783; died April 8, 1856. Children fourteen, all born in Byfield, nine of whom died young.
- V. MERCY DAVIS⁸, born Oct. 17, 1787; died Jan. 30, 1877; md. June 11, 1810, Lemuel Worcester Laiten, son of John and Eunice (Worcester) Laiten, he born in Bath, Me., Aug. 11, 1773; died in Montville, Me., July 11, 1849. Children three.
- VI. ISRAEL DAVIS⁸, born June 15, 1791; died in Liberty, Me., April 11, 1866; md. in 1817 Deborah Stevens, who died Nov., 1855. Children seven.
- VII. JOHN DAVIS⁸, born June 15, 1795; died in Liberty, Me., April 11, 1866; md. Nov. 20, 1795, Joanna Bailey. Children six. (See Fowler Family for further information, by M. A. Stickney.)

(b) SARAH DAVIS⁷, born in Topsfield, Mass.; bapt. there Dec. 8, 1750; md. in 1773 (Nicholas ?) Decker, of Edgecomb, co. Lincoln, Me. She had children, among them Israel.

March 23, 1798, she is a widow; she is said to have married, second, Jacob Nelson. No issue by this marriage.

(c) JOHN DRESSER DAVIS⁷, born probably June, 1751; served in the Continental Army from Rowley, Mass., March, 1777, and received a bounty; afterwards in service, and killed in action.

(d) MARY DAVIS⁷, born probably March, 1752; died July 19, 1753.

Children of second marriage were three, namely: —

- | | | |
|---|------------------|-----------------------|
| (e) HANNAH DAVIS ⁷ , | } twins, born | { died Jan. 31, 1755. |
| and | | |
| (f) ISRAEL DAVIS ⁷ , | } Nov. 18, 1755. | { |
| (g) BETSRY DAVIS ⁷ , bapt. in Danvers, Mass., July 31, 1763. | | |

19. RUTH METCALF⁶, born about 1732; bapt. at adult age, June 20, 1756; md. Nov. 12, 1758, John Symonds, a farmer, who, June 20, 1777, was appointed captain of a company of militia stationed at Salem, Mass., of which company Benjamin Ropes, Jr., was lieutenant.

While in service he contracted small-pox, of which disease he died July, 1778.

July 6, 1778, administration on his estate was granted to John Symonds, who gave bonds with Deacon Edward Putnam and Joseph Symonds.

Inventory being £1492:12:4.

Among the items named was a velvet jacket, leather breeches, silver shoe-buckles, brass knee-buckles, and "a bed in the barn on which he died with the small-pox."

Aug. 4, 1778, guardianship of Nathaniel Symonds, aged 13 years, granted John Symonds, of Holden, Worcester co., Mass.

Aug. 4, 1778, guardianship of Ruth Symonds, æt. 18 years, Abigail, æt. 14 years, Hannah, æt. 12 years, and Huldah, æt. 11 years, granted Deacon Edward Putnam.

Children were seven, all baptized in the First Church of Danvers, Mass., namely: —

- (1) RUTH SYMONDS⁷, bapt. May 11, 1760; md. Lemuel Shed.
- (2) THOMAS SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Oct. 4, 1761; died before 1778.
- (3) FRANCIS SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Sept. 5, 1762; living in 1797.
- (4) ABIGAIL SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Oct. 9, 1763; unmarried in 1797.
- (5) NATHANIEL SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Nov. 4, 1764; living in 1797.
- (6) HANNAH SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Feb. 2, 1766; unmarried in 1797.
- (7) HULDAH SYMONDS⁷, bapt. Aug. 30, 1767; published April 28, 1787, to James Cutler, a widower, aged 73, as his third wife, whose second wife was Abigail Metcalf, No. 20; his first wife unknown.

Children were: —

- (a) BETSEY CUTLER⁸, born 1787.
- (b) HENRY CUTLER⁸, born 1791-2.

She removed with her two children, after her husband's death, to Bridgton, Me., where in 1797 she was living with her unmarried sister, Hannah Symonds, as Mrs. Cutler. Nothing farther known of her.

20. ABIGAIL METCALF⁶, born about 1734; died before April 28, 1787. She married twice, — first, May 20, 1756, Capt. William Tozzer (variously spelled Tozer, Towzer, Touzell). She baptized as his wife June 20, 1756, in the First Church of Danvers, Mass. (name then spelled Towzer), at the same time with her sister Ruth. No issue.

William Tozzer, being a sea-captain, made his will, according to the custom of that date, just before starting on a long voyage, March 25, 1767; proved Nov. 6, 1769, in which he bequeaths all his estate, both real and personal, to his wife Abigail, and appoints her executrix.

Dec. 15, 1763, Jonathan Ropes and wife Susannah, with Ebenezer Tozzer, mariner, and wife Abigail, William Patterson, mariner, and wife Rebecca, Andrew Millett, and wife Elizabeth, Sarah Brown, widow, and Mary Tozzer, spinster, sell $\frac{1}{4}$ of $\frac{1}{4}$ of a parcel of land for-

merly of their honored father, William Tozzer, bounded West, by Manning's Lane (now Orange Street); North by land of said William Tozzer; East and South by land of Timothy Mansfield.

The abovesaid Jonathan Ropes⁴ was son of Richard³ (William², George¹), and Hannah (Collins) Ropes, a coaster, and probably lived on Curtis Street, Salem, Mass. He was born in Salem, Mass. Nov. 8, 1715; md. first, Feb. 28, 1741-2, Mary Skinner, daughter of John and Blanche (Shillaber) Skinner; she born about 1721, and died Nov. 10, 1745. He md. second, Feb. 25, 1747-8, Mary Smith, daughter of Robert and Mary (Ellingwood) Smith; she born about 1726, and died May 28, 1751. He md. third, July 29, 1756, Susanna Tozzer, daughter of William Tozzer and widow of — Burnett, probably of Boston, and sister of William Tozzer, who married the abovesaid Abigail Metcalf. He, Jonathan Ropes⁴, by first marriage had children, namely:—

- (1) ELIZABETH ROPES⁵, born Sunday, July 3, 1743; died Monday, Aug. 6, 1770; md. Dec. 11, 1763, Robert Peele, son of Robert and Mary (Bartlett) Peele; he born June 4, 1737; died June 12, 1792; grandson of Robert Peele, the emigrant, who was born in London, Eng., Jan. 26, 1676; died in Salem, Mass., in 1728.

Children were:—

- (a) JOSIAH BARTLETT PEELE⁶, born Feb. 5, 1765; died unmarried, June 20, 1784.
- (b) ROBERT PEELE⁶, born April 19, 1767; died March 21, 1842.
- (c) WILLIAM PEELE⁶, born April 2, 1769; died March 21, 1770.

Robert Peele md. second, June 2, 1771, Eunice Stearnes, born in 1733; died June 20, 1780. No issue. He md. third, Feb. 28, 1781, Mary Bradshaw, known as Polly, widow of Stephen Bradshaw, and dau. of — Mansfield, of Lynnfield, Mass. Stephen and Polly Bradshaw were members of the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., where July 1, 1770, they had two children baptized, Stephen and Mary, subsequently wife of William Ives, No. 21, Ives Family (see Appendix). Mary was born Sept. 14, 1760; died Dec. 3, 1820; md. Sept. 12, 1790, William Ives.

Child of Robert Peele by third marriage was:

- (d) WILLIAM PEELE⁶, bapt. South Church, Salem, Mass., March 3, 1782.

- (2) WILLIAM ROPES⁵, born June 27, 1745; died Dec. 8 following.
- (3) JONATHAN ROPES⁵, born Dec. 3, 1749; died May 19, 1836.
- (4) MARY ROPES⁵, born Oct. 12, 1750; died March 8, 1737.

Jonathan Ropes by third marriage had three children, namely:—

- (5) SUSANNA ROPES⁶, born June 9, 1757.
- (6) SARAH ROPES⁶, born Feb. 21, 1759; died Dec. 8, 1763.
- (7) WILLIAM ROPES⁶, born May 16, 1761; died unmarried.

This Abigail Metcalf⁶ married, second, James Cutler, to whom she was published April 6, 1770; he born in 1714; died Feb., 1795. He was a widower, with four children, namely:—

- (1) ELSKY CUTLER, born —; md. Geo. West.
- (2) MARY CUTLER, born —; md. Jonathan Johnson.

(3) ABIGAIL CUTLER, born —; md. — Lauter; she a widow in 1795.

(4) JAMES CUTLER, born —; died June 27, 1797, intestate; called a mariner of Salem, Mass.; md. in Salem, widow Mary Fears, who administered on his estate June 27, 1798. On the record she is called Mary Near, instead of Fears, but she married Humphrey Fears Dec. 4, 1783.

But the name of the mother of these children, first wife of James Cutler, Sen., was not ascertained.

No issue by second marriage.

He, James Cutler, Sen., married, third, Huldah Symonds, his second wife's niece (see seventh child of No. 19), to whom he was published April 28, 1787, "she a miss of eighteen, and he an old man of seventy-three," as stated in the "Salem Gazette" of that date.

She was baptized in the First Church of Danvers, Mass., Aug. 30, 1767; her death not ascertained.

Two children by this marriage, namely: —

(5) BETSKY CUTLER, born in 1789.

(6) HENRY CUTLER, born in 1791-2.

After the death of James Cutler, his wife, Huldah, and her two children removed to Bridgton, Cumberland co., Me., where all trace of them was lost after the year 1797.

Administration on the estate of James Cutler was granted Abraham Foster, who exhibited an account, Nov. 11, 1795.

Inventory being \$967.30. Estate Dr. \$570.28.

"Nov. 11, 1795: Rec'd of Mr. Abraham Foster, administrator of the estate of my father, James Cutler, the sum of \$7.07, 5 mills, in full, for $\frac{1}{6}$ part of the Division of s^d estate.

Rec'd this for my wife Mary.

JONATHAN JOHNSON.

JOS. CLOUGH, wit."

"Nov. 11, 1795: Rec'd of Mr. Abraham Foster, administrator of the estate of my father, James Cutler, the sum of \$7.07, 5 mills, in full, for one sixth part of the Division of s^d estate Rec'd this for my wife Elsey.

GEORGE WEST.

JOSEPH CLOUGH, wit."

"Nov. 11, 1795: Rec'd of Abr^m Foster, adm^r of my father, James Cutler, \$7.07, 5 mills, in full, for one sixth part of s^d estate.

ABIGAIL LAUTER.

JOSEPH CLOUGH, wit."

"Nov. 11, 1795, Rec'd of Mr. Abraham Foster, administrator of the estate of my husband, James Cutler, late of Salem, virtualer, dec'd, the sum of \$21.33, and also the further sum of \$14.15, as guardian for my two children, Betsey and Henry Cutler, for third shares of said balance.

her
HULDAH ^K CUTLER.
mark

JOSEPH CLOUGH, wit."

Probate Record, Salem, Mass.

"Nov. 14, 1785, Mary Tozzer, spinster, Elizabeth Millett, widow; Rebecca Patterson, widow, and Ebenezer Tozzer, mariner, for £24, sell to Thomas Chipman, mariner, part of a house, owned otherwise by Elizabeth Millett, bought by her of James Cutler and wife in 1783, with a piece of land bounded East on land of Elias Haskett Derby, North on land of s^d Millett, West by a lane, and South on land of Geo. Crowninshield."

"Nov. 19, 1761; James Cutler, yeoman, from Rich'd Palmer, and wife Mary, 1 acre marsh, bounded East on Dixey Morgan; South on Browne; West on Benj. Pickman; North on Samuel Aborn."

"Dec. 30, 1761; James Cutler, yeoman, from David Blaney, and wife Martha, 1½ acres salt marsh, on South Fields, which said Blaney bought of Timothy Pickering, bounded on heirs of Samuel Brown; E. on Joseph Britton; S. on Thomas Gardner; W. on Samuel Fisk."

"Aug. 20, 1767; James Cutler and wife Abigail, to John Brown of Boston, 1½ acres of land and dwelling house in the body of the town of Lynn."

"March 18, 1773; James Cutler, Salem, brickmaker bought of Jona. Gardner, merchant, and wife Mary, for £133: 6: 8 his house and land in Salem, near the Great Pasture, containing about an acre and three quarters of land, bounded East on the highway leading to the great pasture; South, partly on Blaney's land and partly on Flint's land; West on the horse pasture, and North on land of Timothy Lindall Esq. dec'd, or however the same is butted, or bounded with the barn thereon. . . ."

The foregoing estate was on the same day deeded, with wife Abigail, for £133: 6: 8, to William Cutler, of Cambridge, Mass., yeoman.

"My house and land in Salem, near the Great Pasture, Cont'g about 1½ acres," bounded as above. (Why this property was deeded to William Cutler, no doubt a brother to James, does not appear on record.)

"July 21, 1783; James Cutler, victualler, and wife Abigail, for £110, to Elizabeth Millett, widow" (maiden name Tozzer, married May 9, 1754 to Andrew Millett), "the following message and land, with all the buildings thereon, the whole bounded as follows, viz.; West on a lane, commonly called Manning's lane" (now Orange Street), "North on land of W^m Patterson; East and South, on land of Timothy Mansfield . . . it being the same estate which William Tozzer, late of Salem, was seized of at the time of his death."

Also the same day he sold to George West (his son-in-law), mariner, the following lot of land, with all the buildings thereon, ". . . fronting on a street or lane leading from a place called Buffum's Corner to the Great Pasture, bounded as follows; viz., beginning at the middle of the front door, of a house owned by said James Cutler and standing on said street or lane running South 20 degrees, West 2 poles, 22 links by said street, to a tree, thence due West 3 poles, 4 links—thence North West by a fence 2 pole—thence North East 4 pole, 10 links, through the house to the middle of the front door leading to bounds first mentioned"

"This, the next day, was conveyed by said West to Abigail, wife of said James Cutler."

"March 18, 1785:—Thomas Brooks, Medford, adm^r of estate of William Cutler, dec'd, late of Cambridge, victualler; levies an execution, upon the estate of James Cutler, Salem, for £144: 17: 6.

Benj. Daland, David Ropes, and Isaac Needham committee to appraise his estate to satisfy the execution."

"March 25, 1785:—We the subscribers . . . have viewed a building used as a bake house and 33 pole of land . . . shown us by said Brooks, as the estate of said Cutler, and said land to bound East by the road or way leading into the Great Pasture;—South on land of John Buffington 11 poles;—West, and East on said Cutler with the South line which we appraise at £151: 7: 4.

Benj. Daland, David Ropes and Isaac Needham committee."

"June 17, 1789:—James Cutler, butcher, for £21, to Benj. Phillips, Lynn, tanner mortgages the North half part of his dwelling house with 10 pole land, bounded North or heirs of Timothy Lindall—East on road leading to Great Pasture:—South and West on land of myself, uncumbered by an execution."

"Oct. 18, 1793:—James Cutler, Victualler, and wife Huldah, for £10: 8. to James Wyman of Medford, mortgages 1½ acres, with a barn and North half of a dwelling on same land, bounded E. on road leading to Great Pasture; S. on land of Thomas Mason, and Jno. Buffington; W. on Thorndike Proctor, dec'd, and N. on land formerly owned by Timothy Lindall.

Provided that said James pay to said James Wyman the sum of £10:8. for the use of William and Rebecca Cutler infants under 21 yrs. of age and lawful interest."

This mortgage was cancelled Sept. 28, 1798, by Jeduthau Wellington, "now guardian of Rebecca Cutler."

"Dec. 30, 1797: Know all men by these presents that we, Thomas and Nathaniel Symonds, living on a Gore, so called" (being a tract of land situate between the towns of Brownfield and Bridgton in the counties of York and Cumberland, Mass., now Maine), "Francis Symonds of Raymondtown, Cumberland co., Yeoman; Lemuel Shed, yeoman, and wife Ruth; Abigail Symonds, spinster, ail of Waterford, co. of York; Hannah Symonds, spinster, and Huldah Cutler, widow, both of Bridgton, Cumberland co., —, in consideration of \$100, paid by Samuel Very, of Salem, Mass., Merchant, do hereby remise, release, and forever acquit unto said Samuel Very, his heirs and assigns, one third part of a certain lot or parcel of land with the buildings thereon, being the same third part, which has descended to us as heirs to the estate of our Aunt Abigail Cutler, dec'd, and now lying in common and undivided with the other two thirds thereof, which lot, or parcel of land, with the buildings thereon is situate in Salem in and fronting on a street or lane leading from a place called Buffum's Corner to the Great Pasture so called, and bounded as follows, viz.; — beginning at the middle of the front door of a house formerly owned by James Cutler, standing on said street or lane, thence running South twenty degrees, West two polls, and twenty-two links by said street or lane to a Tree: — thence due West by the compass three polls and 4 links; — thence Westerly by a fence two polls; — thence Northeasterly four polls and ten links through the house to the middle of the front door, being the bounds first mentioned, with the privilege of passing to and from the well which stands upon land formerly owned by said James Cutler and near to said house and of taking there from at all times so much as he or they shall think fit. To have and to hold, &c. . . ."

This above-mentioned house, built, as has been above given, more than one hundred years ago, still stands, in good order, on the above-mentioned corner, now called May and Essex Streets, of Salem, Mass., and within sight of the Great Pasture. The son of the present owner courteously showed the Compiler some of the rooms on the first and second floors of this house, stating that the second story had never been altered, which was easily seen, as the ceilings were very low-studded; oak beams projected into the rooms in all the four corners, also crossed the ceiling three times. Very small brass knobs are still to be seen on all the chamber doors. The chimney is as wide as four modern ones, and in the upper part of the house remains unaltered; but on the first floor it has been filled in about two thirds its width. The parlor has been much altered, all projecting beams, brass knobs, and everything else ancient having been taken away. The well mentioned in the aforesaid deed is no longer in use, nor even to be seen, as it is covered with a flat stone, which attracts no attention; but at some date a pump was placed in the well, which bore a plate with the date 1727, and which, when the pump was removed, was tacked up on the side of the house, but which in course of time became detached and lost.

The original owner of this house, and of the land under and about it, was William Flint, the emigrant ancestor of both Abigail Cutler, above mentioned, and her brother, Joseph Metcalf. It remained in the Flint family till 1737, when David Flint sold it to the Gardners; and Jonathan Gardner, March 18, 1773, sold it to James Cutler for £133:6:8, as above given in deed of that date.

Mrs. Cutler was known by all living members of the family only as Aunt Cutler, and when the Compiler sought to learn her full name, no one living could assist her by definitely stating whether she was sister of Joseph Metcalf, or of his wife, Catharine Neal. The above record, and a second, to be found under sixth generation Joseph Metcalf, conclusively proves that she was Abigail Metcalf, sister of Joseph Metcalf, a very important personage to the Driver family, for she brought up and educated from four years of age to about sixteen Ruth Metcalf, daughter of Joseph Metcalf, who subsequently became the wife of Stephen Driver, Jr., the Compiler's grandfather, whom the death of her mother, and her father going into camp at the first outbreak of hostilities at Concord, had left desolate. Aunt Cutler had no children ever of her own, and she adopted Ruth, and there is every reason to believe that when she took her she lived in the above-mentioned house, which her children were unable to recall, but did distinctly remember their mother's continually telling about Aunt Cutler's kindness and care. Tradition states that Aunt Cutler deeded the above-mentioned house to Ruth, but it was not found on record.

21. **DESIRE METCALF** ⁶, born about 1736; md. March 10, 1769, her first cousin, John Holman, son of John and Huldah (Flint) Holman. (See No. 34, Flint Family, fifth child.) He bapt. Feb. 4, 1738. She bapt., as his wife, Nov. 12, 1769, at the same time uniting with the First Church of Salem, Mass. Apparently no issue.
22. **JOSEPH METCALF** ⁶ (great-grandfather of the Compiler), born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1743; died in Salem, Mass., Feb. 11, 1806, æt. 63 (Salem Gazette); md. three times, — first, March 3, 1767, Catharine Neal, dau. of Robert and Catharine (Daland) Neal; second, Jan. 30, 1779, Jane Brisco (Salem Gazette); third, Feb. 29, 1797, Deliverance Pendrick (Town Records).

FIFTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL METCALF ⁵ (No. 14), son of Joseph ⁴ (JOSEPH ³, THOMAS ², JOSEPH ¹), and Ruth (Smith) Metcalf, born in Ipswich, Mass., Sept. 18, 1711; died before 1734; md. March 22, 1732-3, Rebecca Dickinson, of Rowley, Mass., dau. of George and Martha (Nelson) Dickinson; she born Nov. 5, 1710.

Child was: —

23. **JOSEPH METCALF** ⁶, bapt. March 24, 1733-4.

After the death of her husband, Rebecca md. second, Jeremiah Foster ⁴, to whom she was published June 21, 1735.

He was son of Abraham ⁵ (Jacob ², Reginald ¹), Foster and Abigail (—), of Ipswich, Mass., where he was born about 1700; removed after 1743 to Harvard, Mass.

Children by this marriage were :—

- (a) JEREMIAH FOSTER⁵, bapt. Aug. 8, 1736; died young.
- (b) ABIGAIL FOSTER⁵, bapt. Feb. 17, 1737.
- (c) JEREMY FOSTER⁵, bapt. Jan. 6, 1739.
- (d) SAMUEL FOSTER⁵, bapt. Jan. 8, 1741.

"Reginald Foster, the first of the name, is reputed to have come to this country from Exeter, Devonshire, Eng., and to have crossed the water in one of the ships embargoed by King Charles the First; but of this nothing certain is as yet known. He brought with him his wife, Judith, five sons and two daughters, who were : Margaret², born 16—, md. Francis Peabody ; Sarah², born 1620, md. William Story; Abraham², born 1622; Isaac², born 1630; William², born 1633; Jacob², born 1635; Reginald², born 1636. Judith, wife of Reginald Foster¹, died in Ipswich, Oct., 1664, and her husband married, second, Sept., 1665, Sarah, widow of John Martin, of Ipswich, Mass. She survived him, and Sept. 21, 1682, became the second wife of William White, of Haverhill, Mass. She died Feb. 22, 1682-3.

The will of Reginald Foster¹ was proved June 9, 1681. He settled in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass., about 1638, and was one of the earliest inhabitants of the town. He lived near the 'East Bridge,' which stood where the stone bridge now is. It is supposed that the remains of what is known as the 'old Foster house' may have been the site of his residence,

April 6, 1641, there was 'granted Reginald Foster 8 acres of meadow in the west meadow, if any remain there ungranted, in consideration of the passage there,' and '4th. 11 mo., 1646,' he, with others, promise carting voluntary towards the East Bridge beside the rate a day work a piece. 1675, Reginald Foster, with Joseph Peabody and John Kimball, were collectors of taxes." — *New Eng. Gen. Reg.*, Vol. XXX. pp. 83, 90.

May 26, 1743, Jeremiah Foster and Richard Harris, of Ipswich, bought of Benjamin Morse, of Harvard, Worcester co., 112 acres of land situated in Stow, on west side of the river, bounding on Lancaster and Lunenburg lines.

Jan. 13, 1759, Jere'h Foster, and wife, Rebecca, of Dorchester Canada, Worcester co., to Joseph Haynes, of Sudbury, Middlesex co. (*Middlesex Deeds*, Vol. XXX. p. 98.)

SIXTH GENERATION.

JOSEPH METCALF⁶ (No. 22), great-grandfather of the Compiler, son of Thomas⁵ (JOSEPH⁴, JOSEPH³, THOMAS², JOSEPH¹), and Ruth (Flint) Metcalf, born in Ipswich, Mass., in 1743; died in Salem, Mass., Feb. 11, 1806, aged 63 years (*Salem Gazette*); md. thrice: first, March 3, 1767, Catherine Neal, dau. of Robert and Catherine (Daland) Neal, who, together with her twin brother, Robert, was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 15, 1740; died in 1773-4. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 44.)

He married second, according to the following, as found in the "Salem Gazette," issue of Jan. 30, 1779, "Take notice — on Jan. 30, 1779, Joseph Metcalf married Jane Brisco, by Daniel Hopkins." The Town Records record this marriage as having occurred "Jan. 30, 1779, Joseph Metcalfe to Jane Brisco." No issue, as far as known.

He married third, as found on the Town Record, Feb. 29, 1797, Deliverance Pendrick, of whom nothing is known. No issue.

Aug. 6, 1764, as before stated, Ruth (Flint) Metcalfe, mother of the said Joseph Metcalf, made him the executor of her estate, leaving him a large part of it.

Jan. 19, 1769; — Joseph Metcalf for £43 : 6 : 8, bought of Jonathan Dean, and wife Bethiah, 4 acres, 38 poles land in Flint's pasture, "lying within the Great Pasture, bounded East on said Joseph and otherwise all round on great pasture."

Jan. 19, 1769, for £300, Joseph Metcalf deeds to Samuel Albert and Gilbert Newhall of Salem, N. Eng., traders, 9½ acres in Flint's pasture, near to Clay Brook, "a part of which I bought of John White and Elizabeth King, the heirs of Abigail Flint" (his aunt), "deceased, about 1762. The other part of which I bought of Jonathan Dean, as appears by my deed of mortgage to said Jona. Jan. 19, 1769."

The afore-described estate is located in Flint's pasture, contiguous to the Great Pasture, and near Clay Brook, which probably derived its name either from Clay Brook, co. Leicestershire, Eng., from which the first settlers may have emigrated, or from the clay soil through which it flows to this day. All of this estate is in the vicinity of Castle Hill, beyond it towards Lynn. At this date (1887), the Eastern Railroad passes through it, near where the house of Joseph Metcalf stood, all of which long ago disappeared, except the ruins of the cellar. The property, now owned by George B. Loring, Esq., of Salem, Mass., evidently produces nothing, except a good crop of grass.

To this house came Great-grandmother Catherine (Neal) Metcalf, as a bride, and there lived till her death. Here her only child, Ruth, was born, and lived till her Aunt Cutler took her to her own home at "Buffum's Corner," Salem, Mass.

Near this estate is a family burial-lot, where many of the Metcalfs are buried, many of whom died of small-pox, contracted at the time of the Revolutionary War, which at that time was an epidemic among the soldiers, and by them propagated.

"March 26, 1771, Joseph Metcalf apt'd Hayward for the Great Pasture." — *Essex Gazette*, issue of March 26, 1771.

A Hayward, according to Charles L. Norton, "or a Hay-warden, was a township officer whose duty it was to impound stray cattle and feed them until they were redeemed by their owners."

If Joseph Metcalf, at 28 years of age, had any other occupation save that of hayward and the care of his estate, it is unknown; but he soon made a change in his estate, as shown by the following deeds:—

"Oct. 16, 1771: — Joseph Metcalf and wife Catherine, for £10:13:4, sell to Benjamin Pickman, one share in common lands in the lower pasture, it being a right purchased by me of Dan'l and Elizabeth West, April 11, 1770."

"May 19, 1773: — Joseph Metcalf bought of Joseph Blaney Esq. and wife Abigail, for £133; 6 : 8; 20 acres; bounded N. W. on Boston road, (so called,) N. E. on William Shillaber, deceased, which was set off to his widow for her

dower; S. E. on sheep pasture, and S. W. on John Shillaber, deceased, with the dwelling house and barn belonging."

"Dec. 21, 1778: — for £450 Joseph Metcalf conveys to James Brown, 24 acres, dwelling house and barn, — bounded N. on William Shillaber, dec'd; S. on late John Shillaber; E. on sheep pasture; W. on great road leading from Salem to Boston."

"Salem, Aug. 15, 1774. To be sold, very cheap, a House, pleasantly situated in the main street, with a barn, yard, and small Garden, and a good well of water; Also about nine Acres of mowing Land, laying within a Mile of the Town, For further Particulars inquire of Joseph Metcalf." — *Essex Gazette*, issue of Aug. 22, 1774.

Joseph Metcalf was among those who, when the cry came, "the British have shed blood at Lexington," seizing their guns, ran to the Concord road, to stop their returning to Boston.

All ran in the greatest confusion, without any discipline, directing their course as the word was passed along the road. Many hid themselves behind trees or rocks, so as to get a chance shot at the fleeing British; thus friend and foe equally shared the chances of being wounded. During this indiscriminate firing Joseph Metcalf received a ball in his hip, which he carried till the day of his death, but which did not prevent his continuing in service, for soon he enlisted in the Continental Army, and there continued till the end of the Revolutionary War.

This enlistment is recorded at the State House, Boston, Mass., in the office of the Secretary of State, in a large volume called the "Coat Rolls," which on the fly-leaf at the beginning of the book is thus explained: —

"Names of men who served 8 mos. in the Army at the siege of Boston in Regiments stationed at Cambridge, Roxbury, &c., May to Dec. 1775."

In volume fifty-six of these Rolls is to be found, "Joseph Metcalf in Capt. Daniel Galusha's Co., Benj. Ruggles Woodbridge, Col., enlisted April 19, 1775, as a private from Salem."

For services rendered in the Revolution, the soldiers were allowed a gratuity, in excess of their regular pay, of a coat, or its equivalent in money, at the end of their service, for which they were to sign.

In this same volume occurs the following order, "To the Committee of Clothing at Watertown. Please to Deliver to Capt. Galusha the coats allowed us, by the Province Being Inlisted soldiers in s^d Daniel Galluskee's Company in Col. Ruggles Woodbridge's Regiment 25th 3^d Brigade."

Thirty names are signed on this roll in receipt of the coats, Joseph Metcalf one of the number, in his own handwriting, clearly and finely written, showing that he was an educated man, as all men did not write at that date, it being considered only necessary for the minister and town clerk to so do.

A second time he enlisted; for in the same office, in the Boston State House, this time on the "Continental Army Rolls," is found the following:—

"The enlistment of Joseph Metcalf, Salem, for 3 years, from 1777 to 1780, in Capt. Porter's Co., 11th Mass. Regiment."

The colonel's name not given; but if it was Col. Thomas Crafts, then the following orders, as taken from the "Orderly Book of Crafts' Regiment of Artillery, June, 1777, to Dec., 1778," communicated by James Kimball to Essex Institute, pertains to Joseph Metcalf, for he was the only member of his family known to have served in the war. This time he was lieutenant, as follows:—

"HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON, July 1st 1777.

Order'd

That Cap. Balch, Capt Lieut Minzies; Lieut Mc Clure, Armstrong & Metcalf, Capt Gray, Scolly, Adeburt and Prince, hold themselves in Readiness to March into Congress street on Friday at 12 o'clock, That they Prepare two four Pound Brass Cannon with thirteen Pounds of Powder.

The Major will Report all Commission'd Officers who do not attend Exercising.

The Adjutant is Ordered to Confine every Serjeant, Corporal, Bombardier, Gunner, & Matross, who does not appear at Exercising; when Warn'd without they give a Sufficient Excuse.

By Order of Colo PAUL REVERE."

(p. 121.)

"HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON, July 3^d, 1777.

The General Court of the State having thought proper to give Orders that the Anniversary of the Declaration of Independency should be celebrated in this Town to morrow by the firing of Canon &c.

Ordered

That Cap^t Balch, Cap^t Lieut^t Menzies, Lieut^t Mc Clure, Armstrong & Metcalf, three Serj^{ts} two Corporals and Thirty Six men with (two Pieces of Brass 4 P^r Cannon) hold themselves in Readiness to March into Congress street to fire a Grand Salute of 13 Rounds. That all the Commis^d non Commissioned Officers and Matrosses be dress'd Clean and in their uniform and Powder'd to Morrow.

That all the Drums and Fifes appear Dress'd Clean and Powder'd.

That Cap^t Lt^t Ingersol and Lieut Adeburt, with one Serjeant, one Coporal & 10 Matrosses March to Fort Hill and fire a Grand Salute of 13 Rounds.

By Order Colo THO^s CRAFTS."

(p. 123.)

"HEAD QUARTERS BOSTON Aug^t 27th 1777.

Order'd

That Lieut Colo Revere, Major Melville, Cap^t Edes, Cap^t Gray, Todd, Phillips, Bradle, Cap^t Lieut^t Ingersol, Scollay, Bussey, Meinzies, & Warner, First Lieut^s Revere, Grant Maiston, McClure & Bell, Second Lieut^s Hudebert, Metcalf, Menzies & Ingersol, Quarter Master, Serjeant, five Drums & five fifes, one Hundred & Twenty Serjeants,

Corporal, Bombardiers, Gunners & Matrosses, the whole to hold themselves in Readiness to March at a Moments Warning with six days provisions.

(Sent to Worcester to take charge of the Prisoners captured at Bennington by Gen. Starks.)

The Commissioned Officers & Men are to carry no other Cloaths than their Regimentals, two pair Stockings & two shirts.

The whole of the Above Non Commissioned Officers & Matrosses to appear to morrow morning at Roll call compleatly equip'd for marching.

Their provisions will be Drawn for them which they are to carry, except what they now have by them, which they are to Cook to Night.

By Order Colo T. CRAFTS."

"HEAD QUARTERS BOSTON Aug 28 1777.

"The Legislature of the State haveing Appointed this day 28th Aug^t as a Day of Humiliation and Prayer.

Order'd

That the Commission'd Officers, Matrosses, &c. Appear at the park dressed in their Uniform Clean & Powder'd precisely at half after one o'clock P.M. and from thence March to the late Rev'd Mr How's Meeting House to hear a Sermon preached to them by the Rev'd Mr Thatcher.

After worship is over the whole of the Detachment under Marching Orders will form at the Meeting-house Door & March from thence in Regular Order to the Common, receive their Arms and Baggage & immediately March from thence out of town to their destination.

By Order Colo T. CRAFTS."

(p. 142.)

"WATERTOWN Aug 29th 1777.

As Strict Discipline, and Good Order is the life & Soul of a Soldier, the Lieut Colonel expects that there will be the best Order observed on the March, the Commissioned Officers are to see that the men behave well, that they by no means hurt or destroy any man's property, that they Abuse no person, but in every thing behave like men Belonging to the Massachusetts State Train of Artillery, When their is a halt the Serg^{ts} are to be Accountable for the Behaviour of the Men.

Should any of the Non Commis'd Officers or Soldiers be so hardy as to act contrary to the Above directions they may depend upon being punished with the utmost Severity.

By Order Colo REVERE."

"HEAD QUARTERS WORCESTER Sept. 2^d, 1777.

Order'd

That there be a Guard Rais'd this evening to consist of one Capt^t Lt^t one first & one Second Lieut, two Serg^{ts}, four Corp^{ls}, one Drum & one fife and twenty-seven men to mount at the Meeting-house. The whole Detachment will draw four Days provisions to Morrow-morning at 7 o'clock & cooke it by nine so as to be Ready to March at Eleven.

By Order Lt Col^o REVERE."

[NOTE. — "The detachment marched to Worcester and took charge of several hundred prisoners, taken by Gen. Stark at Bennington, — Germans, Highlanders, Canadians, &c., and escorted them to Boston. JOHN MARSTON, May 25, 1833."]

(p. 143.)

"BOSTON Oct^r 26. 1778.

Regimental Orders.

The Hon^{ble} Gen^l Court have been pleased to pass the following Resolve.

That the Commissary of the State be & he is hereby directed to Supply the Field Officers of said Regt to the amount of two Pounds ten shillings per month each, the captains to the amount of Thirty-five Shillings per month, the Subalterns & Staff Officers to the amount of Thirty Shillings per month each, and the Non Commis'd Officers & Private Soldiers to the amount of Twenty shillings each, in articles of the Necessaries of Life,

they paying for the same at the price sett in late act for regulating the prices of such articles to be continued till the further Order of the Court.

The Colonel flatters himself the above encouragement is such that the Regiment will be stimulated to discharge their duty with Spirit & Alacrity.

By Order THOMAS CRAFTS, Col^o Artill^y "

(p. 205.)

"CAMP AT BOSTⁿ Nov^r 7th 1778.

.

None of the Companies are to be paid off till further Orders.

By Order Col^o T. CRAFTS."

(p. 206.)

"BOSTON June 13th 1778.

"The Col^o having rec^d the Continental pay for the Reg^t while on the Expedition to R. Island which pay for the Non Commis^d Officers not being equill to the state pay he will lay the same before the Hon^{ble} Council for their Orders. He expects to pay off the reg^t by Wednesday as far as the money rec^d from the Continental will go, & desires the Captains would gett their Abstract agreeable to a schedule Deliver'd Cap^t Gray.

By Order Col^o T. CRAFTS."

(p. 190.)

Joseph Metcalf received part of his pay for his services in the Continental Army in this Continental money, known by the fact of his giving a large quantity of it to his daughter Ruth, after he became tired of waiting for the government to repudiate it; being valueless, it was placed in a closet of the guest chamber of the house of his daughter, where it lay forgotten until his grandchildren became old enough to know that it represented legal tender, then it was continually quarrelled over by these children trying to make it pass as such, till at length the mother had the four sides of a room, twelve feet by twelve, papered with it, — which fact is remembered distinctly by all her children living in 1883.

The worthlessness of this Continental money can be best learned from a statement of a soldier of the Revolution, who told that in 1781 he sold seventeen hundred and eighty dollars of this paper money for thirty dollars in silver.

"This currency consisted of small pieces of paper about two inches square. The one dollar bills had an altar, with the words, depressa resurgit, the oppressed rises. The two dollar bills bore a hand, making a circle with compasses, with the motto, tribulatio dital, trouble enriches. The device of the three dollar bills was an eagle pouncing upon a crane, who was biting the eagle's neck, with the motto, exitus in dubio, the event is doubtful. On the five dollar bills was a hand grasping a thornbush, with the inscription, sustine vel abatine, hold fast or touch not. The six dollar bills represented a beaver felling a tree, with the word perseverando, by perseverance we prosper." — LEWIS, *Hist. of Lynn*, p. 216.

In 1784 Joseph Metcalf seems to have lost all hope of ever receiving his full pay, or having what he had already received redeemed, for in the issue of Feb. 5, 1784, of the "Salem Gazette," appears the following notice: —

"Joseph Metcalf advertizes his house, situated at a very public corner, in the Main St. West part of the Town.

Obliged to sell the house of his ancestors, because of his country's not being able to pay him for his services while a soldier in the army —

Salem, Feb. 4, 1784."

Again in the same paper, issue of April 8th, 16th, and 20th, same year, this house is again advertised, thus:—

"TO BE SOLD

and entered upon immediately the house and land now occupied by the Subscriber pleasantly situated at a very public corner in Main St. at the West part of the town. After serving the public faithfully for several years as a soldier in the Army, and suffering most intolerable hardships, I am now on account of my Country's unfaithfulness in not paying what they owe me obliged to sell the house that belonged to my ancestors in order to pay my debts and to retire to an obscure hut at some distance from the town

JOSEPH METCALF."

Who bought this house, and to what "obscure hut" he retired, if he ever did, was not ascertained; but he, after the death of his third wife, refused to live with his daughter, Mrs. Ruth Driver, declaring his country should support him as long as he lived; which vow he kept till his death in 1806; then his body was taken to his daughter's house, at the head of Broad Street, Salem, and from there interred.

"Jan. 8, 1798: Joseph Metcalf, yeoman, Salem, and wife Deliverance, for \$111, conveys to John Pope, Salem, baker, one undivided third part of one half, being the southerly half of a dwelling house, and of the land under and adjoining the same which James Cutler conveyed to George West, and he (West) conveyed to Abigail, my sister, now deceased, who was wife of said James Cutler, the said one undivided third part of said half of the house and land, haveing descended to me as heir to said Abigail. The whole of the land and the said half of the said house being bounded as follows; Beginning at the middle of the front door of said house standing on Pasture street and running South, twenty degrees; West 2 poles and 22 links by said street to a tree, thence due West by the compass 3 pole and 4 links; thence North West by a fence 2 pole; thence North East 4 pole 10 links, through said house to the middle of the front door, the first bounds mentioned, with the priveledge of passing and repassing to and from the well, which stands on land of said Cutler near to said house.

BENJ. DALAND } Wit."
SAMUEL PUTNAM }

Child of **Joseph and Catherine (Neal) Metcalf** was:—

24. **RUTH METCALF**⁷, grandmother of the Compiler, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 6, 1770, in the house on the property near Claybrook, within sight of Castle Hill, which in 1887 was owned by George B. Loring, of Salem, Mass., as above said; died in Salem, Mass., in the house at the head of Broad Street, second from the Great Pasture, Aug. 24, 1837; buried in the family tomb in Broad Street burial-ground; md. June 27, 1795, *Stephen Driver, Jr.* (No. 51, Driver Family), son of Capt. Michael and Sarah (Bray) Driver; he born in Salem, Mass., March 17, 1772; died there March 24, 1850; buried in the family tomb. Children were nine, as found in their proper places in the Driver Family.

THE MOSES FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. HENRY MOSES¹ was early of Salem, Mass.; but who were his parents, or from what country he came, seems to be unknown. He died in Salem before 1685, or that same year, for an inventory of his estate was taken Nov. 19, 1685, by Jeremiah Neale and Richard Flinders; amount £48 : 2.

He was married by Major Hathorne, April 1, 1659, to Remember Giles, daughter of Edward or Edmond and Bridget (Very) Giles, who was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Jan. 20, 1638-9. Her mother, Bridget Very, was a widow when she married E. Giles, and came from Salisbury, Eng., where she was born in 1600, to New England, with her two sons, Samuel Very, born in 1619, and Thomas Very, born in 1626, and one daughter, Mary Very, who subsequently married John Oaks and lived in New Salem. Her son, Thomas Very, or Verrey, was a fisherman, and lived in Gloucester, Mass., before 1650; he married, July 6, 1650, Hannah, dau. of Thomas Giles, of Salem, Mass.; he died March 28, 1694; she died Aug. 25, 1683. They had nine children.

After Mrs. Bridget Very married Edward or Edmond Giles, they lived in South Danvers (now Peabody), Mass., in the vicinity of the almshouse; she, a widow, made her will Jan. 14, 1668; proved Nov. 30, 1680. She gave the homestead to Samuel Very, who left it to his son Benjamin, who left it to his eldest son, Samuel, who in 1769 gave it to his wife, Abigail (Pepper) and her children. In 1793 John, George, Amos, and William Very sell to Nathaniel Nurse "all their right to the estate of their honored father, Samuel Very, deceased."

About 1700 some of Bridget Very's descendants moved down on Goldthwait's Brook, where they owned about seventy acres of land, thirty of which went by the name of Very's Plain, because

owned by them, and being mostly level. This Plain extended from the burial-ground on the Boston Road to the Lynnfield Road (Essex Inst. Hist. Collect., Vol. II. p. 33).

Edward or Edmond Giles received grants in 1636 of 120 acres of land on Cedar Pond, one of the eastern bounds of Samuel Very's farm. On the south was a rock, called Wigwam Rock, probably the same now called Ship Rock,—a large boulder of many tons, situated in Danvers, Mass., and now owned by the Essex Institute of Salem, Mass.

His children by **Bridget Very** were:—

- (a) **MERITABLE GILES**, bapt. April 2, 1637; md. in 1658, John Collins.
- (b) **REMEMBER GILES**, bapt. Jan. 20, 1638-9; md. April 1, 1659, Henry Moses.
- (c) **ELEAZER GILES**, bapt. 1640; died 1728.
- (d) **JOHN GILES**, bapt. 1646; died 1709.

Children of **Henry and Remember (Giles) Moses** were:—

- 2. **HANNAH MOSES** ², born Jan. 29, 1659; died Oct. 2, 1661.
- 3. **HENRY MOSES** ², born Feb. 8, 1661.
- 4. **ELIZABETH MOSES** ², born Feb. 8, 1663.
- 5. **JOHN MOSES** ², born Nov. 19, 166—.
- 6. **REMEMBER MOSES** ², born Nov. 14, 1668.
- 7. **EDWARD MOSES** ², born Nov. 10, 1670.
- 8. **ELEAZER MOSES** ², born March 23, 1672-3; died in 1718; md. Hannah Ward.
- 9. **JOSEPH MOSES** ², bapt. —; md. July 27, 1699, Tamosin Bean.
- 10. **SAMUEL MOSES** ², born June 24, 1677.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. ELEAZER MOSES ² (No. 8), son of Henry¹ and Remember (Giles) Moses, born in Salem, Mass., March 23, 1672-3; administration on his estate granted his widow, Hannah, Dec. 10, 1718; inventory taken at that time of £159:14.

The widow died before the estate was settled; administration conferred on her son Eleazer Nov. 7, 1727. Second inventory was £141:6:2; one item of indebtedness being "to funeral charges of my mother £10."

He was styled Capt. Eleazer Moses, and he married, June 24, 1697, Hannah Ward, dau. of Joshua and Hannah (Flint) Ward, who was born in 1671; died before 1727; bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 1, 1700. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 7.)

Children were:—

11. HANNAH MOSES²; bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 6, 1700; died about 176—; md. Nov. 29, 1722, Benjamin Ropes, son of Benjamin and Ann (Phippen) Ropes, who was born Jan. 24, 1700–1; died Sept. 26, 1732.
12. HENRY MOSES², bapt. Dec. 19, 1703, in the First Church, Salem, probably twin to next child, and like him died young.
13. ELEAZER MOSES², born Nov. 28, 1703; died young.
14. ELEAZER MOSES², bapt. in First Church, Salem, Dec. 30, 1705; died Feb., 1786; md. Mary Henderson.
15. HENRY MOSES², born Dec. 31, 1709; md. May 8, 1735, Sarah Osgood, dau. of Nathaniel and Hannah (Buttolph) Osgood. She md. second, Sept. 18, 1740, as his third wife, Peter Cheever, son of Peter and Lydia (Elkins) Cheever.

Child by first marriage was : —

- (1) SARAH MOSES⁴, bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., March 6, 1737.

Children by second marriage were : —

- (2) HANNAH CHEEVER⁴, bapt. Sept. 13, 1741; md. March 30, 1760, Nathaniel Archer⁵, son of Nath'l⁴ (Jonathan², Sam'l², Sam'l¹), and Hannah (Cook) Archer; he bapt. March 2, 1735. She died in Norway, Me., July 12, 1825.
- (3) MARGARET CHEEVER⁴, bapt. June 5, 1743; md. April 16, 1769, Joseph Pratt, and removed to Oxford, N. H.
- (4) NATHANIEL CHEEVER⁴, born June 9, 1745; removed to Amherst, N. H.; md. in Salem, Mass., in 1769, Elizabeth Bancroft, dau. of Samuel, Jr., and Lydia (Parker) Bancroft.
- (5) BENJAMIN CHEEVER⁴, born Jan. 21, 1746; died Jan. 8, 1832; md. first, May 23, 1772, Ruth Osgood, dau. of William and Ruth (Symonds) Osgood; she bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., April 15, 1753; md. second, April 22, 1784, Mary Barr, dau. of James and Mary (Ropes) Barr, and widow of John Card, whom she married Sept. 9, 1770; she bapt. Nov. 29, 1751, and died July 4, 1842, æt. 91.
- (6) LYDIA CHEEVER⁴, born June 30, 1750; md. Jan. 4, 1770, Samuel Skerry, son of Henry and Hannah (Sollas, or Sallows), who was bapt. Dec. 13, 1747.
- (7) HENRY CHEEVER⁴, born Feb. 21, 1751–2.

16. SAMUEL MOSES², born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 21, 1713.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. ELEAZER MOSES² (No. 14), son of Capt. Eleazer² (HENRY¹), and Hannah (Ward) Moses; bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Dec. 30, 1705; died Feb., 1786; sailmaker and master-mariner. Administration on his estate granted his son Benjamin, July 15, 1786, who gave bonds with Samuel Robinson and John Chipman, his son-in-law. Inventory, £237 : 18 : 7.

He owned a mansion house valued at £170; half a house on Prison Lane (St. Peter's Street, Salem, Mass.), valued at £43. In this house lived his son-in-law, John Chipman. From him was received £29 : 3 : 4 for 2 years and 11 months' rent at £4 : 10s. per year. A debt of £168 was named as due Edward Dalton, the husband of his granddaughter, and also one due John Chipman of £150.

Capt. Eleazer Moses married Nov. 5, 1730, Mary Henderson, daughter of Peter Henderson and his first wife Hannah, who was baptized, with other members of her family, June 7, 1702. She united with the First Church of Salem, Mass., Dec. 16, 1733.

Children were eleven, all baptized in First Church of Salem, Mass.; namely:—

17. SAMUEL MOSES⁴, bapt. Dec. 16, 1733.

18. ELEAZER MOSES⁴, bapt. Jan. 19, 1734-5.

19. BENJAMIN MOSES⁴, bapt. Feb. 6, 1736-7; died July 16, 1803; master-mariner; md. June 7, 1761, Sarah Carroll. They had a daughter, Abigail, who married Moses Yell, son of Archibald and Mary (Cleaves) Yell; he born in Salisbury June 14, 1777, and died at sea Jan. 1, 1814. He md. second, Rebecca (Stevens) Moses, widow of his brother Benjamin Yell, of Amherst, N. H., master-mariner, who was lost at sea in the schooner "Hare" (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. III. p. 177).

They had another daughter, Mary Moses, who married John Kehoo, who was born in Ireland in 1756; lost at sea in the private armed schooner "Centipede," in 1781. He came to Salem in 1776, when twenty years of age, with Edward Dalton, who was also an Irishman. These men were fast friends, both remarkably handsome and promising men, and by their circumspect conduct and industrious habits soon gained the respect and confidence of the community. Edward Dalton married Sarah Moses, cousin of John Kehoo's wife. John Kehoo was father of Capt. John Kehew, commander of the private armed sloop "Jefferson" and ship "America" (born in 1779); married Eunice, dau. of Elder William Browne; died in New Orleans in 1845 (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. III. p. 122).

Benjamin Moses during the Revolutionary War was a sailing master of the private armed vessel "Creatine," afterwards called the "Oliver Cromwell." The latter part of his life he commanded the sloop "Indian," as a packet between Salem and Boston. Admitted to Essex Lodge, Salem, April 9, 1779 (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. III. p. 121).

20. MARY MOSES⁴, bapt. April 15, 1739.

21. HENRY MOSES⁴, bapt. Dec. 21, 1740.

22. JOHN MOSES⁴, bapt. May 9, 1742; died young.

23. JOSEPH MOSES⁴, } twins, bapt. June 3, 1744, { died young.

24. HANNAH MOSES⁴, } { died young.

25. JOSEPH MOSES⁴, bapt. Nov. 3, 1745; md. Nov. 8, 1767, Hannah Kimball. They had a daughter, Mary Moses, who died Aug. 2, 1838, aged 58 years.
26. HANNAH MOSES⁴, bapt. Jan. 28, 1749; md. May 22, 1768, John Chipman.
27. JOHN MOSES⁴, bapt. Jan. 19, 1751-2.

FOURTH GENERATION.

SAMUEL MOSES⁴ (No. 17), son of Capt. Eleazer³ (Capt. ELEAZER², HENRY¹), and Mary (Henderson) Moses; bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Dec. 16, 1733; md. July 30, 1755, Sarah Brown.

Children were:—

28. SAMUEL MOSES⁵, born —; md. June 22, 1788, Elizabeth Duncklee.
29. SARAH MOSES⁵, born —; md. Nov. 4, 1778, Edward Dalton, who came to Salem in 1776 from Ireland with his best friend John Kehoo. His son Eleazer Moses Dalton could not give his age, but stated he was a young man when he arrived in Salem, Mass. During the Revolutionary War, Edward Dalton was actively engaged in the navy.

Children were:—

- (1) EDWARD DALTON⁶, born —; md. Sept. 16, 1800, Mary Collins.
- (2) SAMUEL DALTON⁶, born —.
- (3) JOHN DALTON⁶, born —.
- (4) JOSEPH DALTON⁶, born —.
- (5) SARAH DALTON⁶, bapt. Dec. 21, 1783, in St. Peter's Church (Episcopal), Salem, Mass.; md. Jan. 1, 1803, Benjamin Bulson.
- (6) JOSEPH DALTON⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 1, 1792; md. July 7, 1811, *Rebecca Driver*, dau. of Thomas Poynton and Rebecca (Wellman) Driver, No. 49 Driver Family.
- (7) ELEAZER MOSES DALTON⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 5, 1795; died there May, 1886, in the 92d year of his age; md. in 1817, Harriet Boardman, of Marblehead, who died in 1881. He was by trade a shoemaker, and from 1818 to 1846 he was the junior partner of the firm of J. & E. M. Dalton, manufacturer of boots and shoes, J. Dalton being his brother Joseph.

In 1813 he joined the Essex Guards, a military company formed in 1812 for home defence. In 1816 he joined the Independent Cadets, and was the oldest surviving member.

He was an original member of the Salem Charitable Mechanic Association, joining in 1817, and was its secretary from 1833 to 1850 (Salem Gazette).

Upon the reunion of his family on his 90th birth-day, two sons, five daughters, nine grandchildren, and two great-grandchildren were present.

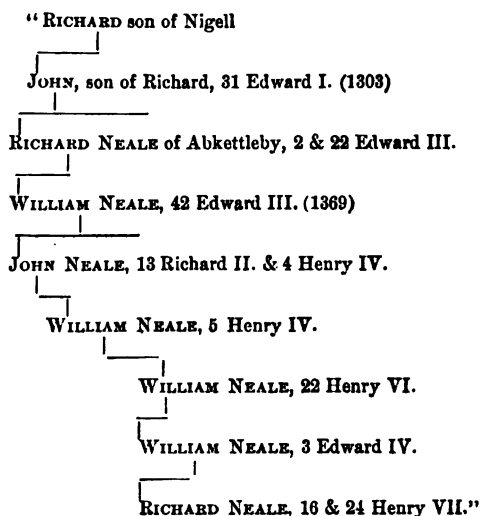
THE NEAL FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

In origin this family is strictly English, the name to be found recorded in England as early at 1066; for Neel de S— Saveur le Viconte is the eighth name on the Roll of Battle Abbey (John Fore's copy), which Norman-French name the English in time changed to Neale.

About 1500 there lived one Thomas Neale, an eminent writer and scholar, born at Yeate, Gloucestershire, Eng.; and in 1625 there was a Henrietta Maria Neale, who is said to have been god-daughter, namesake, and maid of honor to Queen Henrietta Maria, wife of Charles I. of England.

In the "Heralds' Visitation," by Lennard and Vincent, 1619, the family of Neale of Leicestershire, Eng., is thus noted in Nichols' "History of Leicestershire," p. 11, Vol. II. Part II.; the name then called Nigell, of Abkettleby, one of the barons of the Earl of Chester.



The first of the name in New England was John Neale, yeoman, who emigrated before May 18, 1642, for on that date he was made a freeman, at which time the name was spelled Neale (Court Records, Vol. II. p. 18).

He descended in a direct line from John Neale, of Dean, co. Bedford, Eng., who about 1600 married Anne Cromwell, daughter of Henry Cromwell, of Upwood, cousin to Oliver Cromwell, the Lord Protector, and granddaughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, of Hinchinbrooke, whose sons were Oliver, his heir; Robert, father of the Lord Protector; Henry, of Upwood; Richard, M. P., who died unmarried; and Philip.

Henry, of Upwood, Anna's father, left one son, Richard, and two daughters, — Elizabeth, who married the Lord Chief Justice, Oliver St. John; and Anna, who married John Neale, Esq., of Dean, aforesaid, ancestor by her of the Rev. Edward Vansittart, who inherited the estate of Allesley and assumed the surname of Neale.

The eldest son, Sir Oliver Cromwell, who succeeded to the family estates, magnificently entertained King James I. at Hinchinbrooke on His Majesty's journey from Scotland to London, and was made a Knight of the Bath previously to the coronation.

At the outbreak of the Civil War Sir Oliver, enrolling himself under the royal banner, raised men and gave large sums of money to support the king's cause. This devotion to an unfortunate party obliged him to sell Hinchinbrooke to the Montagues and retire to Ramsay Abbey, where he died Aug. 28, 1655, aged 93.

The Cromwells came originally from Wales, and bore the surname of Williams; the first who took that of Cromwell was Sir Richard Williams, and he did so as nephew of Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, *malleus monachorum*. The alteration was made at the express desire of Henry VIII.

The Earl of Essex, from the position he held in the kingdom, had great opportunity to oblige his kinsman with the sale of lately dissolved religious houses far below their value; among others those of the nunnery of Hinchinbrooke and the rich abbey of Ramsey. Additions were made to his possessions by the king even after the fall of the favorite Cromwell, so that Sir Richard's estates at his death were vast and prodigious; his son as abovesaid was Sir Henry of Hinchinbrooke, grandfather of Anna (Cromwell) Neale (Burke's *Vicissitudes of Families*, Vol. I. pp. 26, 30).

1 JOHN NEALE¹, the emigrant, born somewhere in England, date unknown; died in Salem, Mass., May 12, 1672; ind. Mary Lawes, daughter and only child of Francis Lawes, or Laurie, a very wealthy citizen of Salem, who was of Norwich, Eng.; arrived at Boston, New England, June 20, 1637, with wife Lydia, daughter Mary, and two servants.

He made his will Nov. 6, 1665, in which he mentions John Neale, son-in-law, and Mary his wife; Jeremiah, son of son-in-law John; Jonathan, son of said John; Joseph, son of said John; his five grandchildren, Jeremiah, John, Jonathan, Joseph, and Lydia, "children of my son-in-law John and Mary Neale." The inventory was £192:00:00, returned by John Neale and Mary his wife, 24, 4 mo. 1666, who were the executors.

John Neale, of Salem, made his will May 3, 1672. Inventory taken June 15, 1672, by Hillard Veren and John Pickering; amount being £593:4:00.

He was made a freeman in 1642, and in 1668 was one of the petitioners against the two-per cent impost on all goods imported into the colony.

Nov. 29, 1666, John Neale took the inventory of the estate of Obadiah Antrim, assisted by John Pickering and Giles Corey.

Mary, his wife, became a member of the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 21, 1646-7. Before Sept. 4, 1680, she married, second, Andrew Mansfield, of Salem, Mass., who died about 1683-4.

John Neale had a brother Francis, who settled near Casco Bay, up the Pasumpskitt River, where, Aug. 4, 1672, an indenture was made between Manaadconit and Waraad Button, Indian sagamores, on the one part, and Francis Neale, Geo. Fealt, Jenkins Williams, planters, "concerning a quantity of land near Casco Bay, up the Pasumpskitt River, b. on Geo. Munjoy, according to his deed which about 5 or 6 years since he had of us — running to the Falls — b. on John Walkie's dwelling house and running 6 miles up in the Country."

"W^m. Haynes & John Dale give oath in Boston to above March 7, 1681-2.

Jenkins Williams, of Manchester, deeds to David Phippen, Salem, all his right and interest in the above land; July 31, 1689.

Also George Felt, Salem, eldest son and heir of Geo. Felt, late

of Casco Bay, within mentioned, dec'd, deeds to said Phippen, all his right in the same, Aug. 20, 1690.

ROGER DERBY } Wit."
JOHN SMITH }

Children of **John and Mary (Lawes) Neale** were : —

2. SARAH NEALE², born — ; died July 22, 1658.
3. JOHN NEALE², bapt. May 22, 1642 ; died young.
4. JOHN NEALE², bapt. March 24, 1643 ; died young.
5. JEREMIAH NEALE², bapt. Jan. 18, 1645 ; died about July, 1722 ; housewright ; md. first, June 15, 1668, Sarah Hart ; md. second, Mary Buffum ; md. third, Oct. 31, 1707, Dorothy Lord.
6. LYDEA NEALE², bapt. April 7, 1650 ; died before 1707 ; md. Jonathan Hart. They had three children, namely : —
 - (a) LIDDA HART², born Jan. 5, 1671.
 - (b) JONATHAN HART², born April 14, 1673.
 - (c) JOHN HART², born June 6, 1675.
7. JONATHAN NEALE², bapt. Aug. 15, 1651 ; died before 1707.
8. MARY NEALE², born April 2, 1655 ; died July 6, 1658.
9. JOHN NEALE², bapt. March 14, 1658 ; died Nov. 11, 1679 ; md. 1672, Ann Nichols.
10. JOSEPH NEALE², born 1662 ; died in Pa. before Jan. 22, 1717 ; md. 1680, Judath Croad.

SECOND GENERATION.

Lieut. JEREMIAH NEALE² (No. 5), son of John¹ and Mary (Lawes) Neale ; bapt. March 24, 1643 ; died about July, 1722 ; housewright, and for many years marshal of Salem, Mass. He married, first, June 15, 1668, Sarah Hart, dau. of John F. Hart, of Marblehead, Mass. ; she died Sept. 28, 1672 ; md., second, Sept. 22, 1673, Tamson Buffum ; born about 1648, and died before 1707.

(Her father landed at Salem, Mass., in 1634, his birthplace being Yorkshire, Eng. He was a Quaker, and thus a nonconformist to the regular Church of the day, which subjected him and his family to fines and persecutions ; yet with it all he was a man prominent in public affairs.)

He married, third, Oct. 31, 1707, Dorothy Lord, who died before May 14, 1735 ; apparently no issue by this marriage.

He bore the title of lieutenant,¹ obtained from the rank he held

¹ The Colonists had a great tenacity for titles : if Marshal, Captain, Ensign, Lieutenant, Sergeant, or Deacon could not be used, then they made use of Esq.

in the local militia during King Philip's War, having enlisted in Capt. Joseph Gardner's Company Feb. 29, 1675, as sergeant, as found in the Mass. Archives, Vol. 68, p. 93, thus: "List of y^e names of Capt. Gardners Souldiers for this p'sent Expedition, — Salem —

Ser. Samue^l bradell
 Serjeant Jeremiah Neall
 Serjeant W^m bassett
 Charles Knight
 John boden eighty nine
 W^m holess," and 89 more.

"July 21, 1676, Jeremiah Neal drew pay of £03:00:00, as lieutenant." — *Ibid.*

He was frequently trustee and administrator of estates, acting as attorney in the settlement of minor disputes in and out of courts, and otherwise a prominent man in the colony. After the death of Marshal Henry Skerry, we find in 1686 that he was marshal for Essex Co., Mass.

He was by trade a carpenter; but as he bought and sold largely in real estate, and acted as attorney for others in the same business, he was what now would be termed a real estate agent.

In the times of witchcraft he took sides with the prosecution, as will be seen by the examination of Ann Pudeater, accused of that so-called crime, and in which Mr. Neal was a witness, as found in the Essex Inst. Coll., Vol. IV. pp. 50-1: "Lt. Jer. Neal was asked what he could say of this woman.

"Neal s^d she had been an ill carriaged woman, and since my wife has been sick of y^e small pox, this woman has come to my house pretending kindness, and I was glad to see it; she asked me whether she might use our mortar, which was used for my wife; and I consented to it, but I afterwards repented it; for y^e nurs told me my wife was y^e wors for sence she was very ill of a flux which she had not before.

When the officer came for Pudeater, y^e nurs s^d you are come to late, for my wife grew worse till she dyed; s^d Pudeater had often threatened my wife."

Children by wife **Sarah** were: —

11. JOHN NEAL ^s, born April 16, 1669; removed to Pennsylvania.
12. MARY NEAL ^s, born May 11, 1670.
13. SARAH NEAL ^s, born Nov. 1, 1671; living in 1728, a widow; md. July 13, 1693, Benjamin Archer ^s, son of John ^s (Samuel ¹) and Bethiah (Weeks) Archer; he born March 12, 1665-6; died before 1705.

His grandfather, Samuel Archer, or Archard, was for several years constable and marshal of Salem, Mass.; he married Susanna —, who after his death married, Oct., 1668, for his second wife, Richard

Hutchinson, of Danvers, Mass., born in Arnold, Eng., in 1602; she died Nov. 26, 1674, and Mr. Hutchinson married for his third wife Sarah, widow of James Standish, who survived him. He was the ancestor of the far-famed Hutchinson family, so celebrated for their musical talent.

His mother, Bethiah Weeks, was the daughter of Thomas and Alice Weeks, who married, second, for his second wife, Nicholas Potter, father of Robert Potter, who married Ruth Driver, No. 6 Driver Family. His mother died Jan. 26, 1658.

Sarah (Neal) Archer married, second, in Beverly, Mass., Gilbert Tapley, son of Gilbert and Tamosin Tapley; he born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 26, 1665, and died in 1710; she married, third, — Wilkins.

Oct. 15, 1728, John Archer, fisherman, rec'd "power of attorney from my mother Sarah Wilkins of Boston, widow, one of the daughters of Jeremiah Neale, late of Salem, dec'd, empowering me to make sale of all her right in estate of her father Jeremiah Neale."

Children by first marriage were:—

- (a) JOHN ARCHER⁴, born —.
- (b) BENJAMIN ARCHER⁴, born —; died before 1716; md. Jan. 15, 1710–11, Anna Bridges.
- (c) SARAH ARCHER⁴, born —.
- (d) JOSEPH ARCHER⁴, born —. (See Archer Family, No. 16.)

Children by wife **Mary** were:—

- 14. JEREMIAH NEALE², born Sept. 25, 1674; md. March 29, 1705, Elizabeth Small.
- 15. ABIGAIL NEALE², bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., at age, April 19, 1702.
- 16. LYDIA NEALE², bapt. at age, in First Church of Salem, Mass., May 31, 1702.
- 17. DEBORAH NEALE², bapt. at age in First Church, Salem, Mass., Jan. 31, 1702; living in 1735, unmarried.
- 18. MERCY NEALE², born —; died before 1733, unmarried.
- 19. ROBERT NEALE², born —; md. Nov. 6, 1702, Hannah Elsey.
- 20. HANNAH NEALE², bapt. at age in First Church of Salem, Mass., May 25, 1712; md. Nov. 27, 1718, Charles Hooper.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN NEALE² (No. 9), son of John¹ and Mary (Lawes) Neale, bapt. Jan. 24, 1657–8; died Nov. 11, 1679; "inventory of his estate taken Nov. 24, 1679; amount £221:00:10; returned by Ann the relict and administratrix, mentions son John to have £40, Thomas to have £20, Joseph £20, and dafter Rebecka £20."

"A Petition of Ann Neale mentions that there is land to be given to her husband at the decease of his mother (who is now living) by his fathers will and also land given to him by his grandfather in his will four years after the decease of my husbands mother the value of both peaces of land is 145£." — *Essex Inst. Hist. Collects.*, Vol. III. p. 63.

He married, in 1672, Ann Nichols.

Children were: —

21. JOHN NEALE^s, born April 15, 1673; died before 1700; md. Martha Skerry, dau. of Ephraim and Martha Skerry, and had one daughter.
22. THOMAS NEALE^s, born Feb. 14, 1675.
23. JOSEPH NEALE^s, born Dec. 4, 1677.
24. REBEKAH NEALE^s, born Feb. 23, 1679.

Ann (Nichols) Neale md. second, March 22, 1682-3, William Starlin, or Stirling, then of Haverhill, Mass., afterwards of Lyme, Conn.

They had four children, namely: —

- (25) JOHN STARLIN^s, born April 15, 1683; died before Feb. 1699.
- (26) THOMAS STARLIN^s, born Feb. 14, 1685; died about June, 1705.
- (27) JOSEPH STARLIN^s, born Dec. 4, 1687; lived in Scituate, Me.
- (28) REBECCA STARLIN^s, born Feb. 26, 1689.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOSEPH NEALE^s (No. 10), son of John¹ and Mary (Lawes) Neale, born in 1662-3; died in Pennsylvania, where he removed before Jan. 22, 1717; carpenter. He married, in 1680, Judath Croad, dau. of Richard and Frances (Hersey) Croad, of Frampton, Dorsetshire, Eng.; another account, dau. of Richard Croad by Anstice his wife, he coming from Frampton, Eng., where his father held a baronial tenement, to Salem, New England.

Children were: —

29. JUDATH NEALE^s, born in 1681; died Feb. 25, 1697-8; buried in Charter Street Burial-ground, Salem, Mass.; has a gravestone with this inscription: —

"Here lyeth y^e body of Judath,
Daut^r of Joseph & Judath Neale,
Deceased. Feb. y^e 25th 1697-8, in y^e
16th year of her age."

30. LYDIA NEALE^s, born —; md. Jan. 12, 1709, Samuel Ropes, son of John and Lydia (Wells) Ropes; he born Jan. 24, 1686; died Oct. 12, 1761. His mother's father was a physician, and came from England in the "Susan and Ellen" in 1635, settled in Ipswich, New

England, and married Abigail Warner, dau. of William Warner, of England (Essex Inst. Hist. Collects., Vol. 18).

Children were:—

- (a) LYDIA ROPES⁴, born Dec. 3, 1710; died Jan. 21, 1710.
- (b) LYDIA ROPES⁴, born Dec. 23, 1711.
- (c) SAMUEL ROPES⁴, born Sept. 1, 1714.
- (d) SARAH ROPES⁴, born Aug. 7, 1717.
- (e) JOSEPH ROPES⁴, born Aug. 22, 1719.
- (f) BENJAMIN ROPES⁴, born March 22, 1721.

31. JOSEPH NEAL⁴, born in 1689; md. Dec. 10, 1724, Eunice Pickering; she md. second, April 6, 1738, William Pickering.

THIRD GENERATION.

JEREMIAH NEAL³ (No. 14), son of Lieut. Jeremiah², (JOHN¹) and Mary (Buffum) Neale, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 25, 1674; md. March 27, 1705, Elizabeth Small.

Children were:—

32. JEREMIAH NEAL⁴ } twins; bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., June
and } 4, 1710.
33. LYDIA NEAL⁴
34. JOHN NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., June 10, 1711.
35. BENJAMIN NEAL⁴, born —.
36. JONATHAN NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., June 6, 1714; md. Mary Marston.

THIRD GENERATION.

ROBERT NEAL³ (No. 19), son of Lieut. Jeremiah² (JOHN¹) and Mary (Buffum) Neale, born in Salem, Mass., —; md. Nov. 6, 1702, Hannah Elsey, who was baptized, as his wife, in the First Church of Salem, Mass., June 24, 1716, probably at the same time as her daughter Mary.

Children were:—

37. MARY NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church, Salem, Mass., June 24, 1716, — a cripple.
38. HANNAH NEAL⁴, bapt. Feb. 10, 1717; md. Dec. 29, 1737, Samuel Robinson, of Boston, Mass.
39. ROBERT NEAL⁴, JR., born Aug. 11, 1718; died before 1744; md. Feb. 5, 1738—9 Catherine Daland.
40. BENJAMIN NEAL⁴, born April 21, 1721; died Dec., 1761; md. Oct. 4, 1742, Lydia Begoe.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOSEPH NEAL³ (No. 31), son of Joseph² (JOHN¹) and Judath (Croad) Neale; born in Salem, Mass., in 1689; died before Jan. 19, 1732; md. Dec. 10, 1724, Eunice Pickering, dau. of John and Sarah Pickering; she married, second, April 6, 1738, her cousin, William Pickering, son of Benjamin and Jane (Hobby) Pickering: *died at Salem, Aug. 3, 1765; d. Feb. 17, 1765.*

Children by first marriage were:—

41. JOSEPH NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., Nov. 21, 1725; died young.
42. EUNICE NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., May 28, 1727; md. Feb. 20, 1745, Benjamin Brown.
43. MARY NEAL⁴, bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., April 5, 1729; md. first, July 9, 1752, Capt. John Foster, of Salem and Manchester, Mass.; md. second, Sept. 28, 1769, as his second wife, Rev. John Cleveland, of Chebacco, now Essex, Mass.

Children by second marriage were:—

- (a) JOHN PICKERING⁴, bapt. Jan. 2, 1738-9.
- (b) HANNAH PICKERING⁴, bapt. Feb. 8, 1740; md. Dec. 17, 1762, Joseph Foster, son of Capt. John and Mary (Neal) Foster; hence son of No. 43.
- (c) MARY PICKERING⁴, bapt. June 12, 1743.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JONATHAN NEAL⁴ (No. 36), son of Jeremiah³ (Lieut. JEREMIAH², JOHN¹), and Elizabeth (Small) Neal; bapt. June 6, 1713; md. Mary Marston.

Children were:—

44. JONATHAN NEAL⁵, born —; md. Annis (Anise, another account) White.
45. DAVID NEAL⁵, born —; md. June 8, 1732, Hannah Webb, dau. of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 8.)

FOURTH GENERATION.

ROBERT NEAL⁴, Jr. (No. 39), son of Robert³ (Lieut. JEREMIAH², JOHN¹), and Hannah (Elsey) Neal; born Aug. 11, 1718; died before 1744; md. Feb. 5, 1738-9, Catherine Daland, dau. of George and Bethiah (Peters) Daland; she bapt. March 6, 1719-20. (See Appendix, Daland Family, No. 10.)

Children were:—

- | | | |
|--|--|--|
| <p>46. ROBERT NEAL⁵</p> <p style="text-align: center;">and</p> <p>47. CATHERINE NEAL⁵
(great-grandmother
of the Compiler),</p> | <p>} twins, bapt. in First
Church, Salem, Mass.,
March 15, 1740-1.</p> | <p>{ drowned Feb., 1789, at
Alexandria, Va. (Salem
Gazette); md. Hannah
Beckford in 1763.</p> <p>{ died about 1773-4; md.
March 3, 1767, Joseph
Metcalf, and had only
one child, Ruth, who
md. Stephen Driver, Jr.,
No. 51 Driver Family;
grandfather of the Com-
piler.</p> |
|--|--|--|
- 48. HANNAH NEAL⁵**, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 29, 1742.
(The tradition in the family concerning this sister of Mrs. Catherine Metcalf (Neal) was, that she was Aunt Cutler, who brought up and educated Ruth Metcalf, her niece, No. 51, Driver Family. This history has revealed beyond dispute that Aunt Cutler was the sister of Joseph Metcalf, and not his sister-in-law (see No. 20, Metcalf Family), which makes this Hannah Neal perfectly unknown. Any information respecting her will be very acceptable to the Compiler.)

FOURTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN NEAL⁴ (No. 40), son of Robert³ (Lieut. JEREMIAH², JOHN¹), and Hannah (Elsey) Neal, born in Salem, Mass., April 21, 1721; died, probably at sea, about Dec., 1761; md. Oct. 4, 1742, Lydia Begoe, dau. of Francis and Lydia Begoe (or Beger); she bapt. Dec. 31, 1727, after her father's decease; administration on her father's estate was granted widow Lydia, Jan. 20, 1727-8, who gave bonds with Paul Kimball and Samuel Very. Inventory, £7 : 13.

Lydia, widow of Francis Begoe, married second, as his third wife, James Norris, born Feb., 1694-5, son of Edward and Mary (Symonds) Norris, who first married, Joanna Field, and second, Elizabeth Turner, who died soon without issue. Lydia married, third, Benjamin Beckford, to whom she was published Sept. 8, 1750, as his second wife, he having first married Mary Collins, dau. of Adoniram and Mary (Ward, dau. of Joshua) Collins, and mother of his children. Benjamin Beckford made his will, May 7, 1773; proved June 7, 1773, in which he names wife Lydia, son-in-law Samuel Peters, and wife Hannah; grandson Adoniram Beckford; son Benjamin; dau. Mary, unmarried; grandson James Beckford; grandson Robert Neal, and that his son Benjamin, the executor, to bury him in a plain and decent way after the manner of the Friends.

His wife Lydia made her will March 31, 1803; proved Feb. 7, 1804; names John Archer and wife Elizabeth ("my daughter"), my grandchildren, the children of my daughter Lydia, deceased, viz.: Lydia, wife of Gedney King, Martha and Henry Luscomb, and Mary, wife of Benjamin Luscomb; children of my daughter Sarah, viz.: Elizabeth, widow of Ebenezer Phippen, Stephen and Samuel Symmes. John Archer, exr.

Children of **James Norris and Lydia (Begoe)** were:—

- (a) SARAH NORRIS, bapt. Nov. 29, 1730; md. Stephen Symmes, of Boston.
- (b) ELIZABETH NORRIS, bapt. Sept. 15, 1734; md. June 28, 1758, John Archer, Jr.
- (c) JAMES NORRIS, bapt. Jan. 29, 1737-8; was upwards of 14 years old when guardianship was granted Benjamin Beckford; he died before 1803.
- (d) HENRY NORRIS, bapt. Feb. 17, 1739; died before 1803.

Children of **James Norris and Joanna (Field)** were four; all died young but Mary; she bapt. Oct. 15, 1721, and probably married John Whitton, of Boston.

Deeds

108 } "Edward Norris, Salem, chairmaker; Mary Mackmillon, Boston, widow; John
36 } Norris, Fairfield, Ct., currier; John Archer, Salem, coaster, & wife Elizabeth, in
her right; Stephen Symmes, Boston, leather breeches maker, & wife Sarah, in her right,
and John Whitter, Boston, blksm. & wife Mary, in her right, for £26, convey to Edward
Norris, Jr., baker, & & of another ½ in that part of y^e real estate of Joseph Symonds,
dec'd, known as No. 5, in division of s^d estate, being 124 poles land."

(Joseph Symonds was the grandfather of James Norris on his mother's side.)

After the death of Benjamin Neal, his widow, Lydia, married second, as his second wife, Aug. 20, 1752, Samuel Luscomb, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Beal) Luscomb (see Luscomb Family, No. 9), he born Aug. 9, 1722; he made his will March 10, 1781; proved July 11, 1781, leaving wife Lydia, eldest daughter Elizabeth (Hayward), sons Samuel and Henry, daughters Hannah (wife of Jonathan Ropes), Martha, and Mary. He was a clock-maker and gunsmith.

He married first, Nov. 19, 1744, Hannah Ashby, dau. of Jonathan and Jemima (Felt) Ashby; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., May 30, 1725.

Children of **Benjamin** and **Lydia (Begoe) Neal** were: —

49. **ROBERT NEAL** ⁵, born about 1743.

"These may certify that I Robert Neale a minor upwards of 14 years of age, son of Benjamin Neale, late of Salem, deceased, app^d before y^e subscribers and made choice of my father-in-law, Samuel Luscomb to be my lawful Guardian. Jan. 1, 1762, Robert Neal" (on file).

50. **LYDIA NEAL** ⁶, born about 1745; md. July 13, 1766, Gedney King, son of Nathaniel and Mary (Ruck) King, he born Oct. 27, 1740; block-maker.

"June 5, 1767, Gedney King and wife Lydia deed to widow Mary Grafton 16 poles land and house on it, bounded on road leading to Ferry Lane, with all the right said Gedney and Lydia have in the same, and $\frac{1}{2}$ whereof Lydia Luscomb, mother of said Lydia wife of s^d King (the said Lydia Luscomb being now wife of Samuel Luscomb of Salem, gunsmith) is now seized as tenant in s^d dower."

Children of **Samuel Luscomb** and **Hannah (Ashby)** were:

- (a) **ELIZABETH LUSCOMB**, bapt. July 13, 1746; md. — Hayward.
- (b) **WILLIAM LUSCOMB**, bapt. Sept. 21, 1746; died before 1781.
- (c) **HANNAH LUSCOMB**, born June 25, 1749; died Dec. 9, 1840; md. Dec. 25, 1772, Jonathan Ropes, he born Dec. 3, 1749; died May 19, 1836.
- (d) **SAMUEL LUSCOMB**, bapt. June 3, 1750. (See Luscomb Family, No. 9.)

Children of **Samuel Luscomb** and **Lydia (Begoe) (Neal)** were: —

- (e) **MARTHA LUSCOMB**; md. July 1, 1776, Richard Luscomb.
- (f) **HENRY LUSCOMB**; living in 1781.
- (g) **MARY LUSCOMB**; md. July 5, 1783, Benjamin Luscomb.

FIFTH GENERATION.

JONATHAN NEAL ⁶ (No. 44), son of Jonathan ⁴ (**JEREMIAH** ⁵, Lieut. **JEREMIAH** ², **JOHN** ¹), and Mary (Marston) Neal; bapt. —; md. Annis (Anise another account) White, and had one daughter (and perhaps other children), namely: —

51. **HANNAH NEAL** ⁶, born in 1750; md. May 20, 1775, Joseph Smith, mariner.

Children were: —

- (a) **JOSEPH SMITH** ⁷, born —; md. and had four children, namely: —

- (1) **HANNAH SMITH** ⁸.
- (2) **MARY SMITH** ⁸.
- (3) **JOSEPH SMITH** ⁸.
- (4) **MENHITABLE SMITH** ⁸.

- (b) **WILLIAM SMITH** ⁷, born —; md. Hannah Manning, and had three children, namely: —

(1) MARY SMITH⁸.(2) WILLIAM SMITH⁸.(3) JOSEPH A. SMITH⁸.(c) GEORGE SMITH⁷, born —; md. Mary Ford, and had George⁸ (Neal Genealogy).

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. DAVID NEAL⁶ (No. 45), son of Jonathan⁴ (JEREMIAH³, Lieut. JEREMIAH², JOHN¹), and Mary (Marston) Neal; master-mariner; born about 1730; drowned in 1762, having been knocked overboard by the boom of his own vessel, of which he was master.

July 15, 1762, the inventory of his estate was presented, amount being £862 : 18 : 8.

He married, June 8, 1752, Hannah Webb, dau. of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb, who was bapt. Sept. 24, 1727; died Feb. 14, 1817, aged 89. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 8.)

Children were : —

52. DAVID NEAL⁶, born Oct. 1, 1752; died Aug. 1, 1754.

53. DAVID NEAL⁶, born —; died Nov., 1785; md. Martha Henfield.

54. JONATHAN NEAL⁶, born Jan. 15, 1759; died Oct. 9, 1837; md. first, Mehitable Eden; md. second, Hannah Ward.

55. HANNAH NEAL⁶, born Feb. 14, 1761; died May 10, 1849; md. Feb. 7, 1779, Capt. William Preston; master-mariner; he born April 29, 1757; lost at sea, Dec. 24, 1798, on a voyage from Castine, Me., to Salem, Mass. They had eight children, namely : —

I. DAVID PRESTON⁷, born May 10, 1779; died Dec., 1832, unmarried.

II. WILLIAM PRESTON⁷, born June 9, 1781; lost at sea, with his father, Dec. 24, 1798.

III. HANNAH PRESTON⁷, born Sept. 7, 1783; died May, 1827; md. Capt. David Brown, about 1799; he died at Demarara, West Indies, between April and July of 1802. She md. second, about 1813, William Somers, of England. *He md. 2d. Widow Upton, see p. 183.*

Children by first marriage were : —

(a) DAVID BROWN⁸, born about 1800; died at sea when seventeen years of age.

(b) WILLIAM BROWN⁸, born Dec. 22, 1802; died Feb. 16, 1863; md. June 26, 1825, Rebecca Upton Wright, dau. of Peter Estey and Sylvia (Penniman) Wright, who was living in 1885 in Boston, Mass. They had five children, namely : 1. Sarah Ellen⁹, b. March 7, 1827; 2. William Somers⁹, b. Nov. 10, 1829; 3. Anne Rebecca⁹, b. Oct. 15, 1832, and d. Aug. 18, 1845; 4. Mary Ellen⁹, b. Dec. 12, 1836; 5. Augustus Choate⁹, b. Jan. 9, 1841, and d. April 8, 1842.

Children by second marriage were :—

- (c) HARRIET NEWELL ^{Sutton} ~~Somers~~, born in 1815; died 1825.
 (d) WILLIAM HENRY ^{Sutton} ~~Somers~~, born in 1817; died at sea in 1831, aged 14 years. *Child of Capt. Wm. Sutton, married at sea.*
 IV. POLLY PRESTON⁷, born July 12, 1785; died unmarried in 1836.
 V. JOHN PRESTON⁷, born Oct., 1787; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 9, 1855; md. Sept. 23, 1811, Sally Driver, dau. of Benjamin and Mary (Wellman) Driver. They had six children. (See No. 64, Driver Family.)
 VI. PRISCILLA PRESTON⁷, born April 21, 1790; died Oct. 20, 1796.
 VII. JONATHAN PRESTON⁷, born Nov. 14, 1792; died in 1881; md. May, 1819, Alice Gray Turell. They had five children, namely :—

- (1) WILLIAM AUGUSTUS PRESTON⁸, born June 17, 1820; died April 4, 1847; md. Eliza Ann Hood, of Salem, Mass.
 - (2) ALICE GRAY PRESTON⁸, born April 18, 1822; living in Salem, Mass., in 1885, unmarried.
 - (3) JONATHAN PRESTON⁸, born Aug. 12, 1824; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass.; md. March 20, 1850, Susan Poor Merrill.
 - (4) HARRIET TURELL PRESTON⁸, born Aug. 1, 1827; living in 1885 in Woodburn, Mass.; md. as his second wife, April 8, 1872, George Brown, son of George and Judith (Holman) Brown. No issue.
 - (5) ELLEN PRESTON⁸, born Sept. 9, 1834; died Sept. 25, 1838.
- VIII. SAMUEL PRESTON⁷, born Dec. 8, 1797; died at sea in 1821; md. Oct., 1818, Mary Fisher, who was born in 1800; living, a widow, in 1885, in Salem, Mass. She married second, in 1826, Jeremiah Estey, who lived but a few years. She married third, Sept., 1834, James Bowman, and had two children.

This lady, from memory, gave the above Preston record, which otherwise would have been very incomplete; which assistance the Compiler gratefully acknowledges.

Children by first marriage were :—

1. SAMUEL PRESTON⁸, born in 1819; died at sea, on his first voyage, in 1832.
2. MARY PRESTON⁸, born in 1821; died, aged 9 weeks.

FIFTH GENERATION.

ROBERT NEAL⁵ (No. 46), son of Robert⁴, Jr. (ROBERT⁴, Lieut. JEREMIAH², JOHN¹), and Catherine (Daland) Neal, a twin to Catherine Neal (who married, March 3, 1767, Joseph Metcalf, and had a dau., an only child, Ruth, who married Stephen Driver, Jr., No. 51, Driver Family), with whom he was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 15, 1740-1; drowned Feb., 1789, at Alexandria, Va. (Salem Gazette); md. between April and Nov., 1763, Hannah Beckford, dau. of Benjamin and first wife,

Mary (Collins) Beckford, and granddaughter of John Beckford and Rebecca (Pinsent) (see Beckford Family, No. 9); she bapt. in the Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., March 15, 1740; she md. second, Samuel Peters, brother of Esther Peters, who married, Feb. 5, 1765, her brother, James Beckford, who died before 1771, and his widow, Esther, married, second, Feb. 7, 1771, Joseph Cook, son of Joseph and Eunice (Pope) Cook. The administration of Robert Neal's estate was granted, Dec. 1, 1766, to Samuel Peters, who gave bonds with Benj. Beckford (father-in-law of s^d Robert) and Jeremiah Hacker (Probate Rec., Vol. 343, p. 322).

Child of **Robert and Hannah (Beckford) Neal** was: —

56. **ROBERT NEAL** ⁶, born about 1765; md. Aug. 24, 1788, Elizabeth Lander, dau. of William and Mary (Henderson) Lander; she bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 26, 1764 (Probate Rec., Vol. 343, p. 321). Guardianship of Robert Neal, a minor, son of Robert Neal, under 14, was granted Samuel Peters, who gave same bonds.

As above stated, this Samuel Peters soon afterwards married this boy's mother. His parentage is obscure, but he may have been son of Benjamin ⁸ (Richard ², Gilbert ¹), and Mary Peters, of Salem, Mass., according to the following deed: —

"Feb. 20, 1775 — Samuel Peters, fisherman, & wife Hannah for £5:6:8:, deed to Peter Frye, Salem $\frac{1}{2}$ of a right in the lower division of the Great Pasture, which I purchased of Benjamin Peters' heirs & is included in the proprietors list of rights to Benj. Peters estate.

JEREMIAH HACKER	} wit."
ELIZABETH WHITE	

SIXTH GENERATION.

DANIEL NEAL ⁶ (No. 53), son of Capt. **DAVID** ⁵, (**JONATHAN** ⁴, **JEREMIAH** ³, Lieut. **JEREMIAH** ², **JOHN** ¹) and Hannah (Webb) Neal, born in Salem, Mass., about 1754; died Nov., 1785; md., date not found, Martha Henfield, dau. of Edmund and Lydia (Hardy) Henfield; she born Dec. 25, 1758; died June, 1840; she md. second, Nov. 26, 1789, John Dowst, son of William and Jane (Aborn) Dowst; he baptized at Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 20, 1761.

Child by first marriage was: —

57. **HANNAH NEAL**⁷, born —; md. first Feb. 13, 1803, **Asa Kilham**.

Children were:—

(a) **ASA KILHAM**⁸.

(b) **MARY KILHAM**⁸, md. Mansfield Carnes.

She md. second, Nov. 28, 1813, **Stephen Richardson**, and had **Stephen**⁸, who removed to California.

Child by second marriage was:—

(1) **DAVID DOWST**⁷ (perhaps others); born about 1804; died about 1885; md. first, May 21, 1828, **Elizabeth Adams**; md. second, **Mary** —.

Child by **Elizabeth** was;—

(a) **LUCY ANN DOWST**⁸, bapt. in South Church, Salem, Mass., July 31, 1836.

Child by **Mary** was:—

(b) **MARTHA HENFIELD DOWST**⁸, bapt. Sept. 20, 1840.

SIXTH GENERATION.

Capt. JONATHAN NEAL⁶ (No. 54), son of **Capt. David**⁶ (**JONATHAN**⁶, **JEREMIAH**⁶, **Lieut. JEREMIAH**⁶, **JOHN**¹), and **Hannah** (**Webb**) **Neal**, born Jan. 15, 1759; died Oct. 9, 1837; md. first, **Mehitable Eden**, dau. of **Capt. Thomas Eden**, an Englishman; she was born in 1757, and died Sept. 29, 1786. He married second, May 29, 1791, **Hannah Ward**, dau. of **Miles** and **Experience** (**Goodale**) **Ward**, who died Jan. 26, 1814.

"Jonathan Neal was a mariner till the Revolution, when he enlisted in the army. Afterwards an officer, and commander of privateers from Salem till the peace. Retiring from sea, he engaged in foreign commerce." — *Essex Inst. Hist. Collects.*, Vol. IV.

Child of first marriage was:—

58. **MEHITABLE NEAL**⁷, born Nov., 1783; died —; md. **Amos Choate**.

Children of second marriage were:—

59. **DAVID AUGUSTUS NEAL**⁷, born June 7, 1793; died Aug. 5, 1851; md. July 26, 1818, **Harriet Charlotte Price**, dau. of **James** and **Mary** (**Hall**) **Price**, of **Boston, Mass.**, and a descendant of **Dennis Price**, of **Newton, co. Montgomery, Wales**, who settled on **Second River**, in the **Province of New Jersey**, previous to 1732.

In the war of 1812 **David A. Neal** was an officer of the privateer "**Diomedes**," **Capt. Crowninshield** master. This vessel was captured by the British, and carried to **Halifax**. **Mr. Neal** was taken a prisoner to **England**, and placed in **Dartmoor Prison**, where he remained

till the close of the war. (See list of Dartmoor prisoners, Driver Family, No. 64.)

On his passage from Halifax to England he with others was badly wounded in an unsuccessful attempt to capture the transport in which they were. His wounds were dressed by Barry O'Mara, afterwards well known as the surgeon of Napoleon I. at St. Helena.

After the peace he was supercargo and master of several vessels, principally in the East India trade, and subsequently was engaged in commerce in Salem in connection with his father and brothers.

In 1846 he retired from commercial pursuits, having become President of the Eastern Railroad.

His children were five, namely:—

1. THEODORE FREDERICK NEAL^s, born Dec. 18, 1822; died young.
 2. THEODORE AUGUSTUS NEAL^s, born March 23, 1827; merchant; md. May 30, 1849, Elizabeth Boardman, dau. of Thomas Cook Whittredge and Susan Louisa (Mead), and had issue Elizabeth Malingini Neal^s, born March 10, 1850; and Caroline Frothingham Neal^s, born April 20, 1855.
 3. HARRIET CHARLOTTE NEAL^s, born Feb. 1, 1831; died March 17, 1837.
 4. MARGARET MARIA NEAL^s, born June 15, 1832.
 5. HARRIET CHARLOTTE NEAL^s, born July 8, 1837.
60. NATHAN WARD NEAL^t, born Aug. 27, 1797; graduated at Harvard College 1816; died unmarried, Nov. 17, 1850; a merchant; President of the Asiatic Bank.
 61. WILLIAM HENRY NEAL^t, born March 8, 1799; died Jan. 17, 1851; md. Sarah Ropes, dau. of Joseph and Sarah (Burchmore) Ropes. He was a shipmaster, and afterwards a merchant; also President of the East India Marine Co. No issue.
 62. THEODORE FREDERICK NEAL^t, born Nov. 3, 1802; died June 14, 1821, at Havana, Cuba, of yellow fever.

THE PALMER FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. JOHN PALMER, of Marblehead, Mass., fisherman, is believed to have been the emigrant ancestor of this family. No account of him in that locality precedes a deed under date of Aug. 5, 1701, when he bought of Ambrose Gale, Sr., and wife, Deborah, merchant, one-eighth part of a tract of land, laid out to Nicholas Merritt, deceased, in y^e Plaine farm, bought of Mr. Humphrey for herbage of cattle, depending by right to his son John Merritt & bought by me of him some years since, containing 3 acres.

Oct. 22, 1724, John Palmer, Sr., M'h'd, shoreman, makes a deed of gift to his two grandchildren, viz.; to Christopher Bubier son of my dau. Margaret y^e parts of y^e new house I lately built, which stands between my dwelling house I now live in and the barn — that is two-thirds of the cellar and one-half of the garret.

To Elleanor Palmer, dau. of my son John Palmer, I give y^e chamber over s^d lower room, one half of y^e garret and one-third of the cellar, in partnership with her kinsman Bubier.

Nov. 2, 1728, he gives to his grandson Christopher Bubier, a dwelling house, barn & land.

Admⁿ on his estate was granted his son Capt. John Palmer, Dec. 31, 1729. In the inventory is mentioned one-third part of a fish house, at the Neck, at present in the occupation of his son John.

His wife was Mary, and on the First Church records of Marblehead she is named among others as having been a member July 18, 1716, and that she died Feb., 1734, aged 82, making her birth in 1652. The number of his children does not appear on record, and the foregoing deeds reveal all that is known of his family.

Children were : —

2. JOHN PALMER², born — ; died June, 1741.

3. MARGARET PALMER², born — ; md. Christopher Bubier, after whose decease she married, second, — Andrews. She was received into the church and baptized May 25, 1701, and Christopher Bubier received and baptized Dec. 24, 1769.

Children were : —

(a) JOSEPH BUBIER², bapt. Feb. 6, 1703-4; died young.

(b) CHRISTOPHER BUBIER², bapt. June 6, 1706; died June 30, 1786.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. JOHN PALMER² (No. 2), son of John¹ and Mary Palmer; born — ; died June, 1741; md. Mary, dau. of Richard and Alice Skinner; she baptized in the First Church of Marblehead, Mass., Sept. 8, 1695, and died before 1751. He baptized and received into the Second Church July 1, 1716.

He made his will June 20, 1741; proved July 6 following; in which he bequeaths to daus. Mary, Deborah, Elleanor, Alice, and Tabitha £150 each O. T. — £50 to be paid within a month, and the residue 12 mos. after my decease. To dau. Mary £400, in like bills, out of personal estate, when arrived at the age of 21. To grandson, John Palmer Frothingham, son of dau. Tabitha, £200. Wife Mary to have the use of the real estate during life, or until her marriage; then son John to have it. Wife Mary appointed Ex'x. Dying before she completed her administration, Nathan Bowen was appointed adm' on both estates Jan. 1, 1751.

"Aug. 16, 1713, John Palmer rec'd from his father John Palmer Sr. a deed of gift of the new East end of that house he (John Jr.) now lives in, with the garden.

Nov. 16, 1734: John Palmer & wife Mary, in her right — James Skinner, Cambridge, John Stacey. Mhd. & wife Hannah, in her right — Joseph Smethurst & wife Tabitha, in her right — stand seized of a tract of land, of 17 acres, and 1 small house and 2 Cows Commonage on Great Neck — 25 acres land in pasture between Boston and Salem road, 20 acres of which was bought by our father Richard Skinner of Robert Devereux, and the other 5 of Mary Ingalls, and a small ware house &c. all which of the foregoing estate is divided between the above said parties, by a committee sworn to that purpose.

Oct. 13, 1741, Mary Palmer, widow, bought of Joseph Smethurst, 3½ acres, being part of 20 acres our father Richard Skinner bought of Robert Devereux and sold to me by John Stacey & wife Hannah, Nov. 18, 1734, lying between Boston and Salem Road.

June 4, 1753, Nathan Bowen, Admr of estate of Col. John Palmer for £8. sells to Henry Saunders M'h'd. baker, and wife Mary, a pew in the Meeting house which was built for and improved by said John, standing on S. W. side of the main alley and near the pulpit."

Children were : —

4. MARY PALMER³, bapt. March 27, 1715; died young.
5. DEBORAH PALMER³, bapt. March 27, 1715.
6. ELEANOR PALMER³, bapt. March 27, 1715.
7. ALICE PALMER³, born Sept. 24, 1716.
8. TABITHA PALMER³, born April 23, 1718; md. — Frothingham.
9. ELIZABETH PALMER³, born April 26, 1720.
10. JOHN PALMER³, born Sept. 28, 1723; died young.
11. JOHN PALMER³, born Sept. 16, 1724; died in 1750; md. Susanna Bartlett.
12. MARY PALMER³, bapt. in the Second Church, Marblehead, June 30, 1728.
13. SARAH PALMER³, bapt. June 2, 1731, in the Second Church, Marblehead.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN PALMER³ (No. 11), son of John² (JOHN¹), and Mary (Skinner) Palmer, born in Marblehead, Mass., Sept. 16, 1724; administration on his estate granted his widow, Susanna, and Jacob Fowle, Sept. 10, 1750: inventory of estate £1253 : 4 : 6½. Among the items enumerated was a negro woman, Dinah, and a negro man, Tom.

John Palmer was a shoreman (owner of vessels) and a merchant; he married Susanna Barrett, supposed to have been of Marblehead; of what family is not known, nor was the date of his marriage attainable. After her husband's death she md. second, Jan. 1, 1752, John Saunders, of Salem, Mass., whose parents were originally of Marblehead, although he was born in Salem Jan. 22, 1724-5. (See Appendix, Saunders Family, No. 5.)

Children by first marriage were : —

14. MARY PALMER⁴, bapt. April 7, 1745.
15. ALICE PALMER⁴, bapt. Nov. 4, 1746.
16. JOHN PALMER⁴, bapt. May 22, 1748; md. Hannah Carnes.

Children by second marriage were : —

- (17) MICHAEL SAUNDERS⁴, bapt. Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Oct. 15, 1752.
- (18) SUSANNA SAUNDERS⁴, bapt. Dec. 29, 1754.
- (19) SARAH SAUNDERS⁴, bapt. Feb. 20, 1758.
- (20) JOHN SAUNDERS⁴, born Sept. 15, 1760; died June 19, 1845.

FOURTH GENERATION.

JOHN PALMER⁴ (No. 16), son of John³ (JOHN², JOHN¹), and Susanna (Barrett) Palmer, bapt. in Second Church, Marblehead, Mass., May 22, 1748; died at Concord, N. H., date not ascertained.

After his mother married John Saunders, Sr., he removed with her to Salem, Mass., where he married, Dec. 29, 1782, Hannah Carnes, dau. of John and Hannah (Peele) Carnes; she bapt. in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., July 6, 1755, and died in Concord, N. H.

Children were:—

21. ALICE PALMER⁵, born —; md. Samuel Very.
22. LYDIA PALMER⁵, born —; died about 1875 at Concord, N. H., unmarried.
23. JOHN PALMER⁵, born —.

FIFTH GENERATION.

ALICE PALMER⁵ (No. 21), dau. of John⁴ (JOHN³, JOHN¹), and Hannah (Carnes) Palmer, born —; died in Salem, Mass., —; md. there Dec. 4, 1804, Samuel Very, son of Samuel and Abigail (Crowninshield) Very, born in Salem, Mass., in 1783; bapt. there in the South Church, with his brother, John Crowninshield Very, March 6, 1785.

Children were:—

24. ABIGAIL CROWNINSHIELD VERY⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 26, 1806; living in 1886; md. Sept. 14, 1831, William Penniman Goodhue, son of William and Abigail (Ross) Goodhue; he born in Salem, Mass., July 5, 1807; grocer and ship-chandler.

They had seven children, namely:—

- (a) MARY PENNIMAN GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., May 10, 1833; living in Lowell, Mass., in 1886; md. Feb. 1, 1854, *Stephen Pierson Driver*, No. 102 Driver Family.
- (b) SAMUEL VERY GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., July 14, 1835; living there in 1886.
- (c) WILLIAM WATSON GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 7, 1837; living in California in 1886.
- (d) THEODORE EAMES GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 8, 1839; died at sea Oct. 28, 1863, unmarried. He was on a passage to Africa as supercargo, having previously established himself in business as a merchant at Monrovia.

(e) DANIEL ROSS GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 11, 1841; died June 26, 1847.

(f) ALBERT PENNIMAN GOODHUE⁷, born in Salem, Mass., Dec. 22, 1846; died Oct. 29, 1847.

25. ADALINE AUGUSTA VERY⁶, born Feb. 4, 1808; living in Lynn, Mass., in 1886; md. May 22, 1839, Jonas Watson; he born Nov. 1, 1807.

They had three children, namely: —

1. ALICE PALMER WATSON⁷, born in Lynn, Mass., Jan. 22, 1844.

2. PERSIS ADELINE WATSON⁷, born in Lynn, Mass., Feb. 3, 1846.

3. HANNAH ABBEY WATSON⁷, born in Lynn, Mass., Oct. 16, 1850.

26. SUSAN PALFREY VERY⁶, born Nov. 26, 1810; died in Salem, Mass., June 8, 1885, unmarried.

THE PATTERSON FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1 WILLIAM PATTERSON¹ (or Pattason, Town Records), birth not given, married May 18, 1725, Lydia Curtis, dau. of William and Judith Curtis; she born July 24, 1702. He apparently lived but a few years after his marriage, and his widow married second, as his second wife, Jan. 14, 1734-5, Isaac Stileman, Sr., whose first wife was Preserved —, by whom she had issue Elizabeth, Preserved, Isaac, and Mary; all baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Jan. 21, 1727-8.

Children were two, and perhaps others: —

2. WILLIAM PATTERSON², born in Salem, Mass., —; died in 1770.
 3. JOHN PATTERSON², born —; md. Aug. 20, 1752, Anna Carnes.
-

SECOND GENERATION.

WILLIAM PATTERSON² (No. 2), son of William¹ and Lydia (Curtis) Patterson; born in Salem, Mass., —; administration on his estate granted his widow, Rebecca, who, March 5, 1770, gave bonds with Daniel Curtis, brother of her mother-in-law, and William Patterson.

He was a mariner, and married, date not found, Rebecca Tozzer, dau. of — and Mary Tozzer; she (Rebecca) born in 1724, and died Jan. 18, 1814, æt. 90. Her mother, Mary, died a widow, July 22, 1785, æt. 86.

Children were: —

4. WILLIAM PATTERSON³, born in Salem, Mass., in 1746; died Sept. 6, 1793.
5. REBECCA PATTERSON³, bapt. Dec. 28, 1755.
6. LYDIA PATTERSON³, bapt. Dec. 28, 1755; md. July 27, 1780, John Trafton.
7. SARAH PATTERSON³, bapt. July 3, 1757; md. Feb. 20, 1780, John Symmes.
8. JOHN PATTERSON³, bapt. May 4, 1761.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. WILLIAM PATTERSON³, son of William² (WILLIAM¹), and Rebecca (Tozzer) Patterson, born in Salem, Mass., in 1746; died at home, Sept. 6, 1793, having been taken ill on a return voyage from the West Indies. He was a master-mariner, and commanded the private armed ship "Disdain," of twenty guns and one hundred and ten men; and the brig "Favorite," of eleven guns and fifty men (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. III. p. 130).

He married, first, April 2, 1764, Susanna Rich, dau. of Abraham and Mary Rich, who was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Oct. 2, 1743; she died shortly after her marriage, and he married second, Oct. 17, 1769, Mehitable Smith, dau. of Robert and Mary (Ellingwood) Smith, of Beverly, Mass., who was baptized April 18, 1742, and died Sept. 10, 1802. Rebecca (Tozzer) Patterson, the grandmother, died Jan. 18, 1814, aged 90 years.

Children by second wife were:—

9. WILLIAM PATTERSON⁴, bapt. in St. Peter's Church, Salem, Mass. (Episcopal), March 18, 1770; died Nov. 2, 1806.

He married three times: first, Margaret Fuller; second, Sarah Archer; third, Polly Williams.

10. ROBERT SMITH PATTERSON⁴, bapt. Sept. 1, 1771; died young.
11. MEHITABLE PATTERSON⁴, bapt. April 25, 1773; died Nov. 25, 1808; md. Dec. 27, 1795, Clifford Crowninshield Byrne, son of Clifford and Margaret (Whitefoot) Byrne, who was bapt. in St. Peter's (Episcopal) Church, Salem, Mass., Sept. 27, 1772. They had two daughters. (See Appendix, Crowninshield Family, No. 11 (b).)
12. HANNAH PATTERSON⁴, bapt. Feb. 22, 1774; died young.
13. BENJAMIN PATTERSON⁴, born Nov. 22, 1779; died July 8, 1818; md. June 19, 1803, Mary Barnes, dau. of Maj. Thomas and Hannah (Driver) Barnes; she born in Salem, Mass., June 2, 1783; died Sept. 18, 1852 (No. 46 Driver Family, 4th child).
14. ELIPHALET SMITH PATTERSON⁴ (Capt.), born in Salem, Mass., in 1781; died of fever at sea, Aug. 18, 1806, perhaps unmarried.
15. JOHN SMITH PATTERSON⁴, born in Salem, Mass., Jan., 1783; died there, of consumption, Nov. 12, 1785.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. WILLIAM PATTERSON⁴ (No. 9), son of Capt. William³ (Capt. WILLIAM², WILLIAM¹), and Mehitable (Smith) Patterson; bapt. in St. Peter's Church of Salem, Mass. (Episcopal), March 18, 1770; news of his death received Nov. 2, 1806; master-mariner; md. first, March 29, 1789, Margaret Fuller; md. second, June 2, 1795, Sarah Archer, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Norris) Archer; she born in 1767; md. third, Nov. 7, 1804, Polly Williams; admitted to Essex Lodge of Freemasons, Salem, Mass., May 24, 1797.

Children, all baptized in the East Church (Unitarian), Salem, Mass., were:—

16. WILLIAM PATTERSON⁵, bapt. Jan. 11, 1795.
17. HENRY NORRIS PATTERSON⁵, bapt. Nov. 27, 1796.
18. SARAH PATTERSON⁵, bapt. March 3, 1799; md. Dec. 17, 1823, John Ward, son of Andrew and Martha (Babbidge) Ward; he born Dec. 29, 1796; died Jan. 25, 1829. (See Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 31.)
She md. second, Joseph Sibley. No issue.
19. AMELIA PATTERSON⁵, born in Salem, Mass., Aug., 1800; bapt. Nov. 9, 1800; died Sept. 21, 1802.
20. MEHITABLE SMITH PATTERSON⁵, bapt. Nov. 9, 1800; probably a twin to Amelia; died Sept. 21, 1802.
21. JOHN ARCHER PATTERSON⁵, born Aug. 30, 1805; died Oct. 7, 1805.

FOURTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN PATTERSON⁴ (No. 13), son of Capt. William³ (Capt. WILLIAM², WILLIAM¹), and Mehitable (Smith) Patterson, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 22, 1779; died of consumption, July 8, 1818; buried in Howard Street Burial-ground, Salem, Mass.; md. June 19, 1803, Mary Barnes, dau. of Maj. Thomas and Hannah (Driver) Barnes, who was born June 2, 1783; died Sept. 18, 1852; she md. second, Jan. 12, 1822, James Marvin, and had one son, Leonard P. Marvin.

Children of **Benjamin** and **Mary (Barnes) Patterson** were:

22. MARY ANN PATTERSON⁵, born Feb. 10, 1806; died Oct., 1853; md. Jan. 12, 1835, William D. Wardwell. No issue.

23. BENJAMIN PATTERSON⁵, born Feb. 21, 1808; died April 22, 1808.
24. BENJAMIN PATTERSON⁵, born Jan. 17, 1809; died Nov., 1856.
25. MEHITABLE SMITH PATTERSON⁵, born Feb. 10, 1811; died Feb. 6, 1848; md. June 23, 1833, Augustus A. Melvin, son of James and Susan (Barnett) Melvin. They had three children, namely:
Nov. 18, 1833; and Beny P. Melvin, living at Bedford, Mass.
 (a) MARY MELVIN⁶, born Sept. 21, 1833; died Nov. 22 following.
 (b) A daughter⁶, born and died same year.
 (c) A son⁶, born ~~1837~~, died ~~young~~. *Augustus L. Melvin*
26. ELIPHALET SMITH PATTERSON⁵, born Aug. 1, 1813; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; md. Sept. 1, 1838, Ann Fuller, dau. of Thomas and Nancy (Carinth) Fuller; she born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 10, 1810; living in 1886 in Salem. No issue, but have an adopted son.
27. WILLIAM PATTERSON⁵, born Aug. 24, 1817; died June 4, 1818.

THE SAUNDERS FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1. PHILEMON SAUNDERS¹, was born in Marblehead, Mass., about 1696. It is barely possible that he may have been son of Ephraim and Charity (Sandin) Saunders. A record exists of the births of Ephraim's children; but the names on the MS. are either torn off, or perfectly illegible. His first child was a son, born March 22, 1695.

Philemon Saunders was a biscuit-baker; he married Sarah Skerry, dau. of Henry, Jr., and Priscilla (Lunt) Skerry; she was admitted to full communion with the First Church of Marblehead Dec. 28, 1718. A note written against her name states that "she has removed to Salem."

Dec. 4, 1718:— I John Skerry now of Chatham, co. Kent, England, late of Salem New Eng., son of Henry Skerry, dec'd, cordwainer, for £16, deeds to my brother-in-law, Philemon Saunders, of Marblehead, biscuit-maker, all my right, tittle and interest in any estate I have or may have in Salem, after the decease of my mother, "which said estate Mr. Saunders sold to Eph'm Skerry, brother of s^d John, March 30, 1719."

Henry Skerry made his will April 10, 1697; proved May 3, following; wife Priscilla ex'x. Children Henry, Ephraim, John, Ann, Priscilla, Mary, and Sarah, all unmarried, and granddaughter Priscilla Smith.

Children were:—

2. **PHILEMON SAUNDERS**², bapt. July 15, 1716; living April 7, 1759, when he was in the West Indies and sold land to Mackey & als., of Salem; names wife Abigail, one of the daughters of John Ruck, blacksmith, and Esther Lang, her sister, who married for his second wife Jeffry Lang, a goldsmith, of Salem, Mass.
3. **ELIZABETH SAUNDERS**², born in 1717; bapt. April 5, 1719; died Nov. 14 (Feb. 29, another acct.), 1788; md. June 22, 1740, Jonathan Webb, son of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb; he born Dec. 26, 1716;

bapt. Oct. 19, 1718 ; died Feb. 29, 1792 (see Appendix, Webb Family, No. 3). They had eight children, viz. :—

- (a) PRISCILLA WEBB², born in 1740; bapt. Nov. 8, 1747; died Oct. 5, 1831, æt. 91; md. Oct. 9, 1760, David Ropes, son of Thomas and Sarah (Hodges) Ropes; he bapt. April 14, 1739; died Dec. 20, 1793.
- (b) JONATHAN WEBB², bapt. Nov. 8, 1747.
- (c) ELIZABETH WEBB², bapt. Nov. 8, 1747.
- (d) SARAH WEBB², bapt. April 21, 1751.
- (e) BENJAMIN WEBB², bapt. March 3, 1754.
- (f) STEPHEN WEBB², bapt. Sept. 26, 1756; died Feb. 11, 1831.
- (g) SAMUEL WEBB², bapt. July 22, 1759.
- (h) MICHAEL WEBB², born July 19, 1762; bapt. Aug. 1 following; died Nov. 12, 1839.

4. MARY SAUNDERS², bapt. May 20, 1722.

5. JOHN SAUNDERS², born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 22, 1724–5.

6. MICHAEL SAUNDERS², born Aug. 8, 1727; bapt. at First Church, Salem, Mass., Sept. 17, 1727.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN SAUNDERS² (No. 5), son of Philemon¹ and Sarah (Skerry) Saunders; born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 22, 1724–5; died —; md. Jan. 1, 1752, Susanna, widow of John Palmer, of Marblehead, and daughter of — Barrett, supposed to be of Marblehead, Mass., but of what family is not known.

When she married John Saunders she had the following children :—

- (a) MARY PALMER, bapt. April 7, 1745.
- (b) ALICE PALMER, bapt. Nov. 4, 1746.
- (c) JOHN PALMER, bapt. May 22, 1748.

“Dec. 15, 1761, John Saunders, baker, bought of Michael Moore and wife Sarah, the front part of their mansion house as far as the chimney: bounded on Richard Lee, John Gardner, John Turner and said Lee again.

JONATHAN WEBB } Wit.”
SAMUEL SAUNDERS }

“April 19, 1762, John Saunders, shopkeeper, bo’t of David Ropes & wife Priscilla (dau. of Jona. Webb & Eliz. (Saunders), for £53, 6s, 8d. the small mansion house and land, late of Hannah Ropes, dec’d, which she bought of Michael Moore, bounded S. on Main St., W. on land late of Timothy Pickering now of John Gardner Jr. N. on s^d Saunders, W. on land late Moore’s.

ELIZABETH WEBB } Wit.”
EBENEZER GRAY }

“Dec. 29, 1766 :—Whereas, Nov. 9, 1734, Hannah, the widow and adm’x of William Pickering, sold by order of Superior Court, to Benj. Prescott, 3 common rights in the common lands, and afterwards Dec. 1, 1740, he, s^d Prescott sold the same to William Brown Esq. and s^d Brown had the same rights entered in the sheep pasture instead of

the great pasture, and as he had no legal right to improve more than 2 of the 3^d rights . . . s^d Brown, May 8, 1763 conveyed to Mary Skerry one of the s^d 3 rights in Gt : pasture, and afterwards, April 15, 1766, she sold 1 right to John Saunders for £10:13:4: which s^d Saunders for same consideration sold to Jona. Gardner, merchant, and wife Mary, and Abraham Watson and wife Elizabeth, the s^d Mary & Elizabeth being 2 of the children of s^d Hannah Pickering."

Children were five, all baptized in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., viz. : —

7. MICHAEL SAUNDERS^s, bapt. Oct. 15, 1752; died in 1776 of sunstroke and fever; being aid to General Putnam in the Revolution, he started for Bunker Hill, when he was overcome by the heat, and died in a few days.
8. SUSANNA SAUNDERS^s, bapt. Dec. 29, 1754; died in 1838; md. March 17, 1771, when 17 years of age, Rev. Daniel Hopkins, aged 37, who was first a school-teacher in Salem, Mass., Susanna being one of his pupils.

March 15, 1776, at a meeting held by the Third Church of Salem, Mass., at the house of Elder Benjamin Goodhue, Mr. Hopkins was unanimously chosen the first pastor of that Society, and was ordained Nov. 18 following. Oct. 10, 1804, Rev. Browne Emerson was chosen colleague and pastor with Dr. Hopkins, being ordained the fourth Wednesday in April, 1805.

Dec. 14, 1814, Dr. Hopkins died, after a pastorate of about thirty-six years.

Children were : —

- (a) NATHANIEL HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Feb. 16, 1772; died young.
 - (b) NATHANIEL HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Third Church, Salem, Mass., May 7, 1775.
 - (c) DANIEL HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Third Church, Salem, Sept. 19, 1779; died young.
 - (d) SUSANNA HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Third Church, Salem, Jan. 20, 1782.
 - (e) DANIEL HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Third Church, Salem, Oct. 17, 1784.
 - (f) MARY HOPKINS⁴, bapt. Third Church, Salem, Sept. 30, 1787.
9. SARAH SAUNDERS^s, bapt. Feb. 20, 1757; md. Aug. 14, 1791, Richard Lang, of Hanover, N. H., when she was about 38 years of age.
She was about to marry Judge Sewall, but changed for Mr. Lang. She lived to be about 70 years of age, leaving a husband, son, and daughter, Susan, who married Prof. Haddock, nephew of Daniel Webster, and had son William Haddock, a physician of Beverly, Mass.
 10. NATHANIEL SAUNDERS^s, bapt. Aug. 20, 1758.
 11. JOHN SAUNDERS^s, born Sept. 15, 1760; died June 19, 1845; md. Sarah Crowninshield.

THIRD GENERATION.

JOHN SAUNDERS³ (No. 11), son of John² (PHILEMON¹), and Susanna (Barrett) (Palmer) Saunders; born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 15, 1760; died there, June 19, 1845; md. Sept. 27, 1783 (Sept. 15, 1784, another account), Sarah Crowninshield, dau. of John and Eunice (Nutting) Crowninshield; she born Feb. 21, 1764 (Feb. 20, 1763, another account); died Nov. 8, 1831. (See Appendix, Crowninshield Family, No. 16.)

"Sept. 20, 1792: — John Saunders, Jr., agrees to pave in front of his Fathers house on Essex St." — *Salem Gazette*.

"July 5, 1792; — Indenture between Joshua Dodge, and wife Elizabeth, and John Saunders Jr. and wife Sarah, said Elizabeth and Sarah being daus. of Capt. John Crowninshield, and as co-heirs of their late mother Mrs. Eunice Vans, dec'd, and part of estate they hold, by force of will of the late John Nutting, dec'd. — said Joshua Dodge and wife Elizabeth, sell to said Sarah, the dwelling house &c. now occupied by said Saunders, situated on Main Street, bounded on Priscilla Abbott — S. & E. on Samuel Blythe — E. on George Chapman & N. on Main St. with other lands on North Salem."

"Dec. 10, 1795, John Saunders Jr. and wife Sarah for \$1660, deed to Priscilla Abbott, a house, barn and land, being the premises once owned & occupied by John Nutting Esq.

Same day he and wife Sarah convey to Abel Lawrence three undivided rights in the Great pasture lately owned by my father John Saunders, Merchant."

Children were: —

12. **MICHAEL SAUNDERS**⁴, born Sept. 7 (June 1, another account), 1786; died Aug. 3, 1821, in New York city, in a hospital, having been taken sick on a homeward voyage, being a master-mariner, and put into the port of New York for treatment. He married Feb. 12, 1809, Judith Woodbury, of Beverly, Mass., who died Feb. 27, 1814.

Children were: —

(a) **ELIZABETH DODGE SAUNDERS**⁵, born June 20, 1809; died Sept. 27, 1811.

(b) **JOHN SAUNDERS SAUNDERS**⁵, born Sept. 30, 1812; died Aug. 18, 1813.

13. **SARAH SAUNDERS**⁴, born June 1, 1788; died in 1846.

14. **EUNICE SAUNDERS**⁴, born Oct. 4, 1790; died March 13, 1878; md. Dec. 17, 1810, James F. Harrison, who was born in 1788; died June 3, 1817.

They had three children, viz. : —

- (a) JOHN SAUNDERS HARRISON⁵, born Feb. 20, 1811; md. July 14, 1835, Elizabeth Sweetser.
 - (b) SARAH SAUNDERS HARRISON⁵, born Oct. 31, 1812; died June 6, 1834.
 - (c) CATHERINE ELIZABETH HARRISON⁵, born Jan. 11, 1815.
15. EDWARD AUGUSTUS HOLYOKE SAUNDERS⁴, born July 25, 1792; died Oct. 30, 1815, unmarried. He was named for the family physician, Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, son of President Edward Holyoke, of Harvard College, a very celebrated physician of Salem, Mass., and the first person on whom the degree of doctor of medicine was conferred by Harvard College, who after he attained his hundredth year passed an hour in the study of one of his medical acquaintances, examining the results of a new operation for a dangerous disease (Sketch of Salem).
 16. SUSANNA BARRETT SAUNDERS⁵, born May 25, 1794; died about 1875; md. Aaron Osborne, of Salem, Mass. No issue.
 17. ELIZA SAUNDERS⁵, born Nov. 12, 1796; died in 1797.
 18. ELIZA CROWNSHIELD SAUNDERS⁵, born in New York, March 1, 1798; died May 21, 1881; md. May, 1846, John Peterson. No issue.
 19. MARIA ANTOINETTE SAUNDERS⁵, born in New York, May 28, 1799; died in Salem, Mass., Sept. 8, 1874; buried in Beverly, Mass.; md. Nov. 24, 1828, *Rev. Joseph Metcalf Driver*, son of Stephen, Jr., and Ruth (Metcalf) Driver, No. 77, Driver Family.
 20. JOHN SAUNDERS⁵, born Oct. 2, 1800; died Sept. 3, 1801.

THE SILSBEE FAMILY.

[FROM SILSBEE FAMILY, ESSEX INSTITUTE COLLECTIONS, WITH
ADDITIONS.]

FIRST GENERATION.

1. HENRY SILSBEE, or **SILLSBEY**¹, the emigrant, was on the "25 day of the 5th. month, 1639, received as an inhabitant of Salem." Prior to 1647 he removed to Ipswich, and in 1651 he is found negotiating for a dwelling-house and six acres of land in Lynn, "to be near old-country neighbors," where he remained the rest of his life. "In 1649-50, Henry Silsbye had 4 acres granted him, if it be there to be had, at the West Meadows by Goodman Fowler's."

He was a shoemaker, and made his will March 17, 1698-9; admitted to probate Dec. 16, 1700. He married Dorothy —, who died Sept. 27, 1676; and he married, second, Nov. 18, 1680, Grace, widow of Jonas Eaton, of Reading, Mass.

Children by **Dorothy** were:—

2. **HENRY SILSBEK**², born —.
3. **NATHANIEL SILSBEE**², born about 1651; died about 1717.
4. **MARY SILSBEE**², born —; md. Aug. 15, 1664, Zachary Marsh, son of John and Susanna Marsh, who was bapt. April 30, 1637. They had five children, of whom Jonathan Marsh, born in 1672, married in 1697 Mary Very, dau. of Samuel and Alice (Woodice) Very; she born in 1668, and a daughter, Elizabeth, bapt. July 10, 1670, and died before 1721, who married, Dec. 15, 1696, Capt. Samuel King, probably son of John and Elizabeth (Goldthwaite) King; he born May, 1664; he married, second, July 6, 1721, Elizabeth, dau. of Dr. John Barton and Lydia (Roberts).
5. **JOHN SILSBEE**², died before June 26, 1676; md. Feb. 15, 1673, Bethiah Pitman, dau. of Nathaniel Pitman, and had John, born Feb. 7, 1674; she married, second, Dec. 15, 1680, Alexander Coale, of Marblehead, Mass., who died Aug. 24, 1687. His birthplace probably was Dumbarton, Scotland.

6. JONATHAN SILSBEE², born —; md. Jan. 1, 1673, Bethiah Marsh, and had Jonathan³, Sarah³, Bethiah³, Elizabeth³, and Hannah³, all born in Lynn, Mass.
7. SAMUEL SILSBEE², born —; died Oct., 1687; md. July 4, 1676, Mary Biscoe, and had Mary, born in Lynn, Mass., June 20, 1677, and Samuel, born in Lynn, Mass., —.
8. EPHRAIM SILSBEE², born —; died before March, 1729; md. Jan. 23, 1693, Rachel Bassett, dau. of William and Sarah (dau. of Hugh Burt, of Lynn, Mass.) Bassett; she born March 13, 1660. They had a son Henry, born Nov. 15, 1694, who, Dec. 3, 1713, married Abigail Collins, and they had five children, of whom Lydia married Aholiab Diamond, son of John Diamond, and had children Samuel, Richard, and Mary, who married Robert Pitcher, Oct. 2, 1760, and became the well-known Moll Pitcher, who was born in 1738, "took a poor man for a husband, and then adopted what she doubtless thought the harmless employment of fortune-telling, in order to support her children. In this she herself was probably more successful than she anticipated, and became celebrated not only throughout America, but throughout the world, for her skill. It would seem, from the stories told of her, that she possessed the faculty which is now termed clairvoyance. If she had married differently, as she might have done, she would have adorned a brighter and happier station in life, and the world would never have heard of her fame." — LEWIS, *Hist. of Lynn*, pp. 236, 237.
9. HANNAH SILSBEE², died Jan. 8, 1682; md. Dec. 2, 1680, Thomas Laughton, Jr., son of Thomas. They had son John, born Jan. 3, 1682.
10. SARAH SILSBEE², md. Feb. 25, 1682, Joseph, son of Joseph and Sarah Collins.

SECOND GENERATION.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE² (No. 3), son of Henry¹ and Dorothy Silsbee, born about 1651; died about 1717-18; a carpenter; md. first, Nov. 5, 1671, Deborah, dau. of John and Margaret Tompkins, who was bapt. June 8, 1651; died before 1697. He md. second, Elizabeth Pickering, dau. of Jonathan² and Jane (Cromwell) Pickering, and granddaughter of Thomas and Ann Cromwell, and of John and Elizabeth Pickering. She was born June 2, 1669; died about 1723-4.

"Jan. 10, 1700-1:—Jonathan Pickering of Salem, shipwright, gives power of attorney to Nath'l Silsby of Salem, journeyman, his son-in-law."

"March 30, 1715:—Nath'l Silsbee and wife Elizabeth, Sarah Pickering, and Mercy Smith, the sons and daughters of Jona. and

Jane Pickering, for £4, release to Jonathan Glover al our right in 2½ acres, conveyed by our father Pickering to said Glover."

Children by **Deborah** were: —

11. HENRY SILSBEE³, born April 12, 1674.
12. NATHANIEL SILSBEE³, born April 11, 1676; died April 21 following.
13. NATHANIEL SILSBEE³, born Oct. 23, 1677; died Jan. 2, 1769.
14. SAMUEL SILSBEE³, born Jan. 30, 1679.
15. JOHN SILSBEE³, born March 20, 1682.
16. MARGARET SILSBEE³, born March 20, 1684; md. March 20, 1711, Ephraim Skerry², son of Henry² (Henry¹), and Priscilla (Lunt) Skerry; he bapt. in the First Church of Salem, April, 1685, and died in 1741; brother to Sarah Skerry, who married Philemon Saunders. (See Appendix, Saunders Family, No. 1.)

Children were: —

- (a) HENRY SKERRY⁴, bapt. Aug. 17, 1712.
- (b) HANNAH SKERRY⁴, bapt. March 28, 1714.
- (c) EPHRAIM SKERRY⁴, bapt. April 1, 1716.
- (d) JOHN SKERRY⁴, born —.
- (e) FRANCIS SKERRY⁴, born —.
- (f) MARGARET SKERRY⁴, born —.
- (g) DEBORAH SKERRY⁴, born —; md. Jan. 1, 1750–1, John, son of Jonathan and Hannah (Silsbee) Felt, No. 21 (a).
17. MARY SILSBEE³, born —.
18. SARAH SILSBEE³, born —.
19. JONATHAN SILSBEE³, born —; md. April 12, 1720, Abigail White.
20. HANNAH SILSBEE³, born —; md. July 26, 1721, Jonathan Felt, son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Purchase) Felt, who was born in Salem, Mass., March 4, 1699.

Children were: —

- (a) JONATHAN FELT⁴, born —; md. July 18, 1744, Sarah Reeves, dau. of William and Sarah (Fountaine) Reeves; she bapt. First Church of Marblehead, Aug. 26, 1722.
- (b) JOHN FELT⁴, born —; died in Danvers, Mass., before 1788; cordwainer; md. first, Jan. 1, 1750, his cousin, Deborah Skerry, dau. of Ephraim and Margaret (Silsbee, No. 16) Skerry. He md. second, May 19, 1757, Catherine, widow of John Turner, Jr., and daughter of John and Catherine (Manning) Berry, Catherine being sister to Mary Berry, who married Samuel Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 15.)

Children by **Deborah** were: —

- (1) HANNAH FELT⁵, bapt. June 7, 1752.
- (2) JOHN FELT⁵, born Sept. 16, 1754; died Sept. 12, 1796; md. Feb. 13, 1780, Mary Porter, and had six children, one of whom, Sally Felt⁶, was born June 24, 1790; died Oct. 20, 1849; md. May 6, 1810, Benjamin Webb, son of Benjamin and Judith (Phelps) Webb. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 36.)

Children by **Catherine** were: —

- (3) GEORGE FELT⁵, bapt. First Church, Salem, April 23, 1758.
- (4) CATHERINE FELT⁵, bapt. First Church, Salem, Jan. 27, 1760; md. May 13, 1777, Jonathan Porter.

- (5) **DEBORAH FELT**^s, bapt. First Church, Salem, June 2, 1765.
 (6) **JOSEPH FELT**^s, bapt. First Church, Salem, March 1, 1767.
 (7) **EPHRAIM FELT**^s, bapt. First Church, Salem, Dec. 4, 1768.
 (c) **ELIZABETH FELT**^s, born —; md. Dec. 3, 1746, John Atkinson, son of Theodore and Mary (Norman) Atkinson; he bapt. Sept. 4, 1726.
 (d) **NATHANIEL FELT**^s, born —, 1723; died Nov. 2, 1789; md. Mary, dau. of John and Mary (Luscomb) Mugford; she bapt. Dec. 17, 1727. (See Appendix, Luscomb Family, No. 6.)
 (e) **DAVID FELT**^s, born —; md. Nov. 8, 1758, Susanna Becket, dau. of John and Rebecca (Beadle) Becket, and sister to Elizabeth, who married William Peele, whose daughter Eunice married, first, Michael Barnes (No. 46, Driver Family), and second, Capt. Christopher Babbidge (Babbidge Family, No. 29).
 (f) **JOSEPH FELT**^s, born —; md. first, Mary —; second, Abigail Lewis, of Lynn, to whom he was published Jan. 13, 1774.

Children by **Elizabeth** were: —

21. **ELIZABETH SILSBEE**^s, bapt. at age, Feb. 11, 1710; md. Feb. 10, 1720-1, John Cavies, of Ipswich, Mass.
 22. **JANE SILSBEE**^s, born —; md. Jan. 2, 1734, John Flint, son of David and Ruth (Flint) Flint. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 38.) They had one son, John, bapt. Oct. 10, 1736; md. Susanna Webb, dau. of Jonathan and Priscilla (Bray) Webb. (See Appendix, Webb Family, No. 7.)
 23. **ANN SILSBEE**^s, born —; died Dec., 1723.
 24. **ABIGAIL SILSBEE**^s, born —.
 25. **BENJAMIN SILSBEE**^s, born —; died before 1754.
 26. **WILLIAM SILSBEE**^s, born —; died unmarried.
 27. **JOSEPH SILSBEE**^s, born —; md. first, Dec. 23, 1733, Mary Pain; md. second, Jan. 25, 1743, Margaret Abbott, who married, second, in 1770, John Young, and died March 1, 1809, aged 90. His dau. Elizabeth, by Mary, md. for his second wife, Jonathan Archer^s, No. 33, Archer Family, which see in Appendix.

THIRD GENERATION.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE^s (No. 13), son of Nathaniel^s (HENRY¹), and Deborah (Tompkins) Silsbee, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 23, 1677; died Jan. 2, 1769; md. first, May 27, 1703, Hannah Pickering, supposed to have been the daughter of Jona. and Jane (Cromwell) Pickering; she bapt. May 28, 1682. He md. second, Martha —.

Children by **Hannah** were: —

28. **NATHANIEL SILSBEE**^s, born Aug. 11, 1705; died Aug. 4, 1734; md. Oct. 24, 1730, Mary Daniels, dau. of Stephen; she living in 1754, a widow.

29. HANNAH SILSBEE⁴, born — ; published June 29, 1729, to Joseph Prince; she md. second, Oct. 26, 1739, John Mascoll.

Children by **Martha** were: —

30. WILLIAM SILSBEE⁴, bapt. Aug. 14, 1714; died about July, 1783; md. Oct. 17, 1735, Joanna Fowle, dau. of Zechary Fowle.

FOURTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM SILSBEE⁴ (No. 30), son of Nathaniel³ (NATHANIEL², HENRY¹), and Martha Silsbee, bapt. Aug. 14, 1715; died about July, 1783; carpenter; md. Oct. 17, 1735, Joanna Fowle, dau. of Zachary³ (Zecharius², George¹) and Ruth (Ingalls or Ingersoll) Fowle; she born in 1713; died Feb. 25, 1793.

Children were: —

31. JOANNA SILSBEE⁵, born —; md. Dec. 1, 1763, Mansfield Burrill, son of Ebenezer and Mary (Mansfield) Burrill, of Lynn, Mass.; he born Oct. 1, 1739; died Jan. 2, 1826; carpenter.

Children were: —

- (a) WILLIAM BURRILL⁶, born about 1767; died Aug. 20, 1831; md. Eunice Coffin.
- (b) JOANNA BURRILL⁶, born about 1772; died Jan. 26, 1853; md. Nov. 13, 1796, Henry Webb.
- (c) MANSFIELD BURRILL, JR.⁶, born —; died in 1827; md. May 18, 1794, Sarah Randall.
- (d) MARTHA BURRILL⁶, born —; md. Marshall Stocker.
- (e) MARY BURRILL⁶, born —; died in 1803.
- (f) SARAH BURRILL⁶, born —; died April, 1811.

32. MARTHA SILSBEE⁵, born —, 1742; died Jan. 31, 1804; published Sept. 19, 1761, to William Emmerton, son of John and Mary (Foster) Emmerton; she married, second, as his second wife, July 28, 1768, Capt. Christopher Babbidge. (See Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 22.)

33. NATHANIEL SILSBEE⁵, born in Salem, Mass., Nov. 9, 1748; died June 25, 1791; md. Nov. 1, 1770, Sarah Becket.

34. HANNAH SILSBEE⁵, born —; md. Nov. 27, 1764, Elijah Haskell.

35. WILLIAM SILSBEE⁵, born about 1749; died July, 1794.

FIFTH GENERATION.

Capt. NATHANIEL SILSBEE⁶ (No. 33), son of William⁴ (NATHANIEL³, NATHANIEL², HENRY¹), and Joanna (Fowle) Silsbee), born Nov. 9, 1748; died June 25, 1791; master-mariner; md. Nov. 1, 1770, Sarah Becket, dau. of John and Rebecca (Beadle) Becket, and sister to Susanna, who married David Felt, fifth child of No. 21; also sister to Elizabeth, who married William Peele, and had Eunice Peele, who first married Michael Barnes (No. 45, Driver Family), and second, Christopher Babbidge. (See Appendix, Babbidge Family, No. 29.)

Children were:—

36. **NATHANIEL SILSBEE**⁶, born in Salem, Mass., Jan. 14, 1773; first a master-mariner, afterwards a successful merchant; died at Salem, Mass., July 14, 1850. President of the Senate of the State of Massachusetts from 1823 to 1825, and a Senator in the United States Congress from 1826 to 1835. Chosen a Member of Congress in 1816; served in the House until 1821. He married, Dec. 12, 1802, Mary Crowninshield, dau. of George and Mary (Derby) Crowninshield; she born Sept. 24, 1778; died Sept. 20, 1835.

They had three children, namely:—

- (a) **NATHANIEL SILSBEE**⁷, born Dec. 28, 1804; md. Nov. 9, 1839, M. A. C. Devereux.
 - (b) **MARY SILSBEE**⁷, born April 10, 1809; md. May 21, 1839, Rev. Jared Sparks, late President of Harvard College.
 - (c) **GEORGIANA SILSBEE**⁷, born Jan. 27, 1824; md. first, March 30, 1846, Francis Henry Appleton, of Boston, Mass.; md. second, Sept. 12, 1855, Henry Saltonstall (Essex Inst. Hist. Collects., Vol. IV. p. 87).
37. **SARAH SILSBEE**⁶, born April 28, 1777; died July 12, 1840; md. Feb. 12, 1804, Capt. Timothy Wellman. (See Appendix, Wellman Family, No. 28.)
38. **WILLIAM SILSBEE**⁶, born March 21, 1779; md. Nov. 14, 1808, Mary Hodges.
39. **JOANNA SILSBEE**⁶, born Sept. 21, 1780; died Aug., 1782.
40. **POLLY SILSBEE**⁶, born Aug. 28, 1781; died young.
41. **ZACHARIAH SILSBEE**⁶, born Aug. 9, 1783; md. Nov. 27, 1810, Sarah Boardman, and had John Boardman⁷, who married, May 10, 1849, Martha Mansfield Shepard. (See Webb Family, Appendix, No. 13, 7th child.)
42. **JOANNA SILSBEE**⁶, born Sept. 22, 1789; died the next month.

THE WEBB FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

1 JONATHAN WEBB¹, perhaps son of John Webb, born about 1690; a coaster, and engaged in the fishing trade. He died before 1765; md. March 23, 1713-14, Priscilla, dau. of Robert and Christian (Collins) Bray, who was born March 11, 1689-90; died after Feb. 4, 1767; baptized and received into the First Church of Salem, Mass., at the same time with her husband, Feb. 26, 1715. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 7.)

Children were: —

2. **PRISCILLA WEBB**², bapt. March 4, 1716; died March 22, 1807; md. Oct. 9, 1740, Gamaliel Hodges, son of Gamaliel and Sarah (Williams) Hodges, who was born Oct. 13, 1716; died Aug. 27, 1768. He made his will June, 1768, in which he mentions sons Samuel, Joseph, and Jonathan; daus. Mary, Sarah Putnam, and Priscilla, who married Samuel Ward. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 15.)
3. **JONATHAN WEBB**², born Dec. 26, 1716; died Feb. 29, 1792; md. June 22, 1740, Elizabeth, dau. of Philemon and Sarah (Skerry) Saunders.
4. **JOHN WEBB**², bapt. Oct. 19, 1718; died young.
5. **STEPHEN WEBB**², born Feb. 13, 1722; died March 24, 1796; cordwainer; md. first, Nov. 27, 1746, Elizabeth Best, who died in a year; md. second, June 7, 1750, Mary, widow of Jacob Manning, and daughter of Joshua and Margaret (Lambert) Tyler; md. third, about 1775, Mary, widow of John Masury, and daughter of — Beans.

He had ten children. He lived in Salem, Mass., near Neck-gate, which was at the foot of Essex Street, the main street of that town; and from it ran a road sometimes covered by the tide, for it followed the curve of the shore, and led round to the Neck.

"June 6, 1782; guards were placed at the Fort and Stephen Webb had the commault, and captains of vessels must give proper answers when hailed if they would not be fired upon them."

Webb Street, Salem, Mass., it is supposed, took its name from this family, as they owned property in its neighborhood.

6. **MARY WEBB**², born about 1724; died of consumption, March 21, 1790; md. July 16, 1747, Joseph Cloutman, son of Joseph and Mary (Peters)

Cloutman, whom she survived; leaving at her death two daughters unmarried, and two sons, Benjamin Cloutman, who married Elizabeth Frye, and Joseph Cloutman, who married Hannah Becket; and a daughter, Elizabeth Cloutman, who married John Bullock.

7. **SUSANNA WEBB**², born about 1726; died after 1768; md. Sept. 29, 1756, John Flint, only son of John and Jane (Silsbee) Flint, and nephew of Ruth Flint, who married Thomas Metcalfe, who was baptized Oct. 10, 1736, and died before 1767. (See Appendix, Flint Family, No. 38; Silsbee Family, No. 22.)

Children were:—

- (a) **JOHN FLINT**³, born Jan. 1, 1757; died Dec. 28, 1813 (gravestone); md. Margaret Cheever, dau. of Peter and Margaret (Ives) Cheever; she born Nov. 5, 1761; died Feb. 12, 1839 (gravestone). (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 21, 2d child.)

They had six children:—

- (1) **ABIGAIL IVES FLINT**⁴; md. Nov. 8, 1807, Timothy Haraden.
- (2) **PRISCILLA FLINT**⁴; died in 1828.
- (3) **SUSANNA PARSONS FLINT**⁴; md. Thomas Brooks.
- (4) **MARY MALLOY FLINT**⁴; md. Samuel Nichols.
- (5) **SARAH FLINT**⁴; md. John B. Currier.
- (6) **JOHN FLINT**⁴; died July, 1811.

- (b) **SUSANNA FLINT**³, born 1759; died Nov. 19, 1848; md. Josiah Parsons, of Newmarket, N. H.

- (c) **JONATHAN FLINT**³, born —; died at sea.

- (d) **JOSEPH FLINT**³, born —; died at sea.

8. **HANNAH WEBB**², bapt. Sept. 24, 1727; died Feb. 14, 1817; md. June 8, 1752, Capt. David Neal, son of Jonathan and Mary (Marston) Neal; he born about 1730; shipmaster, who in 1762 was drowned, having been knocked overboard by the main boom of his own vessel. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 41.)

They had five children, of whom Hannah married John Preston, and their son John married Sarah Driver, No. 66, Driver Family.

9. **SAMUEL WEBB**² (Capt.), born Feb. 18, 1732; died in 1780; md. first, Oct. 14, 1755, Deborah Prince; md. second, Nov. 9, 1758, Hannah Ward, dau. of John and Hannah (Higginson) Ward.

10. **JOHN WEBB**², born Aug. 10, 1733; died May 17, 1811; md. Judith Phelps.

SECOND GENERATION.

JONATHAN WEBB² (No. 3), son of Jonathan¹ and Priscilla (Bray) Webb, born Dec. 26, 1716; died Feb. 29, 1792; md. June 22, 1740, Elizabeth Saunders, dau. of Philemon and Sarah (Skerry) Saunders, born in 1717; died Nov. 14, 1788. (See Appendix, Saunders Family, No. 3.)

Jonathan Webb kept the Ship Tavern on Washington Street, Salem, Mass.

Children, all baptized in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., were:—

11. PRISCILLA WEBB³, born Sept. 15, 1741; bapt. Nov. 8, 1747; died Oct. 5, 1831; md. Oct. 9, 1760, David Ropes, son of Thomas and Sarah (Hodges) Ropes, who was born in Salem, Mass., in 1738; died there, Dec. 20, 1793. No issue.

David Ropes kept the Salem Coffee House.

12. JONATHAN WEBB³, bapt. Nov. 8, 1747; died about 1763, by some act of violence.

13. ELIZABETH WEBB³, bapt. Nov. 8 (born Sept. 15), 1747; died Sept., 1830; md. Jan. 1, 1775, Jeremiah Shepard⁴, son of Thomas⁵ (Nathaniel⁴, Rev. Jeremiah³, Rev. Thomas², William¹), Shepard, of Boston, Mass., and second wife, Susanna, widow of Joseph Hood, dau. of Richard and Elizabeth (Orms) Pike, he born in 1751; died in Salem, Mass., Aug. 11, 1817; a hatter.

The emigrant, William Shepard¹, had ten children, of whom his son Thomas² graduated at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, Eng., in 1625, emigrated to New England; settled in Cambridge, Mass., and became pastor of the First Church, and had three sons, all ministers, — Thomas³, Samuel³, and Jeremiah³.

Thomas³ was ordained as colleague with Rev. Zachariah Symmes at Charlestown, Mass. Samuel³ was settled over the church at Rowley, Mass.; his wife, Dorothy, dau. of Rev. Henry Flint, of Braintree, died Feb. 12, 1667, and he died fifty-four days afterwards, aged 28 years. Jeremiah³ commenced to preach in Rowley, Mass., Feb., 1672. "Dec. 1673 that town agreed to give him £50 per annum while he continued to preach among them, and one load of wood from each man who had a team. To this thirty-three persons dissented, and the parties becoming obstinate, Mr. Shepard had to leave." He preached in Chebacco, now Essex, Mass., and subsequently in Lynn, Mass., where he was the successor of Rev. Samuel Whiting. Here he remained till his death, June 3, 1720, leaving an estate of £573. (Gage's History of Rowley.)

This ends the ministers of the Shepard family, for Nathaniel⁴ was a saddler, and his son Thomas⁵ was an inn-holder, and Jeremiah⁶ was a hatter, as abovesaid.

Children of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (Webb) Shepard were:—

- (a) JEREMIAH SHEPARD⁴, born Dec. 24, 1775; died Dec. 19, 1801; md. Feb. 22, 1800, Mary Thompson.
- (b) ELIZABETH SHEPARD⁴, born June 26, 1777; died Feb. 28, 1778.
- (c) DAVID SHEPARD⁴, born Dec. 23, 1778; died Sept. 22, 1809; md. March 24, 1801, Sally Leach.
- (d) ELIZABETH SHEPARD⁴, born Sept. 4, 1780.
- (e) JONATHAN SHEPARD⁴, born Aug. 26, 1782; died Aug. 11, 1826; md. Dec. 9, 1810, Ruth Cheever.
- (f) SAMUEL SHEPARD⁴, born Sept. 4, 1784; md. July 23, 1812, Mary Simmonds.
- (g) MICHAEL SHEPARD⁴, born Sept. 4, 1786; died Oct. 10, 1856; md. Aug. 14, 1811, Matilda Fairfax Clarke, dau. of Francis³ (John², Francis¹) and Martha (Mansfield) Clarke, who was born April 7, 1788; died Aug. 7, 1812. No issue. He married, second, her sister, Harriet Fairfax Clarke, she born June 24, 1794; died May 27, 1841. They had nine children, namely:—

THE WEBB FAMILY.

- (1) THOMAS PERKINS SHEPARD^s, born March 16, 1817; died May, 1877; md. June 17, 1856, Elizabeth Ann Goddard, dau. of Prof. William Giles and Charlotte Rhoda (Ives) Goddard, of Providence, R. I. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 49, 5th child.)
- (2) MATILDA FAIRFAX SHEPARD^s, born June 9, 1819; died June 18, 1836, unmarried.
- (3) HARRIET CLARKE SHEPARD^s, born May 20, 1821; md. Oct. 5, 1842, Matthew Bolles, of Boston, son of Rev. Matthew and Anna (Hibbard) Bolles; he born in Ashford, Conn., June 11, 1807; *grandson of Rev. David, pastor of Baptist Ch. in Hartford, Conn.*
- (4) MICHAEL WEBB SHEPARD^s, born March 27, 1823; died April 8, 1823.
- (5) EMILY FURNEAUX SHEPARD^s, born March 10, 1824; died Oct. 19, 1824.
- (6) MICHAEL WEBB SHEPARD^s, compiler of the Shepard Family, born Feb. 28, 1826; md. April 15, 1857, Eliza D. Osborne; she born July 24, 1834. To this gentleman the Compiler is indebted for much data on the Shepard family.
- (7) MARTHA MANSFIELD SHEPARD^s, born May 3, 1828; md. May 10, 1849, John Boardman Silsbee, son of Zachariah F. and Sarah (Boardman) Silsbee, he born April 10, 1813; died April 1, 1867. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 41.)
- (8) HENRY FAIRFAX SHEPARD^s, born July 31, 1832; md. Oct. 28, 1857, Mary Perkins, dau. of Thomas Perkins, his father's partner in business.
- (9) GEORGE LEONARD SHEPARD^s, born Dec. 20, 1837; unmarried in 1886. *Compiler of the Shepard Fam.*
14. SARAH WEBB^s, born April 9, 1750; died before 1792, unmarried.
15. BENJAMIN WEBB^s, born March 2, 1753; died Oct. 13, 1815; md. Sept. 23, 1779, Mary King, dau. of William and Mary (Andrew) King, she born Jan. 6, 1753; died Oct. 19, 1830. They had four children, namely: 1. Samuel⁴; 2. Jonathan⁴; 3. Mary⁴; 4. Priscilla⁴. He kept the Sun Tavern, Essex Street, Salem, Mass.
16. STEPHEN WEBB^s, born Sept. 21, 1756; died Feb. 11, 1831; md. first, Oct. 3, 1779, Sarah Allen, dau. of Edward and Ruth (Hodges) Allen (Gardner); md. second, Sept. 2, 1784, Sarah, widow of Thomas Palfrey and daughter of Bartholomew and Sarah (Hodges) Putnam, — the mothers of his two wives were sisters; hence he married cousins. He was a master-mariner; subsequently conducted the Haraden Rope-walk, Salem, Mass. Hon. Stephen P. Webb, Mayor of Salem in 1862, was his son by his second wife.
17. SAMUEL WEBB^s, bapt. July 22, 1759; died probably before 1792, unmarried.
18. MICHAEL WEBB^s, born July 19, 1762; died Nov. 12, 1839; a grocer; md. first, March 2, 1789, Ruth Putnam, dau. of Bartholomew and Sarah (Hodges) Putnam, and sister to the wife of No. 16. She died of consumption June 24, 1790, and he married, second, Oct. 3, 1796, Sally, widow of John Tucker, and daughter of Matthew Mansfield. They had a son, Michael, and a daughter.

SECOND GENERATION.

Capt. SAMUEL WEBB² (No. 9), son of Jonathan¹ and Priscilla (Bray) Webb, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 18, 1732; died in 1780; md. first, Oct. 14, 1755, Deborah Prince. No issue. He md. second, Nov. 9, 1758, Hannah Ward, dau. of John and Hannah (Higginson) Ward, who was born Dec. 21, 1735; died of fever, April 4, 1808. Her cousin, Sarah Ward, dau. of Miles and Elizabeth (Webb) Ward, married John Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 19.)

Children were:—

19. SAMUEL WEBB³, bapt. April 13, 1760; died young.
20. SAMUEL WEBB³, born Nov. 9, 1762; died unmarried; a silversmith.
21. NATHANIEL WEBB³, bapt. Aug. 15, 1765; died before April, 1794; unmarried.
22. JONATHAN WEBB³, born about 1767; died after April, 1794; unmarried.
23. HANNAH WEBB³, born about 1769; md. Aug. 23, 1789, Joseph Hosmer, of Norwich, Conn. They had six children.
24. PRISCILLA WEBB³, born about 1776; died March 8, 1856.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN WEBB² (No. 10), son of Jonathan¹ and Priscilla (Bray) Webb, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 10, 1733; died there May 17, 1811; lived there on Daniels Street, below Derby Street; md. Nov. 5, 1752, Judith Phelps, sister of Rachel Phelps, who married Daniel Hathorne, the grandfather of Nathaniel Hawthorne, of literary fame; she (Judith) born in 1730, and died Sept. 12, 1814.

Children were:—

25. HANNAH WEBB³, born —; md. Oct. 6, 1772, James Carrol; he born in Berwick, Me., about 1750, and died July 13, 1804. They had eight children, viz.:—
 - (a) HANNAH CARROL⁴, md. Dec. 8, 1802, Samuel Becket. No issue.
 - (b) JUDITH CARROL⁴, md. Oct. 19, 1806, John Hammond.
 - (c) ABIGAIL CARROL⁴.
 - (d) ELIZABETH CARROL⁴, md. Henry Rice, and had issue.
 - (e) JAMES CARROL⁴, lost at sea; unmarried.
 - (f) PRISCILLA CARROL⁴, md. John Masury.
 - (g) NANCY CARROL⁴, died young.
 - (h) MARY CARROL⁴, died young.

26. JOHN WEBB³, born —; died young.
27. SARAH WEBB³, born —; md. William Perkins.
28. BENJAMIN WEBB³, born Nov. 3, 1759; died Sept. 10, 1827; md. Hannah Bray, June 15, 1783.
29. JUDITH WEBB³, born —; md. first, Sept. 1, 1790, James, son of Arthur Jeffries, who was baptized in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 31, 1766; died Aug. 11, 1792, aged 26. She md. second, Sept. 14, 1794, James Kelley, or Calley, and had issue.
30. WILLIAM WEBB³, born —; md. Dec. 12, 1790, Hannah Allen, of Marblehead, Mass.; she born about 1765, and died Nov. 16, 1818. They had eight children.
31. JOSHUA WEBB³, born —; md. — Watson; he died before 1799.
32. SAMUEL WEBB³, born in 1769; died May 22, 1810; md. Aug. 18, 1798, Abigail, dau. of Richard Palfray; she born in 1773; died Oct. 3, 1812. They had six children, namely: 1. Samuel⁴; 2. Abigail⁴; 3. Dorothy⁴; 4. Sarah⁴; 5. Samuel⁴; 6. Henry⁴.
33. HENRY WEBB³, born in 1771; died July 13, 1806; md. Nov. 13, 1776, Joanna Burrill. They had four children: 1. Joanna⁴; 2. Mary⁴; 3. Harriet⁴; 4. Adam⁴.
34. STEPHEN WEBB³, born in 1773; died abroad, Aug. 6, 1796.
35. THOMAS WEBB³, born July 6, 1776; bapt., an adult, Oct. 27, 1805; died May 15, 1815; md. Sarah Kilby, of Hingham, Mass. They had four children: 1. Sarah⁴; 2. A son⁴; 3. Thomas⁴; 4. Rachel Kilby⁴.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. BENJAMIN WEBB³ (No. 28), son of John² (Jonathan¹), and Judith (Phelps) Webb, born Nov. 3, 1759; died Sept. 10, 1827; master-mariner; md. June 15, 1783, Hannah Bray, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Driver) Bray; she born Jan. 23, 1759; died Sept. 25, 1838. (See Appendix, Bray Family, No. 25.)

Children were: —

36. BENJAMIN WEBB⁴, born April 23, 1784; died Sept. 29, 1840; md. May 6, 1810, Sally Felt. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 20-2.)
37. ELIZABETH WEBB⁴, born April 10, 1786; died Sept. 29, 1872; md. April 29, 1810, Paul Jewett Burbank, who died in 1815.
38. JOHN WEBB⁴, born May 1, 1788; died at sea, Oct. 23, 1821; md. May 31, 1819, Elizabeth Watson, who died June 30, 1849.
39. THOMAS BRAY WEBB⁴, born May 7, 1791; died at sea in 1822; md. Nov. 28, 1818, Elizabeth Williams, who died Jan. 16, 1881.
They had one child, a daughter, whose death was occasioned when young by an accident in the cabinet shop of William Webb, No. 40.

40. **WILLIAM WEBB**⁴, born Sept. 26, 1793; died April 29, 1870; md. March 29, 1825, Isabella Donaldson.
41. Male child⁴, born and died April 21, 1796.
42. **HANNAH WEBB**⁴, born June 4, 1797; died June 12, 1881; md. Sept. 9, 1821, James Gale, son of Edmund and Elizabeth (Stubbs) Gale, of Haverhill, Mass. He died March 17, 1875; a mathematical instrument-maker. While he resided in Salem he taught in the public school, and was drill-master of the military company known as the Washington Rangers, of which he was an original member; subsequently sergeant. After his removal to Haverhill, Mass., he there opened a bookstore, and was for some years the postmaster of the place. At one time he was cashier of the Haverhill Bank, and president of Haverhill Savings Bank. His father was an officer in the Revolutionary Army (*Essex Inst. Hist. Collect.*, Vol. VI.).
43. **STEPHEN WEBB**⁴, born Sept. 4, 1802, died May 2, 1869; md. Oct. 5, 1831, Martha Tucker Luscomb.
44. **CHARLOTTE IVES WEBB**⁴, born Aug. 15, 1805: died unmarried, Sept. 14, 1872.

FOURTH GENERATION.

BENJAMIN WEBB⁴ (No. 36), son of Capt. Benjamin³ (JOHN², JONATHAN¹), and Hannah (Bray) Webb, born April 23, 1784; died Sept. 29, 1840; an apothecary; md. May 6, 1810, Sally Felt, daughter of John and Mary (Porter) Felt; she born July 24, 1790; died Oct. 20, 1849. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 20.)

Children were: —

45. **JOHN FELT WEBB**⁵, born Feb. 9, 1811; died in England, Oct. 21, 1861, where he was a commercial agent; unmarried.
46. **BENJAMIN WEBB**⁵, born Dec. 9, 1812; killed, July 4, 1823, by an accidental discharge of fireworks on Salem Common.
47. **MARY ELIZABETH WEBB**⁵, born Jan. 29, 1814; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; md. Oct. 22, 1845, George West, son of George West, who died June 24, 1852. They had two children, namely: —
- (a) **MARY ENDICOTT WEST**⁶, born Sept. 11, 1847; unmarried in 1886.
- (b) **GEORGE WEBB WEST**⁶, born May 19, 1850; married.
48. **SARAH FELT WEBB**⁵, born March 11, 1816; died April 19, 1883, unmarried.
49. **MARGARET PORTER WEBB**⁵, born Oct. 14, 1818; living in 1886 in Worcester, Mass.; md. Charles Paine, of Worcester, Mass., who died Dec. 8, 1866. They had one daughter; she married.

50. DEBORAH ELLEN WEBB⁵, born Nov. 29, 1822; died Dec. 22, 1882, unmarried.

[Mrs. George West, No. 47, contributed the data of her family and that of her father's, to whom the Compiler is deeply indebted, and with thanks acknowledges the same.]

FOURTH GENERATION.

WILLIAM WEBB⁴ (No. 40), son of Capt. Benjamin³ (JOHN², JONATHAN¹), and Hannah (Bray) Webb, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 26, 1793; died there April 29, 1870; md. March 29, 1825, Isabella Donaldson, daughter of Alexander Donaldson and Elizabeth (Peele), who was baptized in the East Church, of Salem, Mass., Sept. 27, 1801; died Jan. 29, 1846.

Her father was born in Belfast, co. Antrim, Ireland, Dec. 23, 1773; arrived at Salem, Mass., in the brig "Eliza," Capt. Fairfield master, Aug. 8, 1795. He died in Salem, March 5, 1825; a pump and block maker. His parents were Alexander and Elizabeth (Graham) Donaldson.

William Webb was an apothecary, and in 1823 opened a store on Essex Street, Salem, which store, in 1886, is still conducted by his son Benjamin, his successor in the business.

Children were:—

51. BENJAMIN WEBB⁵, born May 19, 1829; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass.; apothecary, successor to his father; md. twice. No issue.
52. ELIZABETH DONALDSON WEBB⁵, born Nov. 6, 1831; died July 27, 1876; md. George M. Whipple. No issue *by his 2d. md.*
53. WILLIAM WEBB⁵, born Sept. 8, 1833; an apothecary; md. Elizabeth Browning, who died, leaving issue.

In 1886 he resided in Winchester, Mass.

FOURTH GENERATION.

STEPHEN WEBB⁴ (No. 43), son of Capt. Benjamin³ (JOHN², JONATHAN¹), and Hannah (Bray) Webb, born in Salem, Mass., Sept. 4, 1802; died May 2, 1869; md. Oct. 5, 1831, Martha Tucker Luscomb, daughter of William and Mehitabel (Mansfield) Luscomb, who was born Oct. 4, 1804; living in 1886 in Salem, Mass. (See Appendix, Luscomb Family, No. 43.)

He for many years was the cashier in a bank; afterwards a clerk in the Internal Revenue Service.

Children were:—

54. WILLIAM GEORGE WEBB^s, born in Salem, Mass., Aug. 6, 1832; living there in 1886; md. Annie Bertram, dau. of John Bertram, Esq., the millionaire, of Salem.
55. STEPHEN WEBB^s, born in Salem, Mass., March 21, 1835.
56. MARY ELIZABETH WEBB^s, born in 1837; died young.
57. JOHN FELT WEBB^s, born in Salem, Mass., Oct. 6, 1838.
58. MARTHA WEBB^s, born in Salem, Mass., Feb. 6, 1840.
59. ISABELLA WEBB^s, born in Salem, Mass., May 6, 1848.

THE WEBB FAMILY, CONTINUED.

FIRST GENERATION.

"**Capt. DANIEL WEBB**¹, June 28, 1669, with John Tapley, and Robert Bray, fishermen, Salem, bot" (bought) "of John Mason & wife Hannah $\frac{3}{4}$ acre land, s^d Mason bot of Francis Collins, lying at entrance of the Neck, against a cove, coming out of North river, which land s^d Webb & Co sold James Froude, Nov. 18, 1671." — *Essex Deeds*, Vol. III. p. 207.

The said Daniel Webb's parentage is not known, yet he may have been a younger brother of Jonathan Webb, and thus son of John Webb, of the aforesaid Webb Family; or he may have been a brother of the said John Webb, instead of a son, from the fact that a John Webb married Bridget Whitford, and had a daughter Bridget, born Aug. 17, 1678, who is the only child found on record as belonging to John Webb. Moreover, "June 7, 1687, John Webb & Walter Whitford, fisherman, sold to Samuel Gardner Jr., a dwelling house & land, bounded on high way leading up from y^e water side &c. Dec. 10, 1717, John Webb, fisherman, bo't of Capt. Samuel Gardner for £4, a dwel'g house & yard room, leading from y^e water side up to s^d house, bounded on land of Walter Whitford dec'd."

[Walter Whitford died about Sept., 1692; by his wife Bridget he had son Samuel, born Oct. 21, 1668. Whether the said Walter Whitford was John Webb's father-in-law, or brother-in-law, no record reveals.]

Stephen Webb² (No. 5) of the foregoing Webb Family, son of Jonathan Webb¹, lived at "Neck-Gate," which must have been contiguous to where Capt. Daniel Webb lived, occasioned perhaps by inheritance, perhaps by purchase. Daniel Webb, according to his deposition given in court, June 18, 1716, as evidence for Elizabeth (Conner) Dynn, to be found under Derby Family, No. 1,

must have been born in 1652, as he there states his age at that date to be 64.

He was a master-mariner, and living in 1716. No settlement of his estate is on record, no date of death. He married, July 20, 1675, Mary Becket, dau. of John (the emigrant) and Margaret Becket.

Children, all born in Salem, Mass., were:—

2. JOHN WEBB², born April 17, 1676; md. Oct. 18, 1705, Elizabeth Phippen.
3. MARGARET WEBB², born Feb. 20, 1677; died Oct. 14, 1682.
4. PEREZ WEBB², born April 1, 1680; died probably before 1733; md. Aug. 16, 1704, Sarah Robinson.
5. MARY WEBB², born Aug. 14, 1682; md. March 9, 1707-8, Thomas Plaisted, son of John and Elizabeth Plaisted, of Boston; he born Aug. 17, 1687.
6. DANIEL WEBB², born Sept. 5, 1688; living in 1742; md. first, June 5, 1719, Elizabeth Ropes; md. second, Mary, widow of William Becket.
7. ELIZABETH WEBB², bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., June, 1692.
8. DAVID WEBB² (?), born —; fisherman; md. Oct. 16, 1717, Elizabeth Roach, dau. of William and Hannah (Potter) Roach; she born April 16, 1697.
9. MARGARET WEBB², bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., May 24, 1696; died —; md. Oct. 22, 1718, Ebenezer Cook, son of John² and Mary (Buxton) Cook, and grandson of Henry (the emigrant) and Judith (Birdsall) Cook; he born Aug. 24, 1691; died —.

They had seven sons, namely:—

1. EBENEZER COOK³, born Aug. 25, 1719.
2. JOHN COOK³, born April 20, 1721.
3. DANIEL COOK³, born Oct. 12, 1722.
4. SAMUEL COOK³, born July 12, 1724.
5. JONATHAN COOK³, born May 25, 1727; died young.
6. BENJAMIN COOK³, born July 12, 1729.
7. JONATHAN COOK³, born Sept. 19, 1731.

SECOND GENERATION.

JOHN WEBB³ (No. 2), son of Capt. Daniel¹ and Mary (Becket) Webb; born in Salem, Mass., April 17, 1676; died —; living in 1743; coaster; md. Oct. 18, 1705, Elizabeth Phippen, dau. of David and Anna (widow of Benjamin Ager) Phippen; she bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., May, 1688; born 1683; died Nov. 30, 1773, aged 90 years.

Children, all baptized in First Church of Salem, Mass., were :

10. ELIZABETH WEBB², bapt. Dec., 1709; died April 13, 1737; md. Jan. 3, 1728-9, Miles Ward², son of Deacon Miles² and Sarah (Massey, dau. of John Massey, and granddaughter of Jeffry Massey, the original planter) Ward.

(Deacon Miles², son of Joshua Ward², was born in the town of Hurne, co. Kent, Eng., and probably came to New England with his father. His brother Joshua married Hannah Flint, No. 7, Flint Family; see Appendix.)

Miles Ward² was born in Salem, Mass., April 18, 1704; died there, June, 1792; md. second, Oct. 10, 1737, Hannah, widow of Benjamin Hathorne, and dau. of Samuel² (Samuel², Roger¹) and Hannah (Young) Derby; she born at Southold, Long Island, in 1705, and died in Salem, Mass., Oct. 28, 1796. She had by first marriage two children, namely :—

(1) BENJAMIN HATHORNE, bapt. Jan. 18, 1723.

(2) HANNAH HATHORNE, bapt. April 5, 1730.

(See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 15.)

Children of Miles and Elizabeth (Webb) Ward, all born in Salem, Mass., were :—

(1) SARAH WARD⁴, born Oct. 19, 1723; died Aug. 10, 1729.

(2) ELIZABETH WARD⁴, born in 1730; died April 11, 1737.

(3) ABIGAIL WARD⁴, born April 16, 1731; died May 22, 1731.

(4) ABIGAIL WARD⁴, born March 17, 1732; md. first, Dec. 7, 1762-3, Samuel Griffin, or Griffiths, of Portsmouth, N. H.; md. second, John Bass.

(5) MILES WARD⁴, born July 25, 1733; died Aug. 10, 1796; md. Experience Goodale, dau. of Joshua and Experience (Judd) Goodale; she bapt. in Salem Village, Dec. 17, 1738, and had Polly, who married Henry Osborn, and Hannah, who married Capt. Jonathan Neal. (See Appendix, Neal Family, No. 49.)

(Joshua Goodale married, first, May 21, 1734, Experience Judd; she born in 1705, and died April 14, 1743; he married, second, Sept. 10, 1749, Anna Derby, dau. of Samuel and Hannah (Young) Derby; she born in 1711, and died Nov. 11, 1789. Said Anna was sister to Hannah, who married first, Benjamin Hathorne, and second, Miles Ward, father of said Miles Ward⁴. (See Appendix, Derby Family, No. 16.)

(6) SARAH WARD⁴, born March 1, 1734; died Oct. 18, 1801; md. March 13, 1754-5, John Ives, son of Benjamin and Anne (Derby) Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 19.)

(7) ANNA WARD⁴, born March 20, 1735; died May 1, 1737.

(8) EBENEZER WARD⁴, born April 12, 1737; died the next day with his mother.

Children of Miles and Hannah (Derby) (Hathorne) Ward were :—

(9) ELIZABETH WARD⁴, born July 9, 1738; died June, 1806; md. Oct., 1761, William Poole, of Danvers, Mass. (now Peabody).

(10) SAMUEL WARD⁴, born April 30, 1740; died July 31, 1812; md. Jan. 2, 1768, Priscilla Hodges, dau. of Gamaliel and Priscilla (Webb) Hodges; she born Feb. 14, 1750; died June 2, 1822.

(Gamaliel Hodges' sister Hannah, born Nov. 30, 1718, md. Nov. 21,

1737, Samuel Ives, No. 12, Ives Family; see Appendix. She md. second, April 3, 1768, Nathaniel Archer).

(11) MEHITABLE WARD⁴, born March 18, 1742; died Oct. 24, 1755.

(12) ANNE WARD⁴, born May 11, 1744; died Jan. 8, 1832; md. first, Oct. 27, 1762, Jonathan Mansfield⁶, son of Jonathan⁵ (Jonathan⁴, Joseph³, Joseph², Robert¹, the emigrant, who was born about 1594; came to Lynn, Mass., about 1640, where he died Dec. 16, 1668, his wife was Elizabeth —, born in 1586, and died Sept. 8, 1673), and Dorcas (Ramsdell) Mansfield; he born —, 1743; died in 1779; administration on his estate granted his widow, Anne, Feb. 7, 1780. She md. second, Feb. 20, 1780, Joseph Henfield; he born Aug. 15, 1743; died March 18, 1809 (gravestone).

Children by first marriage, all but one baptized in the Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., were:—

(a) DORCAS MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. April 28, 1765; died young.

(b) ANNA MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. April 28, 1765; died young.

(c) ANNA MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. Jan. 25, 1767.

(d) LUCY MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. Jan. 22, 1769.

(e) DORCAS MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. March 31, 1771.

(f) MEHITABLE MANSFIELD⁵, born in 1773; died July 25, 1825; md. Sept. 14, 1794, William Luscomb. (See Appendix, Luscomb Family, No. 22.)

(g) MARTHA MANSFIELD⁵, bapt. in the South Church of Salem, Mass., March 1, 1778.

(13) NATHANIEL WARD⁴, born July 29, 1746; died in Cambridge, Mass., Oct. 18, 1768; graduate of Harvard College, 1765; librarian of the same. At the time of his death he was engaged to be married to Priscilla, youngest daughter of President Holyoke, and sister of Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, of Salem, Mass. She afterwards became the wife of Dr. Eliphalet Pearson, of Andover, Mass.

"Mr. Ward was a young man of uncommon scientific attainments, and one of the most promising scholars of his time." — *Essex Inst. Coll.*, Vol. II. p. 207.

(14) LUCRETIA WARD⁴, born Aug. 26, 1748; md. June 14, 1770, Dr. Joseph Osgood, who died June 28, 1812.

(15) MARY WARD⁴, born Sept. 30, 1750; died Sept. 30, 1755.

(16) JOSHUA WARD⁴, born Oct. 25, 1752; died Sept. 14, 1825; md. first, Sarah Lander, dau. of William and Mary (Henderson) Lander, she bapt. April 7, 1754; died April 2, 1809. He md. second, widow Susan Magee.

11. JOHN WEBB³, bapt. Aug. 10, 1712; died in Boston, Mass., in 1779; master-mariner; md. first, Ammi Swasey; md. second, Sarah (Driver) Bray, widow.

12. WILLIAM WEBB³, bapt. July 7, 1717; removed to Gloucester, Mass., where he was living in 1751; a mariner; by trade a cabinet-maker.

He married March 23, 1741, Abigail Riggs, dau. of John and Abigail (Coit, perhaps descendant of Nathaniel Coit, of Gloucester, a citizen of considerable influence, whose ancestor was John Coit, who came from Salem, Mass., where the name is found in 1647) Riggs, of Gloucester, Mass.

Abigail Riggs was no doubt a descendant of Thomas Riggs, who settled in Gloucester in 1658, where his repeated election to the most

important offices shows the estimation in which he was held by the citizens. He was town clerk from 1665 to 1716 (fifty-one years). He was educated in England for the profession of a scrivener; and his ability in that line made him a welcome acquisition to a community, of whose men one half were unable to write. He married, first, Mary, daughter of Thomas Millet (of the same family of Millets as found under Ruth Driver, No. 74); he married, second, Elizabeth Frese, who survived him five months; he died Feb. 26, 1722, aged ninety. His children were: Mary, Thomas, Sarah, Anna, Thomas, John, Elizabeth, Abigail, and Andrew. His son John died Jan. 12, 1748, leaving three sons, — John, Jeremiah, and Jonathan, having had eleven children, of whom four were sons (Babson's Hist. of Gloucester).

13. ABIGAIL WEBB^s, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., March 17, 1723.
-

SECOND GENERATION.

PEREZ WEBB² (No. 4), son of Capt. Daniel¹ and Mary (Becket) Webb, born in Salem, Mass., April 1, 1680; died probably before 1733; md. Aug. 16, 1704, Sarah Robinson, dau. of John and Sarah (Mason) Robinson; she born Feb. 18, 1672; died before 1733.

Children (as per deeds) were:—

14. PEREZ WEBB^s, born —; removed to Provincetown before 1732.
 15. JOHN WEBB^s, born —; cordwainer; md. Nov. 9, 1738, Elizabeth Callum.
 16. DANIEL WEBB^s, born —; cordwainer; removed to Newton, Mass.; was of Needham in 1768.
-

SECOND GENERATION.

DANIEL WEBB² (No. 6), son of Capt. Daniel¹ and Mary (Becket) Webb, born Sept. 5, 1688; living in 1742; mariner and shipwright; md. first, June 5, 1719, Elizabeth Ropes, dau. of John and Lydia (Wells) Ropes; she bapt. Nov. 23, 1689; died —; he md. second, July 27, 1727, Mary, widow of William Becket, and dau. of Thomas and Mary Mascoll, she bapt. April, 1687.

Child was:—

17. ELIZABETH WEBB^s, bapt. Sept. 6, 1730.

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. JOHN WEBB ^s (No. 11), son of John ^s (Capt. DANIEL ¹), and Elizabeth (Phippen) Webb; bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Aug. 10, 1712; removed to Falmouth (now Portland), Me., between May 16th and July of 1751. Before 1757 he returned to Salem, Mass.; at a subsequent date he removed to Boston, Mass.

Oct. 8, 1779, his widow, Sarah, administered upon his estate, she giving bonds with Gibbins Sharp and John Dunning.

He married, first, Dec. 6, 1739, Ammi Swasey, dau. of Samuel and Ammi Swasey; she bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Feb. 5, 1720-1, and died before 1751. He married, second, Sarah, widow of Benjamin Bray, and dau. of Capt. Michael and Sarah (Gray) *Driver*, No. 30, Driver Family; she bapt. in First Church of Salem, Mass., July 5, 1724, and died prior to June 27, 1787, when William Webb, of Bath, Me., supposed to be her son, was appointed administrator to finish the settlement of the estate; the homestead in Wing's Lane being sold Oct. 11, 1788, to William Wittington, was repurchased three days after by John Webb, probably half-brother of William. One item in debts paid is "cash" (amount not stated) "for Mrs. Webb's funeral."

By her first marriage, she (Sarah) had one daughter, Sarah Bray, bapt. Oct. 9, 1748; died Sept. 27, 1782; md. March 20, 1766, Robert Hale Ives. (See Appendix, Ives Family, No. 22.)

"May 16, 1751; John Webb, cooper, bought of James Parrot, peruke-maker, and wife Sarah, 3½ poles land with a dwelling house upon the same, bounded W. on Union St. — N. on land late Samuel Beadle; — E. on John Davis: — S. on late Benjamin Brown.

WILLIAM BROWN	} Wit: "
JONATHAN PHELPS	
JOSEPH CLOUTMAN	

"July 27, 1751; John Webb, of Falmouth, Me., and his brother William, and wife Abigail of Gloucester, Mass. — Sold to Stephen Burnham of Gloucester, Mass., and Nathaniel Balch of Haverhill, for £77 : 13s : 120 acres of land in the town of Wells, Me.; also 6 acres march; " also "a common right in Salem, Mass., belonging wholly to ye ^sd John Webb, which lyes between ye estate of William Luscomb, dec'd, and land formerly Ebenezer Gloveis. — Also a common right in the Great pasture which was given to Ammi ye late wife of ^sd John, by her late father Samuel Swasey, dec'd, in his will."

"March 11, 1757, John Webb, of Salem, bought of Catherine, widow of Samuel Beadle, for 45s., paid by Abigail Brown, widow, formerly Abigail Ellsins, on behalf of ^sd Webb (the ^sd John having purchased of James Parrot, the land hereafter described, which said Abigail sold to ^sd James with warranty) 3½ poles land, bounded W. on Union St.; N. on Samuel Beadle; E. on land of Beadle taken on execution; S. on Benjamin Brown."

John Webb at a subsequent date removed to Boston, Mass., where he bought himself

a residence in "Wing's Lane," and entered upon mercantile business. He was the owner of a number of vessels, doing a large business, yet at his death his estate was declared insolvent. The inventory of his effects in Boston was declared to be £2681 : 10 : 4, including five schooners, the Sally, Dolphin, Joseph, Beaver, Truro; a sloop named "Coffee Pot," besides a wharf, stores, dwelling-houses, and his own mansion house, and land in Wing's Lane, which was set off as the widow's thirds.

Inventory of his estate in Salem consisted of a dwelling house and 12 poles land, taken Jan. 4, 1783, which the widow sold Oct. 28th following, to Nehemiah Holt of Salem, for £194; being described as the same estate bought of James Parrott, bounded W. on Union St. &c.

JOHN DENNING } Wit.
WILLIAM WEBB }

Children by first marriage were: —

18. JOHN WEBB⁴, bapt. in the First Church of Salem, Mass., Oct. 9, 1743.
19. AMMI WEBB⁴, bapt. in same place, Aug. 3, 1746.

Children by second marriage were: —

20. WILLIAM WEBB⁴, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Sept. 17, 1758.
21. ELIZABETH WEBB⁴, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Feb. 3, 1760.
22. ABIGAIL WEBB⁴, bapt. in Tabernacle Church, Salem, Mass., Aug. 2, 1761 (perhaps others).

THE WELLMAN FAMILY.

(WELLMAN, PERHAPS WILEMAN OR WILDMAN.)

FIRST GENERATION.

1. **TIMOTHY WELLMAN**¹, of Marblehead, Mass., born in 1696; died in Salem, Mass., Feb. 5, 1787, aged 91 years; no settlement of estate; md. in Marblehead, Mass., Jan. 10, 1722-3, Rebecca Scarlet, of that town.

Children, as taken from the record of First Church of Marblehead, Mass., were:—

2. **ANNA WELLMAN**², born about 1724; bapt. July 11, 1725, as a "minor infant;" md. Aug. 14, 1747, William Messervey.
3. **HANNAH WELLMAN**², bapt. Sept. 26, 1725.
4. **SAMUEL WELLMAN**², bapt. Oct. 15, 1727; died March 16, 1790 (Dr. Bentley's Diary).
5. **REBECCA WELLMAN**², bapt. May 18, 1729.
6. **TIMOTHY WELLMAN**², born about 1731; died, 1767.

SECOND GENERATION.

SAMUEL WELLMAN² (No. 4), son of Timothy¹, bapt. in First Church of Marblehead, Mass., Oct. 15, 1727; died March 16, 1790. "He was a mate in the schooner 'Abigail,' his brother-in-law, Capt. Thomas Stevens, being captain; this schooner was shipwrecked on the Londoner Rock, off Thatcher's Island, Cape Ann, and all the crew were lost" (Dr. Bentley's Diary).

He married, June 28, 1752, Mary Kempton, daughter of Oliver and Mary Kempton, she born in 1734; bapt. in First Church of Marblehead, Mass., Jan. 29, 1736-7; died March 3, 1804.

Widow Mary Wellman made her will June 21, 1798, in which she gives to son Timothy "my house and land on Essex St." (Salem, Mass.), "provided he will support me during life;" "daughter Hannah to live with me as long as she remains unmarried."

They lived in Salem, Mass., in a house on the present site of 387 Essex Street; the old structure being removed to the rear. They were both members of the Tabernacle (Baptist) Church, Salem, Mass.

Oliver Kempton, father of Mary, married Mary —, who administered on her husband's estate Nov. 3, 1735. In her first account of administration she makes a charge of expense in bringing up a child for one year, then aged 13 months.

July 14, 1743, she, under the name of "Mary Kempton, alias Blaney, adm^r of the estate of her husband Oliver Kempton," renders an additional account, including another charge for bringing up the same child.

A little paper on file reads thus :—

"Mary Kempton, dau. of Oliver, dec'd, and Mary Kempton, above 2 years of age, guardianship granted widow Mary Kempton, April 5, 1736," she giving bonds with John Kempton, Jr., and Benjamin Cox.

Nov. 3, 1737, widow Mary Kempton married, second, Daniel Blaney, on whose estate administration was granted his widow Mary, July 14, 1743. She died April 28, 1798, aged 84 years.

Jan. 25, 1770, Samuel Wellman, fisherman, and wife Mary, with Mary Blaney, widow, of Salem, for £36 convey to Daniel Malloon, miller, "the South half of our dwelling house, now occupied by us, with 24 pole land near it;" bounded E. on Cockerell Reeves, dec'd; S. on John Kempton, dec'd; W. on s^d Kempton: N. on the street; E. on estate of Oliver Kempton, dec'd.

Dec. 25, 1790, his widow Mary deeds to Hannah Smith, the south end of a dwelling-house, "which became mine as an heir of my father Oliver Kempton, Salem, with the yard, cellar &c."

Children were :—

7. MARY WELLMAN^s, bapt. Sept. 26, 1756; died young.
8. SARAH WELLMAN^s, bapt. May 13, 1759; md. April 14, 1780, William Gardner, Jr.
9. SAMUEL WELLMAN^s, bapt. Aug. 16, 1761; died before 1790.
10. OLIVER KEMPTON WELLMAN^s, bapt. July 31, 1763; died before 1790.
11. REBECCA WELLMAN^s, bapt. June 1, 1766; md. June 26, 1791, *Thomas Poynton Driver*, No. 49, Driver Family.
They had one child, Rebecca Driver, born in 1792.
12. TIMOTHY WELLMAN^s, born Sept. 3, 1768; died —; md. first, April 5, 1791, Judith Bowditch; md. second, Jan. 18, 1795, Sarah Brown.
13. HANNAH WELLMAN^s, born in 1770; bapt. Sept. 2, 1770; died Dec. 26, 1840; md. May 13, 1804, George W. Mullet, son of Abraham and

Rebecca Mullet, of Marblehead, Mass., he born in 1775; died April 23, 1836. He became totally blind, and in that physical condition he for several years served as town-crier of Salem, Mass.

They had four children, namely: —

(a) HANNAH MULLET⁴, born Nov. 23, 1805; died Dec. 24, 1883.

(b) MARY KEMPTON MULLET⁴, born Jan. 9, 1807; died young.

(c) GEORGE WHITEFIELD MULLET⁴, born Jan. 30, 1809.

(d) MARY KEMPTON MULLET⁴, born Oct. 19, 1811; died Oct. 26, 1859.

14. MARY WELLMAN³, bapt. April 25, 1773.

15. NANCY WELLMAN³, born —; md. Aug. 15, 1790, Samuel Bowditch, son of Capt. John and Mary (Carleton) Bowditch, he bapt. May 7, 1769; died March 21, 1791, having perished at sea on board the "Texell," the commander of which, Capt. Elkins, being the only survivor.

They had one child, Mary, who died March 3, 1804.

SECOND GENERATION.

TIMOTHY WELLMAN² (No. 6), son of Timothy¹ and Rachel Scarlet, born in Marblehead, Mass., about 1731–2; died in 1767, being lost on the Banks; administration on his estate granted his widow, Mary, who gave bonds with Eleazer Moses and John Prince, Feb. 3, 1767; inventory being £130:6:8; estate declared insolvent, when he is called "Jr."

He married, Feb. 17, 1754, Mary Henderson, dau. of Joseph and Elizabeth (Cook) Henderson, who was baptized in Tabernacle Church of Salem, Mass., Sept. 18, 1737; he died Jan. 31, 1810.

June 1, 1767, the widow's dowry was set off, and she was given the use of the south lower room, north garret, and use of way across the garden to a well on her father Wellman's land.

"Oct. 5, 1769, Mary, adm'x to the estate of her husband, Timothy Wellman, for £40, deeds to Thomas Poynton, $\frac{3}{4}$ of a dwelling house and land, bounded S. on Main (Essex) St., W. on William Webb, N. on the Common, and E. on Jonathan Lambert.

ELEAZER MOSES } Wit."
JOSEPH BLANEY }

Children were: —

16. REBECCA WELLMAN³, born Oct. 3, 1755; md. Dec. 27, 1774, Thomas Phippen, son of Thomas and Margaret (*Driver*) Phippen, he born Dec. 25, 1750; died Dec. 22, 1839. (No. 26, Driver Family.)

Children were: —

- (a) MARGARET PHIPPEN⁴, born Oct. 22, 1775; died Oct. 13, 1777.
- (b) THOMAS PHIPPEN⁴, born June 6, 1778.
- (c) JOSEPH PHIPPEN⁴, born Oct. 23, 1779.
- (d) ISRAEL PHIPPEN⁴, born Sept. 18, 1781.
- (e) REBECCA PHIPPEN⁴, born Feb. 18, 1784; died June 10, 1786.
- (f) REBECCA PHIPPEN⁴, born Sept. 13, 1787; died unmarried.

- 17. TIMOTHY WELLMAN³, born in 1736; died Dec. 2, 1810; md. in 1777, Sarah Wyatt.
- 18. MARY WELLMAN³, born —; md. — Dean, who died before 1814.
- 19. HANNAH WELLMAN³, born —; md. Feb. 26, 1786, *Benjamin Driver*, son of Michael and Sarah (Bray) Driver, he born Feb. 6, 1760; died Nov. 14, 1811 (No. 47, Driver Family).
- 20. SARAH WELLMAN³, born in 1763; died suddenly, May 14, 1811; md. first, "Oct. 19, 1786, Jacob Abraham, of Surinam, from Boston. In three years after he died abroad" (Dr. Bentley's Diary).
They had one child.
She married, second, in 1791, William Swasey, of Ireland, who also died abroad about 1794. They had one child (*Ibid.*).

THIRD GENERATION.

Com. TIMOTHY WELLMAN³ (No. 12), son of Samuel² (TIMOTHY¹), and Mary Kempton, born Sept. 3, 1756; md. first, April 5, 1791, Judith Bowditch; she born in 1770, and died of small-pox Nov. 24, 1792. He md. second, Jan. 18, 1795, Sarah Brown, dau. of Deacon William and Mercy (White) Brown, who was born Jan. 15, 1774; died April 24, 1853.

In the War of 1812 he was commodore of an American fleet up the Mediterranean Sea. He was noted as a skilful seaman and navigator. His house was on Charter Street, Salem, Mass., — a double structure of three stories, Nos. 48 and 50.

Children by **Sarah** were: —

- 21. TIMOTHY WELLMAN⁴, born Feb. 16, 1795; died Dec. 6, 1837; md. Oct. 3, 1819, Deborah S. Cheever; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass.
- 22. SAMUEL WELLMAN⁴, born Oct. 3, 1798; died in 1842; md. Oct. 31, 1830, Rachel M. Tufts.
- 23. SARAH WELLMAN⁴, born April 15, 1801; living in 1866 in Lynn, Mass.; md. Aug. 24, 1828, Capt. Williams Homans.
- 24. WILLIAM AUGUSTUS WELLMAN⁴, born March 10, 1805; died in Boston, —; md. first, Susan Prescott, who died March 22, 1848; md. second, March 5, 1850, Matilda G. Ogden, of New York city.

25. FRANCIS OLIVER WELLMAN ⁴, born March 19, 1807; md. Nov. 2, 1835, Anna T. Bromblecomb, who died in 1855.
 26. EDWARD WHITE WELLMAN ⁴, born Jan. 7, 1807; md. May 10, 1829, Lucy M. Francis, dau. of John Francis.
 27. GEORGE BROWN WELLMAN ⁴, born April 21, 1813.
-

THIRD GENERATION.

Capt. TIMOTHY WELLMAN ¹ (No. 17), son of Timothy ¹ (TIMOTHY ¹), and Mary Henderson, born in 1756; died Dec. 2, 1810; administration on his estate granted his widow, Sarah, Jan. 21, 1811, who gave bonds with James Cheever, Jr. (her uncle), and George Hodges.

He married, in 1777, Sarah Wyatt, dau. of William and Sarah (Cheever) Wyatt; she born in Newbury, Mass., in 1759, and died in Salem, Mass., of apoplexy, Aug. 10, 1817.

She was granddaughter of James ² and Mary (Roads) Cheever, and great-granddaughter of Peter Cheever ¹, the emigrant, who was born in England in 1645, and died in Salem, Mass., between July and August of 1699, — a glover.

He married, first, April 19, 1669, Lydia Haly. He married, second, June 29, 1695, Mary Mackmallon, dau. of Alester and Elizabeth Mackmallon, who was living in 1728.

His children by Lydia were two, — Peter and Samuel; by Mary two, — James (grandfather of the aforesaid) and Mary.

"March 24, 1798; — Timothy Wellman and wife Sarah, and Ann Wyatt, spinster, for \$373, deed to John McMillan $\frac{3}{4}$ of the W. end of a dwelling house and land, bounded E. on land late of W^m Wyatt & now of Mary Cheever, S. on Essex St., W. on Capt. W^m Ropes. N. on the training field also a barn; all which estate being formerly the same W^m Wyatt aforesaid (father of said Sarah) died possessed of."

Children were: —

28. TIMOTHY WELLMAN ⁴, born —; removed to Thomaston, Me.; md. Sarah Silsbee Feb. 12, 1804.
29. SARAH WELLMAN ⁴, born —, 1788; died of consumption Aug. 22, 1810, unmarried.
30. JOSEPH WELLMAN ⁴, bapt. Feb. 18, 1787.
31. MARY WELLMAN ⁴, bapt. May 23, 1790.

32. NANCY WELLMAN⁴, bapt. May 1, 1793.

33. GEORGE WELLMAN⁴, bapt. Sept. 10, 1797.

34. ELIZA SHEDLOCK WELLMAN⁴, born Jan. 9, 1801; died Nov. 20, 1803.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Capt. TIMOTHY WELLMAN⁴ (No. 28), son of Timothy³ (TIMOTHY², TIMOTHY¹), born —; removed to Thomaston, Me., where Nov. 25, 1817, "in consideration of a release to me from the heirs of my father Timothy Wellman, late of Salem, dec'd, for \$1,505⁰⁰ convey to Joseph, Mary, Nancy, George and Eliza Wellman, heirs of said Timothy, all my right in the estate of my said father Timothy Wellman."

He was a master-mariner, and, together with Benjamin Crowninshield, commanded the armed ship "Alexander," 18 guns, 330 tons, which ship was captured May 19, 1813 (Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. II. p. 57).

"Timothy Wellman and Andrew Tucker commanders of schooner Galliniper, 2 guns, captured May, 1813, and burnt." — *Ibid.*, p. 58.

He married Feb. 12, 1804, Sarah Silsbee, dau. of Capt. Nathaniel and Sarah (Becket) Silsbee, she born Aug. 28, 1777; died July 12, 1840. (See Appendix, Silsbee Family, No. 37.)

Children were: —

35. MARY ANN WELLMAN⁵, born Aug. 9, 1805; living in 1885 in Salem, Mass., unmarried.

This lady rendered valuable information concerning the Wellman Family.

36. A daughter, born Nov. 25, 1806; died Nov. 28th following.

THE ROLL IN THE CHURCH OF DIVES, NORMANDY,

*Of the Companions of William in the Conquest of England, in 1066, by M.
LEOPOLD DELISLE, Member of the French Society of Archæology, as found
in Burke's "Vicissitudes of Families," Vol. III. p. 423.*

DIVES, a small town close to the sea-coast, in the Department of Calvados, in Normandy. This town of Dives is of high note in French and English history, for it was nigh to it, at the mouth of the Dive, that William the Conqueror and his companions in arms met for the subjugation of England. Dives, in the eleventh century, was one of the chief ports of the Duchy of Normandy. A *fête* was here given, in August, 1862, to affix in the old church there a new and carefully compiled list of the companions of William the Conqueror, in his conquest of England, in 1066, — a companion record to that of Battle Abbey, with this difference: the latter being the roll of those who actually fought at Hastings, while the one at Dives is that of those who assembled for the expedition, and were otherwise engaged in furthering the Conquest. This Roll was erected by the French Society of Archæology in August, 1862, with permission of Mgr. Didiot, Bishop of Bayeux, M. de Caumont being Director of the Society, M. the Abbé Renier, Vicar of Dives, and M. le Comte Foucher de Cariel, Member of the Conseil-Général for the Canton.

* Achard d'Ivri.	Ansgar de Montaign.	Auvrai d'Espagne.
* Aroul d'Ivri.	" de Senarpont.	" Merteberge.
Aitard de Vaux.	Ansgot.	" de Tanie.
Alain Le Roux.	Ansgot de Ros.	Azor.
Amauri de Dreux.	Arnoul d'Ardre.	Baudouin de Colombières.
Anquetil de Cherbourg.	" de Perci.	" Le Flamand.
" de Grai.	" de Hesdin.	" de Meules.
* " de Ros.	Aubert Greslet.	* Bûrenger Giffard.
Anscoul de Picquigne.	Aubri de Couci.	" de Toeni.
Ansroi de Cormeilles.	" de Ver.	Bernard d'Alençon.
" de Vaubadon.	Auvrai Le Breton.	" du Neufmarché.

* The star indicates that those and others of that name occur in this history.

Bernard Pancevolt.	Geoffroi Talbot.	Guillaume de Durville.
" de Saint-Owen.	" de Tournai.	" d'Ecouis.
Bertran de Verdu.	" de Trelli.	" Espec.
* Beuselin de Dive.	Gerboud Le Flamand.	" d'Eu.
Bigot de Loges.	Gilbert Le Blond.	* " Comte d'Evreux.
Carbonnel.	" de Blossville.	" de Falaise.
David d'Argentan.	" de Bretteville.	" de Fécamp.
Dreu de la Beuvrière.	" de Budi.	" Folet.
" de Montaigu.	" de Colleville.	" de la Forêt.
Durand Malet.	" de Gand.	" de Fougères.
Ecouland.	" Gibard.	" Froissart.
Eugenouf de L'Aigle.	" Malet.	" Goulaffre.
Enguerrand de Raimbeaucourt.	" Maminot.	" de Lètre.
Ernels de Buron.	" Tison.	" de Loucelles.
Etienne de Fontenai.	" de Venables.	" Louvet.
Eude Comte de Champagne.	" de Wissant.	" Malet.
Eude, évêque de Bayeux.	Gonfroï de Cioches.	" de Malleville.
" Cul-de-Loup.	" Mauduit.	" de la Mare.
" le Flamaud.	Goscelin de Cormeilles.	" Maubenc.
" de Fourneaux.	" de Douai.	" Mauduit.
" Le Sénéchal.	* " de La Rivière.	" de Moion.
Eustache. Comte de Boulogne.	Goubert d'Aufai.	" de Monceaux.
Foucher de Paris.	" de Beauvais.	* " de Noyers.
Fouque de Lisors.	Guernon de Peis.	* " fils d'Osberne.
Gautier d'Appreville.	Gui de Craon.	" Pantoul.
" Le Bourguignon.	" de Raimbeaucourt.	" de Parthenai.
" de Caen.	" de Rainecourt.	" Pêché.
" de Claville.	Guillaume Ahs.	" de Perci.
" de Douai.	" d'Ansleville.	" Pevrel.
* " Giffard.	* " L'Archer.	" de Picquigni.
" de Grancourt.	" d'Arques.	" Poignant.
" Hachet.	" de Audricu.	" de Poillei.
" Heusé.	" de L'Aune.	" Le Poitevin.
" d'Incourt.	* " Basset.	* " de Pont-de-
" de Laci.	" Belet.	" L'Arche.
" de Mucedent.	" de Beaufou.	" Quesnel.
" d'Omontville.	* " Bertram.	* " de Reviers.
" de Risbou.	" de Biville.	" de Sept-Meules.
" de Saint-Valéri.	" Le Blond.	" Taillebois.
" Tirel.	" Bonvalet.	" de Toeni.
" de Vernon.	" du Posc.	" de Vatteville.
Geoffroi Aselin.	" du Bosc-Roard.	" de Vauville.
" Bainard.	" de Bourneville.	" de Ver.
" du Bec.	" de Bral.	" de Vesli.
" de Cambrai.	" de Briouse.	" Warenne.
" de la Guierche.	" de Bursigni.	Guimond de Blangi.
" Le Maréchal.	" de Cahaignes.	" de Tessel.
" de Mandeville.	" de Cailli.	Guineboud de Balon.
" Martel.	" de Cairen.	Guinemar Le Flamand.
" Maurouard.	" de Cardon.	Hamelin de Balon.
" de Montbrai.	" de Carnet.	Hamon Le Sénéchal.
" Comte du Perche.	" de Castillon.	Hardouin d'Ecalles.
" de Pierrepont.	" de Ceaucé.	Hascouf Musard.
* " de Ros.	" La Chèvre.	Henri de Beaumont.
" de Runneville.	" de Colleville.	" de Ferrières.
	" de Corbon.	Herman de Dreux.
	" de Paumerai.	Hervé Le Berruier.
	" Le Despenser	" d'Espagne.

Hervé d'Héliou.	Néel de Berville.	Raoul de Tourneville.
Honfroï d'Ansville.	" Fossard.	" Tranchard.
" de Biville.	" de Gournai.	" fils d'Unspac.
" de Bohon.	" de Munneville.	" Vis-de-loup.
" de Carteret.	Normand d'Adreci.	Ravenot.
" de Culai.	Osborne d'Arques.	Renaud de Bailleul.
" de L'Ile.	" du Breuil.	" Croc.
" du Tillieul.	" d'Eu.	" de Pierrepont.
" Vis-de-Loup.	* " Giffard.	" de Sainte-Hélène.
Huard de Vernon.	" Pastforeire.	" de Torteval.
Hubert de Mont Canisi.	" du Quesnai.	Renier de Brimou.
" de Port.	" du Saussai.	Renouf de Colombelles.
Hugue L'Ane.	" de Wanci.	" Flambard.
" d'Avranches.	Osmond.	" Pevrel.
* " de Beauchamp.	Osmond de Vaubadon.	" de Saint Waleri.
" de Bernières.	*Ours d'Abbetot.	" de Vaubadon.
" du Bois-Hébert.	" de Berchères.	Richard Basset.
" de Bolbec.	Picot.	" de Beaumais.
" Bourdet.	Pierre de Valognes.	" de Bienfante.
" de Brébeuf.	Rahier d'Avre.	" de Bondeville.
" de Corbon.	Raoul d'Aunou.	" de Courci.
" de Dol.	" Baignard.	" d'Engagne.
" le Flamand.	" de Bane.	" L'Estourmi.
" de Gournai.	" de Bapaumes.	" Fresle.
* " de Grantemesnil.	* " Basset.	" de Meri.
" de Guideville.	" de Beaufou.	" de Neuville.
" de Hodenc.	" de Bernai.	" Poignant.
" de Hotot.	" Blouet.	* " de Reviers.
* " d'Ivri.	" Botin.	" de Sacquenville.
" de Laci.	" de La Bruière.	" de Saint Clair.
" de Maci.	" de Chartres.	" de Sourdeval.
" Maminot.	" de Colombières.	" Talbot.
" de Manneville.	" de Conteville.	" de Vatteville.
" de La Mare.	" de Courbépine.	" de Vernon.
" Mautravers.	" Le Estourmi.	Richer d'Andeli.
" de Mobec.	" de Fougères.	Robert d'Armentières.
" de Montfort.	" Framan.	" d'Auberville.
" de Montgomeri.	* " de Gael.	" d'Aumale.
" Musard.	" de Hauville.	" de Barbes.
" de Port.	" de L'Ile.	" Le Bastard.
" de Rennes.	" de Languetot.	" de Beaumont.
" de Saint-Quentin.	" de Limesi.	" Le Blond.
" Silvestre.	" de Marci.	" Blouet.
" de Vesli.	" de Mortemer.	" Bourdet.
" de Viville.	" de Noron.	" de Brix.
Ilbert de Laci.	" d'Ouilli.	" de Buci.
" de Toeni.	" Painel.	" de Chandos.
Ive Taillebois.	" Pinel.	* " Corbet.
" de Vesci.	" Pipin.	" de Courçon.
Josce Le Flamand.	" de La Pommeraie.	" Cruel.
Juhel de Toen	" du Quesnai.	" Le Despensier.
Lanfranc.	" de Saint-Sanson.	" Comte d'Eu.
Mathieu de Mortagne.	" du Saussai.	" Fromentin.
Mauger de Carteret.	" de Savigni.	" fils de Geroud.
Maurin de Caen.	" Taillebois.	" de Glanville.
Mill Crespin.	" du Theil.	" Guernon.
Murdac.	" de Toeni.	* " de Harcourt.
Néel d' Aubigni.	" de Tourlaville.	" de Lorz.

Robert Malet.	Roger de Courcelles.	Turstin Tinel.
" Comte de Meulan.	* " d'Evreux.	Vauquelin de Rosai.
" de Montbrai.	* " d'Ivri.	Vital.
" de Montfort.	" de Laci.	Wadard.
" Comte de Mortain.	" de Lisieux.	
" des Moutiers.	" de Menles.	D'Auvrecher d'Angerville.
" Murdac.	" de Montgomeri.	De Bailleul.
" d'Ouilli.	" de Moyaux.	De Briqueville.
" de Pierrepont.	" de Mussegros.	Daniel.
" de Pontchardon.	" de Oistreham.	Bavent.
" de Rhuddlan.	" d'Orbec.	De Clinchamps.
" de Romenel.	" Picot.	De Courcy.
" de Saint-Leger.	" de Pistres.	De Vicomte.
" de Thaon.	" Le Poitevin.	De Tournebut.
" de Toeni.	" de Rames.	De Tilly.
" deVatteville.	" de Saint-Germain.	Danneville.
" des Vaux.	* " de Sommeri.	D'Argouges.
" de Veci.	Ruand l'Adoubé.	D'Auvay.
" de Vesh.	Seri d'Auberville.	De Canonville.
" de Villon.	Serlon de Burci.	De Cussy.
Roger d'Abernou.	* " de Ros.	De Fribois.
" Arundel.	Sigar de Cioches.	D'Héricy.
" d'Auberville.	Simon de Senlis.	D'Houdetot.
" de Beaumont.	Thierry Pointel.	De Mathan.
" Bigot.	Tihel de Hérion.	De Montfiquet.
" Boissel.	Toustain.	D'Orglande.
" de Bosc-Normand.	Turoid.	Du Merie.
" de Bosc-Roard.	" de Gienteville.	De Touchet.
" de Breteuil.	" de Papelion.	De Venois.
" de Bulli.	Turstin de Gueron.	De Saint-Germain.
" de Carteret.	" Mantel.	De Sainte-Marie.
" de Chandos.	" de Sainte-Hélène.	D'Aignaux.
* " Corbet.	" fils de Rou.	

ADDENDA.

NOTE TO PAGE 15.

"Cambridgeshire, Norfolk and Suffolk, and Huntingdon were formerly called the East Angles, and were first converted to the Christian faith by Felix, a Burgundian, whom Sigebert, one of the kings of the East Angles, brought with him from France.

"He was consecrated bishop about A. D. 636, and governed the see seventeen years . . . And so the bishops of the see had jurisdiction over this country till A. D. 809, at which time King Egbert, having conquered the whole land, divided the same into several bishopricks, and then this country was included in that of Lincoln till 1139." — CARTER, *History of Cambridgeshire*.

"Cambridgeshire, written by the English Saxons, Granthbyrige, i. e. Grant-Bridge, in the time of the Heptarchy, became a part of the East Angles, and was so called on account of its easterly situation in respect of the other Saxon kingdoms. The whole is divided into 17 hundreds, wherein are 163 parishes, one city, viz., Ely, one borough, viz., Cambridge, and eight other market towns." — *Ibid*.

"According to ancient history, this county was one of the four inhabited by the Iceni, or Trigeni, who were a valiant and stout people; and though they at first submitted to the Romans, we find them in arms, and inviting the Trinobantes, and other Britons, to join them, and to oppose and revenge the cruelty of their tyrannical and foreign masters, who had wasted their country, endeavoured to reduce them all into a state of slavery by disarming them, and exacting a tax of 300,000*l.*, in those days an immense sum." — *Ibid*.

"A. D. 1010, soon after Easter, the Danes arrived with many ships at Ipswich; next day they proceeded to a place called King-mere, where they heard Ulfcetel lay with his forces, who gave them a warm reception; but his men at length going back, he lost the field, though the men of Cambridgeshire stood it valiantly. The Danes, without more resistance, three months together had the spoiling of the whole country, burning Cambridge and Thetford, killing all they met. On retiring to their ships they were laden with so much booty they almost ruined the country."

"Whittesford, Cambridgeshire, — according to Carter in his "History of Cambridgeshire," p. 325, — was a village seven miles southeast of Cambridge, and forty-five miles north of London.

"Reformation, 1548 — March 19, we defaced a cross on the chancel, three superstitious pictures, a popish inscription, 'Pray for our souls,' and a lamb in the glass, with a cross over it.

"William Colt and Michael Knight, churchwardens. Thomas Ward and Bennet Peacock, constables." Freeholders as given on page 15 of "Driver Family."

"Whittesford is a vicarage, dedicated to St. Mary and St. Andrew; clear value, 2*l.* Patron, Jesus College, situate in Whittesford hundred, and Cambs deanery. Feast, June 11th

"The Rev. Mr. Keller, sequestrator Bishop's procurations, impropriations, 6*s.* 8*d.* Birth 8, burial 7."

NOTE TO PAGE 18.

"Canon Driver, of Christ Church, Oxford, England, is the author of 'Isaiah: His Life and Times, and the Writings which bear his Name,' in Randolph's 'Men of the Bible,' series. The life of Isaiah and his relations to his own age occupy about half of the volume, the rest of which is devoted to those prophecies that are unrelated to that age and to those chapters of which he was not the author."

NOTE TO PAGE 25.

"Cawgust, which Towne, being now of age to receive an English name in 1596 was called Linne." — JOHNSON, *Wonder Working Providence*.

"Cawgust, Sagust, or Saugut, now called Linn, consists of more than one hundred dwelling houses, their church being built on a level undefended from the North-west wind, is made with steps descending into the Earth, their streets are straight and but thin of houses, the people most husbandmen. This Town hath the benefit of minerals of divers kinds. Iron, Lead, one Iron mill, store of Cattle, Arable land & Meadow. At the end of the Sandy Beach is a neck of land called Nahant, it is six miles in circumference. Black William, an Indian Duke, out of his generosity gave this to the English." — J. JOSELYN, *Two Voyages to New England*, p. 128.

"1518, a little before the removal of that church of Christ from Holland to Pilmoth in New England, as the ancient Indians report, there befell a great mortality among them, the greatest that ever the memory of Father to Sonne took notice of, chiefly desolating those places, where the English afterward planted the Country of Pockanoky, Agassawamg, it was almost wholly deserted, insomuch that the Neighbour Indians did abandon those places for feare of death, fleeing more West & by South, observing the East and by Northern parts were most smitten with this Contagion. Their Disease being a sore Consumption, sweeping away whole Families, but chiefly young men and children, their Pow-wows, which are their Doctors working partly by Charmes and partly by Medicine, were much amazed to see their wigwams lie full of dead Corpses, and that now neither Squantam nor Abbeemocho could helpe,

which are their good and bad God, and also their Powwows themselves were oft smitten with deaths stroke. But by this means Christ not only made room for his people to plant; but also tamed the hard and cruel hearts of these barbarous Indians." — JOHNSON, *Wonder Working Providence*, p. 18.

Agisawam, or Agawam, to which it was shortened, included the towns of Bradford, Boxford, Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Hamilton, Wenham, and Beverly, or the whole territory from Merrimac River on the north to Naumkeag River on the south, from Cochichawick, now Andover, on the west, and to the seaside on the east.

Again, in "Planter's Pies," p. 26, occurs the following: "In many places," in New England, "much cleared ground for tillage, and large marshes for hay and feeding of cattle, which comes to pass by the desolation hapning through a three yeeres Plague, which swept away most of the inhabitants all along the sea-coast, and in some places utterly consumed man, woman and child, so that there is no person left to lay claime to the soyle which they possessed. And what is remarkable, such a Plague hath not been knowne, or remembered in any age past."

NOTE TO PAGE 26.

"1630. A catalogue of such needful things as every planter doth or ought to provide to go to New England; as namely for one man: —

8 bushels of meal	1 hammer
2 " " pensse	1 shovel
2 " " oatmeal	1 spade
1 gal. of aqua vitæ	2 augers
1 " " oil	4 chisels
2 " " vinegar	2 pieces, stocked
1 furkin of butter	1 gimlet
	1 hatchet

Apparel.

1 Monmouth cap	2 frowers (an edged tool, with a hooked point used to lop trees, hedges, etc.)
3 falling bands	1 grindstone
8 shirts	1 pickaxe
1 waistcoat	Nails of all sorts
1 suit of canvass	
1 " " frieze	
1 " " cloth	

Household implements.

8 pair of stockings	1 iron pot
4 " " shoes	1 kettle
2 " " sheets	1 frying pan
7 ells of canvass to make a bed and bolster	1 gridiron
1 pair of blankets	2 skillets
1 coarse rug	1 spit

Arms.

1 armour complete	Wooden platters
1 long piece	Dishes
1 sword	Spoons
1 belt	Trenchers
1 bandoleer	Spices
20 pound of powder	Sugar
80 " " lead	Pepper
1 pistol and goose shot	Cloves
	Mace
	Cinnamon
	Nutmegs
	Fruits

Tools.

1 broad hoe	Also there are divers other things necessary to be taken over to this Plantation, as books, nets, hooks and lines, cheese, bacon, kine, goats."
1 narrow hoe	
1 broad axe	
1 felling axe	
1 steel hand saw	
1 whipsaw	

"All that come must have victuals with them for a twelve month, until they can get increase of corn by their own labor." — YOUNG, *Chronicles*, pp. 266, 267.

"Passengers to be charged at the rate of £5 a person, £4 a ton for goods, & children under four years no charge, over four, three children for one charge, under eight years, two children for one charge, under twelve years, three children for two charges, and a ship of two hundred tons shall not carry above 120 passengers complete." — *Ibid.*, p. 117.

NOTE TO PAGE 29.

"The better sort of houses of the colonists were two stories high, with upper story jutting out a foot or so over the lower. The roofs high and steep, and hipped or gambred. The frames were of white oak, and the beams of each finished room were left considerably in sight. The windows were from two and a half to three feet long, one and a half to two wide, with squares like the figure of a diamond, set in lead lines, and from three to four inches long. These windows were sometimes entire and sometimes in halves, and opened outwardly on hinges. They were fashionable until after or about 1734. Those with four by six glass succeeded; then five by seven; then six by eight; then seven by nine, set in wooden frames, which began to be used in 1750. The walls of houses were daubed with clay, mixed with straw, or plastered with a sort of lime made in great part of clam-shells. The walls were whitewashed; paper was not put on walls until 1783. Each side of a dwelling had bricks laid against the inner partition, being then covered with clay, and then with clay-boards (since corrupted to clap-boards), thus making them comfortable in cold weather. The best houses were shingled on top; others, such as cottages of one story, had thatched roofs, until after about 1690. Very few houses had more than one chimney, — this was in the middle, — and besides other fire-places had a mammoth one in the kitchen, where a whole family could sit on the two forms, or 'settles,' placed in the corner. Thirty cords of fire-wood annually was not thought extravagant for a family. Paint was but little used for houses, either inside or out, before about 1734." — CHASE, *History of Haverhill, Mass.*, p. 96.

NOTE TO PAGE 30.

"The Freeman's Oath" was the first paper printed in New England. It was printed at Cambridge, Mass., by Stephen Daye, in 1638, upon a single sheet, as given on p. 30 of this book.

"None may now be a freeman of that Company (Massachusetts Bay) unless he be a church member among them. None have voice in elections of governor, deputy, and assistants. None are to be magistrates, officers, or jury men, grand or petit, but freemen. Ministers give their votes in all elections of magistrates.

"Now the most of the persons of New England are not admitted to their church, and therefore are not freemen; and when they come to be tried, be it for life and limb, name or estate, or whatsoever, they must be tried, and judged, too, by those of the church who are in a sort their adversaries. How equal that hath been, or may be, some by experience do know, others may judge." — LETCHFORD.

1631. "For time to come noe man shalbe admitted to the freedome of this body politticks,

but such as are members of some of the churches within the limits of the same." — *Col. Rec.*, 1-89.

"Every freeman shall speak by turne, and not otherwise, and shall signifie when he is to speak by rising or putting off his hatt, and, his speech being ended, shall signifie it by putting on his hatt or sitting downe; and in case he be interrupted by the moderator, and shall refuse to cease, shall forfeit for every offence one shilling; also, that no person shall depart from meeting without leave on the like penalty."

1634. "The inconvenience of having the Legislature composed of the whole number of freemen, and the danger of leaving the plantations exposed to the attacks of the Indians, induced the people to form a House of Representatives, who first assembled on the fourteenth of May. Eight towns were represented, each of which sent three representatives, — Boston, Charlestown, Roxbury, Dorchester, Cambridge, Watertown, Lynn, and Salem. The General Court this year consisted of the Governor, Deputy-Governor, six assistants, and twenty-four representatives. This number was not much increased for many years, each town sending fewer rather than more representatives." — *Lewis, History of Lynn*, p. 89.

"1692, the arrival of Sir William Phipps, the first governor of the province under the new charter made that year, and his change in the government of the province, caused a change in the organization of towns; hence, at the next annual meeting the town board of officers was as follows: —

— Moderator, Town Clerk (formerly Recorder), Selectmen, Highway Surveyors, Leather Sealer, Sealer of Weights and Measures, Tythingmen, Viewers of Fences, Grand Juror, Jury of Trials." — *CHASE, History of Haverhill*.

"Those who are sent for deputies and grand jurors shall be allowed two shillings and sixpence for four days, in which they goe and returne, and twelve pence a day for every other day, which they necessarily attend town's service, if the country find the charges of debt, otherwise, more as shall be thought fit upon due consideration." — *Town Records for 1688*.

NOTE TO PAGE 31.

"When this country was first settled, the usual manner of writing dates was by numbering the months. March was the first month, and the 25th of March, being Lady Day, or Annunciation of the Church, was the first day of the year. Subsequently the practice of numbering the months was discontinued, but, until 1762, the year still commenced with the 25th of March. In 1761 the British Parliament, by statute, provided that the then next first day of January should be reckoned to be the first day of the year 1762, and that the day following the second of September, 1762, should be called the fourteenth, thus omitting eleven intermediate nominal days. By that act, bissextile, or leap-years, are established every fourth year, and of each hundredth year every fourth is to be a leap-year, of three hundred and sixty-six days, commencing with the year 2000." — *CHASE, History of Haverhill*, p. 835.

According to Coffin, "our Puritan forefathers attempted a reformation in the calendar by repudiating the names of the months, and of the days of the week, as of heathenish origin, and altogether unsuitable to be used by christians: for, in the language of Johnson, in his 'Wonder-working Providence,' 'the practice was designed

of purpose to prevent the heathenish and popish observation of days, months, and years, that they may be forgotten among the people of the Lord.' To accommodate those who did not desire this reformation, a double date was used."

NOTE TO PAGE 31.

It was not an unusual thing to have the town book lost; records of 1715 state that the Haverhill "Town's old book of grants and orders" was lost, and a committee was chosen to see if they could find it. The committee spent three days in the business. Captain White, Town Clerk, attended on them two days; James Sanders made one journey to Salem, to inquire after it, and another journey to "Saidige," to inquire after and bring home the old town books. The whole expenses were four pounds, sixteen shillings. The books when found were ordered to be delivered to the Town Clerk. The town once before had refused to allow these books to be kept by that officer. On recovery, these books were found in a mutilated state, and caused great trouble in the copylog.

In 1678 the clerk was ordered to enter in the book "all the previous orders and grants of the town which stand in loose papers and sheets." This vote accounts for the pious manner in which the votes and grants of the town were recorded in the old book of records. They were many of them first written on loose papers and sheets, and, when finally re-copied, no regard was paid to their dates. Indeed, many of them are without date, thus making it impossible to assign them correctly. — *CHASE*.

The order from England, as found in the "Company's second letter of instructions to Endicott," 1629, concerning the keeping a daily register, was as follows: "We have sent you divers paper books, which we pray you keep a perfect register of the daily work done by each person in each family: a copy send unto us once every half year." — *YOUNG, Chronicles*, p. 177.

NOTE TO PAGE 43.

"Strawberry Bank. The Great House and Isle of Shoales.

"Within 2 Miles of the Mouth is Strawberry Banke, where are many Families, and a Minister & a Meeting House, and to the Meeting Houses of Dover and Exeter most of the people resort. This Strawberry Banke is part of 6,000 acres granted by Patent about 70 years 1620 or 1621, to Mr David Thompson, who, with the assistance of Mr Nicholas Sherwill, Mr Leonard Pomeroy, and Mr Abraham Colmer, of Plymouth, Merchants, went over with a Considerable Company of Servants and built a strong and Large House, enclosed it with a large and high Palisado and mounted Gunns, and, being stored extraordinarily with shot and Ammunition, was a Terror to the Indians, who at that time were insulting over the poor weak and unfurnished Planters of Plymouth. This house and fort he built on a Point of Land at the very entrance of Passataway River. And having granted by Patent all the Island bordering on this Land to the Middle of the River, he took possession of an Island commonly called the great Island, and for the bounds of this Land he went up the River to a point called Bloody Point, and by the sea side about four miles he had also power of Government within his owne bounds. Notwithstanding all this, all is at this day in the power and at the disposal of the Massachusetts. Two

Leagues of Iyes the Isle of Shoosles, one of the best places for fishing in the land."—MAVERICK'S "Description of New England," believed to have been written in 1660. (When Winthrop and his company arrived in New England, Samuel Maverick was settled at Noddle's Island, now East Boston. The date of his arrival, according to his manuscript, was in 1624, aged 22 years.)

NOTE TO PAGE 46.

In 1708, at a town meeting, thirteen young women of Haverhill, Mass., were granted permission to build a pew in the hind seat in the east end of the meeting-house gallery, "provided they would not build so high as to damnify or hinder the light of them windows at the said east end."

Window curtains seem to have been unknown, for, at the same meeting, "John White, desiring leave to set up a shed on the outside of the window at the west end of the meeting-house to keep out the heat of the sun there, it was readily granted."—CHASE, *History of Haverhill*, p. 232.

NOTE TO PAGE 48.

"Wagons were unknown until 1800, or later. In that year Robert Hamilton, of Conway, Mass., built a one-horse wagon, and claimed it to be the first one in America, and himself the inventor. It was not until 1820 that they came into general use."—CHASE, *History of Haverhill*, p. 338.

NOTE TO PAGE 50.

The manner in which the Indians carried on their wars was very different from that of civilized nations. To defend themselves against an enemy they had no other fortification but an irregular kind of fortress, which they called a castle, or fort. It consisted of a square, without bastions, surrounded with palisades. This was erected where the most considerable number of the tribe resided, and was designed as an asylum for their old men, their women and children, while the rest of the tribe were gone out to war. "The woods," according to Johnson, "are as welcome to them as their wigwams: fire they can make in all places by cluifing two sticks together. Their food is ready drest at all times; parching Indian Corn in their fire, they ground it to meal, and with four or five spoonfull of it cast into their mouths, and a sup or two of water, which they take up with a leaf of a Tree, this is their Common repast." The weapons of the Indians were a club made of hard wood, and a bow and arrow. Thus armed, the Indian took with him a small bag of corn, and was completely equipped for a campaign. Their mode of war was the same as that of hunting. The Indians immediately came forward and began the scene of outrage and death. All was then a scene of fury, impetuosity, and vengeance. Revenge takes an entire possession of their souls; he aims only to butcher and destroy. Of all the sounds that discord has produced, the Indian war-whoop is the most awful and horrid. This sound he indulges in repeatedly. If the Indians remain masters of the field, they always strip and scalp the dead. Upon their approach to their own tribe, the scalps, stretched upon a bow and elevated upon a pole, are carried before them, as the token of valor and success. The persons which they have taken make an important part of their triumph. When they arrive at the place of their destination, the old men, women, and children of the tribe form them-

selves into two lines, through which the prisoners must run the gantlet to the village. If the prisoner is young and active and a good runner, he makes his way without much injury. If weak or old, he receives much damage by blows and stripes laid upon him. The women and children are disposed of according to the pleasure of their captors, but they are seldom put to death unless invalids. Of the men, some are appointed to supply the places of such Indians as have fallen in battle.—CHASE, *Early History of New Hampshire*.

NOTE TO PAGE 61.

This was the time of the "Border War," so called at this date, and which may be a reason for the delay of Governor Belcher's signature to this petition of the Narragansett soldiers.

"The first charter of the Massachusetts Colony granted all 'that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack and three miles to the south of the Charles river, and of every part thereof, in the Massachusetts Bay; and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea.' This gave Massachusetts the larger part of what is now New Hampshire and Vermont, and a large slice of Maine.

"Boundary difficulties commenced in 1720, and continued until 1769, the greatest that of Londonderry, which was settled by twenty Irish families, April 2, 1719, being a part of Haverhill, called Nutfield, incorporated in 1722 by the name of Londonderry, from the city in Ireland where the families had formerly resided. These families were a part of one hundred and twenty families who arrived Aug. 14, 1718, at Boston, in five ships from the north of Ireland, descendants of a colony which went from Argyleshire, in Scotland, about the middle of the seventeenth century. They were rigid Presbyterians, and fled from Scotland to avoid the persecutions of Charles I.

"These Irish people, in 1729, sent a petition to the General Court to settle the boundary line, and a petition from the inhabitants of Haverhill to the same Court in 1781 to do the same thing remained unsettled. A petition was next sent to the king, and a man appointed to carry over the petition. The decision of the king was not given until Aug. 6, 1740, and the line was not actually run until 1741: during all this time Mr. Belcher was the governor of both provinces, New Hampshire and Massachusetts. He had had all the appointments to make for the surveying and marking the line. When the line was marked it was found that New Hampshire had fifty miles more of territory than was claimed. This occasioned further disputes and even assaults between those who lived near the boundary, as those who attempted to mow the meadows on the line came to blows, and in one instance the mower was seized and carried off by intruders, who were in wait for the purpose, no one knew where. Claimants were even carried to prison. Thus suits were continually before the General Court."—ABSTRACT FROM CHASE'S *History of Haverhill*.

NOTE TO PAGE 97.

The Puritan Sabbath in the villages of New England commenced on Saturday afternoon, the morning having been devoted to everything necessary for the support of nature upon the Sabbath cooked and in readiness, excepting the beans and rye and Indian bread, which were

allowed to remain in the oven over Saturday night, subject to the working heat. No labor was performed on the evening which preceded the Lord's day, according to the Company's first general letter of instructions to Endicott and his council of April 17, 1629, one clause of which says: "And to the end that the Sabbath may be celebrated in a religious manner, we appoint that all that inhabit the plantation, both for the general and particular employments, may surcease their labor every Saturday throughout the year, at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, and that they spend the rest of that day in catechising and preparation for the Sabbath, as the minister shall direct." — *Young, Chronicles*, p. 164.

Early on Sunday morning the blowing of a horn in some places announced that the hour of worship was at hand; in other villages a flag was hung out of the building occupied by the church; at Cambridge a drum was beat in military style; at Salem a bell indicated the opulence of that city. The public religious services usually commenced at nine in the morning, and occupied six to eight hours, divided by an intermission of one hour for dinner. The sexton called upon the minister and escorted him to church. The people collected punctually, as the law compelled their attendance, and there was a heavy fine for any one that rode fast to meeting. In summer the women carried a bunch of spear-mint, or lavender, or fennel, to help keep awake; in winter, a hand stove to help keep warm.

Where there were two clergymen, one was called the teacher, the other the elder, between whom in the early time there was some slight difference, thus explained by Elliot: "Many made excellent teachers, but who could not be endowed with pastoral care. The title of elder is retained from the beginning as a name for minister. The teacher was the pastor, who taught, administered the sacraments, studied, and took a spiritual care of the flock. The elders helped the pastors in overseeing and ruling the people, but yet were capable to teach, and did occasionally through necessity, or in the pastor's absence or illness; but not giving themselves to study or teaching, they had no need of maintenance, and had none allowed them by the congregation." Both teacher and elder were equally distinguished in the town, and always treated with marked reverence; the smallest boy would scarcely venture to pass one, on the opposite side even, without pulling off his cap; and to speak in their presence was unheard of in that day when "children should be seen and not heard."

The full canonicals of the clergy were a wig, gown and band, knee-breeches, low shoes with square shoe buckles, and above all a high cocked-hat, and many carried a ponderous cane. To pass through the town to church the clergy covered themselves with a long cloak fastened at the neck by means of a hook, generally of silver. The minister's wife was pre-eminently the head of feminine society in her husband's parish. Her position was marked and her duties onerous, as chief lady of that parish: her house had to be distinguished for hospitality, and her precept and example raised the standard of female character. To assume the responsible position of wife to the clergyman required long consideration and strong nerves.

Prayer opened the exercises of the church; a chapter from the Bible was read by one of the ministers, where there were two, in some of the churches; in others it was not read at all; and it took years of agitation to carry that innovation. A psalm in metre was next sung, which

was dictated line by line to the congregations, as books were few and very expensive. This service generally was performed by one of the deacons. The preacher did not take part in the introductory services. Baptisms, cases of church discipline, and collections always took place in the afternoon.

The sermons oftentimes made from a hundred to a hundred and fifty written pages, the "long" prayer usually occupied from an hour to an hour and a half. The seats called "clap seats" in the large high back square pews of the old meeting-houses were hung on hinges, and in prayer time were turned up, to allow the occupants a chance to lean against the railing for support during this long prayer. In 1791 in a church meeting in Haverhill the following vote was acted upon: "Voted that Coll. James Brickett, Deacon Joseph Dodge, and Doct. Saltonstall be a committee to speak to the Revd Mr. Shaw that he would speak at some Convenient Season unto the People that they would Let their Seats Down without Such Nois." (Chase's "Haverhill"). This was occasioned by the noise made after prayers at the amen, when the seats came down with a bang like the explosion of artillery; mischievous children taking pains to have their seats bang long after the rest. Small arm-rests were also placed at the sides of the pews to hold up the weary heads of the worshippers during the long church services which oftentimes were continued until after sunset. The bell placed in some churches later in the colonies, where the steeple was in the middle of the house, as in Newbury, had a rope by which it was rung hanging from the centre of the ceiling to the centre of the broad aisle, which was always the centre aisle. Here stood the sexton and rang vigorously one half hour before service, then gradually came down to a toll, slower and slower till it stopped entirely. In Newbury, some young men, in the days of the grandmother of the Copley, tied a black ram with high horns to the bell-rope of the church there, who in his efforts to get away rang the bell just as the sexton did; and as it was night, and there was no means of making a light in the church, the people who ran to see what was the matter, looking in through the windows and seeing the horns and gleaming eyes of the ram declared that the devil was in the church and so reported it about the town for a long time afterwards, causing nervous persons and children to be afraid to venture abroad after nightfall. The church bell was also rung at nine o'clock every night the same as the old curfew bell, to warn people that it was time to put out the fires and go to bed; and it struck the day of the month; and also for funerals rang out the age of the one being borne to the grave.

Stoves were not introduced in churches until about 1822, although from an entry in the diary of Judge Sewall, they must have been much needed long before that, for on Jan. 24, 1686, he wrote the following: "So cold that the sacramental bread is frozen pretty hard, and rattles sadly into the plates." Hand stoves only were in use, which were square boxes with perforated brass or tin sides, set in a frame of wood supported by means of a ball, by which they were carried. In these live wood embers were placed just before meeting time and kept alive by a dexterous swinging of the stove off and on, on the way to meeting. On these the feet were placed and thus kept warm; females made use of this stove, the men, despoiling such a luxury, kept warm by striking their feet together, and as their footwear was of thick cowhide and thicker soles, the

noise thus occasioned about equalled that of letting down the seats.

Singing in church at first conducted only by means of a pitch pipe was in 1821, about, aided by a bass-viol, and in or about 1834, a double-bass viol was added, both of which were universally condemned and strenuously resisted. The first organ in America was brought to Boston by Thomas Brattle and presented to King's Chapel there; but the New Englanders were so opposed to anything pertaining to popery that, calling it "a popish fiddle," it remained a long time in the packing case in the porch. In 1714 it was set up in the church, and used forty years. This organ was built by J. Preston, in York, England. For some reason it was detained in his workshop and thus escaped destruction at the time Cromwell's soldiers made a raid upon organs in churches. This same year the first book on music by note was published. The Rev. John Tufts to improve the singing in his own church at Newbury, compiled a small work on music, a reprint of Ravenscroft, which was first published in 1618. The tunes were York, Hackney, Windsor, Martyr's, and Saint Mary's, and contained twenty-eight cantus or trebles of psalm tunes. The price was sixpence. This attempt to teach singing by note was a daring innovation on the then customs, well expressed by a writer in the "New England Chronicle" thus: "Truly I have a great jealousy that if we once begin to sing by rule the next thing will be to pray by rule, preach by rule, and then comes popery." Which sentiment is better understood by the following, as taken from Johnson's "Wonder Working Providence," p. 24. "Listen awhile hear what his herald proclaims, Babylon's fallen is fallen, both her Doctrine & Lordly rabble of Popes, Cardinals, Lordly-Bishops, Friars, Monks, Nuns, Seminary-Priests, Jesuits, Eremites, Pilgrims, Deans, Prebends, Arch-Deacons, Commissaries, Officials, Proctors, Sommers, Singing-men, Choristers, Organist, Bellows-Blowers, Vergers, Porters, Sextons, Beads-men, and Bel-singers and all others who never had name in the word of God, together with all her false Doctrines."

The pulpit in the churches with the deacons' seat beneath was placed at the end of the church, but not always against the wall, as some were reached by means of stairs from the back porch; a window was always placed directly behind the pulpit, so as to enable the preacher to see to the end of the service, as there was no other way of lighting the church; above the pulpit a sounding board hung, which was a square board suspended over the minister's head by an iron rod, which to children was a subject of wonderment, and also a means of keeping them quiet; for with fixed eyes they watched to see how soon that board would fall, and in the attending confusion they might escape to the fields outside, to them more attractive than where they were.

Nothing secular was talked about on Sunday, nor anything of a like nature read. The Bible, Bay Psalm Book, Foxe's Book of Martyrs, Bank of Faith, The History of the Devil, Baxter's Saints' Rest, the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism, contained at that time in a small miscellaneous volume called the Primer, were the prescribed books to read and ponder over on that day. All other books were even put away out of sight to exemplify, "lead us not into temptation."

"At first for years there had been but one church, one meeting-house, and one mode or form of religious worship in each of the parishes, and but one form or standard of religious faith.

The 'established church' in the towns, and indeed in the Colony, was the 'Orthodox Congregational' church. This was emphatically 'the religion of the state,' and it was not until nearly a century after the establishment of the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies that any other system was even tolerated." — CHASE.

"At length some persons became what was called 'liberal,' considered by the Orthodox 'aspiring,' and sects appeared called 'Separatists' and 'Independents,' and reading from the Bible in the pulpit became customary. The young people more particularly went to these new congregations, just to see the contrast, and to show that they were not bigoted, and that a change was desired." — *Reminiscences of a Nonconformist*.

NOTE TO PAGE 142.

"The titles of Mr. and Mrs. were only given to those of a certain rank in colonial times, a plain man was called, Goodman, and a woman of like station Goodwife or Goody. No one could enlist in the Massachusetts Cavalry unless he were of a certain amount of property. Lads in college had their names arranged in the catalogue by the relative dignity of their family connections. Seats in churches were assigned according to social importance in the village. The distinctive mark of the laboring man was that his breeches, jacket, waistcoat, doublet, or coat, were of leather or sheepskin or deer skin, — hence rustics were known as 'buckskins.'"

Silks, satin, velvets, silver, gold, and jewels were used only by the gentlemen of that day. By them silver buckles were worn at the knees and shoes, gold sleeve-buttons, ruffled bosoms and cuffs, and a cocked hat. Yet in 1689, the court forbade the wearing of "immoderate great breeches, knots of rybands, shoulder bands, ruffles, rases, double ruffs and cuffs." In consequence of the complaints against the then excessive wearing of lace and other superfluities by the women, the general court in September, 1689, "ordered that hereafter no garment shall be made with short sleeves, whereby the nakedness of the arms may be discovered in the wearing thereof, and such as have garments already made with short sleeves, shall not wear the same unless they cover the armes to the wrist with linnen or otherwise. And that hereafter no person whatsoever shall make any garment for women, or any of the sex, with sleeves more than half an ell wide (twenty-two and a half inches) in the widest part thereof and so proportionable for bigger or smaller persons."

May, 1649, Governor Endicott and Deputy-Governor Dudley, with seven of the Assistants, issued the following on long hair: —

"We the magistrates, who have subscribed this paper do declare and manifest our dislike and detestation against the wearing of such long hair, as against a thing uncivil and unmanly, whereby men doe deforme themselves and offend sober and modest men, and doe corrupt good manners. We doe therefore earnestly entreat all the elders of this jurisdiction to take care that the members of the respective churches be not defiled therewith; that so such as shall prove obstinate and will not reforme themselves, may have God and man to witness against them. As the wearing of long hair after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians has begun to invade New England contrary to the rule of God's word, which says it is a shame for a man to wear long hair, as also the commendable cus-

tom generally of all godly of our nation, until within these few years."

The "plate silver" buttons made of Spanish dollars and smaller coins, which were used in England in the days of Queen Anne, were also worn in America. Watches for the pocket were first made in England in 1658, their use in the Colonies was confined to the richer classes.

In the early inventories of furniture no forks appear, but there was a great affluence of napkins. Pewter was the ware used for most articles of table furniture, therefore, when the new China drink was introduced, china cups and saucers came with it, which at first were large enough to hold about a gill, and some were made with a lip like a pitcher, to aid the pouring of the tea into the saucer from which it was drunk. Guests at tea parties were expected to bring a cup and saucer with them, as they were rare and only for occasional use.

From 1680 to 1686 but little water was drunk in the Colonies: "for although the place did afford plenty," says Johnson, "yet for present they could find but one spring, and that not to be come at but when the tide was downe." Higginson writes that he did "oftentimes drink New England water very well." Beer was the general drink; but many regretted coming to Salem the first winter when beer was scarce. Barley not being the chief grain raised, brewing was unable to be done in the Colonies, and according to Johnson, "those that were sent over as servants, having itching desires after novelties, found a readier way to make an end of their masters' provision than they could find means to get more; they that came over their own men had but little left to feed on, and most began to repent when their strong Beere and full cups ran as small as water in a large Land, and that which added to their present distracted thoughts, the Ditch between England and their new place of abode was so wide that they could not leap over with a lope-staffe." Rum was introduced by trade with the West Indies, and then distilleries were set up in New England, and it became cheap enough to be a common drink. These New England distilleries made brandy out of peaches, or even apples or cherries.

The first settlers lived in caves formed by digging into a bank the earth at the sides supported by timbers, the roof of bark, or turf, like the modern dugout of the West. Some built houses of clay above ground. Others built houses of bark. Next was the log cabin made of round logs, notched at the corners, with open cracks, and without floor or loft; then came the filling in the cracks with bits of wood and daubing them over with clay. Nails were scarce and wrought by hand by the colonial blacksmith. Hinges were at first of wood, also latches, which were raised by means of a strip of leather which could be drawn inside or hang outside according to the will of the occupant. First windows were of oiled paper. Chimneys were built of wood and thickly plastered with clay called "kattled" chimneys. These often took fire. Brick for walls later in the colonies for finer houses were brought from England as ballast. All this the colonists according to Johnson, endured "for Christ." On page 25, "Wonder Working Providence," under heading of expositions of friends in England he writes "Have you not here your Tables filled with Coyne, your Houses beautifully built and filled with such rich Furniture? Have you not such a gainfull Trade as none the like in the Towne where you live? Are you not enriched daily? Are not your children very well provided for as

they come to years? May you not here as pithily practise the two chief Duties of a Christian namely: Mortification and Sanctification as in any place of the World?"

"The colonists desired the propagation of the Gospel of Christ, the conversion of the Indians, and the enlargement of the king's dominions in America." — HIGGINSON.

NOTE TO PAGE 142.

Southwark one of the ten parliamentary boroughs of London, which since 1236 has returned two members. It has an area of 1,990 acres, and in 1881 had 111 persons to an acre, and called the South District of London.

St. Saviour's is the principal church in Southwark and the most ancient. It belonged to the priory of St. Mary Overy erected in the thirteenth century in the early English style with a few Anglo Saxon portions; it has been disfigured by reconstructions and additions, although the choir, lady chapel, and transepts remain almost entire.

Snorre, the Icelandic, tells that the Danes fortified Southwark with ditch and rampart, which the English assailed in vain in the reign of Ethelred II. (912). In 1016 Edmund Ironside was chosen king although the witan outside London had elected Canute. Canute's ships were at Greenwich on the way to London. The Danes at once set to work to dig a great ditch by Southwark, and then dragged their ships through to the west side of the bridge. They were able after this to keep the inhabitants from either going in or out of the town. After all this the Danes had to raise the siege of London, and take the ships to the River Orwell.

During the Norman period (1068) Southwark was occupied by the Saxons, who attacked William, who marched to London to protect the Normans there, who were being resisted by the defeated chiefs who had returned to London and set up Edgar Atheling king. The Saxon party at Southwark were repulsed by the Norman horse, but with such loss to the latter that William thought it imprudent to lay siege to the city at that time. In 1550 the citizens of London purchased the manor of Southwark and with it became possessed of the monastery of St. Thomas. Sir William Wyatt took possession of Southwark, and expected to have been admitted into London at the time of the discontent of the country when Queen Mary made known her intention of marrying Philip of Spain. Wyatt finding the drawbridge at Southwark cut down, he marched to Kingston, where also the bridge had been destroyed. This he restored, and proceeded towards London.

During the Tudor period (1485-1603) many citizens of London for change of air went to the outlying villages and built themselves country residences, following the example of the courtiers. Islington, Hoxton, and Clerkenwell were favorite places, also Middlesex, Essex, and Surrey. — *Extract from Encyclopedia Brit.*

"Greenford Parra, Manor of Cornhill, on the floor of the church there is to be seen the tombstone of Henry Millett, 1500, with small figures in brass of himself, his two wives and his fifteen children. On the floor of the chancel of this church is a brass plate to the memory of Geo. Millett, Esq., 1600. The manor of Cornhill or Greenford Parra, with the advowson of the church, in 1578 was the property of Henry Millett Esq., from whom it descended by female heirs to the families of Leane and Harrison." — LYSON: *Enviroms of London, Vol. II., pp. 446, 447.*

"William Millet of Greenford Magna anno 1663, gave five pounds per annum to buy gowns of frieze for two poor men and two women. On the floor of the church of that place is his tomb, 1663." — *Ibid.*

NOTE TO PAGE 156.

Henry Clarence Cooke, son of Charles Dexter Cooke, who was son of Capt. Benoni Cooke, who was son of Christopher Cooke, who was the seventh child of Peter Cooke, whose children were nineteen, as follows: —

- | | |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. William Cooke, | born Feb. 4, 1742. |
| 2. Joshua Cooke | " June 17, 1744. |
| 3. Stephen Cooke | " July 12, 1746. |
| 4. Charles Cooke | " Sept. 24, 1747. |
| 5. Rhoda Cooke | " Sept. 17, 1749. |
| 6. Elizabeth Cooke | " July 23, 1751. |
| 7. Christopher Cooke | " April 1, 1753. |
| 8. Susanna Cooke | " Nov. 14, 1754. |
| 9. Comfort Cooke | " Aug. 22, 1756. |
| 10. Constant Cooke | " Aug. 11, 1758. |
| 11. Joanna Cooke | " May 20, 1760. |
| 12. John Cooke | " Feb. 25, 1762. |
| 13. Hope Cooke | " March 12, 1764. |
| 14. Merry Cooke | " March 6, 1766. |
| 15. Peter Cooke | " March 16, 1768. |
| 16. Nicholas Cooke | " July 31, 1770. |
| 17. Abigail Cooke | " June 18, 1772. |
| 18. Moses Cooke | " |
| 19. Aaron Cooke | twins, born March 31, 1775. |

This family were related to Gov. Nicholas Cooke, who was born in Prov., R. I., Feb. 3, 1717, and died there Sept. 14, 1782; according to his monument in the North Burying Ground, Prov., R. I., he was "unanimously elected governor of Rhode Island in 1775, remained in office during the darkest period of the American Revolution, merited and won the approbation of his fellow-citizens, and was honored with the friendship and confidence of Washington."

The daughter of Gov. Nicholas was Daniel Cooke of Saybrook, Conn., who was probably the son of John Cooke of England.

NOTE TO PAGE 157.

"A new application of the Electric Light. devised and used by William E. Waters of Orange, N. Jersey, is an improvement on the old style of illumination in the astronomical observatory. It consists of a small incandescent lamp bulb about three fourths of an inch in diameter, placed in the end of a cylindrical, hard, rubber handle, four inches long, with a push button on the side, a flexible wire cord connects the apparatus with the battery wires, and enables the operator to carry this 'Electric Lantern' about in the hand, ready for use at any moment. It can also be used to illuminate the cross wires of the micrometer. An ordinary dip battery of six cells, will give sufficient light. This lamp has been used by Mr. Waters about four years, and has proved entirely satisfactory."

NOTE TO PAGE 159.

Bethiah Driver married for his second wife Richard Allen, son of Asariah and Sarah (Leach) Allen, he born April 8, 1774; died March 5, 1837, shipmaster. He md. third, Dec. 22, 1833, Rebecca Girdler, who died April 18, 1846. — *Essex Inst. Collections.*

NOTE TO PAGES 179, 180.

The "Bounty" sailed from England, Oct. 9, 1787, for Tahiti, also known as Otahete a mis-

conception of "O'Tahiti," i. e., "Of Tahiti," — the O in the native dialect being equivalent to the English "Of" — for the purpose of procuring bread-fruit trees for some West Indian merchants who desired to introduce them into the West Indies that they might prove a valuable addition to the food of the negroes of their plantations, on account of their bearing eight months in the year, according to the report of Capt. Cook who visited Otahete during his three voyages of discovery.

The "Bounty" was commanded by Lieut. Bligh, R. N., and officers; Fletcher Christian, mate; Edward Young, Geo. Stewart, Peter Heywood, John Hallett, and Thomas Heyward, midshipmen; and men, in all forty-five persons.

According to Lady Belcher in her "Mutineers of the Bounty," from which this account has been taken: "Lieut. Bligh was of an irritable and passionate disposition and of a most suspicious turn of mind. The language indulged in, both to officers and men, was so harsh and offensive as to be exceptional, even at a period when it was deemed that discipline could not be obtained without the use of profane epithets. For many months his indignities had been borne with patience and forbearance, until at last it seemed as if endurance had passed its utmost limits. This tyranny to Christian appeared more insupportable on considering how almost impossible it would be for him, as a junior officer, to bring his oppressor to a court-martial with any hope of success. There was but one mode of escape from his tyranny, and that was to take the vessel and carry Lieut. Bligh as a prisoner to England." This seemed the sentiment of many if not all of the men, for in a moment on the morning of April 28, 1789, Lieut. Bligh was seized, bound, and Christian, with an unsheathed bayonet in one hand and a pistol in the other, took charge of the ship, ordered the boatswain and carpenter to hoist out the cutter, and Heyward, Hallett, Mr. Fryer, the clerk, Morrison, and other persons, in all eighteen, to get into her, then he ordered Lieut. Bligh to do the same, and handing him a book of nautical tables and a sextant the launch was veered astern and cast adrift, and her crew took to their oars. The mutineers thirty-nine days after arrived in the "Bounty" at Tahiti, where all decided to settle except Christian and eight others, accordingly, June 16th, they put to sea and twelve Tahitian women, nine men, and eight boys secreted themselves aboard, and were not discovered until far from land.

Christian and his companions desired remoteness from all Englishmen and learning of the loneliness of the Island of Pitcairn from a copy of Captain Carteret's Voyages to the South Seas, which was among the books left on board the "Bounty," they determined to search for it as a safe retreat for themselves.

Jan. 23, 1790, a mere rock hove in sight which on nearer approach proved to be Pitcairn Island. Christian surveyed the island and found it four and one half miles in circumference, all rock on its edge, but beautiful valleys, trees, and foliage in the interior and without inhabitants, although distinctive marks showed former occupancy, perhaps by those vanquished in war sent adrift on a raft to whatever place they could reach, the then custom of the Gambier Island, 300 miles distant from Pitcairn, but unable to remain on account of the scarcity of food and water, hence drifted off as they came.

Christian divided the island into nine shares, which he gave to himself and his eight compan-

ions, who were: John Mills, Isaac Martin, Wm. Brown, Edward Young, Wm. M'Kay, John Williams, Matthew Quintal, and Alexander Smith, alias John Adams, for after learning of the arrival of Lieut. Bligh in England and of a ship sent to Tahiti to take to England as prisoners those of the mutineers left there, he changed his name to John Adams.

Christian had the planks, copper, nails, bolts, masts, sails, everything that might lead to the discovery of the "Bounty," removed on shore, then set fire to her hull, and sunk her remains in twenty-five fathoms of water. Houses were then built with everything available, and guarded with a palisade to prevent depredations of poultry, hogs, and goats, which were allowed to roam at large. The mutineers were married by Christian to the Tahitian women who had secreted themselves on board the "Bounty," according to the service as found in the English Prayer Book, a copy of which Christian constantly had about him, and constantly studied. Respect for him was predominant among them, which never lessened, partly from his superior intellect, and partly habitual deference to a superior officer.

Three years they lived peacefully, then the wife of Williams fell from a high cliff, and was killed, and Williams not considering the black men (Tahitians) human beings demanded the wife of one of them to replace his loss; this instantly occasioned a riot and the Tahitians determined to massacre all the white men, and did, killing all but Smith, Young, Quintal, and M'CoY; then the widows decided to kill all the black men, which they did. Soon after two of the remaining Englishmen died a violent death, and Young died of an asthmatic trouble, leaving Alexander Smith, in 1800, sole surviving man on the island, the only guardian and teacher of a community of helpless women and young children. He took Christian's Bible and Prayer Book, and according to the Jewish law as found in the Old Testament, governed the island, teaching all to observe the Jewish fasts and feasts, and would not discontinue them until long persuasion convinced him that under the Christian dispensation they were unnecessary.

Sept., 1808, the first vessel since their settlement visited Pitcairn: an American brig called the "Topaze," Capt. Mayhew Folger, master, being short of water, put in at Pitcairn, attracted to it by seeing smoke rising from it.

About 1822, a whaler stopped, and one of her crew, John Buffett, requested permission to remain and assist Adams in teaching, which his captain granted. In 1831 he was one of the number removed by Capt. Wm. Driver from Tahiti to Pitcairn, for his name is of the number signed to the letter of thanks received by Capt. William Driver, as found on page 180 of this book.

Some years after another vessel stopped at the island, and a sailor, John Evans, son of a coachmaker of Long Acre, requested permission to become an inhabitant; he married a Pitcairn woman, and became a useful citizen of the community. His name is also signed to the letter of Capt. Driver.

In 1823 a third seafaring man, George Hunn Nobbs, arrived at Pitcairn with an invalid, Mr. Bunker, who soon after died on the island. They came in a private vessel from Callao, which Nobbs took and made for himself a house out of her timbers and wood work. He had a fair knowledge of medicine and surgery, which he exercised for the benefit of the settlement, also a vocation for the ministry, — subsequently he

was ordained in Fulham Church, by the Bishop of London, as "Chaplain of Pitcairn Island."

John Adams died March 29, 1829, and Nobbs succeeded him in the government and care of the island by Adams' request. Nobbs married Sarah Christian, granddaughter of Fletcher Christian, the mutineer, and a daughter of Charles Christian and a Tahitian woman, who was an infant in arms when her mother left Tahiti with the mutineers as a stowaway.

Nobbs, according to his own testimony, assumed his name as a matter of convenience when he first went to sea, with his mother's consent, taken from a couple with whom he dwelt for some time previous, and who had no child of their own. He lived to be past seventy years of age; he had ten living children, eight of whom in 1809 were married. Nobbs' name is also signed to Capt. Driver's letter, where he styles himself teacher.

In 1880 the colony consisting of 87 persons were fearful of a famine occasioned by a long drought; consequently a proposal was made by the English Government to the Islanders to remove them to Tahiti, on account of its being the native place of some of the women; concerning this there was a great difference of opinion, their attachment to the island and themselves was very strong, only eight surnames were among them, five of "Bounty" stock, and three new comers, hence from the numerous intermarriages they were all related over and over again, but rather than be separated they at last all decided to keep together and go, accordingly, March, 1881, they embarked in the Government vessel, "Sarah Ann," and arrived at Tahiti on the 21st of the same month. The climate was unfavorable and soon sickness appeared among them in the form of typhus fever, ten died, and others were weak and ill, thus Capt. Wm. Driver found them when he arrived at Tahiti, July, 1881, as stated on page 179 of this book, whose tears, entreaties and prayers made to him in his own language caused him to remove to Pitcairn, Sept. 2, 1881, but of whom Lady Belcher, on page 191 of her book, only records that, "an American brig, Sept. 1881, brought away all the remaining families from Tahiti."

Arthur Quintal who made only his mark on the letter of Capt. Driver, was the son of Matthew Quintal, the mutineer, and Isabella, a Tahitian woman, who died Aug. 1841. At the time of the removal Arthur was about thirty-two years of age, Capt. Driver stated the then oldest person of the survivors. Lady Belcher says he was a fine strong-made man, with an honest open countenance, Chief Magistrate of the Pitcairners in 1850, living in 1868, aged 78 years. John Buffett was chief magistrate in 1865, which office was held in turn by each of the Englishmen according to the law made by themselves.

Pitcairn was named, according to Capt. Cartwright who discovered it in 1787, after the young midshipman who descried it in that year, from the mast-head of his ship at a distance of 16 miles. This youth a son of Major Pitcairn of the marines who was killed at the battle of Bunker's Hill was himself lost in the frigate "Aurora."

The land originally divided by the mutineers into nine parts was again subdivided among their children, and again the children of the third generation had a portion of their subdivision. Families say of eleven children of course would have but the eleventh of the eleventh portion, in this way the land was reduced to a mere pinch, and therefore, for

want of sufficient ground they saw the necessity for emigration. Norfolk Island which had been a penal station was offered them by the British Government to which eventually they all removed; here they were far from well, happy or contented, their land grants were misunderstood by them at Norfolk, and consequently some of them returned a second time to Pitcairn, others, among them Nobbs remained at Norfolk, here we will leave them.

Otaheite, now generally called Tahiti, was accidentally discovered by Capt. Wallis during a voyage to the South Seas for the purpose of observing the transit of Venus the later part of the last century, the descriptions brought back by him, and afterwards by Capt. Cook created great interest in England.

NOTE TO PAGE 220.

Ann Dudley married Gov. Bradstreet at sixteen years of age and had eight children. Her father "Gov. Thomas Dudley was descended from the owners of Dudley Castle in Staffordshire, who had borne the surname and titles of Fitz Auzulph, a General of the Norman Conqueror in 1066; Paganel, Lord of Dudley, in 1210; and Baron of Dudley in 1221; De Sutton, Baron of Dudley, in 1370; Lord Lieutenant of Ireland in the reign of Henry V." — BRIDGMAN: *Pilgrims of Boston*, p. 23.

"Gov. Dudley's first wife was an English lady who died in 1643, whose known children were: Samuel, Ann, Patience, Mercy and Sarah. He married the next year and had Gov. Joseph, Samuel, and Thomas. Samuel married Mary, daughter of Gov. Winthrop in 1632, and had Thomas, born March 9, 1634; John, born June 24, 1635; and Samuel, born Aug. 2, 1639." — BELKNAP: *New Hamp.*

"The Governor of Massachusetts had some years £106 allowed him, and some years less." — JOHNSON.

NOTE TO PAGE 292.

"William Flint mentioned in Salem, Mass., resided there in 1642, at which time there is some evidence to show that he had a mother living in this country. Hanson in his History of Dauvers, says, that William landed here about 1640. The first deed to him on record is dated July 28, 1652. He died Feb. 2, 1671, aged 70. Alice Flint, his wife, died Oct. 5, 1700. The inventory of his estate amounted to £911 15s. His six children were all married and lived in Salem, excepting Elizabeth, who married Wood's and resided in England.

"It is believed that descendants of this line may be found in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick." — *Descendants of Thomas Flint.*

"Mr. Thomas Flint a sincere servant of Christ, who had a fair yearly Revenue in England, but having improved it for Christ, by casting it in the Common Treasury as he waits on the Lord for doubling his Talent, if it shall seeme good unto him so to doe, and the meane time spending his person for the good of his people in the office of a magistrate." — JOHNSON: *Wonder Working Providence*, p. 88.

NOTE TO PAGE 292.

The parentage of Ann wife of Thomas Flint appears not on record, hence, her name at birth cannot be given, but she must have married a second time as she died as Ann Sutherland, learned from her will.

Will of Ann Sutherland.

"I Ann Sutherland, lately the wife of Thomas Flint, deceased being in perfect memory do make this my last will and testament. Imprints —

I give my soul unto the Lord Jesus, my redeemer, and my body unto my friends decently to be interred by them, for what estate I was possessed with my fore-said husband Flint, and by him improved, to bestow it upon his children, and upon none others, as appears by his last will, I therefore dispose of that estate remaining in my hands left by my said husband to be by me given unto his children at my decease as followeth; I give unto my son Thomas Flint, fifteen pounds. I give unto my daughter Elizabeth, the wife of John Leach fifteen pounds. I give unto my son George Flint fifteen pounds. I give my son John Flint fifteen pounds. I give my son Joseph Flint thirty pounds. Also I further confirm thirty pounds unto my three sons forenamed George, John and Joseph equally to be divided among them, ten pounds each, which thirty pounds I verbally gave my said three sons before I was married to my husband Sutherland, and secured by bill to the overseers. I make my son Thomas Flint, and my son-in-law John Leach, Executors. And fore overseers I choose my brother-in-law William Flint, and Job Swinerton, Jun. In witness hereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal, this twenty-eight of May Anno Domini one thousand six hundred and sixty-eight

ANN SUTHERICK and a mark and seal.
Signed and sealed in presence of us,
JOB SWINERTON,
THOMAS FLESTON,
THOMAS FLINT. Proved Aug. 1668."

"Thomas Flint's will dated April 1, 1663, has the following written on the margin: —

My will is that my wife at her death give the estate shee will leasues to my children whome shee will."

Inventory of this estate amounted to £330: 16: 00. Debts amounted to £65: 13: 04. Will proved 2: 6: 1663." — *Descendants of Thomas Flint by John Flint and John Stone*, p. 126.

NOTE TO PAGE 301.

William Johnson was brother to Edward Johnson, merchant and historian, author of a history of New England from 1628 to 1662, printed in London; its full title was "Wonder-Working Providence of Zion's Savior." Edward Johnson came to America with his brother in 1630, and resided at first at what was then called Charles Town, because a town on the Charles River. He was the speaker of the Colonial Legislature, and one of the members authorized to treat with the commissioners of Charles II. He removed to Woburn, and was one of its founders. Here he kept the town records from its foundation to his death.

Isaac Johnson, a half-brother to William and Edward, came from Canterbury, County Kent, England, with them. Isaac was accompanied by his wife, Lady Arabella Pinners, daughter of Thomas, the fourteenth Earl of Lincoln. They came in the ship "Eagle," "which the company," according to Johnson, in his history, "had wholly purchased for the expedition; others they hired." Governor Winthrop, also a passenger, named the ship "Arabella," for Lady Arabella, by which it was ever after known. She landed her passengers at Noddell's Island, June 12, 1630, where was one Samuel Maverick, who

had built, with the help of one Mr. David Thompson, a small fort. "The Lady Arabella," says Johnson, "and some other godly Women aboad at Salein, but their Husbands continued at Charles Town, both for the settling the Civil Government and gathering another church of Christ. Here they pitched some Tents of Cloath; others built them small Huts, in which they lodged their wives and children." Lady Arabella was ill on the voyage from poor diet at sea, and, being delicately bred, she could not endure the hardships of the colony, and she died four months after her arrival. Her husband, Isaac Johnson, died a month after, Sept. 30, 1680, of disease and affliction, as given by Winthrop in his journal. He ranked, by virtue of his birth, learning, and wealth, next to Governor Winthrop. Some part of his substance he left to the colony. His half-brother, Edward Johnson, thus makes mention of him: "The first beginning of this work" (establishing a church) "seemed dolorous. First, for the death of the worthy personage, Isaac Johnson, Esq., whom the Lord had indued with many precious gifts, and a chiefe Pillar to support this new-erected building. He rejoiced that the Lord had been pleased to keepe his eyes open so long as to see one church of Christ gathered before his death, at whose departure there was not only many weeping eyes, but some fainting hearts. For future Remembrance of him, mind this Meeter:—

"Isaac Johnson, Esquire, beloved of Christ and his people, and one of the magistrates of New England.

"What mov'd thee on the seas upon such toyle
with Lady taking;
Christ's drawing love, all strength's above, when
way for his hee's making.
Christ will have thee example be, honoured
with 's graces. Yielding
His churches aid, foundation laid, now new one
Christ a building.
Thy Faith, Hope, Love, Joy, Meekness prove
Improved for thy Lord;
As he to thee, to people be, in Government ac-
cord."

Hubbard says that Lady Arabella came "from a paradise of plenty and pleasure, which she enjoyed in the family of a noble Earlom, into a wilderness of wants;" and Mather adds that "she took New England in her way to heaven."

Blake, in his Biographical Dictionary, states that "Isaac Johnson settled Boston, he having the largest estate of any of the colonists, and was the greatest furtherer of the plantation. His lot in Boston was the square between Tremont, Washington, Court, and School streets, and he was buried at the upper end of his lot, which gave occasion for the first burial-place to be laid out around his grave. This is the churchyard of King's Chapel. His house was on a hill near Tremont street." According to Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," William Blaxton was the only person in Boston when Isaac Johnson arrived, of whom he says, "the exact time Wm. Blaxton settled at Boston shall forever remain unknown." Young, in his *Chronicles*, says, "Blaxton, or Blackstone, claimed all Boston, or the whole peninsula, because he had been the first person that had slept upon it; but the company gave him 50 acres, or one fourteenth part of the whole. Blaxton said he left England because he would not join the lord-bishops, and he had to leave Boston because he would not join the lord-brethren" (he was a minister); hence he went to Rhode Island. He was a recluse, and owned

one hundred and eighty-six books, among them three Bibles, all of which he studied all the time.

The inhabitants of Haverhill, Mass., according to Chase, suffered for the want of a blacksmith. To obviate this, a contract was signed by Mr. Ward, the minister, and nineteen others, in which each agrees to pay Mr. Jewett his proportion of twenty pounds, to purchase his house and land, which the contractors gave to John Johnson, "provided he live here seven years following the trade of a blacksmith, in doing the town's work; also, the said John Johnson doth promise to refuse to work for any that refuse to pay towards this purchase, until they bring under the selectman's hands that they will pay." This house stood on the ground now occupied by the Exchange building, Water Street. John Johnson was the son of William, a brick maker, of Charlestown, where he married, Oct. 15, 1660, Elizabeth Maverick, daughter of Elias. He came from Charlestown to Haverhill, where, besides the house-lot and other town accommodations given him to encourage him to settle, he bought parcels of land, at various times, in all about one hundred acres. He was a useful citizen. He represented the town in General Court in 1691, was one of the deacons of the church, and an officer in the militia. He was killed by the Indians at his own house, Aug. 29, 1708; his third wife, Katherine, killed at the same time with him. He had ten children.

John Johnson thus became an inhabitant of Haverhill, about five years after his first settlement, in 1663. In that year settlers from Ipswich and Newbury, twelve in number, — William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Huxsey, John Williams, Richard Littlehall, Abram Tyler, Daniel Ladd, Joseph Merrie, and Job Clement, — commenced the plantation. They changed the name from Pentuckett to Haverhill, from the birthplace of John Ward, Essex County, England, the first minister who settled with them, and who emigrated in 1630, a minister and physician. CHASE: *Haverhill*.

William Johnson, according to the "Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian," Mrs. Emery, of Newburyport, p. 210, married, in 1638, Elizabeth Storey, of Charlestown, but she gives not her authority, and that he and his brother Edward were children of Abraham Johnson, by his second wife, Cicely Chadderton, whom he married in 1602, and had eleven children, — Lawrence, Maurice, Robert, William, Edward, Ezekiel, Nicholas, Francis, Henry, Cleriy, and Elizabeth. Abraham Johnson removed with his family from Milton Bryan to Canterbury, County Kent, England. He married, first, in 1587, Anna Meadows, and had one son, Isaac, above mentioned. Abraham Johnson, born in 1577, was the son of Robert, Archdeacon of Leicester, England, and wife Maria. The father of Robert was Maurice Johnson, Esq., M. P. for Stamford, England, in 1523. He also had a son, Francis.

William Johnson, the emigrant, had a son, Nathaniel, who married, in 1668, Joanna Long, of Charlestown, Mass., and had three children, Nathaniel, William, and John; their son William came from Charlestown to Newbury in 1698, where he, Nov. 9, 1702, married Martha Pierce, third daughter of Capt. Daniel Pierce, of the "Pierce" farm, Newbury, Mass. They had six children, of whom William graduated at Harvard in 1727, was ordained, married Betty, daughter of Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet. He was known as Parson Johnson. They had nine children, of whom Martha became the wife of Dr.

William Hale, of Old Rowley. Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet was son of Moses, whose father was Humphrey, an elder brother of Gov. Simon Bradstreet, came from Ipswich, England, to Ipswich, America, in the "Elizabeth," aged 40, with his wife, Bridget, aged 30, and children, — Hannah, aged 9, John 8, Martha 2, and Mary, 1; had born here, Moses, Sarah, and Rebecca; Humphrey, the physician, son of Moses, removed to Newbury, where Betty Bradstreet was born, May 16, 1713. Four out of five of Mr. Moses Bradstreet's children, sisters and brothers of Betty, died within one week from the terrible disease then known as the "throat distemper." Thus Betty Bradstreet was related to Anne Dudley Bradstreet, Gov. Bradstreet's first wife, as mentioned on p. 230 of this book.

Mrs. Emery carries the Johnson family down through several generations, closing her account with "Thomas Johnson, kinsman of William (the emigrant to Newbury from Charlestown, Mass.), was amongst the earliest ship-builders on the Merrimack River. He owned the ship-yard near the bottom of Ship street, Newbury, and was one of the first settlers in that locality. William, on his arrival, succeeded Thomas in the business, to whom the town, in 1731, voted liberty to himself and others to build a wharf at the foot of Chandler's lane. This wharf cost originally twenty thousand dollars, an immense sum for that time, and as much more was afterwards spent upon it. At his death in 1741, he was rated a very wealthy man, for he owned three well-stocked farms, a number of houses, barns, warehouses, lumber, this wharf, and all tools and so on pertaining to it, a negro girl, and several vessels, which constantly arrived at Newburyport, Mass., from Honduras, the West Indies, the Straits, and the north of Europe."

NOTE TO PAGE 310.

Will of Thomas Eyrick.

"In Dei nomine, Amen. The xxvth day of August, in the yere of our Lord God a m^o v^o and xviith, I Thomas Eyreke, of Leicester, being off good mynd and perfite remembrance, mak and ordain y^e my last will and testament, under y^e menner following: First, I doe bequeth my soule to Allmythe God, to o^r blessed Lady hys mod^r Saunt Mare, and to all the glorius company of Heven, and my body to be buried in the parysh church of Sant M^rten's in Leicester; Also I will my best cove to my principall; Also I do bequeth to the moder church of Lincoln iiii *l.*; and to the works off the same viii *l.*; Also I will that the iii orduris of freeris of Leicester bring my body to my gve, and evy of them to haffe xx *l.*; Also I will that evy preat of Sentte Matyn's have vi *l.*; and Robert, clerk, iiii *l.*; and the other clerk ii *l.*; And I wyll that evy other preste have iiii *l.* that clye to my buryall; evy child ob.; Also I will that the warden of the Gray Freers say v messys at the entering of our Lady in the Frers, and to have xx *l.* for his labor; Also I will that, y^e be seid for my solle a trental of messis wⁱⁿ the church of Saint M^rtyne; Also I bequeth to Nicolas my sone, when he comys to his lafull age, the house that I h^e on Ayse dwellin in and in redy money iii *l.* vis viii *l.* and my beste book covyd with chamilet; Also I bequeth to John my sone iii *l.* vis viii *l.* and my seinde book wth silver clasps, and my beste mass; Also I bequeth to Elyzabet my daughter iii *l.* vis. viii *l.* and a mass with stone and a long girdyll that wasse my mothers; Also I bequeth to my wyffe all my other goods movabell, to pray for my soule;

Also I gyffe to my wif all my lands, except the house before except, during hyr natural lyff; and aft. hyr decesse I will that my sone Nicolas have all my lads to hym and to y^e eyrs of y^e body lafully begotten; and yf it fortune hym to decesse out of this presente lyffe without ussey of his body lafully begotten, then I wyll that my sone John Eyreke have all my lads; and yf he departe without ysew, as God forbyd, then I wyll that Elizabeth my daughter have all my seid lands; and yf she do departe without ysew of hyr body lafully begotten, as God forbyd, then I wyll that my wyff have the lands to her and to her assines forever, off thys condicon that she do putt in Surtys to the gyld of Corps Xristi, to have yerly a dryge, with masse of requie for my sole and my wyse soule, my father and my moth^r soules, and all my frends' soules, and all Cristen soules; and att the same dryge for to be spende yerly viii *l.*; and that to indure as long as the lands ys habull to performe the same; And yf any of my seid children decesse before ther lawfull age, as God forbid, then I wyll the suryers and outlyvers have ther money and goods dyvidd evyne betwyxt them. Also I do mak my wyff myn executrix of thys my laste will and testament and my father-in-law my suppyr; this being witnessyng, Ric. Gillat and John Tarby." — NICHOL: *His. of Leicestershire, Vol. III.*

NOTE TO PAGE 311, No. 21.

"Nicholas Hyrick carried on his father's business in a house at West Cheap, which bore the sign of the 'Grasshopper.' In 1584, he made for the corporation of Leicester a new mace, learned by the following record of the Chamberlain of the Borough for that year: —

'Item paid to Mr. Nicholas Heyricke of London, Goldsmith, for a new mace of silver, all gilte, wayyng xliij ounces and a half at vij^o the ounce, the silver makinge & gildinge comys to xvij^o j: iij^o for gravinge the arnis therein xxx^o & for a case for it v^o.

Soe all the whol^e comys to xxx^o xvj^o iij^o whereof deducted given by the said Nicholas Heyrick xi^o.

The same payed is xvj^o xvj^o iij^o." — NICHOL: *His. of Leicestershire.*

NOTE TO PAGE 332.

"Mr. Tristram Coffin was born in 1609, and in 1642 came to New Eng. after the death of his father, bringing with him his mother, who died May, 1661, aged 77; his two sisters Eunice and Mary, his wife and five children, Peter Tristram, Elizabeth, James, and John. He at first came to Salisbury, thence to Haverhill the same year, thence to Newbury about 1648, thence in 1654 he removed to Salisbury. In 1659, a company was formed in Salisbury, who purchased $\frac{1}{2}$ of Nantucket, whither he removed in 1660 with his wife, mother, and four children, James, John, Stephen (who was born in Newbury, May 11, 1652), and Mary (who was born in Haverhill, Feb. 20, 1645)." — COFFIN: *His. of Newbury.*

Anthony Somerby was the emigrant ancestor of the Somerby family of Newbury, Mass., to which place he came in 1639, in the ship "Jonathan."

"There was granted unto Anthony Somerby in the year 1639 for his encouragement to keepe schoole for one yere four akers of upland over the great river in the necke, also six akers of salt marsh next to Abraham Toppan's twenty akers." — *Town Records.*

"March 11, 1697, the town of Newbury laid out to Anthony Somerby a piece of land three rods square, lying at the place known by the name of Glading's spring bounded with a small rock at every corner for the convenience of dressing leather. In 1684 Anthony Somerby received £1. 00: 00 for keeping the town book."
—*Ibid.*

NOTE TO PAGE 333.

"Thomas Hale, Sr., according to Mrs. Sarah Emery in her 'Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian,' came to Newbury, Mass., in 1685 with his wife Tomasin from Hertfordshire, Eng. He was the son of William Hale, and grandson of Richard Hale, who purchased the estate of King's Walden in Hertfordshire, and died in 1620. Richard Hale was the eldest son of Thomas Hale of Odeicote, in Hertfordshire, who married Anne, dau. of Edmund Mitchell, and had three sons, Richard, William, and John. Thomas Hale, the emigrant, died Dec. 21, 1682, aged 78. His wife died Jan. 30, 1683. Children, Thomas, born 1633; John, born 1636; and Samuel.

Rev. John Hale² was son of Deacon Robert Hale¹, born at Charlestown, Mass., June 3, 1636; graduated at Harvard College in 1657; ordained Sept. 20, 1667; chaplain in the expedition to Canada from June 4th to Nov. 20th, 1690. The first minister to Beverly, Mass.; died May 15, 1700, aged 56; md. first, Rebecca Byles (or Bylet) Dec. 15, 1664; second, Sarah Noyes, March 31, 1694; third, widow Elizabeth Clark, Aug. 8, 1698. Had sons: 1. Robert Hale², born Nov. 3, 1668, graduated at Harvard in 1686, for many years a magistrate in Beverly, Mass., died June 24, 1719. 2. James Hale², born Oct. 14, 1685, minister of Ashford, Conn., died Oct. 1742. 3. Samuel Hale², born Aug. 18, 1687, married Apphis Moody, May 29, 1714, settled at Newbury, Mass., and had sons Samuel³ A. A. S. of Portsmouth, who graduated at Harvard College in 1740, died July 10, 1807, aged 89; Richard³ of Coventry, Conn., the father of Nathan³, who was executed as a spy in the Revolution; and John of Gloucester. 4. John Hale², born Aug. 24, 1692. 5. A daughter², who married Rev. John Chipman, of the Second Church of Beverly, Mass.

Deacon Robert Hale¹ was one of the founders of the church in Charlestown, Mass., in 1632, admitted freeman in 1634, died July 19, 1669. Two of his sons were John, minister of Beverly, and Samuel, born in 1644.

Capt. Nathan Hale², great-grandson of Rev. John Hale, and son of Richard Hale of Coventry, Conn., graduated at Yale College in 1778, with high reputation. In the Revolution he commanded a company in Col. Knowlton's regiment and was with the army in the retreat from Long Island in 1776. Washington having applied to Knowlton for a discreet and enterprising officer to penetrate the enemy's camp and procure intelligence, Hale passed in disguise to the British camp, but on his return was apprehended and carried before Lord William Howe, by whom he was ordered to be executed the next morning. He was denied a Bible and the aid of a clergyman. The letters, full of fortitude and resignation which he had written to his mother and sister, were destroyed. He was hung, regretting that he had but one life to lose for his country."
—BRIDGMAN: *Pilgrims of Boston*, p. 344.

John Hale, who married Sarah Somerby, married first, Rebecca Lowle, subsequently, Lowell, and third, Sarah Symonds.

NOTE TO PAGE 347.

"—Goddard, one of the first settlers of New England came in a Dutch vessel from Exeter Bath, intending to land at Virginia where he had two brothers settled, but the Dutchman was bribed to land them in Boston bay, where he hid at Plymouth.

The winter after he landed, the Indians came upon them, drove them into a swamp in a snow storm; his wife gave birth to a female child, and as both survived the storm, the child was called Remembrance, in memory of the event and their preservation. The parents moved from Boston to Newport, and the children were strictly enjoined to remember their pedigree.

Ebenezer, son of the abovesaid, had a son Ebenezer and a daughter Remembrance. This son, born at Newport, R. I., settled in New London at mature age.

John Goddard was one of the Justices of the Peace for Newport, R. I., 1768, 1772.

Dr. Giles Goddard, postmaster, New London, Ct., was born about 1720, married Sarah Urdike. She received a good education, acquired an acquaintance with several branches of useful and polite literature. She was left a widow with two children, William, and Mary Katherine. After her son William had been in business a few years she became his partner, he left the printing house and newspaper to her, which for two years she conducted with much ability, when John Carter supplied the place of her son, the firm was then Sarah Goddard & Co. She resigned in 1769, removed to Philadelphia the same year where she died Jan. 1770. Her brother was for some years attorney general of the colony. Dr. Giles Goddard had a brother William who was a shipmaster or merchant, his namesake, and nephew, William Goddard, married at Cranstone, R. Island, June, 1786. Abigail Angell, eldest daughter of Brig. Gen. Angell.

Mary Katharine Goddard, sister of William, for eight years ably conducted the printing house of her brother, also the Journal, and every work which issued from his press, were printed and published in her name, and partly on her account. She kept the Post Office and continued the News-paper until her brother resumed them in 1784. His press was the first printing press in Providence, R. I. He served his apprenticeship with James Parker, printer, in New York, opened a printing house in Prov. in 1762, and soon after published a News-paper. There was at that time but one paper printed in the colony, viz., at Newport. In 1778 William Goddard removed to Baltimore. In 1775 appointed surveyor of post roads. In 1776 resigned his commission returned to Baltimore. In 1792 he sold his printing establishment and retired to a farm in Johnson, R. I., after the establishment of peace he married Abigail Angell, a very accomplished woman, afterwards lived in Providence."
—THOMAS: *History of Printing*.

"Bailey's Dictionary," — "Goddard a proper name, derived from the Saxon of God or Good and the Dutch of Nature signifying one endowed with a complaint and divine disposition of mind."

"Genealogy of Descendants of Edward Goddard," printed in Worcester in 1833, by M. Spooner, printer, for the author Wm. Austin Goddard.

"Dr. Goodliard lived in England and was chaplain to the Earl of Warwick at St. Paul's Cross A. D. 1470. In the second generation

William, seventh son of Edward Goddard, a citizen and grocer of London, traded largely at wholesale, met with great losses at sea, lived too expensively and by these means became very much reduced. His mother-in-law, Mrs. Foot, in her widowhood, lent £100 sterling to a brother of hers in New England, who, for her security, mortgaged his house and land, but though he lived many years afterward, yet paid neither principal nor interest. Consequently, at his death, his mother gave him the debt, and he coming over for it in 1685, found nothing to be had excepting the housing and lands mortgaged. His contracted circumstances and the plague then raging in London added to the aforesaid consideration was probably the occasion of his concluding to tarry in New England, and send for his wife and children, who came over in 1686; this was the time of the religious persecutions.

It being contrary to the laws of the country for any person to carry from the kingdom a greater sum in specie than five pounds sterling, William Goddard had his property in merchandise and furniture collected into one mass, stored in London, under the charge of a particular friend.

His wife and children landed at Watertown, and they settled on a small but good farm directly opposite the meeting-house. Their children were six born in London, three of whom died young, the other three came to N. Eng., viz.:—Wm., Joseph, and Robert. They had six children born in New Eng., three of these died young, the other three Benjamin, Josias, and Edward formed the family in New England. On the 2d of September, 1686, a fire broke out in London, which consumed thirteen houses, and with them all Mr. Goddard's property, and consequently he was reduced to poverty."

In the writings of his son Edward Goddard is the following:—

"I often reflect and think how great a trial it must have been to my parents being brought up tenderly in youth, educated for and acquainted only with a city life, for so many years, to come into a very remote and infant country, yet God so provided for them that they lived comfortably, and as far as I ever understood had ye good esteem of their neighbors." He adds: "I lived eight years in Boston, where for thirty pounds I purchased, three rights in Hains' farms, so called. That farm with the adjacent lands in a few years became a Town; my lands fell near the place agreed on for the meeting-house spot, which rendered them very valuable. I lost by death three children and apprehending the air of Boston to be hurtful to infant children, and afraid of losing the fourth child, I left for Framington, March 25, 1714."

The maiden name of his mother was Elizabeth Miles, dau. of Benjamin. Her mother's third husband at his death left them (Goddards), a legacy of £400 sterling.

NOTE TO PAGE 348.

"Letters and newspapers were carried through the country by persons who rode on horse-back, called 'Post-riders.' The post-rider's route was oftentimes so long that once a week was as often as he could make it, riding through ten or twelve towns. Samuel Bean was post-rider from Boston to Concord, N. H. He rode through the towns of Andover, Haverhill, Atkinson, Kingston, Exeter, Epping, Nottingham, Deerfield, and Pembroke to Concord, returning he passed through Londonderry and Haverhill. He

performed the route once a week. This was as late as 1780 in which year the first stage from Boston to Haverhill was started. It was a two horse coach, owned by Mr. Gags. He owned one horse, and as often as he could make certain of a sufficient number of passengers for a load, he hired another horse from a neighbor and run his coach. Twelve hours made the journey. In 1798, a stage commenced running once a week regularly, and the same year changed to twice a week."—CHASE: *His. of Haverhill*.

NOTE TO PAGE 360.

The emigrant ancestor of the Motley family was "John Motley who came from Belfast, Ireland, and settled in Portland, Me., in 1788, and married that year Mary Roberts, and had John^s, Richard^s, Ann^s, and Thomas^s. John Motley married second Lydia Libby, and had Alexander, Samuel, William, Jacob, John, and Mary. His widow married John Blake in 1786, and died at Portland in 1824.

Thomas Motley^s married Emma, dau. of Elder John Waite, and had Robert^s, Richard^s, George^s, Henry^s, Thomas^s, Edward^s, and Charles^s, of these Thomas^s for many years kept the principal tavern in Portland on Congress street, he married and had Thomas^s, born Sept. 1781, and died in Boston, April 28, 1864, who married a daughter of the Rev. Dr. Lathrop of Boston, and had several sons and daughters of whom John Lathrop has illustrated the name and family by his distinguished historical works."—WILLIAM WELLS: *His. of Portland*.

From this account the historian's name at birth must have been John Lathrop Motley, not John Lothrop Motley, as now written.

NOTE TO PAGE 361.

"George Corliss came from England to Newbury about the year 1689, being at the time about 21 years of age. He is believed to be the first one of the name who came to New England. He married Joanne Davis, Oct. 26, 1645, by whom he had one son John and seven daughters. John had thirteen children, his wife having been Mary Milford, whom he married Dec. 15, 1684."—CHASE.

NOTE TO PAGE 365.

"The Adams family of America claim to have descended from John Ap Adam, who was summoned to parliament as a Baron of the Realm from 1296 to 1807. He descended from a family in Wales whose record runs back several centuries. The genealogy is as follows:—

John Ap Adam — Elizabeth Gourney
Sir John Ap Adam —
William Ap Adam —
Sir John Ap Adam —
Thomas Ap Adam — Jane Inge
Sir John Ap Adam — Millicent Bostylls
Sir John Ap Adam alias Adams — Clara Powell
Roger Adams — Jane Elliott
Thomas Adams — Maria Upton
John Adams — Jane Benneseigh
John Adams — Catharine Stebbings
John Adams — Margaret Squier.

Richard Adams — Margaret Armager, who had two sons, Robert, who married Elizabeth Shirland, and William, who married — Barrington Henry one of the sons of Wm. came to New Eng. in 1680, and died in Brantree. He was

the ancestor of the presidents John and John Quincy Adams. Robert had a son Robert who also in 1636 came to America, to Ipswich from Devonshire, thence to Salem, and to Newbury in 1640."—*Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian*, p. 54.

NOTE TO PAGE 370.

"This Simon, or Symon, was one of the 'Christian,' or 'converted' Indians, many of whom lived among the settlers, worked for them and partially adopted civilized habits. Some of these demi-savages became exceedingly troublesome to the settlers, and one of the worst, was Symon. One writer describes him as 'the arch villain and incendiary of all the eastward Indians;' and he seems to have been an active spirit in several of the attacks upon the English in the vicinity of Haverhill. Symon was with the celebrated *Mogg*, in his assault upon Scarborough, Oct. 12th, 1676; was the leader of the party which made prisoners of the family of Anthony Brackett near Portland, Aug. 9th, same year; and was the leader of the party which killed several persons in Amesbury, July 7, 1677."—CHASS: *His. of Haverhill*, pp. 117, 126.

NOTE TO PAGE 376.

"In a town meeting, March 24, 1690, held 'to consider what is to be done for the present security of the peace against the enemy, by sending for help abroad, or to draw off.'—After voting the selectmen 'full powers in all respects,' it was given over, and nothing done satisfactorily. As a means of defence, the selectmen appointed six garrisons, and four 'houses of refuge.' One of the garrisons was commanded by sergeant John Haseltine. He had seven men under his command.—Onesiphorus Marsh, sen., Onesiphorus Marsh, Jun., Nathaniel Haseltine, Eben Webster, Joseph Holt, Thomas Ayer, and Joseph Bond. This garrison was owned by Onesiphorus Marsh, sen., who was the ancestor of those of that name in this town (Haverhill, Mass.). The first notice we have of him is in 1634, when he built the house in which was the garrison. This house stood on the North side of the road, about half way up Pecker's Hill. He owned the principal part of that hill, and for many years it was known by the name of Marsh's Hill. The name was generally spelt *Maah*."—CHASS: *His. of Haverhill, Mass.*, p. 156.

"The fourth garrison was commanded by James Ayer, the fifth by Joseph Bradley, the sixth was owned and commanded by Capt. John White. Besides these garrisons, and houses of refuge, there were two watch houses, and many private houses were barricaded.

Haverhill was a frontier town for nearly seventeen years, and but few towns suffered so severely from the Indians. Surrounded by an immense and mostly unexplored forest, thinly scattered over a large tract of land, the people always went armed to their daily labor, and on the sabbath they went to church with a psalm book in one hand and a loaded gun in the other."—*Ibid.*

NOTE TO PAGE 395.

"For directions for the country it is not to be feared, but that men of good estates may do well there," New England. "always provided, that they goe wel accomodated with servants.

In which I would not with them to take over-many, tenne or twelve lusty servants being able to mannage an estate of two or three thousand pounds. He that hath many dromish servants, shall soone be poore; and he that hath an industrious family shall as soone be rich."—Wood: *New England Prospects*, p. 58.

Requests were sent the Compiler that in giving from old records lists of passengers of early voyages, that where the word servant was used it should be omitted, considered by those making the request to mean apprentice, hence, incorrect as servant. She has so done in some cases but has every reason to think that the old recorders used the word correctly.

NOTE TO PAGE 396.

The leader of the military was generally paid out of the fines of the men who were fined for non-appearance, or if any member left the company before he was discharged he was fined. Twelve shillings a day was considered good pay for the leader or captain. The military sometimes met an hour before sunset to drill every day, or every other day, at other times "to meet Sun an hour high, and again at Sunrise," according to the time of the year.

NOTE TO PAGE 412.

The engagement at Lexington, April 19, 1775, was thus mentioned in the Maryland Journal, issue of April 26, 1775, William and Mary Goddard, editors.

"We have just received the following important intelligence, viz. :—

WATERTOWN, MASSACHUSETTS BAY, April 19, 1775.
Wednesday Morning, 10 o'clock.

To All Friends of American Liberty: Be it known that this morning; before the break of day, a brigade, consisting of 1000 or 1200 men landed at Phippe farm, at Cambridge, and marched to Lexington, where they found a company of our colony militia in arms, upon whom they fired, without any provocation, and killed six men and wounded four others."

NOTE TO PAGE 415.

"Master Ezekiel Rogers, with a holy and humble people, made his progress to the erecting a Towne about six miles from Ipswich, called Rowley, where wanting room, they purchased some addition of the town of Newberry; these people being very industrious every way, soone built many houses, to the number of about threescore families, and were the first people that set upon making Cloth in this Western World; for which end they built a fulling mill, and caused their little ones to be very diligent in spinning cotton wool many of them having been clothier's in England till their Zeale to promote the Gospel of Christ caused them to wander."—JOHNSON: *Wonder Working Providence*, p. 130.

NOTE TO PAGE 477.

"The godly people gathered the eleaventh church of Christ, and called to the office of a Pastor, that gracious, sweete Heavenly minded, and soul ravishing Minister Mr. Thomas Shepheard, in whose soule the Lord shed abroad his love so abundantly, that thousands of soules have cause to blesse God for him, yet his

naturall Parts were weak, but spent to the fall
as followeth:—

No hungry Hawke poore Partridge to devour
More eager is, then Prelates Nimrod power
Thomas to hunt, my Shephard sweet pursue
To seas brinke, but Christ saves his souls for
you;

Sending thee Shephard, safe through seas awake,
To feede his flock unto thy ending day.

Where (sheepe seek wolves) thy bosome lands
would catch

But night and day thou ceaseth not to watch
And warne with teares thy flock of creators vile,
Who in sheepes cloathing would the weak be-
guile,

With dropping dewes from thy lips Christ hath
made

Thy beaers eyes oft water springing blade.

With pierced hearts they cry aloud and say,
Shew us sweet shephard our salutations way,
Thy lovely speech such ravishment doth bring;
Christ gives thee power to heall as well as sting,
Thou gates sets ope for Christ thy king to enter,
In hearts of many spirits joy to center,

But mourne my muse hang downe thy head
with wee

With tears, sighs, sobs, lament thy Shephard
so;

Why hee's in Heaven, but I one Earth am left,
More Earthly cause of him I am bereft

Oh Christ why doth thy Shepherd take away
In erring times when sheepe must apt to stray."

Wonder Working Providence, p. 78.

The churches established in New England
according to Johnson were in the following
order:—

1st Church,	established at Salem in 1629.
2d Church	" Charlestown, 1630.
3d Church	" Dorchester, 1631.
4th Church	" Boston, 1631.
5th Church	" Roxbury, 1631.
6th Church	" Lynn, 1631.
7th Church	" Water Towne, 1631.
8th Church	" Cambridge, 1633.
9th Church	" Ipswich, 1634.
10th Church	" Newbury, 1634.
11th Church	" Cambridge being the second in 1635.
12th Church	" Concord in 1635.
13th Church	" Hingham, 1636.
14th Church	" Dedham, 1637.
15th Church	" Weymouth, 1638.
16th Church	" Rowley, 1638.
18th Church	" Salisbury, 1639.
19th Church	" Sudbury, 1640.

20th Church, established at Braintree, 1640.

21st Church " Gloucester, 1641.

22d Church " Woburn, 1642.

24th Church " Reading, 1644.

25th Church " Wenham, 1644.

26th Church " Haverhill, 1646.

27th Church " Springfield, 1645.

28th Church " Malden, 1648.

29th Church " Boston, being the
second, in 1648.

NOT CLASSIFIED.

"James O. Driver married Jan. 2, 1766, Sarah
(Coffin) Massey, she widow of Gen. Massey, she
born April 1, 1725, daughter of Stephen, Jr.^s
(Stephen^s, Tristram^s, Jr., Tristram^s, Peter^s)
Coffin and Sarah Boardman. Her father was
born in Newbury in 1698, and married Aug. 16,
1722, their children were:—

1 Amos Coffin^s, born June 22, 1723.

2 Sarah Coffin^s, " April 1, 1726.

3 Elizabeth Coffin^s, " Oct. 26, 1726.

4 Mary Coffin^s, " July 7, 1726.

5 Stephen Coffin^s, " Aug. 30, 1730.

6 Margaret Coffin^s, " July 11, 1733.

7 John Coffin^s, " Nov. 13, 1734."

—*New Eng. Gen. Register, Vol. 24, p. 311.*

"Elizabeth Driver, dau. of John Driver, esq.,
of Aston, md. Thomas Master, esq., of the
Abbey, Cirencester, M.P. for that borough.
Seat Knole Park, near Bristol. Estate in the
County of Gloucester." — *BURKE: Commoners,*
Vol. I.

Parish Register of Cockley, Clay, Eng.
1788. July 31, buried William Driver, senior.
1796. Nov. 6, buried Mary Driver, widow,
aged 94.
1809. July 30, buried William Driver,
widower, aged 76.
Ann Cowling md. Chatfill Driver of Wickham,
East Bexley, Co. Kent, Eng.

NOTE.

"Parochial registers were first introduced by
Lord Cromwell, when vicar general in 1538, but
many of the clergy, through ignorance or pre-
judice, evading compliance, the injunction was
enforced in 1547, and by a canon in 1603, every
incumbent was enjoined to complete his register
from 1558." — *BAKER.*

INDEX.

CHRISTIAN NAMES OF THOSE BORN DRIVER.

The figures placed before the name denote the year of birth; the figures placed after the name denote their individual number as they occur in the history.

1808. Abigail	146	1873. Edward Raymond	185
1838. Adelia Low	193	1861. Edward Winfield	182
1856. Alice Goodhue	157	1870. Eleanor Salisbury	204
1853. Allen	202	1680. Eleazer	14
1774. Andrew	85	1798. Eliza	72
1798. Andrew	142	1688-9. Elizabeth	19
1842. Andrew Brown	191	1727. Elizabeth	32
1729. Anna	28	1772. Elizabeth	93
1744. Anna	57	1773. Elizabeth	94
1811. Anna	156	1779. Elizabeth	63
1870. Anna Eastman	211	1793. Elizabeth	150
1795. Apphia	153	1851. Elizabeth	139
1760. Benjamin	47	1852. Elizabeth Ropes	126
1790. Benjamin	67	1871. Elizabeth A.	223
1794. Benjamin	70	1828. Elizabeth Helen	101
1873. Bertha Adelia	212	1869. Emma McCulloch	206
1785. Bethiah	88	1875. Emily Francis Sinclair	209
185-. Beulah	170	1856. Frank Wallace	181
1871. Caroline Maria	177	1805. George	79
1807. Catherine Metcalf	80	1866. George	222
1855. Charles	171	1874. George Benjamin	165
1830. Charles Millet	109	1879. George Hibbert	167
1845. Christopher Maclin	136	1836. George Hibbert Smith	103
1776. Daniel	95	1842. George Hibbert Smith, Jr.	105
1799. Daniel	152	1845. George Norton	201
1844. Daniel Low	195	1859. George Pierson	158
1802. David	143	1832. George Washington	110
218. David Ramsey	210	1840. George Wills	121
1842. Delilah Ann	122	1727. Hannah	27
1849. Delilah Ann, Jr.	125	1748. Hannah	54
1833. Eben Ropes	118	1757. Hannah	46
1866. Edith Louise	161	1775. Hannah	60
1858. Edward	175	1775. A twin to Hannah	61
1840. Edward Augustus Holyoke		1776. Hannah	86
Saunders	116	1786. Hannah	65

1877. Harold Burrill	166	1870. Martha Elizabeth	180
1810. Harriot	82	1836. Martha Silsbee	119
1852. Harriot	140	1873. Martha Thedora	178
1872. Helen May Ives	184	1872. Mary Adelaide	208
1808. Henry	81	1862. Mary Beckford	159
1839. Henry	133	1822. Mary Beckford	99
1859. Henry	189	1860. Mary Florence	173
1875. Henry	213	1838. Mary Jane	120
1856. Henry Boyee	174	1879. Mary Louisa	203
1845. Henry Lynch	123	1864. Margery Watson	160
1879. Henry William	187	1723. Michael	29
1872. Herbert Putnam	169	1726. Michael	31
1858. Ida	186	1754. Michael	45
1872. Isabel Goddard	164	1793. Michael	69
1882. Isabel Purfit	221	1772. Miriam	84
1776. Jacob	97	1836. Nancy Butman	192
1816. Jacob Hooper	149	1841. Nancy Butman	194
1795. James	151	1770. Nehemiah	92
16—. John	5	1762. Paul Mansfield	48
1673. John	11	1633 or 5. Phebe	3
1674. John	12	1719. Rachel	33
1678. John	13	1796. Rachel	141
1683. John	16	1806. Rachel	145
1722. John	35	1792. Rebecca	73
1742. John	56	16—. Richard	4
1746. John	53	1781. Richard	64
1782. John	87	1592. Robert	1
1769. John, Jr.	91	1631 (?). Robert, Jr.	2
1858. John	172	1847. Robert Parks	124
1810. John Hooper	147	1637 (?). Ruth	6
1850. John Hooper	196	1667. Ruth	9
1837. John Maclin	132	1796. Ruth	74
1831. John Saunders	113	1843. Ruth Helen	130
1869. John Saunders	183	1847. Ruth Metcalf	137
1772. Joseph	59	1856. Ruth Metcalf	127
1804. Joseph Day	144	1670. Salmon	10
1852. Joseph Day	197	1843. Sally Maclin	135
1836. Joseph Grafton	111	1749. Samuel	55
1801. Joseph Metcalf (Rev.)	77	1787. Samuel	89
1829. Joseph Metcalf	112	1805. Samuel	154
1870. Lucretia Larkin	163	1806. Samuel	155
1837. Louisa	198	1773. Samuel, Jr.	96
1722. Margaret	25	1839. Samuel, Jr.	199
1724-5. Margaret	26	1842. Samuel	200
1811. Maria	148	1844. Samuel	106
1684.(?) Mary	17	1664. Sara	8
1718. Mary	24	1724. Sarah	30
1728. Mary	36	1768. Sarah (Sally)	50
1740. Mary	39	1788. Sarah	66
1791. Mary	68	1849. Sarah Ellen	131
1796. Mary	71	1882. Sarah Jane	188
1744. Martha	42	1694. Solomon	21
1746. Martha	43	1720. Solomon	34

1744. Solomon	52	1870. Theodore Prescott	168
1770. Solomon	83	1686. Thomas	18
1790. Solomon	90	1713. Thomas	22
1841. Sophia Osgood	129	1748. Thomas	44
1716. Stephen	23	1777. Thomas	62
1741. Stephen	40	1799. Thomas (Rev.)	76
1766. Stephen	58	1834. Thomas	115
1849. Stephen	138	1858. Thomas Pitcairn	128
1772. Stephen, Jr.	51	1766. Thomas Poynton	49
1797. Stephen, 3d	75	1660 (?). William	7
1821. Stephen Beckford	98	1682 (?). William	15
1824. Stephen Beckford, Jr.	100	1738. William	37
1826. Stephen Henry	108	1803. William (Capt.)	78
1829. Stephen Pierson	102	1860. William	176
1833. Stephen William	114	1827. William Christopher	117
1738. Susanna	38	1824. William Luscomb	107
1743. Susanna	41	1870. Wilham McCullock	207
1875. Susan Emma	179	1841. William Oliver	134
1839. Susan Smith	104	1839. William Raymond (Col.)	190
1870. Theodore Goodhue	162	1872. William Raymond	205

INDEX.

OTHER SURNAMES, NOT INCLUDING THAT OF DRIVER, EXCEPT IN THE APPENDIX, AND DRIVERS IN EUROPE.

The figure after the name shows the page on which the name may be found.

- | | | |
|--|---|--|
| <p>A.</p> <p>Abbey, 374.
 Abbot, 263, 295, 365, 411.
 Abbott, 240, 379, 389, 467, 472.
 Aborn, 284, 295, 423, 452.
 Abraham, 494.
 Adams, 15, 107, 191, 229, 319, 341, 365, 373, 374, 413, 453.
 Ager, 485.
 Albert, 427.
 Albertson, 157.
 Allen, 42, 95, 98, 117, 122, 159, 161, 190, 193, 222, 223, 242, 248, 253, 268, 270, 327, 363, 367, 372, 478.
 Alley, 39, 63, 130, 152, 354.
 Ally, 38.
 Ambrose, 369.
 Ames, 382.
 Amherst, 61.
 Amory, 351, 352, 361.
 Andrew, 232, 235, 478.
 Andrewe, 9.
 Andrews, 239, 290, 368, 402.
 Angell, 156, 157, 346, 347, 348.
 Annable, 190.
 Annis, 335.
 Antrim, 440.
 Appleton, 383, 396, 399, 414, 474.
 Archard, 218, 442.
 Archer, 92, 106, 125, 130, 135, 142, 162, 165, 217, 221, 228, 238, 262, 277, 282, 331, 461, 462, 472.
 Armitage, 27, 32, 35.
 Armstrong, 429.
 Arnold, 148.
 Ashby, 91, 288, 390, 448.</p> | <p>Atkins, 129.
 Atkinson, 287, 472.
 Attwood, 377.
 Audeburt, 429.
 Audubon, 355.
 Ayers, 159, 376, 399, 405, 407, 409.
 Ayner, 396.</p> <p>B.</p> <p>Babbage, 175, 206.
 Babbidge, 150, 229, 233, 234, 236, 269, 283, 298, 462, 472, 473.
 Babson, 143.
 Bache, 348.
 Bachelder, 220, 263, 288, 339.
 Bachelor, 40.
 Bacon, 102, 376, 416.
 Bagley, 254, 417.
 Bagly, 334.
 Bailey, 68, 384, 385, 419.
 Baker, 27, 38, 40, 58, 62, 328.
 Balch, 370, 419, 429, 489.
 Ballard, 27, 39, 46, 60, 62, 148.
 Bancroft, 27, 64, 93, 258, 260, 339, 355, 435.
 Banepo, 263.
 Banks, 15.
 Barber, 319.
 Barker, 15, 25, 375, 377, 384, 385.
 Barnard, 120, 289, 352.
 Barnes, 101, 113, 114, 117, 127, 135, 142, 238, 243, 461, 472.
 Barnett, 463.
 Barnum, 408.
 Barr, 263, 435.
 Barrett, 271, 457, 465.
 Bartholomew, 42, 253, 296, 396.</p> | <p>Bartlett, 101, 223, 229, 316, 339, 342, 363, 421, 457, 467.
 Barstow, 268, 319.
 Barton, 139, 235, 236, 269, 469.
 Bass, 65, 285, 486.
 Bassett, 98.
 Bassett, 38, 39, 60, 61, 73, 470.
 Batchelder, 263, 288, 339, 370.
 Bateman, 241.
 Bates, 337.
 Bath, 56.
 Batten, 241.
 Batter, 76, 81, 82, 220, 245, 246, 298.
 Bawde, 348.
 Bayley, 39, 61, 63, 402.
 Baxter, 65.
 Beacham, 286, 396, 397.
 Beadle, 56, 73, 91, 262, 293, 296, 297, 390, 472.
 Beal, 38, 389, 390, 448.
 Beale, 39.
 Bean, 434.
 Beans, 475.
 Bear, 95, 189.
 Beaucamp, 397.
 Becket, 233, 234, 238, 241, 260, 298, 473, 474, 476, 479, 485, 488.
 Beckford, 116, 124, 150, 162, 165, 226, 237, 245, 248, 250, 274, 327, 330, 447, 448.
 Beeres, 45.
 Beger, 447.
 Beges, 177.
 Begoe, 391, 445, 447.
 Belcher, 383.
 Beler, 153.
 Bell, 125, 429.</p> |
|--|---|--|

- Belton, 256.
 Benjamin, 360.
 Bennet, 27, 311, 379.
 Bennett, 16.
 Bennitt, 402.
 Benson, 275, 345, 344.
 Bentley, 94, 232.
 Besse, 39.
 Best, 381, 475.
 Berkeley, 5.
 Berry, 68, 237, 303, 327, 338, 341, 417, 471.
 Bertram, 115, 483.
 Bet, 42.
 Bethune, 336.
 Bigsbee, 382.
 Bile, 333.
 Bilelate, 333.
 Billings, 278.
 Binney, 349.
 Birdsall, 485.
 Biscoe, 470.
 Bishop, 87, 94, 122, 318, 369.
 Bixbee, 379.
 Black, 382.
 Blackledge, 316.
 Blake, 277.
 Blanch, 110.
 Blanco, 38.
 Blaney, 274, 305, 306, 416, 423, 427, 492.
 Blayno, 39.
 Bligh, 61, 63.
 Bliss, 353, 370.
 Blunt, 379.
 Blygh, 387.
 Blythe, 467.
 Bly, 39.
 Boardman, 237, 337, 437, 454, 474, 478.
 Bocke, 382.
 Boden, 114, 116, 288, 442.
 Boerstler, 354, 362.
 Boice, 54.
 Boissel, 153.
 Bolles, 283, 478.
 Holling, 188.
 Bond, 310, 318.
 Bondfield, 382.
 Bonsett, 382.
 Bontell, 73.
 Bosall, 158.
 Bossell, 382.
 Bosville, 153.
 Boswell, 154.
 Bosworth, 148.
 Bott, 167, 296, 393.
 Boutell, 73.
 Boutilier, 114.
 Bowden, 62.
 Bowditch, 326, 492-494.
 Bowdoin, 404.
 Bowen, 351, 361, 456.
 Bowie, 129.
 Bowls, 397.
 Bowman, 451.
 Boxton, 8.
 Boynton, 73, 384.
 Brace, 264, 276.
 Bradbury, 155.
 Brade, 38.
 Bradell, 442.
 Bradford, 348.
 Bradle, 429.
 Bradley, 171, 199.
 Bradshaw, 339, 342, 354, 357, 359, 421.
 Bradston, 5.
 Bradstreet, 396.
 Bradstreete, 230, 370, 381.
 Bragg, 221.
 Brainard, 351.
 Brampton, 349.
 Brattle, 69.
 Brav, 91, 93, 94, 99, 103, 126, 137, 251, 254, 257, 266, 268, 306, 335, 339, 341, 392, 432, 446, 450, 464, 472, 475.
 Bread, 39.
 Breed, 27, 32, 38, 51, 60, 62, 64, 66.
 Bretton, 313.
 Brewer, 38, 39, 117, 293, 296, 339, 387.
 Brewster, 152.
 Briant, 146.
 Briar, 316.
 Briarly, 73.
 Bridge, 329.
 Bridges, 147, 221, 443.
 Briers, 370.
 Briggs, 363.
 Bright, 106.
 Brintnall, 57, 64.
 Brisco, 304, 425, 426.
 Britton, 423.
 Brookes, 311.
 Brooks, 135, 168, 190, 235, 243, 249, 423, 476.
 Brookhouse, 227.
 Bromblecomb, 495.
 Bromfield, 324.
 Brown, 27, 93, 106, 121, 137, 156, 157, 159, 196, 208, 211, 212, 218, 224, 248, 249, 252, 253, 331, 341, 345, 359, 380, 392, 446, 450, 451, 457, 465, 489.
 Browne, 33, 38, 80, 82, 129, 293, 296, 298, 324, 366, 436.
 Browning, 482.
 Bryant, 250.
 Rubier, 455, 456.
 Buchanan, 351.
 Buxton, 8, 256.
 Buffington, 225, 391, 423.
 Buffit, 180.
 Buffum, 354, 441, 445.
 Bulkely, 344, 360.
 Bull, 142.
 Bullock, 293, 294, 299, 476.
 Bulson, 437.
 Burbank, 480.
 Burchmore, 454.
 Burges, 38, 50.
 Burgess, 4.
 Burke, 278.
 Burnam, 401, 402, 404.
 Burneby, 12.
 Burnett, 67, 352.
 Burnham, 175, 201, 264, 276, 358, 364, 408, 489.
 Burnitt, 67.
 Burpee, 411.
 Burrage, 63.
 Burrell, 38, 57.
 Burrill, 27, 39, 52, 57, 62, 66, 239, 295, 297, 298, 343, 349, 473, 480.
 Burt, 33, 470.
 Burton, 27, 280, 283.
 Burt, 68.
 Bushnell, 319.
 Bussell, 152, 153.
 Bussey, 429.
 Buswell, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 167, 169, 185, 240, 379.
 Butler, 400, 401, 403.
 Butman, 265.
 Butterick, 356, 367.
 Buttolph, 295, 331, 435.
 Button, 440.
 Butte, 97, 312, 319.
 Buxton, 284, 295, 348, 485.
 Buzzell, 150, 155.
 Buzwell, 150.
 Byles, 333, 334.
 Byrne, 270, 481.

C.

- Cabot, 115, 271.
 Caiton, 330.
 Caldwell, 409.
 Calef, 358, 411, 417.
 Calley, 90, 480.
 Callum, 488.
 Cambrev, 149.
 Campbell, 224, 331.
 Capen, 42.
 Card, 136.
 Carew, 251.
 Carinth, 463.
 Carleton, 231, 235, 380, 385, 493.
 Carley, 353.
 Carlisle, 250.
 Carlton, 230, 231, 235, 296, 380, 384, 493.
 Carnes, 328, 453, 457, 458, 460.
 Carpenter, 149.
 Carr, 150.
 Carrill, 294.
 Carroll, 479.
 Carroll, 436.
 Carter, 156, 253, 329, 381.
 Caruth, 118.
 Case, 313.
 Cash, 253, 265, 270.

- Cass, 351.
 Caten, 281.
 Cavies, 472.
 Chadwell, 27, 38, 39, 73.
 Chadwick, 262.
 Champion, 15.
 Champney, 296, 380.
 Chandler, 61, 102, 369.
 Chaplin, 411, 414, 419.
 Chapman, 129, 143, 177, 330, 398, 467.
 Chase, 56, 136, 142, 152, 263, 276, 365, 367, 377.
 Cheever, 165, 224, 283, 307, 328, 330, 338, 370, 400, 435, 476, 477, 494, 495.
 Chevers, 82, 162.
 Chickering, 68.
 Chickley, 324.
 Chilson, 39.
 Chipman, 422, 435, 436, 437.
 Choate, 116, 123, 409.
 Christopher, 68.
 Churchman, 31.
 Clandessens, 19.
 Clarence, 175, 201.
 Clark, 73, 150, 283, 284, 365.
 Clarke, 39, 45, 332, 333, 350, 407, 477.
 Clap, 42.
 Clawell, 280.
 Cleaves, 436.
 Clement, 376.
 Clemons, 39.
 Cleveland, 128, 446.
 Clifford, 268.
 Clouney, 366.
 Cloutman, 364, 476, 489.
 Clypsan, 10.
 Coale, 469.
 Coales, 322.
 Coate, 39.
 Coates, 39.
 Coats, 38, 39.
 Cobb, 34.
 Cobbett, 38, 39.
 Cockerell, 252.
 Cogswell, 45.
 Cogswell, 402.
 Coffin, 332, 336.
 Coffrin, 473.
 Coit, 487.
 Colby, 158.
 Coldam, 27, 34.
 Cole, 46, 73, 152, 354.
 Coles, 322.
 Collins, 38, 39, 46, 60, 62, 246, 252, 254, 266, 296, 298, 421, 434, 437, 448, 452, 470, 475, 484.
 Collony, 160.
 Collyng, 149.
 Colwell, 117.
 Coomes, 73.
 Comberbach, 395.
 Comer, 281.
 Comins, 374.
 Conant, 75, 219, 418.
 Connacher, 363.
 Conner, 486.
 Contee, 350.
 Cook, 162, 224, 250, 262, 275, 294, 331, 390, 391, 392, 452, 485.
 Cooke, 156, 157, 344, 346.
 Copp, 73.
 Corbet, 313, 395.
 Corey, 440.
 Corliss, 351, 361.
 Corning, 113.
 Cornwallis, 16.
 Corwin, 33, 75, 76, 303, 346, 377.
 Cotton, 237.
 Cowan, 366.
 Cowdeck, 38.
 Cowdrey, 27.
 Cowdick, 39.
 Cox, 391.
 Crafts, 35, 36, 303, 305, 306, 429.
 Crandall, 117, 137.
 Cranfts, 39.
 Creamer, 162, 165, 264, 276, 365, 367.
 Crediford, 190.
 Croad, 295, 441, 444, 446.
 Crok, 251.
 Crombie, 409.
 Cromwell, 82, 89, 332, 439, 472.
 Cross, 288, 315, 343.
 Crouch, 15.
 Crowninshield, 142, 172, 233, 235, 253, 266, 269, 277, 283, 327, 330, 422, 466, 467, 474, 496.
 Crumpton, 82, 410.
 Cue, 316.
 Culpepper, 350.
 Cummins, 129.
 Currier, 476.
 Currin, 395.
 Curtis, 53, 81, 82, 824, 460.
 Curwen, 395.
 Cushman, 204, 230.
 Cushing, 116.
 Cutler, 138, 304, 417, 420, 421, 423, 427, 432, 447.
 Cutting, 368.

D.

 Daland, 162, 163, 165, 225, 228, 264, 273, 276, 277, 288, 304, 423, 425, 426, 445, 447.
 Dale, 440.
 Dalton, 134, 135, 136, 142, 250, 264, 436, 437.
 Dane, 381.
 Danforth, 44.
 Daniels, 162, 228, 277, 472.
 Danielson, 352.
 Darland, 280.
 Darling, 84.
 Davie, 311.
 Davillier, 183.
 Davis, 33, 35, 39, 60, 92, 129, 163, 304, 334, 356, 396, 398, 400, 405, 407, 411, 412, 416, 418.
 Dawes, 273.
 Day, 122, 158, 160, 189, 191, 370, 384, 385.
 Dean, 39, 224, 242, 253, 261, 296, 329, 331, 396, 427.
 Deane, 277, 383.
 Dearborn, 130.
 Deblois, 255.
 Decker, 417, 419.
 Dee, 209.
 Deland, 259.
 De le More, 153.
 Denison, 396.
 Denning, 490.
 Dennis, 383.
 Denton, 9.
 Derby, 100, 103, 106, 222, 226, 227, 270, 279, 282, 295, 298, 302, 325, 327, 343, 400, 422, 474.
 De St. Croix, 114.
 De Terreno, 364.
 Devereux, 135, 267, 328, 329, 456, 474.
 Devorix, 83.
 Dexter, 27, 96, 147, 151, 344, 346, 348.
 Deyrel, 6.
 Diamond, 391, 470.
 Dickinson, 412, 425.
 Digby, 9.
 Dike, 220, 389.
 Dillingham, 266.
 Diman, 66, 68, 232.
 Diapaw, 38.
 Diva, 12.
 Divan, 38.
 Dixey, 28.
 Doane, 117.
 Dodge, 101, 117, 126, 128, 142, 192, 212, 271, 315, 379, 380, 413, 467.
 Dodwell, 256.
 Doggett, 248.
 Dole, 199.
 Dolley, 39.
 Donaldson, 481, 482.
 Dood, 238.
 Doolittle, 409.
 Dorman, 379, 396.
 Dorr, 352, 359.
 Dory, 38.
 Dove, 218, 277, 278.
 Dow, 73, 369, 376.
 Dowe, 324.
 Downing, 114, 129, 160, 209, 230, 286, 288.
 Doyle, 276.
 Dowst, 452.
 Drake, 184.
 Drever, 19.

Driver, 32.
 Driver, 15, 16, 18, 19, 225,
 228, 240, 243, 246, 249,
 250, 253, 257, 259, 260,
 266, 272, 274, 275, 283,
 287, 288, 304, 318, 319,
 335, 339, 341, 343, 345,
 354, 366, 392, 425, 432,
 437, 443, 447, 451, 458,
 461, 487, 488, 489.
 Dryver, 5, 6, 15, 19.
 Ducahet 165.
 Dudley, 230.
 Dugglas, 39.
 Duncklee, 437.
 Dunlap, 237.
 Dunning, 489.
 Dutch, 287, 410.
 Dwyer, 328.
 Dyer, 319.
 Dynn, 280, 281, 484.
 Dyson, 341.
 Dyve, 17.

E.

Eames, 328.
 Earle, 388.
 Eastman, 375.
 Eastwicks, 54, 56.
 Eaton, 39, 125, 155, 340, 469.
 Edde, 265.
 Eden, 101, 285, 450, 453.
 Edes, 190, 429.
 Edmonds, 60, 64.
 Edmons, 62.
 Edmonson, 188.
 Edmunds, 27, 38, 58.
 Edwards, 283, 317, 378.
 Ela, 371.
 Elkers, 111.
 Elkins, 39, 104, 222, 281,
 435, 493.
 Ellingwood, 421, 461.
 Elliot, 116, 294.
 Ellis, 155, 156, 246, 296.
 Ellsins, 439.
 Ellson, 56.
 Elsey, 274, 443, 445, 447.
 Elson, 56.
 Ely, 196.
 Elyott, 42.
 Emerson, 168, 466.
 Emmerton, 235, 238, 339,
 343, 473.
 Emore, 68.
 Emos, 73.
 Endicott, 176, 315.
 Engoles, 38.
 English, 75, 324.
 Ingram, 42.
 Enyon, 154.
 Epes, 85.
 Erington, 410.
 Evans, 180.
 Eveleigh, 335.
 Eveleth, 95, 334.
 Everett, 334.

Eric, 308.
 Ericks, 308.
 Estey, 450, 451.
 Esty, 383.
 Eve, 320.
 Eyrick, 308, 310.

F.

Fabens, 263, 356.
 Fabre, 107.
 Fairfax, 350.
 Fairfield, 135, 264, 356, 482.
 Farendone, 251.
 Farington, 40.
 Farless, 240.
 Farmdale, 358, 364.
 Farr, 27, 38, 51, 62.
 Farrer, 54.
 Farley, 399, 402.
 Farmer, 235.
 Farnsworth, 38, 39.
 Farrington, 37, 39, 46, 58,
 60, 62, 63, 66, 73, 414.
 Favor, 35.
 Faulkner, 153.
 Faulkner, 128.
 Feake, 27.
 Fealt, 440.
 Fearing, 349.
 Fears, 422.
 Feavor, 41.
 Felt, 261, 328, 338, 388, 390,
 391, 440, 443, 471, 474.
 Fellows, 373.
 Felton, 294.
 Ffarrer, 39.
 Field, 150, 185, 287, 448.
 Fisher, 243, 328, 451.
 Fisk, 38, 287, 379, 380, 411.
 Fiske, 319, 407.
 Fitch, 27.
 Fitts, 154.
 Fitz-Osbern, 321.
 Fitzpen, 89.
 Flagge, 119.
 Flanders, 265, 352, 433.
 Flinder, 253, 265.
 Flinders, 433.
 Flint, 142, 218, 232, 282, 287,
 291, 298, 299, 300, 303,
 325, 330, 338, 390, 400,
 408, 412, 415, 424, 425,
 426, 427, 472, 476.
 Flood, 50, 52.
 Flood, 68.
 Folsom, 150.
 Foot, 232.
 Foote, 327.
 Ford, 374, 450.
 Forrester, 228.
 Foster, 60, 61, 62, 87, 95,
 116, 117, 119, 135, 142,
 227, 238, 274, 275, 289,
 316, 334, 335, 343, 378,
 379, 380, 382, 396, 418,
 422, 425, 426, 446, 473.

Fontaine, 471.
 Fowle, 238, 457, 473.
 Fowler, 151, 152, 246, 277,
 278, 279, 286, 316, 369,
 380, 395, 397, 399, 417,
 469.
 Fox, 290, 313.
 Foxcraft, 61.
 Francis, 495.
 Franklin, 31, 347.
 Fray, 32.
 Fraye, 33, 84.
 Frayle, 33.
 French, 383.
 Frese, 438.
 Friend, 381.
 Frost, 296.
 Frothingham, 353, 456, 457.
 Froude, 484.
 Fry, 335.
 Frye, 113, 135, 247, 417, 452,
 476.
 Fuller, 34, 37, 50, 58, 66, 118,
 167, 349, 461, 462, 463.
 Fullerton, 346.
 Furlong, 108.
 Furneam, 283.

G.

Gage, 372, 376, 384, 414, 416.
 Gaile, 83, 106.
 Galausha, 428.
 Gale, 85, 86, 248, 327, 451,
 451.
 Galuskee, 428.
 Gammell, 361.
 Ganson, 296.
 Gardiner, 40, 55, 72, 292.
 Gardner, 79, 91, 165, 205,
 230, 242, 270, 276, 296,
 324, 326, 342, 352, 353,
 415, 424, 465, 492.
 Garrard, 154.
 Gayborn, 296.
 Gedney, 53, 56, 85, 92, 220,
 270.
 Geffords, 64, 66.
 Gerald, 68.
 Gerrish, 224, 247, 298, 300,
 331, 413, 414.
 Gibaut, 269.
 Gibbs, 263.
 Giddens, 334.
 Giddings, 397, 402, 403.
 Gifford, 7, 252, 262.
 Gilbert, 266, 296, 329, 347,
 373, 381, 396.
 Gilde, 38.
 Gile, 301.
 Giles, 101, 297, 328, 338, 339,
 341, 433, 434.
 Gill, 155.
 Gillingham, 225, 237, 253.
 Gillow, 32, 33, 301.
 Gilman, 206, 327, 332, 334,
 335, 337, 352.

- Glazier, 262, 332.
 Gloveis, 489.
 Glover, 61, 63, 72, 85, 86,
 125, 372, 471.
 Goarding, 269.
 Goddard, 346, 347, 348, 351,
 478.
 Goddins, 315.
 Godfrey, 374.
 Godwin, 309.
 Going, 295.
 Gold, 324.
 Goldthwait, 137, 469.
 Goldsmith, 381.
 Golt, 52, 60.
 Gomes, 328.
 Good, 340.
 Goodale, 285, 286, 453, 486.
 Goodhue, 115, 168, 176, 194,
 240, 248, 249, 296, 333,
 393, 397, 403, 458, 466.
 Goodman, 353.
 Goodridge, 288.
 Goodwin, 297.
 Gortling, 256.
 Gormes, 328.
 Goss, 61.
 Gott, 39, 369, 378.
 Gould, 316, 378.
 Gove, 33.
 Gowen, 39.
 Gower, 363.
 Gowing, 295.
 Gracie, 128.
 Grafton, 297, 302, 449.
 Graham, 482.
 Grant, 72, 78, 80, 82, 83, 85,
 139, 248, 328.
 Graves, 27, 39, 40, 58, 60, 62,
 73, 375.
 Gray, 73, 90, 91, 92, 220,
 253, 260, 429, 465.
 Gregg, 164.
 Green, 213, 349.
 Greene, 245.
 Greenleaf, 73, 287, 333.
 Greenough, 334.
 Greenoway, 143.
 Grentemaisnie, 320.
 Griffen, 130.
 Griffin, 227, 285, 486.
 Griffiths, 486.
 Groesbeck, 352.
 Grosvenour, 348.
 Grush, 129.
 Gurdon, 73.
 Guppy, 72, 86.
 Gyles, 76.
- H.**
- Haberfield, 46.
 Hacker, 33, 93, 176, 452.
 Haddock, 466.
 Haines, 39.
 Halbrook, 67.
 Hale, 221, 313, 327, 332, 333,
 334, 339, 379.
 Hall, 27, 32, 37, 39, 135, 376,
 384, 385, 453.
 Halle, 51.
 Haly, 495.
 Hammond, 190, 213, 479.
 Hanforth, 39.
 Haraden, 476.
 Haradine, 73.
 Harcourt, 360.
 Hardy, 384, 385.
 Harforde, 18.
 Harkers, 34.
 Harlow, 119.
 Harraden, 307, 359, 366.
 Harrenden, 342.
 Harris, 38, 39, 156, 324, 344,
 426.
 Harrison, 272, 467.
 Hart, 53, 58, 65, 282, 297,
 299, 303, 383, 397, 441.
 Hartley, 16.
 Hartt, 40.
 Harvey, 149.
 Harwood, 15, 208.
 Haselrich, 9.
 Haskell, 87, 95, 129, 191, 387,
 473.
 Hassam, 155.
 Hastings, 18, 251.
 Hathaway, 149.
 Hathorne, 27, 33, 34, 35, 37,
 38, 52, 60, 73, 81, 82, 101,
 226, 254, 277, 298, 331,
 433, 479, 486.
 Hatter, 409.
 Haven, 55, 62.
 Hawkes, 39.
 Hawes, 60, 311.
 Hawkes, 27, 60, 241, 298,
 356.
 Hawkins, 75, 148.
 Hawthorne, 479.
 Hayes, 73, 206.
 Haynes, 426, 440.
 Hayward, 247, 305, 448, 449.
 Hazeltine, 372, 384.
 Heard, 290, 399.
 Heart, 51, 53, 56.
 Hechenson, 39.
 Heighton, 189.
 Hemphill, 157.
 Henderson, 102, 262, 341,
 359, 390, 435, 436, 452,
 493.
 Henfield, 143, 285, 286, 359,
 450, 487.
 Herrey, 433.
 Herrick, 95, 97, 122, 162,
 164, 191, 271, 277, 314,
 331, 370, 380.
 Herrow, 390.
 Hersey, 444.
 Heseltine, 372, 384, 385.
 Hesilrigge, 9.
 Hibbard, 68, 281, 283.
 Hidden, 407.
 Higginson, 80, 82, 235, 298,
 303, 476.
 Hill, 77, 78, 82, 1.
 296, 364, 371.
 Hillard, 248, 252, 270, 327,
 381.
 Hilliard, 268, 274.
 Hilman, 280.
 Hilton, 160, 191.
 Hinckley, 336.
 Hinde, 311.
 Hirst, 324.
 Hitchens, 58, 89.
 Hitching, 89.
 Hobart, 150, 240, 351.
 Hobert, 33.
 Hobby, 296, 446.
 Hobbs, 376.
 Hobson, 61.
 Hodgdon, 203.
 Hodges, 42, 90, 236, 242,
 273, 282, 284, 325, 331,
 396, 465, 474, 477, 478,
 486.
 Hodgkins, 386, 412.
 Holbrook, 67, 68.
 Holewell, 12.
 Hoffman, 332.
 Holdenby, 9.
 Holden, 311.
 Holesa, 442.
 Holgate, 80, 82.
 Holland, 252.
 Hollis, 73.
 Holloway, 299, 300.
 Holloway, 38.
 Holman, 304, 305, 306, 415,
 425, 451.
 Holmes, 344.
 Holms, 42.
 Holmstead, 313.
 Holt, 490.
 Holten, 284, 258.
 Holton, 258, 284.
 Holyoke, 27, 285, 468, 487.
 Homans, 494.
 Homar, 39.
 Hood, 38, 39, 68, 119, 477.
 Hooper, 73, 122, 158, 443.
 Hopkins, 276, 419, 428, 466.
 Hopkinson, 414.
 Hoppin, 361.
 Horton, 328.
 Hosmer, 479.
 Houghton, 61.
 Houlton, 73.
 How, 430.
 Howard, 288, 390, 391.
 Howarth, 250.
 Howes, 411.
 Hubbard, 27.
 Hubon, 129.
 Huchin, 40.
 Hudson, 27, 38, 331.
 Hull, 38.
 Humphrey, 75, 455.
 Hunkens, 40.
 Hunlock, 296.
 Hunt, 287, 419.
 Hurbert, 91.

Druiet, 73.

ussey, 28, 108, 109.

Huston, 273.

Hutchens, 384, 885.

Hutchins, 38, 39, 46, 73.

Hutchinson, 51, 116, 217, 243, 443.

Hutten, 370.

Hutton, 370.

Huzzey, 371.

I.

Ingalls, 473.

Ingalls, 28, 33, 34, 64, 84, 88, 98, 259, 261, 263, 396, 401, 403.

Ingersol, 429.

Ingersoll, 129, 242, 254, 298, 473.

Ingolla, 39.

Ireland, 16.

Ireson, 38, 39.

Irvine, 328.

Isaam, 819.

Ive, 320.

Ivery, 320.

Ives, 91, 93, 101, 102, 120, 175, 205, 257, 260, 264, 270, 276, 282, 285, 288, 302, 306, 320, 328, 334, 336, 345, 351, 400, 421, 476, 489.

Iveson, 322.

Ivo, 321.

Ivorv, 39, 49, 52, 64, 65, 66, 489.

J.

Jackson, 351, 370, 378, 379, 396, 413.

Jacob, 316, 389, 410.

Jacobs, 51, 64, 65.

Jenckes, 344, 345, 349.

Jencks, 14.

Jefferds, 64, 66.

Jefferds, 64, 218.

Jeffreys, 15.

Jeffries, 219, 480.

Jefts, 301.

Jenks, 147, 148, 149, 162, 163.

Jennings, 249.

Jennison, 232.

Jewell, 288.

Jewett, 73, 230, 355, 383, 386, 407, 411, 414.

Johnson, 50, 60, 62, 149, 249, 271, 278, 297, 301, 303, 325, 390, 392, 413, 421, 422.

Jones, 287, 358, 365.

Jonson, 38.

Jonte, 189.

Jordan, 89, 363, 370, 379, 382, 385, 396.

Judd, 285, 486.

Juxon, 313.

K.

Kaynes, 6.

Keasar, 32.

Keasur, 53.

Keefe, 68.

Keheew, 436.

Kehoo, 436, 437.

Keine, 16.

Kelley, 480.

Kemball, 396.

Kempton, 492, 494.

Kendall, 129, 130.

Kenney, 61, 299.

Kenny, 419.

Kenyon, 188.

Kertland, 37, 60.

Kesar, 52, 54.

Keyes, 156, 192.

Keyser, 28, 79.

Kilham, 280, 373, 453.

Killam, 379.

Kimball, 40, 120, 129, 149, 249, 316, 317, 359, 366, 368, 377, 405, 410, 412, 426, 437.

Kinge, 39, 157.

King, 36, 68, 75, 83, 86, 91, 116, 145, 155, 156, 157, 226, 234-236, 247, 269, 293, 296, 302, 346, 427, 448, 449, 469, 478.

Kingsley, 180.

Kirby, 341.

Kirtland, 66, 68.

Kitchen, 124.

Knapp, 116.

Knight, 34, 38, 39, 53, 73, 125, 275, 290, 366, 392, 398, 442.

Knights, 15.

Knowlton, 95, 233.

Kynnesiman, 154.

L.

Laighton, 54.

Laiten, 419.

Lambart, 315.

Lambert, 39, 101, 253, 265, 273, 284, 475, 493.

Lambson, 373.

Lancashire, 314.

Lancaster, 414.

Lander, 78, 79, 149, 253, 254, 259, 261, 285, 390, 452, 487.

Lane, 290.

Lang, 287, 327, 464, 466.

Langdell, 117.

Langdon, 73.

Langmaid, 358.

Larcom, 328, 341.

Larkin, 168, 197.

Laskin, 313, 315.

Lathrop, 368, 376.

Laud, 313.

Laighton, 39, 57, 470.

Laurence, 129.

Laurie, 440.

Lauter, 422.

Lawes, 440.

Lawrence, 99, 124, 130, 163, 166, 277, 467.

Leach, 117, 122, 160, 315, 477.

Leader, 148.

Le Bourdon, 114.

Ledyard, 351.

Lee, 95, 116, 160, 161, 288, 299, 300, 322, 327, 465.

Leonard, 151, 152, 185.

Le Moine, 346.

Lemon, 237, 296.

Leslie, 135, 289, 391.

Lesslie, 411.

Leukenore, 5.

Lewis, 38, 39, 50, 52, 62, 118, 355, 472.

Lilly, 101.

Lindall, 75, 298, 302, 415, 423.

Lindsay, 58.

Lindsey, 28, 34, 60, 68, 362.

Linnitt, 160.

Linsay, 40.

Linton, 329.

Linzey, 38.

Lippincott, 337.

Lisbell, 143.

Little, 227.

Littlefield, 116.

Livingston, 109.

Liach, 259.

Lloyd, 256.

Lock, 113.

Locke, 58, 60, 73.

Lockhart, 242.

Lockwood, 352.

Longe, 5.

Longley, 54.

Longville, 251.

Looke, 40, 73, 490.

Lord, 248, 387, 398, 441.

Loring, 149, 427, 432.

Louder, 381.

Lovejoy, 379.

Lovell, 279, 398.

Lovett, 101.

Loving, 381.

Low, 190, 209, 213, 381, 413.

Lowell, 398.

Lowther, 248.

Lufkin, 89.

Luke, 9.

Lull, 382, 383.

Lumas, 383.

Lumley, 9.

Lunt, 464, 471.

Luscomb, 102, 150, 169, 171,
296, 330, 387, 448, 449,
472, 481.

Lyman, 327.

Lynds, 129.

Lyndsey, 26.

Lynsey, 39.

M.

Macarty, 8, 82.

Mac Iver, 321.

Mackmallin, 85.

Mackmallon, 495

Mackmillian, 100.

Mackmillon, 448.

Maclin, 155, 188, 207.

Maddorf, 256.

Magee, 487.

Maiston, 429.

Malborne, 109.

Mallet, 114.

Malloon, 492.

Manaadconit, 440.

Manby, 311.

Mann, 73, 167.

Manige, 39.

Manning, 90, 232, 261, 269,

283, 338, 353, 418, 449,

471, 475.

Manser, 65.

Mansfield, 37, 60, 65, 68, 90,

91, 92, 101, 106, 116, 143,

253, 285, 288, 328, 341,

350, 391, 392, 421, 423,

440, 473, 477.

Marberry, 145.

March, 315, 316.

Markes, 39.

Marks, 38, 227.

Marsh, 376, 469, 470.

Marshall, 37, 52, 58, 337.

Marston, 92, 232, 235, 390,

430, 445, 446, 450, 476.

Martin, 143, 162, 277, 426.

Marvin, 142, 462.

Mascoll, 473, 488.

Mason, 234, 236, 238, 423,

488.

Massey, 222, 297, 331, 343,

486.

Masters, 98.

Maston, 73.

Masury, 100, 148, 273, 275,

296, 475, 479.

Mather, 56, 381.

Matthew, 186.

Maule, 220.

Maverick, 294, 297, 301,

376.

Mawney, 346, 348.

May, 312, 314.

McClure, 429.

McCulloch, 208, 212.

McDonald, 110, 353.

McGee, 285.

McKinnie, 189.

McMillan, 495.

McNear, 419.

McNutt, 238.

Mead, 454.

Meacham, 265.

Mears, 233.

Medcalf, 397.

Melcher, 129.

Melville, 429.

Melvin, 118, 463.

Menzies, 429.

Merriam, 330.

Merrill, 152, 154, 167, 353,

451.

Merritt, 363, 455.

Messerve, 491.

Metcalf, 137, 142, 243, 274,

283, 287, 303, 304, 322,

325, 383, 392, 394, 408,

415, 420, 425, 428.

Metcalfe, 386, 476.

Mickgros, 14.

Middleton, 348.

Midlecut, 42.

Mighill, 61, 377.

Miles, 54, 77, 222, 337.

Millent, 321.

Miller, 337.

Millet, 142, 144, 146, 148,

149, 150, 226, 345, 488.

Millett, 149, 241, 420, 422.

Mills, 639.

Miriam, 38.

Mitchell, 418.

Molloy, 327.

Montacute, 10.

Montagues, 439.

Montfort, 11.

Montgomery, 201.

Moody, 396.

Moor, 62.

Moore, 45, 184, 465.

More, 74, 84.

Moreland, 192.

Morgan, 160, 335, 339, 423.

Morris, 246.

Morse, 161, 193, 363, 372,

426.

Morss, 155.

Mortimer, 5.

Morton, 121, 151.

Mosely, 288, 327.

Moses, 224, 297, 331, 433,

434, 493.

Motley, 67, 68, 360.

Mould, 32.

Moulton, 370.

Mower, 38, 60, 61.

Mucegros, 14.

Mugford, 250, 388, 472.

Mulbary, 199.

Mullet, 492, 493.

Munjoy, 440.

Murch, 119.

Murphy, 328.

Murray, 88, 277, 843, 416.

Myerly, 171, 200.

N.

Neal, 72, 73, 81, 129, 163,

221, 246, 265, 274, 285,

295, 302, 304, 415, 425,

438, 476.

Nealand, 897.

Neale, 276, 433, 438, 439.

Nealson, 211.

Near, 422.

Needham, 33, 38, 39, 101,

224, 225, 262, 331, 423.

Neel, 438.

Negus, 28.

Neland, 385.

Nelson, 419, 425.

Nerunt, 6.

Nevill, 7.

Newhall, 28, 33, 37, 38, 46,

50, 53, 54, 55, 62, 135, 286,

288, 339, 343, 427.

Newman, 396.

Newmash, 324.

Newell, 135.

Newton, 347.

Nichols, 61, 136, 277, 296,

371, 391, 396, 441, 444,

476.

Nicoll, 129.

Nigell, 439.

Noble, 151.

Nobbs, 179.

Nordens, 45.

Norfolcia, 348.

Norman, 472.

Norris, 9, 288, 415, 448, 462.

Northey, 101, 236.

Norton, 73, 427.

Norwood, 46, 52, 66.

Noyce, 303.

Noyes, 256, 333.

Nurse, 366, 433.

Nutting, 109, 269, 270, 283,

467.

O.

Oakes, 39, 291.

Oaks, 433.

Obear, 101, 128.

Oburne, 280.

Odell, 247, 415.

Odo, 320.

Ogden, 494.

O'Hare, 290.

Oliver, 126.

Olney, 346.

O'Mare, 454.

O'Morroghue, 328.

Op-den-Dyck, 347.

Orange, 300.

Ordway, 315, 378.

Orring, 299.

Orris, 381.

Orms, 477.

Orvis, 176, 204.

Osborn, 15, 272, 283, 285, 486.
 Osborne, 135, 288, 358, 468, 478.
 Osgood, 102, 219, 224, 233, 237, 258, 277, 285, 293, 435, 487.
 Osment, 95, 98, 122, 160.

P.

Page, 288, 413.
 Pain, 224, 472.
 Paine, 481.
 Paige, 42.
 Palfrey, 89, 131, 162, 165, 228, 247, 277, 283, 286, 296, 327, 480.
 Palmer, 249, 271, 293, 296, 328, 384, 423, 455, 465, 467.
 Pappoon, 67.
 Parkes, 150, 176.
 Parker, 103, 287, 435.
 Parkman, 56.
 Parks, 207.
 Parnell, 261.
 Parrot, 489.
 Parrott, 490.
 Parsons, 288, 307, 343, 476.
 Pasly, 38.
 Patten, 409.
 Patterson, 118, 135, 240, 270, 418, 420, 422, 460.
 Payne, 153.
 Peabody, 176, 327, 328, 379, 382, 426.
 Pearce, 10.
 Pearson, 113, 414, 487.
 Pease, 353.
 Peaslee, 376.
 Pedrick, 323.
 Peele, 117, 243, 342, 421, 458, 472, 474, 482.
 Peirce, 232.
 Pendrick, 304, 425, 427.
 Penfield, 39.
 Penniman, 450.
 Pepper, 433.
 Pepperell, 333.
 Perkins, 90, 129, 142, 155, 330, 342, 356, 364, 365, 366, 397, 405, 478, 480.
 Perley, 316, 411, 418.
 Perry, 122, 211, 382.
 Peters, 274, 447, 448, 452.
 Peterson, 272, 468.
 Phelps, 277, 471, 476, 479, 489.
 Philleges, 42.
 Phillips, 39, 58, 75, 78, 81, 82, 120, 322, 423, 429.
 Philpot, 325.
 Phippen, 89, 116, 129, 218, 237, 238, 241, 260, 296, 297, 273, 298, 331, 435, 440, 448, 485, 489.

Phippeny, 229.
 Phipps, 257.
 Pickering, 135, 224, 232, 246, 284, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 298, 299, 305, 331, 340, 413, 415, 440, 445, 446, 465, 470, 472.
 Picot, 11, 115.
 Pickman, 75, 235, 245, 271, 298, 302, 423, 427.
 Pickslock, 256.
 Pickton, 265.
 Pierce, 175, 205, 283, 356.
 Pierson, 39.
 Pierpont, 335.
 Pight, 814.
 Pike, 39, 155, 414, 477.
 Pilgrim, 83.
 Pincent, 76, 237, 245, 452.
 Pinsent, 247.
 Pitcher, 470.
 Pitman, 150, 185, 220, 298, 469.
 Place, 219.
 Plaice, 220.
 Plaine, 455.
 Plaisted, 485.
 Plasse, 53.
 Platts, 413.
 Pointon, 255.
 Polk, 351.
 Polley, 353.
 Poole, 32, 284, 383, 486.
 Pope, 88, 98, 123, 276, 432, 452.
 Pordage, 324.
 Porter, 98, 212, 353, 380, 418, 471, 472.
 Portle, 149, 150.
 Pott, 256.
 Potter, 28, 32, 35, 36, 38, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51, 52, 59, 61, 64, 220, 380, 381, 382, 411, 443.
 Power, 344.
 Powell, 349.
 Povnton, 93, 100, 102, 126, 255, 257, 260, 340, 493.
 Pratt, 211, 435.
 Prescott, 119, 258, 465, 494.
 Preston, 128, 129, 142, 327, 450, 476.
 Price, 73, 453.
 Priest, 91.
 Prince, 143, 145, 336, 429, 473, 476, 479, 493.
 Pritchett, 73.
 Proctor, 423.
 Prowse, 375.
 Prytherche, 72, 76.
 Pudeater, 442.
 Pulling, 256, 289, 290.
 Pulsifer, 241.
 Punchard, 125, 162, 163, 246, 290, 392.
 Purchase, 232, 261, 471.
 Purchis, 38.
 Purchiss, 39.

Purfit, 210, 213.
 Putman, 288.
 Putnam, 112, 129, 145, 168, 176, 198, 226, 258, 287, 340, 420, 466, 475, 478.
 Pygot, 11.

Q.

Quarles, 380.
 Quincy, 365.
 Quintal, 180.
 Quinton, 7.
 Quitler, 324, 383, 386.

R.

Rainer, 373.
 Raleigh, 329.
 Ramdall, 6.
 Ramsdell, 62, 228, 285, 487.
 Ramsey, 353.
 Rand, 38, 39, 62, 65, 358, 366.
 Randall, 50, 238, 239, 242, 473.
 Randolph, 188.
 Rantal, 239.
 Rantoul, 327, 330.
 Rawson, 42, 44.
 Raymond, 208, 302, 353.
 Rayner, 369, 373.
 Raynor, 378.
 Rea, 235.
 Read, 73.
 Reddington, 127.
 Redington, 316, 372, 379, 382.
 Redknap, 33, 34, 39.
 Rednap, 28.
 Reece, 182, 184, 206.
 Reeves, 295, 338, 415, 471, 492.
 Reid, 409.
 Reiner, 373.
 Remick, 155.
 Revere, 429.
 Rhoades, 38.
 Rhoads, 34.
 Rhodes, 34, 286, 346, 349, 361, 392.
 Rice, 230, 479.
 Rich, 461.
 Richards, 28, 38, 39, 60, 129, 353, 387.
 Richardson, 39, 248, 263, 267, 271, 329, 354, 453.
 Richinson, 38.
 Riddan, 75.
 Riggs, 487.
 Ringe, 73.
 Roach, 56, 485.
 Roades, 60, 362.
 Roads, 495.

Robbins, 336, 337.
Robert, 193, 236.
Roberts, 39, 210, 214, 273,
294, 296, 469.
Robertson, 359.
Robins, 68.
Robinson, 37, 67, 131, 294,
435, 445, 485, 488.
Roch, 56.
Rod, 40.
Rodes, 58.
Rogers, 85, 188, 205, 336,
363, 379, 407, 411.
Rogh, 382.
Roland, 183.
Rofa, 188.
Ropes, 72, 101, 145, 223, 226,
227, 243, 247, 260, 263,
297, 302, 342, 390, 391,
420, 421, 423, 435, 444,
448, 454, 465, 477, 488.
Roote, 64.
Rooten, 33, 34, 35, 36.
Roscoe, 205, 211.
Ross, 249, 408, 458.
Rowndy, 77, 82.
Rowe, 159.
Roxburgh, 184.
Ruck, 246, 449, 464.
Rush, 316.
Russell, 243, 360.
Rust, 73, 250.
Rutherford, 210, 214.
Ryder, 117.
Rymes, 336.

S.

Sadler, 15.
Safford, 120, 147, 275, 286,
266, 396, 417.
Sage, 343.
Sallows, 435.
Salmon, 28, 39, 45, 69, 87.
Saltonstall, 396, 474.
Sanborn, 210, 213, 244.
Sanders, 42, 161, 414.
Sandin, 462.
Sargeant, 167.
Sargent, 96.
Saunders, 10, 112, 150, 158,
160, 172, 236, 248, 271,
283, 354, 456, 457, 458,
464, 465, 467, 471, 475,
476.
Savory, 384.
Sawyer, 250, 417.
Scales, 348.
Scarlet, 491.
Schuldharn, 348.
Scollay, 429.
Scolly, 429.
Scott, 96, 206, 368, 373, 377,
417.
Scotts, 883.
Scroop, 348.
Seuber, 362.

Searl, 296.
Searles, 378.
Sedden, 816.
Seed, 16.
Selyby, 38.
Severance, 154, 369.
Severn, 39.
Sewall, 41, 90, 358, 466.
Shales, 418.
Shallote, 302, 325, 400.
Shannon, 353.
Sharp, 489.
Sharpley, 45.
Shattock, 80.
Shatwell, 279.
Shed, 420.
Shelburne, 336.
Sheldon, 225, 381.
Shepard, 25, 31, 129, 145,
261, 329, 349, 350, 365,
375, 427, 474, 477.
Sheppard, 159.
Sherburne, 336.
Shirley, 110.
Shove, 61.
Shreve, 358.
Sibley, 73, 241, 305, 415,
462.
Silly, 155.
Silsbee, 145, 224, 235, 238,
305, 306, 368, 469, 472,
476, 495.
Silsby, 34, 36, 470.
Silsbey, 39.
Simmonds, 477.
Simons, 45, 345.
Sims, 112, 377.
Skerry, 129, 435, 442, 444,
464, 465, 471, 475, 476.
Skelton, 346.
Skillion, 399.
Skinner, 71, 86, 421, 456.
Skipper, 301.
Slater, 361.
Sleeper, 288.
Sleuman, 129.
Slewman, 101.
Slocomb, 361.
Small, 346, 443, 445, 446.
Smethurst, 456.
Smith, 28, 39, 90, 97, 109,
120, 124, 137, 145, 150,
156, 165, 237, 240, 247,
270, 275, 318, 341, 344,
346, 347, 363, 365, 366,
408, 409, 411, 418, 421,
449, 461, 470.
Snell, 262.
Snellock, 105.
Snowden, 350.
Soames, 80.
Sohier, 114.
Sollas, 435.
Somerby, 332, 333.
Somers, 82, 450, 451.
Southard, 183.
Southwick, 116, 294, 342,
354, 363.

Sparks, 474.
Spear, 352, 353.
Spence, 240.
Spencer, 351.
Spigurnel, 6.
Spiller, 214.
Spofford, 372.
Spranston, 313.
Sprout, 114.
Stacey, 38, 456.
Stacy, 39, 58, 73, 75.
Standish, 217, 443.
Staniford, 334, 417.
Stanley, 360.
Stanton, 232.
Starbuck, 332.
Stark, 430.
Starling, 444.
Starky, 251.
St. Clair, 363.
Stearnes, 51, 342, 421.
Stearns, 86.
Steele, 207.
Stevens, 83, 129, 143, 254,
276, 278, 332, 436, 491.
Stickney, 103, 372, 376, 377,
384, 385, 413, 414, 418,
419.
Stileman, 43, 75, 220, 460.
Stiles, 362.
Stirling, 444.
Stocker, 38, 39, 473.
Stodder, 149.
Storer, 99.
Storey, 15, 426.
Stoughton, 44.
Stow, 355.
Stratton, 91.
Streeter, 353, 356.
Strickland, 9.
Strout, 129.
Stubbs, 481.
Studes, 362.
Studly, 277.
Stuart, 238.
Summers, 183.
Sutton, 243.
Swan, 334.
Swaney, 126.
Swann, 351.
Swasey, 93, 237, 286, 487,
489, 494.
Sweet, 73.
Sweetser, 138, 365, 468.
Swinerton, 324.
Symmes, 223, 281, 287, 448,
460, 477.
Symms, 376, 384.
Symonds, 221, 295, 304, 316,
333, 363, 370, 396, 410,
416, 417, 420, 422, 424,
435, 448.

T.

Taggart, 418.
Tainadge, 28.

Tamar, 16.
 Tapley, 221, 265, 443, 484.
 Tarbox, 82, 39, 58, 60, 62, 73, 817, 381.
 Taylor, 28, 230, 240, 386, 339, 358.
 Tebbets, 192.
 Telford, 358, 384.
 Tenney, 73, 377, 384, 411.
 Tewksbury, 122.
 Thatcher, 430.
 Thing, 335.
 Thompson, 129, 477.
 Thoria, 318.
 Thorndike, 260.
 Thorne, 73.
 Thurston, 381.
 Tibberts, 129.
 Tiler, 382.
 Tileston, 61.
 Tilton, 334, 365.
 Tinkham, 319.
 Titcomb, 316, 334, 414.
 Todd, 429.
 Tomkins, 64.
 Tomlins, 28.
 Tompkins, 470, 473.
 Tousel, 254.
 Tout, 297.
 Towle, 413.
 Town, 318.
 Townly, 256.
 Townsend, 37, 58, 60, 62, 68, 73, 119, 145, 267, 284, 329.
 Towzell, 420.
 Towzer, 420.
 Tozier, 106, 416.
 Tozzer, 304, 420, 460, 461.
 Trafton, 460.
 Traill, 353.
 Trask, 56, 73, 136, 316.
 Traylor, 188, 207.
 Treadwell, 816.
 Treaunt, 7, 11.
 Trevett, 38, 298.
 Treworgye, 332.
 Triggs, 329, 330.
 True, 316.
 Tucker, 129, 139, 176, 277, 278, 288, 478, 496.
 Tufts, 145, 494.
 Turell, 71, 451.
 Turner, 15, 28, 82, 323, 324, 448, 465, 471.
 Twist, 88.
 Tyler, 335, 349, 377, 389, 391, 413, 475.
 Tyng, 335.

U.

Uggs, 297.
 Underhill, 409.
 Updike, 347.
 Upham, 354.
 Upton, 129.

V.

Vanderford, 136, 177.
 Vans, 271, 467.
 Vansittart, 439.
 Varnam, 396.
 Varney, 150, 226.
 Veren, 221, 440.
 Verey, 56.
 Verin, 156.
 Vernon, 350.
 Verrey, 433.
 Verry, 37.
 Very, 219, 221, 224, 247, 249, 336, 327, 330, 417, 424, 433, 447, 458, 469.
 Verte, 117.
 Vinton, 342.
 Von Kronenshelt, 227, 233, 268.

W.

Wade, 397, 399.
 Wainwright, 73.
 Waite, 383.
 Walcott, 9.
 Waldo, 410.
 Walk, 330.
 Walker, 16, 28, 39, 165, 276, 285, 296, 350, 353, 362, 384.
 Wall, 5.
 Wallis, 95, 125.
 Walsingham, 5.
 Walton, 60, 61, 62.
 Ward, 72, 91, 162, 163, 218, 223, 235, 239, 247, 267, 278, 284, 296, 297, 317, 328, 330, 338, 343, 391, 392, 434, 435, 450, 453, 462, 475, 479.
 Wardwell, 118, 371, 462.
 Warner, 316, 381, 386, 399, 429, 445.
 Warren, 318, 349, 356, 364.
 Washington, 172, 336, 350.
 Watson, 296, 326, 379, 384, 459, 466, 490.
 Watter, 68.
 Watts, 288, 336.
 Waterman, 346.
 Waters, 129, 155, 156, 157, 219, 221, 261, 267, 329, 344, 348, 418.
 Waugh, 206.
 Webb, 73, 91, 93, 101, 126, 135, 142, 236, 248, 252, 257, 258, 260, 281, 284, 298, 306, 330, 338, 392, 414, 446, 450, 464, 471, 472, 473, 478.
 Webber, 95, 189.
 Webster, 73, 145, 384, 466.
 Weed, 375.
 Weekes, 53.
 Weeks, 42, 219, 442, 443.

Wellington, 424.
 Wellman, 57, 58, 64, 73, 89, 120, 126, 131, 135, 451, 474, 496.
 Wellock, 201.
 Wells, 68, 222, 249, 297, 383.
 Welman, 40.
 Welsh, 40.
 Welston, 129.
 West, 101, 247, 276, 384, 385, 422, 423, 481.
 Wentworth, 5, 16.
 Weymouth, 73.
 Whall, 349.
 Wheat, 38, 142.
 Wheeler, 54, 73, 129.
 Wheelwright, 371.
 Whipple, 152, 161, 223, 316, 318, 346, 351, 482.
 White, 28, 38, 230, 296, 302, 322, 326, 375, 400, 426, 427, 446, 449, 471, 494.
 Whitefoote, 27.
 Whitford, 270, 484.
 Whitthorn, 189.
 Whiting, 351, 477.
 Whitinge, 39.
 Whitlick, 276.
 Whiton, 448.
 Whittredge, 267.
 Whittemore, 269.
 Whitten, 448.
 Whitter, 448.
 Whittington, 489.
 Whittredge, 454.
 Wiate, 276.
 Wickes, 90.
 Wickes, 156.
 Wier, 371.
 Wigglesworth, 417.
 Wightman, 186.
 Wilder, 61.
 Wilkins, 28, 127, 129, 221, 443.
 Willard, 230, 232, 299.
 Willoughby, 293, 302.
 Williams, 41, 52, 55, 73, 82, 101, 106, 125, 156, 237, 242, 268, 287, 292, 293, 299, 300, 329, 331, 344, 346, 347, 411, 439, 440, 461, 462, 475, 490.
 Willis, 28, 51, 139.
 Wilson, 119, 138, 370, 375, 383.
 Winchester, 418.
 Winn, 129, 145, 166, 287.
 Winsley, 369.
 Winslow, 230, 369.
 Winthrop, 66, 147, 230, 295.
 Wiswell, 42, 152.
 Withe, 19, 322, 326.
 Withorn, 189.
 Witt, 33, 34, 38, 51, 53, 56, 64, 67, 317, 370, 380.
 Witter, 28, 33, 387.
 Wolcott, 80, 82.
 Wood, 15, 28, 291, 383.

- | | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|---------------------------|
| Woodam, 410. | Woolf, 189. | Wyer, 106. |
| Woodbridge, 337, 428. | Wonright, 39. | Wyman, 423, 424. |
| Woodbury, 120, 122, 124, | Worcester, 125, 227, 280, 333, | |
| 145, 192, 224, 225, 272, | 384. | |
| 275, 331, 351, 391, 467. | Wormwood, 87. | Y. |
| Woodice, 469. | Worth, 318. | Yell, 269, 436. |
| Woodie, 42. | Worthylake, 418. | Young, 84, 235, 238, 282, |
| Woodis, 297. | Wren, 312, 395. | 284, 298, 472, 486. |
| Woodman, 225. | Wright, 28, 450. | |
| Woodrow, 349. | Wroth, 236. | Z. |
| Woodward, 73, 96, 298. | Wyatt, 369, 373, 374, 494. | Zimmerman, 206. |
| Woodwell, 77, 225, 235, 237. | Wycome, 376. | |

NON - CIRCULATING

89062866033



b89062866033a



87062866033



B89062866033A